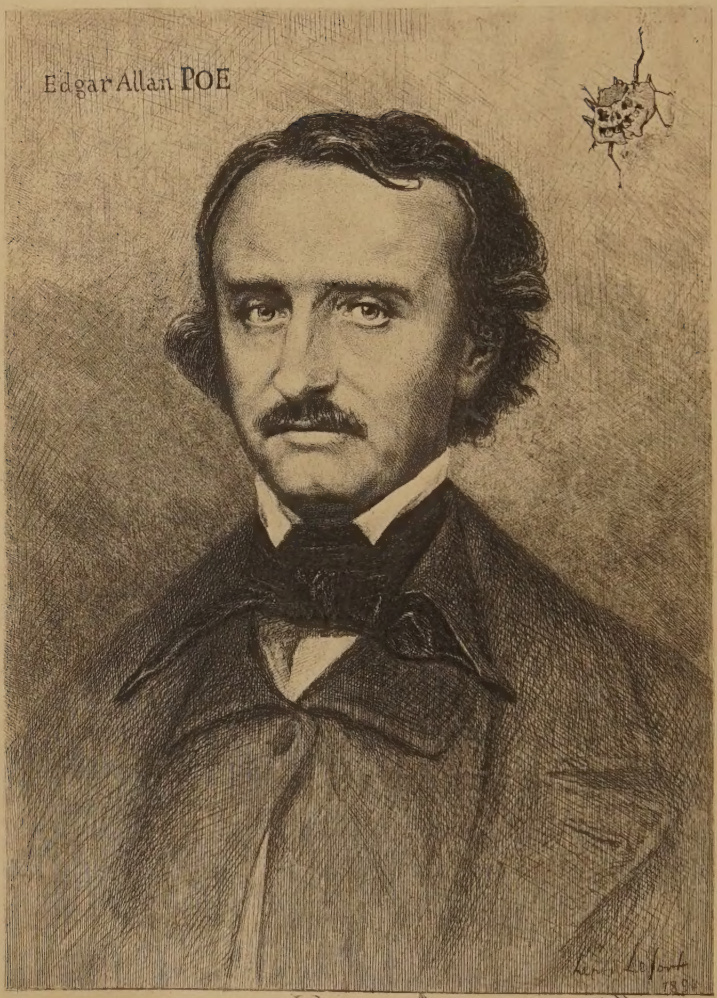
THIS IS A

BOOK OF REFERENCE.

NOT TO BE TAKEN FROM THE LIBRARY.

BROOKLYN
PUBLIC LIBRARY

Form Bo. 100M 1-31 E



EDGAR ALLAN POE

LIBRARY OF SOUTHERN LITERATURE

COMPILED UNDER THE DIRECT SUPERVISION OF SOUTHERN MEN OF LETTERS

EDWIN ANDERSON ALDERMAN
CHARLES ALPHONSO SMITH
EDITORS IN CHIEF

JOHN CALVIN METCALF
LITERARY EDITOR

ILLUSTRATED

PUBLISHED UNDER THE APPROVAL AND PATRONAGE OF DISTINGUISHED CITIZENS OF THE SOUTH

THE MARTIN & HOYT COMPANY
ATLANTA, GEORGIA
1929

vc
R
810.8
L69
V. 9-10

LIBRARY OF SOUTHERN LITERATURE

VOLUME IX

MURPHEY—PRENTICE

* * * *

TABLE OF CONTENTS, VOLUME X
FOLLOWS PAGE 4207

PRENTISS—SASS

M 2707981

Copyright, 1907, by
The Martin and Hoyt Company, Atlanta, Georgia.

Copyright, 1909, by
The Martin and Hoyt Company, Atlanta, Georgia.

EXECUTIVE BOARD

Editors In Chief.

EDWIN ANDERSON ALDERMAN, LL.D.,
President University of Virginia.

JOEL CHANDLER HARRIS, Litt. D.,
Editor Uncle Remus's Magazine, Atlanta, Georgia.

Literary Editor.

CHARLES WILLIAM KENT, M.A., Ph.D., LL.D.,
University of Virginia.

Associate Literary Editor.

CHARLES ALPHONSO SMITH, A.M., Ph.D., LL.D.,
University of North Carolina.

Assistant Literary Editors.

MORGAN CALLAWAY, Jr., A.M., Ph.D.,
University of Texas.

FRANKLIN L. RILEY, A.M., Ph.D.,
University of Mississippi.

GEORGE A. WAUCHOPE, A.M., Ph.D.,
University of South Carolina.

Executive Editor.

F. P. GAMBLE,
Atlanta, Georgia.

CONSULTING EDITORS

JOHN W. ABERCROMBIE, LL.D.,
President University of Alabama.

BROWN AYRES, Ph.D., LL.D.,
President University of Tennessee.

DAVID C. BARROW, C. and M.E., LL.D.,
Chancellor University of Georgia.

THOMAS D. BOYD, A.M., LL.D.,
President Louisiana State University.

E. B. CRAIGHEAD, A.M., LL.D.,
President Tulane University, Louisiana.

GEORGE H. DENNY, M.A., Ph.D., LL.D.,
President Washington and Lee University.

BASIL L. GILDERSLEEVE,
A.M., Ph.D., LL.D., L.H.D.,
Johns Hopkins University, Maryland.

DAVID F. HOUSTON, A.M., LL.D.,
President University of Texas.

RICHARD H. JESSE, LL.D.,
President University of Missouri.

A. A. KINCANNON, LL.D.,
Chancellor University of Mississippi.

J. H. KIRKLAND, A.M., Ph.D., LL.D.,
Chancellor Vanderbilt University, Tennessee.

F. V. N. PAINTER, A.M., D.D.,
Roanoke College, Virginia.

R. N. ROARK, M.A., Ph.D.,
President Kentucky State Normal School.

ANDREW SLEDD, Ph.D., LL.D.,
President University of Florida.

HENRY N. SNYDER, A.M., LL.D.,
President Wofford College, South Carolina.

JOHN N. TILLMAN, LL.D.,
President University of Arkansas.

FRANCIS P. VENABLE, Ph.D., LL.D.,
President University of North Carolina.

ADVISORY COUNCIL

CHARLES B. AYCOCK,
Ex-Governor, North Carolina.

WILLIAM D. BLOXHAM,
Ex-Governor, Florida.

EDWARD W. CARMACK,
Ex-U. S. Senator, Tennessee.

HENRY COHEN,
Rabbi, Texas.

CHARLES A. CULBERSON,
U.S. Senator, Texas.

DAVID R. FRANCIS,
Publicist, Missouri.

THOMAS F. GAILOR, D.D., LL.D.,
Protestant Episcopal Bishop, Tennessee.

CHARLES B. GALLOWAY, D.D., LL.D.,
Bishop M.E. Church, South, Mississippi.

JOHN TEMPLE GRAVES,
Editor and Lecturer, Georgia.

DUNCAN C. HEYWARD,
Ex-Governor, South Carolina.

RICHMOND P. HOBSON,
Congressman, Alabama.

BENJAMIN J. KEILEY, D.D.,
Resident Catholic Bishop of Georgia.

STEPHEN D. LEE,
General Commanding U.C.V., Mississippi.

W. W. MOORE, D.D., LL.D.,
President Union Theological Seminary, Virginia.

EDGAR Y. MULLINS, D.D., LL.D.,
President Southern Baptist Theological Seminary, Kentucky.

FRANCIS T. NICHOLS,
Supreme Court of Louisiana.

ISIDOR RAYNER,
U.S. Senator, Maryland.

U. M. ROSE,
Ex-President American Bar Association, Arkansas.

HOKE SMITH,
Governor of Georgia.

COPYRIGHT ACKNOWLEDGMENT

In addition to special credit given elsewhere, grateful acknowledgment is made to the following owners and publishers for permission to reprint the selections used in this volume:

F. W. Allsopp; Robert Clarke and Company; Edward J. Clode; Houghton, Mifflin and Company; A. C. McClurg and Company; Melville D. Post; G. P. Putnam's Sons; The Pearson Publishing Company; Mrs. Lillian Pike Roome; Charles Scribner's Sons; Frederick A. Stokes Company; H. S. Stone and Company.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

VOLUME IX

PAGE

MURPHEY, ARCHIBALD DE BOW (1777-1832) - 3747

BY LOUIS ROUND WILSON

Literature in North Carolina

NICHOLSON, ELIZA JANE POITEVANT ("Pearl Rivers") (1849-1896) - - - - 3767

BY JOHN S. KENDALL

Hagar
Whistling Up the Summer
Threnodia
Under the Snow
Idealizing
Only a Heart

NORWOOD, HENRY - - - - - - 3781

BY CAROL M. NEWMAN

A Perilous Journey to the New World

NOTT, HENRY JUNIUS (1797-1837) - - - 3797

BY ST. JAMES CUMMINGS, JR.

Tommy the Counterfeit
"Snake Bit, Snake Bit!"
At Frascati's and Schmalbauch's

O'HARA, THEODORE (1820-1867) - - - 3827

BY ROBERT BURNS WILSON

The Bivouac of the Dead
The Old Pioneer

PAGE

OUSLEY, CLARENCE (1863—) - - - - 3837

BY W. M. HARRIS

When Love Saw Duty Clearly
The Phantom Horseman
My Grandfather's Fig Stem Pipe
When the Mint is in the Liquor
A Song of the Simpler Things
Dimples and Wrinkles
The Sea Hath Its Woes
Rubáiyát of Faith
Goo-Goo Land

PAGE, THOMAS NELSON (1853-1922) - - 3849

BY CHARLES W. KENT

Establishing a Protectorate
The Accident
The Home and Its Influence
The Dragon of the Seas
Uncle Gabe's White Folks
One Mourner

PAINTER, FRANKLIN VERZELIUS NEWTON (1852—) 3889

BY RICHARD HENRY HUDNALL

The Author and His Work
Prologue
Faded Violets
Our Need
At Gettysburg
A Night at Sea
A Silent Tragedy
The Strenuous Life
A Hallowed Spot
A Morning Walk
The Teacher

PALMER, BENJAMIN MORGAN (1818-1902) - - 3907

BY THOMAS CARY JOHNSON

Eulogy on Robert E. Lee
The Present Crisis and Its Issue
Indictment of The Lottery Company of Louisiana
The Tribunal of History
Letter to His Father

PAGE

PATTERSON, JOHN 1863—) - - - - 3935

BY JAMES LANE ALLEN

Some Lyrics of "Pseudo-Anacreon"
The Handkerchief
Not Now, Sad Death
The Silent Gates
Bion's Lament for Adonis

PECK, SAMUEL MINTURN (1854—) - - - 3951

BY THOMAS C. M'CORVEY

Alabama
Paul Hamilton Hayne
The Grapevine Swing
A Southern Girl
Aunt Jemima's Quilt
Phyllis
A Winter Day
My Grandmother's Turkey-Tail Fan
Bessie Brown, M.D.
The Dying Scout
A Fair Attorney
My Little Girl
I Wonder What Maud Will Say!
A Knot of Blue
The Old Songs
Far From the Front

PETTIGREW, JAMES JOHNSTON (1828-1863) - - 3981

BY N. W. WALKER

The Gateway of the Sun, Madrid
The Cathedral—La Iglesia Mayor—Seville
Spanish Ladies
The Alhambra

PIATT, SARAH MORGAN BRYAN (1836-1912) - 4003

BY EMERSON VENABLE

Sometime
A Doubt
A Child's Conclusion
The End of the Rainbow

PAGE

PIATT, SARAH MORGAN BRYAN—*Continued*

Caprice at Home
The Favorite Child
Everything
The Gift of Tears
A Word With a Skylark
Reproof to a Rose
My Wedding Ring
An Emigrant Singing from a Ship

PICKETT, ALBERT JAMES (1810-1858) - - 4017

BY THOMAS M'ADORY OWEN

The Southern Indians
The Traders and the Indians
Bienville and Fort Toulouse
Battle of the Holy Ground
The Vine and Olive Colony
William Wyatt Bibb, First Governor of Alabama

PIKE, ALBERT (1809-1891) - - - - 4037

BY JAMES D. RICHARDSON

Every Year
To Poseidon
Ode to the Mocking-Bird
Auld Lang Syne
The Widowed Heart
To a Robin
The Magnolia
Ora Atque Labora
A Dirge
Ode
Shelley
To Apollo
Dixie

PINKNEY, EDWARD COOTE (1802-1828) - - 4063

BY WRIGHTMAN F. MELTON

Italy
The Indian's Bride

PAGE

PINKNEY, EDWARD COOTE—*Continued*

A Picture-Song
Song
Lines
Serenade
Song
A Health
The Old Tree

POE, EDGAR ALLAN (1809-1849) - - - 4079

BY JAMES A. HARRISON
BY W. P. TRENT

To Helen
Israfel
Eldorado
The City in the Sea
Lenore
The Raven
Ulalume
Annabel Lee
The Bells
The Valley of Unrest
The Cask of Amontillado
Silence—A Fable
The Mystery Explained
Literary Estimate of Hawthorne
Letter to F. W. Thomas

POLK, JAMES KNOX (1795-1849) - - - - 4127

BY J. M. M'CONNELL

Governor's Address
Extracts from Inaugural Address

POLLARD, EDWARD ALFRED (1831-1872) - - 4147

BY JAMES S. WILSON

Jefferson Davis as an Orator
The Battle of Manassas
Charcoal Sketches

PAGE

POST, MELVILLE DAVISSON (1871—) - - 4167

BY JOHN A. HOWARD

Madame Versäy
Through the Big Water

PRENTICE, GEORGE DENNISON (1802-1870) - 4189

BY HENRY WATTERSON

The Closing Year
A River in the Mammoth Cave
At My Mother's Grave
Memories
To an Absent Wife
To a Bunch of Roses
My Old Home
Pointed Paragraphs

ARCHIBALD DE BOW MURPHEY

[1777—1832]

LOUIS ROUND WILSON

ALTHOUGH seventy-seven years have passed since the death of Judge Archibald De Bow Murphey, North Carolina is just beginning to enjoy in a large measure the fruitage of policies for her material and intellectual enrichment similar to those to the formulating of which he devoted the genius of a fine, constructive statesmanship.

Born in Caswell County, North Carolina, in 1777, prepared for college at the Rev. David Caldwell's school, in Guilford County, and graduated with distinction in the second class of the University of North Carolina in 1799, Archibald Murphey began his active work for the State in September of that year, as teacher of the ancient languages at his *alma mater*. This position he filled until 1802, bringing to the discharge of his duties an energy and ability which distinguished him as a teacher and gave evidence of the high character of the public service he was destined to render in later life.

After teaching for three years, he resigned his professorship, located at Hillsboro, gained admission to the Bar, and under the direction of William Duffy devoted himself seriously to the practice of law. Skill in handling witnesses and conducting cases rapidly won him promotion at an unusually brilliant Bar. As an equity pleader he had no equal in the State, and in 1818, in recognition of his ability as a legislator and jurist, he was elected Judge of the Superior Court by the Legislature. A year later he was commissioned by the Governor to hear certain cases in the Supreme Court. Though eminently successful on the bench, he returned to his private practice, in 1820, to repair his threatened fortunes and to devote himself to a freer advocacy of public policies than was in keeping with his duties as a judge.

From 1812 to 1818 Judge Murphey continuously represented Orange County in the State Senate, and in that capacity rendered North Carolina his greatest service. "No man," says Mr. Hoyt, in speaking of him as a legislator and statesman, "ever brought into that body a truer patriotism, a statesmanship more philosophic and farseeing, or exerted, during the same period of legislative activity, a more powerful influence on his contemporaries or the legislation of

the State. He sought to awaken North Carolina to a knowledge of her own resources and character, to arouse a State pride that would bring to an end the westward emigration which was draining her population, and to profit by the universal calm to recover the position of importance in the Union which the rapid growth of other states and her own supineness were fast undermining."

Progress was his ideal for the State. To secure this he proposed, between 1815 and 1827, three distinct policies. The first, outlined in 1815, while he was chairman of the legislative committee, and stated more fully in his memorial to the Legislature in 1819, was devoted to the problems of transportation. Quoting again from Mr. Hoyt: "The main features of this plan . . . . were to deepen the advantageously located inlets and sounds of the treacherous coast; to render navigable the principal rivers and their tributaries far into the interior for boats of light draft; to join by canals the rivers Roanoke, Tar or Pamlico, and Neuse, and the Neuse with the sea at Beaufort, and to concentrate at one point the commercial product of the country watered by each of them; to join in like manner the Cape Fear, Lumber, Yadkin, and Catawba rivers, and to concentrate their commerce upon the Cape Fear; to connect by turnpike roads these waterways with the more remote places and also certain rivers where canals were impracticable; further to drain the swamps in the southern and eastern counties and reclaim them for agricultural purposes." As a result of his ardent advocacy of this policy, a board of internal improvement commissioners was appointed, a fund was provided for the work undertaken by it, an English engineer, Hamilton Fulton, was employed at a salary of $6,000 per year, under whose supervision work was actually begun in 1819. Splendidly conceived as this plan was, at a time when there were no railroads and the question of transportation was most vital, the actual results were not what Murphey hoped they would be. Lack of harmony and support among the different sections of the State rendered its operation impracticable; and after a number of surveys had been made it was finally abandoned. These surveys, however, marked the beginning of such work in the United States, and more than compensated for the expense incurred.

His second policy provided for a general system of public education. A son of the University and an advocate of the education of the masses, Judge Murphey was made chairman of the committee appointed by the Legislature of 1816, in response to Governor William Miller's message, to outline a plan of public education to be reported at the following session. Keenly alive to the great possibilities of the problem, he brought his entire energy and ability to

its consideration. No pains were spared in his endeavor to devise a perfect plan. Systems then operative in America and in Europe were brought under close scrutiny, and the report which he presented in 1817, after his return from Europe, was a marvel in comprehensiveness and prophetic insight. The report dealt with the following matters: (1) The creation of a fund for public instruction; (2) The constitution of a board to manage the fund, and to carry into execution the plan of public instruction; (3) The organization of schools; (4) The course of studies to be prescribed for each; (5) The modes of instruction; (6) The discipline and government of the schools; (7) The education of poor children at the public expense; (8) An asylum for the deaf and dumb. Primary education for the whole people was the basis of his system. Each county was to be divided into districts, public schools were to be established, and poor children were to be admitted without cost. Secondary education was to be stimulated by the establishment of high schools supported by ten academical districts in the State, and higher education was to be made more accessible through the better equipment and maintenance of the University. Instruction for the deaf and dumb was also provided for. Viewed in the light of the splendid appropriations by recent Legislatures of North Carolina for these identical objects, the plan seems a veritable prophecy; and though it was doomed to failure after passing its first reading in both Houses, it bespoke Judge Murphey a statesman of unquestioned ability and discernment.

The collection of important historical documents and the publication of an exhaustive history of North Carolina were the objects outlined in his third plan. Writing to General Joseph Graham of Lincoln, under the date of July 20, 1821, he gave his reasons for advocating the collection and preservation of such material: "We want such a work. We neither know ourselves nor are we known to others. Such a work, well executed, would add very much to our standing in the Union and make our State respectable in our own eyes. . . . . We want some great stimulus to put us all in motion, and induce us to waive little jealousies, and combine in one general march to one great purpose." In response to his plan the Legislature secured from Great Britain the privilege of having a list of documents relating to North Carolina prepared from the records in the office of the Board of Trade, and permitted him to realize, by the operation of a lottery, $15,000 for the publication of the history. A number of documents, some of which were later used by Joseph Seawell Jones, David L. Swain, and others, were collected, but it was not until 1886 that the idea was fully carried out in the collec-

tion and publication of the North Carolina 'Colonial Records.' Little, if anything, was realized from the lottery; and of the proposed history, of which there were to be six or more octavo volumes, only a few chapters on the Indians were ever published.

Judge Murphey's service to his *alma mater* also adds luster to his name. Maintaining in both private and public life that "That people who cultivate the sciences and the arts with most success acquire a most enviable superiority over others," he was continuously, from the resignation of his professorship in 1802 until his death on February 3, 1832, a loyal trustee and staunch supporter of the University. His most signal service among the many rendered her was the effecting of a compromise between her and the Legislature of Tennessee, which, though not wholly satisfactory, was far better than had been hoped for and was considered a virtual victory for the University.

Characterized in the terms of affairs, Judge Murphey's life was largely a failure; for the plans which he most cherished, and to the advocacy of which he devoted himself, met with but indifferent support and actual defeat. The ending of his life, too, added to the completeness of his failure; for his last years were attended with physical suffering and a total loss of fortune, resulting from oversanguine investments and ruinous suretyships. But failure, in his case apparent, rather than real, was due to the fact that he was in advance of his age, for a new generation and new conditions have arisen in the State he loved; and in her quest for suggestion, and guidance in matters pertaining to her material and intellectual growth, North Carolina has not looked back to him in vain.

Judge Murphey edited three volumes of the 'Decisions of the Supreme Court' for the years 1804, 1813, and 1818-1819. As chairman of legislative committees and as author he left several valuable works, a list of which is included in the bibliography following this sketch. He also corresponded with a number of men then prominent in public life, and though no collection of his letters has yet appeared, he was considered by his contemporaries a correspondent of decided merit.

As a man of letters, at a time when books were few and learning was hedged about by many difficulties, Judge Murphey sustained an enviable reputation as the possessor of marked literary gifts and broad scholarship. In the absence of any extensive writings left by him, it is necessary to consider his tastes and desires, as well as his written work, in arriving at a correct estimate of his literary endeavor. His tastes, certainly, were of the very finest. He loved the arts for their own sake and cultivated them. Frequently, while

busy with the duties of the Bar, he found himself longing to devote himself more completely to them and to return to the more quiet, intellectual pursuits of his professorial days. His desires for his State were for her material and intellectual enrichment. In address he was plain, direct, and earnest. Stimulated at times by the unusual interest of his cause, he became eloquent, and at all times he was convincing. But whether dispassionate or otherwise, he never lost the dignity and refinement of expression which his early mastery of the classics gave him.

Of Judge Murphey's writings the report outlining his plan of education and his oration before the literary societies of the University are most characteristic of his qualities of mind and expression. The former, though a legislative document in content and character, is distinguished by a rare enthusiasm and direct, convincing style. The oration treats of the State's history and literature and of the advantages to be derived by the educated youth of North Carolina from the acquisition of a varied learning and a fine appreciation of moral values. In a very true sense it was the farewell appeal of a truly patriotic, far-seeing son of the State to a band of young men full of enthusiasm for the work of life and of determination to win honor for themselves by increasing the glory of their State and by cherishing the aims of a more universal culture.

Louis R. Wilson.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Report of the Committee on Inland Navigation. By Archibald De Bow Murphey. Raleigh, 1815.

Report Submitted to the Legislature of North Carolina, relating to Public Instruction. By A. De B. Murphey. *Journals for the Senate,* 1817.

Memoir on the Internal Improvements Contemplated by the Legislature of North Carolina, and on the Resources and Finances of that State. By A. De B. Murphey. Raleigh, 1819.

Memorial to the General Assembly of North Carolina, relating to the Publication of a North Carolina History. By A. De B. Murphey. Hillsboro, 1825.

Memorial to the General Assembly of North Carolina, relating further to the same publication. By A. De B. Murphey. 1827.

Oration before the Literary Societies of the University of North Carolina, delivered June 27, 1827.

Indian Nations: War of 1755 to 1762. By A. De B. Murphey. *North Carolina University Magazine,* III, 1854.

North American Review. Vol. XXIV, pp. 468-470, April, 1827.

National Cyclopædia of American Biography. Vol. VII, p. 168. New York, 1897.

New International Encyclopædia. Vol. XII, p. 738. New York, 1903.

Appleton's Cyclopædia of American Biography, Vol. IV, p. 465. New York, 1888.

Cyclopædia of American Biographies. Vol. V, p. 625. Boston, 1903.

History of the University of North Carolina. By Kemp P. Battle. Vol. I, Index. Raleigh, 1907.

Biographical History of North Carolina. By William Henry Hoyt. Vol. IV, pp. 340-348. Greensboro, 1906.

Report of the Commissioner of Education for the year 1896-97. By Stephen B. Weeks. Vol. II, pp. 1400-1415. Washington, 1898.

Lives of Distinguished North Carolinians. By William A. Graham. Pp. 111-149. Raleigh, 1898.

Reminiscences and Memoirs of North Carolina and Eminent North Carolinians. By John W. Wheeler. Pp. 333-334. Columbus, 1884.

LITERATURE IN NORTH CAROLINA

Extracts from an Address delivered in 1827 before the Literary Societies of the University of North Carolina.

. . . WHAT improvement in literature could be expected among a people who were distracted by faction, destitute of books, and denied the use of the press? Notwithstanding all these discouragements and disadvantages, however, the literature of the colony evidently advanced. The public papers of that period are written in a conspicuous, nervous style, corresponding in force of expression, purity of language and perspicuity of arrangement, with similar writings in the reigns of Charles II., King William, and Queen Anne. The intelligence of the common people and the ability and learning of the men who managed the affairs of the colony in that period are mat-

ters of surprise and astonishment to any one acquainted with the disadvantages under which the colony labored. The Assembly and the courts of justice sat in private houses; the acts passed by the Assembly were not printed; they were read aloud to the people at the first court after they were passed; they were in force for only two years, and every biennial Assembly was under the necessity of reënacting all that were thought useful. There was no printing press in the colony before the year 1746, at which time the condition of the statute-book required a revisal, and the public interest called aloud for the printing of it. The learning and literature of the colony were confined to the lawyers and ministers, most of whom were educated in England; and it was owing to this circumstance chiefly that the literature of the colony advanced so steadily with that of the mother-country.

The legislation of the colony began to assume form and system in the reign of Queen Anne; and in the year after her death, 1715, the Assembly passed sixty-six acts, most of which had been frequently reënacted before. Many of those acts remain in force to this day, and are monuments of the political wisdom and legal learning of that time. In style and composition they are equal to any part of our statute-book; they are the first statutes of the colony that have come down to our time.

In the year 1729 the Lords Proprietors, with the exception of Lord Granville, surrendered to the Crown their right to the soil and seigniory of North Carolina; and from that time the population and prosperity of the colony rapidly increased. But in a few years the great contest commenced between the prerogative of the Crown and the liberty of the colonial subject, which contest eventually terminated in the American Revolution. This contest gradually introduced into North Carolina, and into all the British colonies which took part in it, a style in composition which distinguishes this period from all others in English or American literature: a style founded upon and expressive of exalted feeling. Education embellished it and gave it new beauties; but its force and impressive character were perceptible in the writings and speeches of ordinary men. What age or nation ever produced compositions superior to the addresses of the Continental Congress? When

or where shall we find a parallel to the correspondence of General Washington and the general officers of the American army? The style of these addresses and of the correspondence is the style of high thought and of lofty, yet chastened feeling, and reminds the reader of the finest specimens of composition in Tacitus, and of the correspondence of Cicero and his friends after the death of Pompey.

There is something in the style and sentiment of the writings of this period which gives to them a magic charm, and seems to consecrate the subjects on which it is employed—a something connected with the finest perceptions of our nature. The reader is every moment conscious of it, yet knows not how to explain it. The high moral feeling and virtuous sympathy which characterized the American Revolution have given to it a hallowedness of character. It is fortunate for us that Chief Justice Marshall has written the history of this Revolution. Whatever may be the defects of this work, the history of our Revolution will never be so well written again: no work on that subject so well calculated to produce an useful effect upon its readers will ever appear. Marshall was a soldier of the Revolution, and possessed the finest genius; he was the personal friend of the Commander-in-chief; partook of all the feelings of the officers of the army; and he has transfused into his work that exalted sentiment which animated his compatriots in arms. This sentiment is strongly portrayed in the writings of the Marquis de Chastellux and Count Rochambeau, two French general officers in the American service, and in the correspondence of the Commander-in-chief and the American general officers. But it can never be embodied into an historical work by a man who did not feel it in all its force in the American camp. Literary eloquence disappears before such moral beauty. There is no historical work in any language that can be read with so much advantage, such moral effect, by American youth, as Marshall's 'Life of George Washington.' They should read it with diligence, and read it often. They will never rise from the perusal of it without feeling fresh incentives both to public and private virtue.

The progress of the style which marked the period of the American Revolution may be traced in North Carolina from

the administration of Governor Dobbs. It had become the common style of the leading men of the colony before the meeting of the Continental Congress in 1774. The correspondence and public papers of Samuel Johnston and Joseph Hewes, of Edenton; of William Hooper and Archibald Maclaine, of Wilmington; of Richard Caswell of Kinston; of Thomas Burke, of Hillsborough; of Francis and Abner Nash of New Bern, upon the great subjects which then engrossed the public attention, do honor to the literature of North Carolina at that time. They wrote upon matters of business —business which concerned the welfare of the nation; they wrote as they felt; and their compositions, coming warm from the heart, are free from affectation or pedantry, and equally free from that prolixity which is the vice of modern composition.

When these men disappeared, our literature, in a great degree, disappeared with them. The war had exhausted the resources of the State and ruined the fortunes of many individuals; we had no schools for the education of our youth; few of our citizens were able to send their sons to the Northern colleges or to Europe to be educated. Two individuals, who received their education during the war, were destined to keep alive the remnant of our literature and prepare the public mind for the establishment of this University. These were William R. Davie and Alfred Moore. Each of them had endeared himself to his country by taking an active part in the later scenes of the war; and when public order was restored and the courts of justice were opened they appeared at the bar, where they quickly rose to eminence, and for many years shone like meteors in North Carolina. They adorned the courts in which they practiced, gave energy to the laws, and dignity to the administration of justice. Their genius was different and so was their eloquence. Davie took Lord Bolingbroke for his model, and Moore, Dean Swift; and each applied himself with so much diligence to the study of his model that literary men could easily recognize in the eloquence of Davie the lofty, flowing style of Bolingbroke; and in that of Moore, the plainness and precision of Swift—they roused the ambition of parents and their sons; they excited emulation among ingenuous youth; they depicted in glowing colors the neces-

sity of establishing a public school or university in which the young men of the State could be educated. The General Assembly resolved to found an university. I was present in the House of Commons when Davie addressed that body upon the bill granting a loan of money to the trustees for erecting the buildings of this University; and although more than thirty years have since elapsed, I have the most vivid recollections of the greatness of his manner and the power of his eloquence upon that occasion. In the House of Commons he had no rival, and upon all great questions which came before that body his eloquence was irresistible. The genius and intellectual habits of Moore fitted him for the bar rather than a deliberate assembly. Public opinion was divided upon the question whether he or Davie excelled at the bar. Moore was a small man, neat in his dress and graceful in his manners; his voice was clear and sonorous, his perceptions quick, and his judgment almost intuitive; his style was chaste and his manner of speaking animated. Having adopted Swift for his model, his language was always plain. The clearness and energy of his mind enabled him, almost without an effort, to disentangle the most intricate subject and expose it in all its parts to the simplest understanding. He spoke with ease and with force, enlivening his discourses with flashes of wit, and when the subject required it, with all the bitterness of sarcasm. His speeches were short and impressive; when he sat down every one thought he had said everything that he ought to have said. Davie was in his person tall and elegant, graceful and commanding in his manners; his voice was mellow and adapted to the expression of every passion; his mind was comprehensive, yet slow in its operations, when compared with his great rival. His style was magnificent and flowing, and he had a greatness of manner in public speaking which suited his style and gave to his speeches an imposing effect. He was a laborious student, arranged his discourses with care, and, where the subject suited his genius, poured forth a torrent of eloquence that astonished and enraptured his audience. They looked upon him with delight, listened to his long, harmonious periods, caught his emotions, and indulged that ecstasy of feeling which fine speaking and powerful eloquence alone can produce. He is certainly to be ranked among the first orators,

and his rival, Moore, among the first advocates, which the American nation has produced.

Whilst these two men were in the zenith of their glory, another man arose at the bar in North Carolina who surpassed them both in profoundness of legal learning, and, on many occasions, successfully contended with them for the palm of forensic eloquence. This was the late John Haywood. He had few advantages from nature; his person was indifferent, his voice harsh, his manners uncouth, his education limited. He was a stranger to the graces, and had few of the accomplishments of an orator. But he had a powerful and intrepid mind, which he cultivated by the most laborious study. The fame of Davie and Moore inspired his ambition, and he was tortured by a desire of entering the lists with these champions of the bar. He was conscious of his defects, and sought to gain the ascendency by superior legal learning. He came to the bar with confidence of high intellectual powers and profound knowledge of the law; and in a little time acquired a reputation that placed him at the head of his profession in this State and gave him rank among the ablest common-law lawyers in the Union.

Contemporary with Haywood were several gentlemen of the bar now living and several who are dead who have sustained the character of their profession for legal learning and general literature. Among the latter were William Duffy and Archibald Henderson. Duffy was the child of misfortune. Thrown upon the world without friends and without fortune, accident introduced him, in his early youth, to the acquaintance of John Haywood, Esq., the venerable Treasurer of this State, who, in the exercise of that benevolence for which his whole life has been conspicuous, gave him employment and enabled him to prosecute his studies and prepare himself for the bar. Duffy had an opportunity of witnessing the splendid displays of Davie and Moore and he profited by their example. He devoted a large portion of his time to polite literature, and acquired a more eloquent style in composition than any of his contemporaries in North Carolina. He had a slight impediment of speech, but by laborious perseverance he succeeded in regulating the tones and modulations of his voice in such a way that this impediment seemed

to be an ornament to his delivery. He was one of the few men of our country who could read well; he studied the art of reading, and his friends will long remember the pleasure they have received from hearing him read. In his addresses at the bar he was always impressive, particularly upon topics connected with virtuous and benevolent feeling. He had a virtuous mind and feelings attuned to the finest emotions. I remember him with fond affection. He was my friend, my preceptor, my patron. He instructed me in the science of the law, in the art of managing causes at the bar, and in the still more difficult art of reading books to advantage. I wish it were in my power to render to his memory a more permanent honor than this passing tribute of respect and gratitude!

Henderson survived Duffy many years, and obtained the first standing at the bar of this State. He was devoted to his profession, and, upon the whole, was the most perfect model of a lawyer that our bar has produced. It was late in life before he turned his attention to polite literature, and he never acquired a good style in composition. Yet his style and manner of speaking at the bar were extremely impressive. I shall here speak of him as I did in a sketch of his character published shortly after his death. In him the faculties of a fine mind were blended with exalted moral feelings. Although he was at all times accessible, he seemed to live and move in an atmosphere of dignity. He exacted nothing by his manner, yet all approached him with reverence and left him with respect. The little quarrels and contests of men were beneath him; his was the region of high sentiment, and there he occupied a standing that was preëminent. The Constitution and jurisprudence of his country were his favorite studies. Profound reflection had generalized his ideas and given to his political and legal learning a scientific cast. No man better understood the theory of our government; no man more admired it, and no man gave more practical proofs of his admiration. The sublime idea that he lived under a government of laws was forever uppermost in his mind, and seemed to give a coloring to all his actions. As he acknowledged no dominion but that of the laws, he bowed with reverence to their authority, and taught obedience no less by his example than his precept. To the humble officer of justice he was re-

spectful; the vices of private character were overlooked when the individual stood before him clothed him with judicial authority. In the County Courts, where the justices of the peace administer the law, he was no less respectful in his deportment than in the highest tribunal of the State. He considered obedience to the laws to be the first duty of a citizen, and it seemed to be the great object of his professional life to inculcate a sense of this duty and give to the administration of the laws an impressive character. He was conscious of his high standing, and never committed himself nor put his reputation at risk. He always came to the trial of his causes well prepared; and if the state of his health or his want of preparation were likely to jeopardize his reputation in the management of his client's cause he would decline the trial until a more favorable time. The courts before which he practiced, and his brother lawyers, understood the delicacy of his feelings upon this point so well that they extended to him the indulgence he required, and a knowledge of this part of his character gave confidence to his clients and attracted crowds of people to hear his speeches. When he rose at the bar no one expected to hear common-place matter; no one looked for a cold, vapid, or phlegmatic harangue. His great excellence as a speaker consisted in an earnestness and dignity of manner and strong powers of reasoning. He seized one or two strong points, and these he illustrated and enforced. His exordium was short and appropriate; he quickly marched up to the great point in controversy, making no manoeuvre as if he were afraid to approach it, or was desirous of attacking it by surprise. The confidence he exhibited of success he gradually imparted to his hearers; he grew more warm and earnest as he advanced in his argument, and seizing the critical moment for enforcing conviction, he brought down his main argument, pressed it home and sat down. As he advanced in life he seemed more and more anxious that the laws should be interpreted and administered by the rules of common sense. He lost his reverence for artificial rules; he said the laws were made for the people, and they should be interpreted and administered by rules which the people understood, whenever it was practicable; that common sense belonged to the people in a higher degree than to learned men, and that to interpret

laws by rules which were at variance with the rules of common sense necessarily lessened the respect of the people for the laws, and induced them to believe that courts and lawyers contrived mysteries in the science merely for the purpose of supporting the profession of lawyers. He said the rules of pedantry did not suit this country nor this age; that common sense had acquired dominion in politics and religion, and was gaining it in the law; that judges and lawyers should have the independence and magnanimity to strip off the veil of mystery from every branch of the science, and simplify and make it intelligible, as far as possible, to the understanding of the common people.

In all free States eloquence has preceded poetry, history, and philosophy. By opening the road to wealth and fame it subserves the purposes of avarice and ambition; society is led captive by its charms, and sometimes bound in fetters by its powers. In this State the bar and the General Assembly have been thus far the theatres for its display. Oratory is the branch of literature which we have cultivated with most success, and in which we have not been far behind any of our sister States.

Not long after Davie left the House of Commons there appeared in that body another man whose genius we have all admired and whose misfortune we all deplore. I hope I may be permitted to speak of him, although he be still living. Providence has withdrawn him from public view, and he has been followed by the regrets and tears of his countrymen. I speak of John Stanly, Esq. For more than twenty years he has been the ornament of the bar and of the House of Commons. Small in stature, neat in dress, graceful in manner, with a voice well modulated, and a mind intrepid, disciplined and rich in knowledge, he became the most accomplished orator of the State. His style of eloquence was more varied than that of any of his predecessors. Such were the versatility of his genius and the extent of his acquirements that he could at pleasure adopt the lofty, flowing style of Davie, or the plain, simple, energetic style of Moore. He could rouse the noble passions, or amuse by his wit and pleasantry. He excelled in appropriate pauses, emphasis and gesticulation. No speaker was ever more fortunate in accommodating his manner to his

subject; and on all important subjects he had a greatness of manner which small men seldom acquire. He resembled Moore in the quickness of his perceptions and the intuition of his judgment. His talents and knowledge were always at command, and he could bring them to bear with force and effect as occasion required, without any preparation. His mind was so well disciplined and so happily toned that it was always ready for action. He possessed the rare talent of conversing well; his conversation was the perpetual flow of sober thought or pleasant humor, and was heightened in its effect by his happy style and gracefulness of manner. He was among the few orators of this or any country, whose style and manner in conversation equaled his style and manner in public speaking.

Few of the men whom I have named had the advantage of a liberal education; they rose to eminence by the force of genius and a diligent application to their studies. The number of our literary men has been small, when compared with our population; but this is not a matter of surprise when we look to the condition of the State since the close of the Revolutionary war. When the war ended the people were in poverty, society in disorder, morals and manners almost prostrate. Order was to be restored to society and energy to the laws before industry could repair the fortunes of the people; schools were to be established for the education of youth and congregations formed for preaching the gospel before the public morals could be amended. Time was required to effect these objects; and the most important of them, the education of youth, was the longest neglected. Before this University went into operation, in 1795, there were not more than three schools in the State in which the rudiments of a classical education could be acquired. The most prominent and useful of these schools was kept by Dr. David Caldwell, of Guilford county. He instituted it shortly after the close of the war and continued it for more than thirty years. The usefulness of Dr. Caldwell to the literature of North Carolina will never be sufficiently appreciated; but the opportunities of instruction in his school were very limited. There was no library attached to it; his students were supplied with a few of the Greek and Latin classics, *Euclid's Elements of Mathematics*, and *Mar-*

tin's Natural Philosophy. Moral philosophy was taught from a syllabus of lectures delivered by Dr. Witherspoon at Princeton College. The students had no books on history or miscellaneous literature. There were indeed very few in the State, except in the libraries of lawyers who lived in the commercial towns. I remember that after completing my course of studies under Dr. Caldwell, I spent nearly two years without finding any books to read except some old works on theological subjects. At length, I accidentally met with Voltaire's *History of Charles XII. of Sweden,* an odd volume of Smollett's *Roderick Random,* and an abridgment of *Don Quixote.* These books gave me a taste for reading, which I had no opportunity of gratifying until I became a student in this University in the year 1796. Few of Dr. Caldwell's students had better opportunities of getting books than myself; and with these slender opportunities of instruction, it is not surprising that so few became eminent in the liberal professions. At this day, when libraries are established in all our towns, when every professional man and every respectable gentleman has a collection of books, it is difficult to conceive the inconveniences under which young men labored thirty or forty years ago.

But has the number of our distinguished men increased as the facilities of instruction have increased? They certainly have not. Of the number of young men who have been educated at this University, how few have arisen to eminence in any branch of literature! Their number bears no proportion to the increased means of instruction which they have had. To what causes is this to be attributed? The causes are numerous, but we will notice only a few of the most operative. In the first place the plan of education in all our schools, particularly in our preparatory schools, is radically defective; too much time is spent upon syntax and etymology; the time of the student is wasted, and his genius frittered away upon words instead of being developed and polished by the spirit of the writer. Instead of directing the study of the Greek and Latin classics to the development of his faculties and the improvement of his taste, his time is taken up in nice attention to words, arrangement of clauses and construction of periods. With his mind thus injured, he enters upon the study

of the physical and moral sciences, and long accustomed to frivolous investigation, he never rises to the dignity of those sciences nor understands the methods by which their truths are illustrated. In the next place, too many studies are crowded upon the student at once; studies which have no analogy or connection. In the third place, the time allotted for completing a course of scientific study is too short; the student's mind flags under the severe labors imposed upon it. The elasticity of the mind ought never to be weakened; if it be, the student thenceforward hobbles through his course, and is often broken down before he gets to the end of it. In the fourth place, too many studies are pursued, and none are pursued well; the student acquires a smattering of languages and sciences, and understands none of them. This encyclopedical kind of learning is destructive of the powers of the mind, and unfits it for deep and severe investigation. In the last place, the multitude of books is a serious injury to most students. They despair of reading many of them, and content themselves with reading reviews of the most celebrated. At length the valuable books are placed away carefully in a library, and newspapers, pamphlets and other fugitive productions take up all their time for reading. There is nothing in this course which teaches youth how to think and investigate. The great object of education is to give to the mind activity and energy; this object can never be attained by a course of studies which distracts its attention and impairs its elasticity.

The evils which I have mentioned are not confined to the schools of North Carolina; they exist in nearly all the schools of the Union. Massachusetts has taken the lead in correcting them and introducing methods of instruction founded upon the philosophy of the mind. The state of science and literature among her people shows the happy effect of these changes. The Trustees of this University have resolved to make similar changes, to remodel the plan of studies, and introduce new methods of instruction. But whatever changes may be made in our plan of education, young men, who are desirous of being either useful or eminent in active life, should recollect this truth, that the education received at college or university is intended only as a preparation of the mind for receiving the rich stores of science and general knowledge which subse-

quent industry is to acquire. He who depends upon this preparation alone will be like a farmer who ploughs his land and sows no grain. The period of useful study commences when a young man finishes his collegiate course. At that time his faculties have acquired some maturity from age and some discipline from exercise; and if he enters with diligence upon the study of a branch of science, and confines his attention to that branch, he soon becomes astonished at his progress and at the increase of his intellectual powers. Let him avoid reading or even looking into a variety of books. Nine-tenths of them are worse than useless; the reading of them produces a positive injury to the mind; they not only distract his attention, but blunt his faculties. Let him read only works of men of genius—read but few books, and read them often. Take two young men of equal minds and similar genius; put into the hands of one Shakespeare's *Plays,* Milton's *Paradise Lost, Don Quixote,* and *Gil Blas;* and into the hands of the other all the hundred volumes of dullness which fill our libraries; and at the end of twelve months mark the difference between them. The first will be like the high-spirited steed that is ready for the course; the other will be encumbered with a load of useless ideas, his faculties weakened, and the bright tints of his genius obscured.

The next great object, after the improvement of the intellectual faculties, is the forming of a moral character. This is by far the most difficult part of education; it depends upon the doctrines of morals and the philosophy of the passions and feelings. Little success has heretofore attended it, either in the schools of Europe or this country. The moral character of youth has been generally formed by their parents, by friends who gained their confidence, or by their pursuits in active life. The morality thus taught is purely practical; it has reference to no abstract truths; it looks only to the passions and feelings of our nature under the variety of circumstances in which we may be placed in society, and the duties which thence result. The science of ethics taught in our schools is a cold, speculative science; and our youth are misled by substituting this for practical morality. It is to be regretted that we have no work on moral philosophy which treats of ethics as a practical science; and it is remarkable that, notwithstanding the

great improvement that has been made within the last century in metaphysical and physical science, and the liberal turn of philosophical inquiry which has been introduced, the science of ethics remains stationary. The question, "What is the foundation of moral obligation?" is not more satisfactorily answered than it was two centuries ago. And until the principles of ethics shall be disentangled from the speculative doctrines of theology, interwoven by the schoolmen and monks in the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries, and those principles be traced to the constitution and condition of man, having for their object the development of his social rights and duties, we shall have to regret that the most sublime of all the sciences remains imperfect. It seems to be reserved for the philosophers of Scotland to trace those principles and make their development; and we wait with impatience for the promised work of Dugald Stewart on this subject. But any system of morals which we may study as a science will never have much effect in forming our moral character. We must look to our constitutional temperament, to our passions and feelings as influenced by external circumstances; and for rules of conduct we must look to the sermons and parables of Christ: they are worth more than all the books which have been written on morals; they explain and at the same time apply that pure morality which is founded upon virtuous feeling.

ELIZA JANE POITEVANT NICHOLSON

("Pearl Rivers")

[1849—1896]

JOHN S. KENDALL

PROBABLY no contributor to the Southern press was, in her time, more widely known than "Pearl Rivers." This was the pen-name assumed by Eliza Jane Poitevant when she began to write for the New Orleans *Picayune*. The story of the life of this gifted woman—so short in years, so great in achievement—is almost as strange as some bit of romantic fiction. She was the daughter of Captain J. W. Poitevant, and came of a distinguished Huguenot family, early settled in Mississippi. She was born at Pearlington, in Hancock County, Mississippi, in 1849. Her mother was an invalid, and the child was therefore confided to the care of an aunt, Mrs. Leonard Kimball, by whom she was reared.

At Mrs. Kimball's home, in the heart of a somber pine forest, near the shore of Pearl River, the young poet's childhood and girlhood were spent. She was the only child on the estate, so solitary that she perforce made friends of the wild creatures of the woods. Birds learned to eat from her hand, and the least citizen of the forest knew that in her tender heart were sympathy and protection. She knew all the secrets of nature; she heard voices in the whispering of the pines, and the streams spoke a language which she understood. This love of nature abided with her all her life. She loved to wander through the woods with a friend, to whom she might translate the hidden lore of the forest. A thousand exquisite poetic fancies would suggest themselves to her, and she would say that the roadside daisies were the notes that God had set for the birds to sing by, and that the coming of spring was the A B C of poetry.

With such a poetic heart, it was natural that Eliza Poitevant should soon find her voice and sing. This she did in a tentative fashion as early as her fourteenth year. Her themes were the birds and the streams. By and by her lyrics began to reach out into the world, and the gray heads of other poets were bent to listen to the sweet woodland voice. She called herself "Pearl Rivers," after the silent stream she knew and loved so well. Over that name her earliest ventures in the world of letters were made. Her first published work appeared in the newspapers of New Orleans, but soon she became a constant contributor to the New York *Home Journal* and other important periodicals.

Miss Poitevant's work attracted the attention of Colonel A. M. Holbrook, proprietor of the New Orleans *Picayune*, and he invited her to become the literary editor of that important daily. This was a new departure in New Orleans journalism, and it excited much comment at the time. It was against the wishes of her family that she accepted the position. She was, in fact, the pioneer woman-journalist of the South; nay, more than that—her frail hands broke down the wall of conventionality that till then had shut her sex out from labor and kept them dependent on the grudging support of others. By the brilliance of her achievements she made work honorable and respectable, and it was a red-letter day in the history of Southern womanhood when Eliza Poitevant sent up to the printer her first "copy" in the *Picayune* office. After a time "Pearl Rivers" married Colonel Holbrook; and when he died, in 1876, she found herself with nothing in the world but a big, unwieldy daily newspaper, almost swamped in an ocean of debt. The idea of turning her back on this new duty, however, never entered her head. There was the paper, and she must carry it on. With the assistance of Mr. George Nicholson, then business manager of the *Picayune*, a man of wide experience in newspaper work, and of unusual administrative ability, and with the loyal aid of a brilliant band of writers, she went faithfully and patiently to her desk, toiled early and late, was both economical and enterprising, and after years of valiant struggle, won a great battle, and made the *Picayune* a foremost power in the South, yielding her a handsome and steady income.

In 1878 "Pearl Rivers" married Mr. Nicholson. The life of the gentle poet and her gallant husband was an almost ideally happy one. Two fine boys, Leonard and Yorke, came to bless their home. The rich, full, beautiful years rolled on, broken by an occasional visit to Europe, occupied partly in literary work, but chiefly consecrated to the cares of a household and the duties of motherhood. She never relinquished her hold on the *Picayune*, but to the last exercised a close personal supervision of its affairs, however much she found it necessary with the flight of time to relegate the details of the business to other hands. She was fortunate in choosing her assistants, and the group of writers and administrators she formed around her served her with fidelity and enthusiasm, and gave their best to make the *Picayune* the ideal of daily journalism which she held steadfastly before their eyes.

Suddenly death put a stop to this happy life. Mr. Nicholson, full of years and honors, died in New Orleans after a tragically short illness, on February 5, 1896. Ten days later the grief-stricken widow followed her beloved husband to the tomb. She was ill of the grippe when Mr. Nicholson passed away, and the shock of his

death was too severe for her weakened physique to withstand. She retained the clearness of her intellect to the end, and almost her last words were a message to the members of the staff of the *Picayune*, invoking their loyal support for the orphans she was about to leave, and thanking them for their zeal in her service in times past.

Mrs. Nicholson's place in journalism was unique. She was the only woman in the world who ever owned and managed a great metropolitan daily newspaper. She possessed the journalistic faculty in a remarkable degree. But it is as a poet that Mrs. Nicholson will be longest remembered, and it is as a poet that she would wish to be remembered. She published only one small volume of "Lyrics," which bears the imprint of the J. B. Lippincott Company of Philadelphia; but this slender sheaf of song is of such quality that it elicited the praise of Paul H. Hayne of Georgia, himself a poet and a critic of no mean ability. "Your own sweet poems, genuine lyrics indeed," he called them in a letter to the author. Another scholarly critic, Dr. W. H. Holcomb of New Orleans, in a review of her book, uses these words: "The most striking characteristic of this poet is her subtle and ethereal personification of natural forms and forces, investing them with human thoughts and passions, and thus spiritualizing, as it were, the whole world around us. This is the highest office of poetry, and distinguishes the genuine seer from the word-painter and musician. 'Pearl Rivers' has done well."

Two or three years before her death, Mrs. Nicholson wrote two strong dramatic poems, "Hagar" and "Leah," which were published in the *Cosmopolitan Magazine*, attracting widespread attention. Bold and strong, and full of the true fire of genius, they will live as permanent contributions to American literature. During the latter period of her life, Mrs. Nicholson's friends urged her to gather her fugitive pieces, written after the publication of 'Lyrics,' and put them in the permanent form that they deserved. This never was done; but in many an old scrap-book throughout the country the poems by "Pearl Rivers"—the tender, gracious, rippling songs that had ever in them a minor cadence like the music of woodland streams—are treasured. To write the verses that live in the hearts of the people is to be a high priestess in the temple of song; and this is the task and the reward that "Pearl Rivers" chose for herself.

John S. Kendall

HAGAR

Go back! How dare you follow me beyond
The door of my poor tent? Are you afraid
That I have stolen something? See! my hands
Are empty, like my heart. I am no thief!
The bracelets and the golden finger rings
And silver anklets that you gave to me,
I cast upon the mat before my door,
And trod upon them. I would scorn to take
One trinket with me in my banishment
That would recall a look or tone of yours,
My lord, my generous lord, who sent me forth,
A loving woman, with a loaf of bread
And jug of water on my shoulder laid,
To thirst and hunger in the wilderness!

Go back! Go back to Sara! See! she stands
Watching us there, behind the flowering date,
With jealous eyes, lest my poor hands should steal
One farewell touch from yours. Go back to her,
And say that Hagar has a heart as proud,
If not so cold, as hers; and, though it break
It breaks without the sound of sobs, without
The balm of tears to ease its pain. It breaks—
It breaks, my lord, like iron; hard, but clean;
And, breaking, asks no pity. If my lips
Should let one plea for mercy slip between
These words that lash you with a woman's scorn,
My teeth should bite them off, and I would spit
Them at you, laughing, though all red and warm with blood.
"Cease!" do you say? No, by the gods
Of Egypt, I do swear that if my eyes
Should let one tear melt through their burning lids,
My hands should pluck them out; and if these hands,
Groping outstretched in blindness, should by chance
Touch yours, and cling to them against my will,
My Ishmael should cut them off, and, blind
And maimed, my little son should lead me forth
Into the wilderness to die. Go back!

Does Sara love you as I did, my lord?
Does Sara clasp and kiss your feet, and bend
Her haughty head in worship at your knee?
Ah! Abraham you were a god to me.
If you but touched my hand my foolish heart
Ran down into the palm, and throbbed, and thrilled;
Grew hot and cold, and trembled there; and when
You spoke, though not to me, my heart ran out
To listen through my eager ears and catch
The music of your voice and prison it
In memory's murmuring shell. I saw no fault
Nor blemish in you, and your flesh to me
Was dearer than my own. There is no vein
That branches from your heart, whose azure course
I have not followed with my kissing lips.
I would have bared my bosom like a shield
To any lance of pain that sought your breast.
And once, when you lay ill within your tent,
No taste of water, or of bread or wine
Passed through my lips; and all night long I lay
Upon the mat before your door to catch
The sound of your dear voice, and scarcely dared
To breathe, lest she, thy mistress, should come forth
And drive me angrily away; and when
The stars looked down with eyes that only stared
And hurt me with their lack of sympathy,
Weeping, I threw my longing arms around
Benammi's neck. Your good horse understood,
And gently rubbed his face against my head,
To comfort me. But if you had one kind,
One loving thought of me in all that time,
That long, heart-breaking time, you kept it shut
Close in your bosom as a tender bud
And did not let it blossom into words.
Your tenderness was all for Sara. Through
The door, kept shut against my love, there came
No message to poor Hagar, almost crazed
With grief lest you should die. Ah! you have been
So cruel and so cold to me, my lord;
And now you send me forth with Ishmael,

Not on a journey through a pleasant land
Upon a camel, as my mistress rides,
With kisses, and sweet words, and dates and wine,
But cast me off, and sternly send me forth
Into the wilderness with these poor gifts,
A jug of water, and—a loaf of bread—
That sound was not a sob; I only lost
My breath and caught it hard again. Go back!

Why do you follow me? I am a poor
Bondswoman, but a woman still, and these
Sad memories, so bitter and so sweet,
Weigh heavily upon my breaking heart
And make it hard, my lord—for me to go.
"Your God commands it?" Then my gods, the gods
Of Egypt, are more merciful than yours.
Isis and good Osiris never gave
Command like this, that breaks a woman's heart,
To any prince in Egypt. Come with me
And let us go and worship them, my dear lord.
Leave all your wealth to Sara. Sara loves
The touch of costly linen and the scent
Of precious Chaldean spices, and to bind
Her brow with golden fillets, and perfume
Her hair with ointment. Sara loves the sound
Of many cattle lowing on the hills;
And Sara loves the slow and stealthy tread
Of many camels moving on the plains.
Hagar loves you. Oh! come with me, dear lord.
Take but your staff and come with me. Your mouth
Shall drink my share of water from this jug
And eat my share of bread with Ishmael;
And from your lips I will refresh myself
With love's sweet wine from tender kisses pressed.
Ah! come dear lord. Oh! come, my Abraham.
Nay, do not bend your cold, stern brows on me
So frowningly; it was not Hagar's voice
That spoke from pleading words. Go back! Go back!
And tell your God I hate him, and I hate
The cruel, craven heart that worships him

And dare not disobey. Ha! I believe
'Tis not your far-off, bloodless God you fear,
But Sara. Coward! Cease to follow me!
Go back to Sara. See! she beckons now.
Hagar loves not a coward; you do well
To send me forth into the wilderness,
Where hatred hath no weapon keen enough
That held within a woman's slender hand
Could stab a coward to the heart. I go!
I go, my lord; proud that I take with me
Of your countless herds by Hebron's brook
Of all your Canaan riches, naught but this—
A jug of water and a loaf of bread.
And now, by all of Egypt's gods, I swear
If it were not for Ishmael's dear sake
My feet would tread upon this bitter bread,
My hands would pour this water on the sands;
And leave this jug as empty as my heart
Is empty now of all the reverence
And overflowing love it held for you.
I go! But I will teach my little Ishmael
To hate his father for his mother's sake;
His bow shall be the truest bow that flies
Its arrows through the desert air. His feet,
The fleetest on the desert's sands;
Aye! Hagar's son a desert prince shall be,
Whose hands shall be against all other men;
And he shall rule a fierce and mighty tribe,
Whose fiery hearts and supple limbs will scorn
The chafing curb of bondage, like the fleet
Wild horses of Arabia. I go!
But like this loaf that you have given me,
So shall your bread taste bitter with my hate;
And like the water in this jug, my lord,
So shall the sweetest water that you draw
From Canaan's wells, taste salty with my tears.

Farewell! I go, but Egypt's mighty gods
Will go with me, and my revenge will be,
And in whatever distant land your God,

Your cruel God of Israel, is known,
There, too, the wrongs that you have done this day
To Hagar and your first-born, Ishmael,
Shall waken and uncoil themselves, and hiss
Like adders at the name of Abraham.

WHISTLING UP THE SUMMER

Hark how the wild birds whistle!
  Whistling down the spring,
Whistling up the summer;
  What will the summer bring?

Mocking-bird, jay, and robin,
  Sparrow, and wren, and thrush,
Partridge and yellow-hammer,
  Whistlers of the brush.

Whistling all together,
  Whistle the air, and hark!
A sparkling, dewy tenor
  Is trilled by the skyey lark.

Whistling up the summer—
  Oh, how the whistles ring!
God's whistlers whistle sweeter
  Than his sweetest singers sing.

Whistling up the summer—
  Perfect the tune and time;
The singer can only follow
  With musical tinkles of rhyme.

Whistle, and whistle, and whistle,
  Tinkle and tinkle, so!
Under, around, and high-over,
  Whistle and tinkle go.

Down in the meadow plowing,
  Reuben has caught the tune;
He whistles it loud and blithely—
  His wedding-day comes with June.

Over the hill his sweetheart
Sits at the homely loom,
Her feet beating time to the music,
Her fingers a-weaving bloom.

Whistling up the summer—
What can the summer bring
Whiter than wedding favors,
Brighter than wedding ring!

THRENODIA

I found my love in April,
I lost my love in May;
With the buds he came to seek me,
Ere they bloomed he went away,
And I care not for the flowers
Nor for anything in May.

When he went he kissed me, saying,
"'Tis a little short farewell!"
But the summer will not bring him,
And the winter will not bring him,
Though it ring the funeral knell
Of a fond and true heart broken,
By "a little short farewell."

All the roses see me weeping,
And they try to comfort me;
But they only make me sadder,
Make me weep the more to see
That the roses love me better
And are faithfuler than he.

Ah! for me there is no comfort,
And for me there is no May;
For 'tis love that makes the seasons
In a woman's heart alway—
Faithless love brings drear December,
Faithful love brings rosy May.

UNDER THE SNOW

Deep, deep, deep,
  Quickly, so none should know,
I buried my warm love stealthily
  Under the winter snow.

For you had coldly said,
  Coldly and carelessly,
"Bury your love or let it live,
  It is all the same to me."

I tore it out of my heart!
  I crushed it within my hand!
It cried to you in its agony
  For help, but you came not; and

It struggled within my grasp;
  It fought with my woman's will;
It kneeled to my woman's pride with tears
  Then silent it lay, and still.

I knew that it was not dead,
  But I said: "It soon will die,
Buried under the winter snow,
  Under the winter sky."

I kissed it tenderly,
  Just once, for the long ago;
Then shrouded it with your cold, cold words,
  Colder than all the snow!

Deep, deep, deep,
  Quickly, so none should know,
I buried my warm love stealthily
  Under the winter snow.

Then with my murderous hands
  I raised up the heavy stone
Of SILENCE over my buried love,
  Lest the world should hear it moan.

IDEALIZING

Were you a gentle Zephyr,
And I a Summer's Rose,
I would woo you to my bower—
You should kiss no other flower,
And when weary you should rest,
By my fragrant breath caressed,
Hidden deep within my breast:
Were you a gentle Zephyr, darling,
And I a Summer's Rose.

Were you the Wind of Autumn,
And I, your love, a Leaf,
From the home-tree I would sever,
And float with you forever
Down the Autumn's golden tide.
I would never, never chide,
For your maddest freak would be,
Summer zephyrs soft to me:
Were you the Wind of Autumn,
And I, your love, a Leaf.

If I were Queen of Summer,
And you were Winter's King,
I'd gather into posies
All my violets and roses,
All blossoms fresh and sweet,
And lay them at your feet,
At your cold and icy feet:
If I were Queen of Summer,
And you were Winter's King.

If I were Twilight's Lady,
And you were Lord of Day,
We would walk the dewy meadow
And mingle light and shadow;
You would smooth my dusky hair,
I would kiss your brow so fair:
If I were Twilight's Lady,
And you were Lord of Day.

Were you the Ocean, darling,
And I, your love, a Star,
On your bosom I would glisten;
I would bend me down and listen
To the great throbs of your heart;
Light and wave would never part:
Were you the Ocean, darling,
And I, your love, a Star.

Were you the Present, darling,
And I, your fate, the Past,
Naught but olden, golden treasures,
Wrapped around with rosy pleasures,
Would I ever bring to thee;
You would love to think of me:
Were you the Present, darling,
And I, your love, the Past.

ONLY A HEART

It is not a stone that will bruise, my lord,
Nor is it a serpent to sting;
A thorn to rend, a sword to pierce,
Or any vile poisonous thing.

Only a heart, a woman's heart,
Step on it! crush it! so!
Bravely done, like a gentleman,
Turn on your heel and go.

Only a heart! What harm is done?
Let it bleed in the dust and moan;
Or stifle its anguish as best it may,
Or stiffen, my lord, into stone.

Only a heart; it was fresh and young
And tender and warm, I know;
As pure as the spirit of chastity,
My lord; and it loved you so!

But nothing is lost: let it die, my lord,
  Let its death be quick or slow;
Such hearts are as plenty as summer leaves—
  We find them wherever we go.

Only a heart! do not fear, my lord,
  Nobody on earth is near
To come to the cry of the wounded thing,
  And God is too far to hear.

HENRY NORWOOD

CAROL M. NEWMAN

COLONEL HENRY NORWOOD'S claim to consideration as a Southern author rests upon two facts: he resided for several years in the Colony of Virginia, and he published a pamphlet entitled "A Voyage to Virginia." To note the principal events of his career both in the New World and elsewhere, and to comment upon his one literary production, is the object of the present sketch.

No record is to be found of Norwood's life before 1648, when, according to his own statement, he was in Holland and planned with certain royalist friends to take refuge from the political adversities of the day by seeking fortune in Virginia. The execution of King Charles at Whitehall strengthened this resolve; accordingly, on September 23, 1649, he and two companions, Majors Morrison and Fox, set sail from Deal in *The Virginia Merchant,* a ship of three hundred tons carrying some three hundred and thirty colonists bound for Jamestown. After a long and eventful voyage, the details of which are graphically narrated in "A Voyage to Virginia," Norwood, Morrison, and a few followers were deserted on an island off the coast of what is now Maryland, and only after many hardships finally succeeded in reaching Jamestown. The fact that Norwood bore a letter of recommendation from the King to Governor Berkeley, and was himself a near relative of Berkeley, insured his favorable reception. Following the King to Scotland, Norwood received the coveted appointment and no doubt returned at once to America. He seems to have held office only a very short time, however, for in 1652 the colony surrendered to the Parliamentary fleet and the treasurer must have been deprived of his position.

We next hear of Norwood in 1654, when he was imprisoned in the Tower of London—probably for political reasons. Here he remained for four years. Upon the restoration of King Charles to the English throne, however, Norwood's fortunes took an upward turn; he seems to have been one of the squires at the coronation; he was given for his private purse the Virginia quit-rents, a tax of twelvepence per annum on every fifty acres of land; he was appointed captain of Sandow Castle, Kent, commissioned lieutenant-colonel in Lord Rutherford's regiment, and made deputy-governor of the garrison at Dunkirk, Scotland. Thenceforth he seems to have been a

person of considerable importance, though it is not easy to give an accurate account of his doings. Between 1662 and 1666 he spent his time chiefly in Tangier and in London, though he was present at the surrender of Manhattan to the English in 1664. In 1667 he was appointed lieutenant-governor of Tangier, and he is known to have held this office for at least two years. What then became of him is uncertain; there is a strong probability, however, that he returned to Virginia and there passed the rest of his life. The time, place, and circumstances of his death seem nowhere to be recorded.

"A Voyage to Virginia," the only production from Norwood's pen that has been preserved to us, is an extremely interesting account of the experience of the author and his companions from the time of their departure from England until their ultimate arrival at Jamestown. Nothing remarkable happened to the voyagers until they reached Cape Hatteras; there they were almost dashed to pieces on the breaches, or reefs, but managed to get clear, only to be caught in a terrific storm that swept them hundreds of leagues from shore, dismantled the ship, and reduced the crew to a state bordering on starvation. When the weather moderated, temporary masts and sails were fitted up, and the vessel was brought once more within sight of land. The mate's mistake as to their exact location, however, caused them to miss their chance of entering between Capes Charles and Henry, and a northwest gale again carried them far from land.

After six weeks of battling with contrary winds and struggling against actual famine, they once more found themselves near land—but where, they knew not. Norwood, Morrison, and a few others availed themselves of the first opportunity to go on shore, and were thereupon deserted by the ship. To add to the horrors of their situation, they presently discovered that they were upon an uninhabited island at some distance from the mainland. Living on birds, oysters, and finally the dead bodies of their companions, the little party remained here for about ten days, when they were discovered and taken to the mainland by a band of Indians. With great difficulty the Indians were made to understand that Norwood and his companions wished to be conducted to Accomac, in Virginia, but they would not allow their visitors to depart until constrained by the arrival of messengers who had been sent out by Governor Berkeley to look for these poor castaways. Under the guidance of the messengers, the party, sadly diminished in number, reached their destination without further noteworthy adventures. Here Norwood was most cordially welcomed by his kinsman, the Governor, and presently sent by him to Holland in quest of the appointment as treasurer of the colony.

So much for the story Norwood tells. As to his style, it may be said that it compares most favorably with that of Smith, Strachey, and the other literary colonists of the day. It has its faults, to be sure, but they are the faults largely common to the prose of the time. The sentences are often long, straggling, and hopelessly lacking in unity, but so are most of the sentences to be found in the writings of Norwood's contemporaries. If the diction seems at times strained and unnatural, it must be remembered that the euphuistic influence was still strongly to be felt in English literature. On the whole, however, Norwood's style is direct, vigorous, natural—Elizabethan in character if not in time. The story is related in an artless, straightforward manner, with few digressions; the descriptive passages are well proportioned and remarkably vivid. Frequent humorous touches relieve the generally somber coloring of the narrative, but they are not more humorous than the artless revelations that the author makes of his own character: his selfishness, self-esteem, and other equally reprehensible but equally human traits. Like most of the gentleman-adventurers of the day, he seems somewhat inclined to exaggerate; but the reader easily pardons the loss in accuracy because of the gain in vividness. Altogether, Norwood's prose, while not that of a skilled literary craftsman, does credit to a man of affairs who must have found little time for the study of belles-lettres.

Carol M. Newman.

PERILOUS JOURNEY TO THE NEW WORLD

From 'A Voyage to Virginia.'

All the strength that remained unto us was employed in a heartless struggle to spin out life a little longer; for we still deemed ourselves doom'd to die by famine, from whose sharpest and most immediate darts tho' we seemed to be rescued for a small time, by meeting these contingent helps on shore, yet still we apprehended (and that on too great probability) they only served to reprieve us for a little longer day of execution, with all the dreadful circumstances of a lingering death.

For the south-west winds had carry'd away the fowl, brought store of rain; which meeting with a spring-tide, our

chief magazine, the oyster bank, was overflown; and as they became more inaccessible, our bodies also decayed so sensibly; that we could hardly pull them out of their muddy beds they grew on. And from this time forward we rarely saw the fowl; they now grew shy and kept aloof when they saw us contriving against their lives.

Add to this, our guns most of them unfix'd and out of order, and our powder much decayed, insomuch that nothing did now remain to prolong life, but what is counted rather sauce to whet, than substance to satisfy the appetite; I mean the oysters, which were not easily gotten by our crazy bodies after the quantity was spent that lay most commodious to be reach'd, and which had fed us for the first six days we had been on the island. And thus we wish'd every day to by the last of our lives, (if God had so pleased) so hopeless and desperate was our condition, all expectation of human succour being vanished and gone.

Of the three weak women before mentioned, one had the envied happiness to die about this time; and it was my advice to the survivors, who were following her apace, to endeavour their own preservation by converting her dead carcase into food, as they did to good effect. The same counsel was embrac'd by those of our sex; the living fed upon the dead; four of our company having the happiness to end their miserable lives on Sunday night the —— day of January. Their chief distemper, 'tis true, was hunger; but it pleased God to hasten their exit by an immoderate access of cold, caused by a most terrible storm of hail and snow at north-west, on the Sunday aforesaid, which did not only dispatch those four to their long homes, but did sorely threaten all that remained alive, to perish by the same fate.

Great was the toil that lay on my hands (as the strongest to labour) to get fuel together sufficient for our preservation. In the first place I divested myself of my great gown, which I spread at large, and extended against the wind in nature of a screen, having first shifted our quarters to the most calm commodious place that could be found to keep us, as much as possible, from the inclemency of that prodigious storm.

Under the shelter of this traverse, I took as many of my comrades as could be comprehended in so small a space; where-

as those who could not partake of that accommodation, and were enabled to make provision for themselves, were forced to suffer for it. And it was remarkable, that notwithstanding all the provision that could possibly be made against the sharpness of this cold, either by a well-burning fire consisting of two or three loads of wood, or shelter of their great gown to the windward, we could not be warm. That side of our wearing cloaths was singed and burnt which lay towards the flames, whilst the other side that was from the fire, became frozen and congeal'd. Those who lay to the leeward of the flame, could not stay long to enjoy the warmth so necessary to life, but were forced to quit and be gone to avoid suffocation by the smoke and flame.

When the day appeared, and the sun got up to dissipate the clouds, with downcast looks and dejected, the survivors of us entered into a final deliberation of what remained to be done on our parts (besides our prayers to Almighty God) to spin out a little longer time of life, and wait a further providence from heaven for our better relief. There were still some hands that retained vigour, tho' not in proportion to those difficulties we were to encounter, which humanly did seem insuperable. The unhappy circumstances of our being coop'd up in an island, was that which took from us all probable hopes of escaping this terrible death that did threaten us every hour. Major Morrison, on whose counsel I had reason to rely most, was extremely decayed in his strength, his legs not being able to support him. It was a wonderful mercy that mine remained in competent strength, for our common good, which I resolved by God's help, to employ for that end to the last gasp.

In this last resolution we had to make, I could not think on any thing worthy my proposal, but by an attempt to cross the creek, and swim to the main, (which was not above an hundred yards over) and being there to coast along the woods to the south-west (which was the bearing of Virginia) until I should meet Indians, who would either relieve or destroy us. I fancied the former would be our lot when they should see our conditions, and that no hurt was intended to them; or if they should prove inhuman, and of a bloody nature and would not give us quarter, why even in that case it would be

worth this labor of mine to procure a sudden period to all our miseries.

I open'd my thoughts to this purpose to the company, who were sadly surprised at the motion; but being fully convinc'd in their judgment, that this was the only course that could be depended on (humanly speaking) for our relief, they all agreed it must be done.

* * * * * *

The next morning, being the ninth or tenth of our being there, I fell to work afresh, hoping to be ready to begin my journey that day; and being very busy, intelligence was brought, that a canoe was seen to lie on the broken ground to the south of our island, which was not discovered till now, since our being there; but this I thought might be a mistake cast in the same mould of many others that had deceived those discoverers, who fancy'd all things real according to their own wishes. But when it was told me, that Indians had been at the poor women's cabbin in the night, and had given them shell-fish to eat, that was a demonstration of reality beyond all suspicion. I went immediately to be inform'd from themselves, and they both avowed it for truth, shewing the shells, (the like whereof I ne'er had seen) and this I took for proof of what they said.

The further account these women gave of the Indians, was, that they pointed to the south-east with their hands, which they know not how to interpret, but did imagine by their several gestures, they would be with them again to-morrow. Their pointing to the south-east was like to be the time they would come, meaning nine o'clock to be their hour, where the sun will be at that time. Had the women understood their language, they could not have learned the time of the day by any other computation than pointing at the sun. It is all the clock they have for the day, as the coming and going of the Cabuncks (the geese) is their almanack or prognostick for the winter and summer seasons.

This news gave us all new life, almost working miracles amongst us, by making those who desponded, and totally yielded themselves up to the weight of despair, and lay down with an intent never more to rise again, to take up their beds and walk. This friendly charitable visit of the Indians did

also put a stop to my preparations to seek them, who had so humanely prevented me, by their seeking ways to preserve and save our lives.

Instead of those preparations for my march which had cost me so much pains, I passed my time now in contriving the fittest posture our present condition would allow us to put on when these angels of light should appear again with the glad tidings of our relief; and the result was, that every able man should have his gun lying by his side, laden with shot, and as fit for use as possible, but not to be handled unless the Indians came to us like enemies, (which was very unlikely, the premises considered) and then to sell our lives at as dear a rate as we could; but if they came in an amicable posture, then would we meet them unarm'd, cheerfully, which the Indians like, and hate to see a melancholy face.

In these joyful hopes of unexpected deliverance by these Indians, did we pass the interval of their absence. Every eye look'd sharply out when the sun was at south-east, to peep thro' the avenues of the wood to discover the approaches of our new friends. When the sun came to the south we thought ourselves forgotten by them, and began to doubt the worst, as losing gamesters, at play for their last estate, suspect some stabcast to defeat the hopes of the fairest game. We feared some miscarriage, either from their inconstancy by change of their mind, or that some unlook'd-for misfortune that our evil fates reserved for us, had interposed for our ruin.

Scouts were sent out to the right and left hands, without discovery of any body all the forenoon; and then, considering our case admitted no delay, I began to resume my former resolution of swimming to them that would not come to us. But how wholesome soever this counsel might seem in itself, it was most difficult to be put in practice, in regard of the cold time.

The northerly wind that in these climates does blow very cold in the heat of summer, does much more distemper the air in the winter season (as our poor comrades felt that Sunday night to their cost) and did send so cold a gale upon the surface of the water in the creek I was to pass, that, in the general opinion of all the concern'd, it was not a thing to be attempted; and that if I did, I must surely perish in the act. I was easily

perswaded to forbear an action so dangerous, and the rather, because I verily believed the Indians would bring us off, if our patience would hold out.

About the hours of two or three o'clock it pleased God to change the face of our condition for the best; for whilst I was busy at the fire in preparations to wait on them, the Indians, who had placed themselves behind a very great tree, discovered their faces with most cheerful smiles, without any kind of arms, or appearance of evil design; the whole number of them (perhaps twenty or thirty in all) consisting of men, women and children; all that could speak accosting us with joyful countenances, shaking hands with every one they met. The words "Ny Top," often repeated by them, made us believe they bore a friendly signification, as they were soon interpreted to signify "my friend."

After many salutations and "Ny Tops" interchang'd, the night approaching, we fell to parley with each other; but performed it in signs more confounded and unintelligible than any other conversation I ever met withal; as hard to be interpreted as if they had express'd their thoughts in the Hebrew or Chaldean tongues.

They did me the honor to make all application to me, as being of largest dimensions, and equip'd in a camblet coat glittering with galoon lace of gold and silver, it being generally true, that where knowledge informs not, the habit qualifies.

The ears of Indian corn they gave us for present sustenance, needed no other interpreter to let them know how much more acceptable it was to us than the sight of dead and living corpses, which raised great compassion in them, especially in the women, who are observed to be of a soft tender nature.

One of them made me a present of the leg of a swan, which I eat as privately as it was given me, and thought it so much the more excellent, by how much it was larger than the greatest limb of any fowl I ever saw.

The Indians stayed with us about two hours, and parted not without a new appointment to see us again the next day; and the hour we were to expect them by their pointing to the sun, was to be at two o'clock in the afternoon. I made the chief of them presents of ribbon and other slight trade, which

they lov'd, designing, by mutual endearment, to let them see, it would gratify their interest as well as their charity, to treat us well. "Ha-na Haw" was their parting word, which is "farewell," pointing again at the place where the sun would be at our next meeting. We took leave in their own words "Ha-na Haw."

* * * * * *

When these Indians came up to us, this doubt was soon cleared. The good-natur'd king being inform'd of our bodily weakness, and inability to walk thro' the woods to his house on foot, (which might be about four miles distant from our setting out) had a real tenderness for us, and sent canoes to carry us to the place nearest his house, by the favor of another branch of the same creek; and to the end we might take no vain steps (as we were going to do) and exhaust our strength to no purpose, these Indians made this noise to stop us.

We entered the canoes that were mann'd, and lay ready to receive us. We had a pleasant passage in the shallow water, eat oysters all the way; for altho' the breakfast we had newly made, might well excuse a longer abstinence than we were like to be put to, our arrear to our stomachs was so great, that all we swallowed was soon concocted, and our appetite still fresh and craving more.

Having pass'd this new course for some three English miles in another branch of the creek, our landing place was contriv'd to be near the house of the queen then in waiting. She was a very plain lady to see to, not young, nor yet ill-favour'd. Her complexion was of a sad white; but the measures of beauty in those parts where they are exposed to the scorching sun from their infancy, are not taken from red and white, but from colors that will better lie upon their tawny skins, as hereafter will be seen.

The beauty of this queen's mind (which is more permanent than that of colour) was conspicuous in her charity and generosity to us poor starved weather-beaten creatures, who were the object of it. A mat was spread without the house, upon the ground, furnish'd with pone, homini, oysters, and other things. The queen made us sit down and eat, with gestures that shewed more of courtesy than majesty, but did speak as hearty welcome as could in silence be expected; and

these were the graces that, in our opinion, transcended all other beauties in the world, and did abundantly supply all defects of outward appearance in the person and garb of the queen. The southerly wind made the season tolerable; but that lasted but little, the north-west gale coming violently on us again.

When this collation of the queen was at an end, we took leave of her majesty with all the shews of gratitude that silence knew how to utter. We were now within half an hour's walk of the king's mansion, which we soon discovered by the smoak, and saw it was made of the same stuff with the other houses from which we had newly parted, namely, of mat and reed. Locust posts sunk in the ground at corners and partitions, was the strength of the whole fabrick. The roof was tied fast to the body with a sort of strong rushes that grow there, which supply'd the place of nails and pins, mortises and tenons.

The breadth of this palace was about eighteen or twenty foot, the length about twenty yards. The only furniture was several platforms for lodging, each about two yards long and more, plac'd on both sides of the house, distant from each other about five foot; the space in the middle was the chimney, which had a hole in the roof over it, to receive as much of the smoak as would naturally repair to it; the rest we shared amongst us, which was the greatest part; and the sitters divided to each side, as our soldiers do in their *corps de guarde*.

Fourteen great fires, thus situated, were burning all at once. The king's apartment had a distinction from the rest; it was twice as long, and the bank he sat on was adorn'd with deer skins finely dress'd, and the best furrs of otter and beaver that the country did produce.

The fire assign'd to us was suitable to our number, to which we were conducted, without intermixture of any Indian but such as came to do us offices of friendship. There we were permitted to take our rest until the king pleased to enter into communication with us. Previous to which he sent his daughter, a well-favour'd young girl of about ten or twelve years old, with a great wooden bowl full of homini (which is the corn of that country, beat and boiled to mash). She did in a most obliging manner give me the first taste of it, which I would have handed to my next neighbor after I had eaten, but

the young princess interposed her hand, and taking the bowl out of mine, delivered it to the same party I aimed to give it, and so to all the rest in order. Instead of a spoon there was a well-shap'd muscle-shell that accompanied the bowl.

The linen of that country grows ready made on the branches of oak trees (or pine); the English call it moss. It is like the threads of unwhited cotton-yarn ravelled, and hangs in parcels on the lower boughs, divine providence having so ordered it for the conveniency and sustenance of the deer, which is all the food they can get in times of snow. It is very soft, sweet and cleanly, and fit for the purpose of wiping clean the hands, and doing the duty of napkins.

About three hours after this meal was ended, the king sent to have me come to him. He called me "Ny a Mutt," which is to say, "My brother," and compelled me to sit down on the same bank with himself, which I had reason to look upon as a mighty favour. After I had sat there about half an hour, and taken notice of many earnest discourses and repartees betwixt the king and his "crotemen," (so the Indians call the king's council) I could plainly discover, that the debate they held was concerning our adventure and coming there. To make it more clear, the king address'd himself to me with many gestures of his body, his arms display'd in various postures, to explain what he had in his mind to utter for my better understanding. By all which motions I was not edify'd in the least, nor could imagine what return to make by voice or sign, to satisfy the king's demands in any thing that related to the present straights of our condition. In fine, I admir'd their patient sufferance of my dulness to comprehend what they meant, and shew'd myself to be troubled at it; which being perceiv'd by the king, he turn'd all into mirth and jollity, and never left till he made me laugh with him, tho' I knew not why.

I took this occasion to present the king with a sword and long shoulder-belt, which he received very kindly; and to witness his gracious acceptance, he threw off his "Mach coat," (or upper covering of skin) stood upright on his bank, and, with my aid, did accoutre his naked body with his new harness, which had no other apparel to adorn it, besides a few skins about his loyns to cover his nakedness. In this dress he

seem'd to be much delighted; but to me he appear'd a figure of such extraordinary shape, with sword and belt to set it off, that he needed now no other art to stir me up to laughter and mirth, than the sight of his own proper person.

Having made this short acquaintance with the king, I took leave, and returned to my comrades. In passing the spaces betwixt fire and fire, one space amongst the rest was blinded with a traverse of mat; and by the noise I heard from thence, like the beating of hemp, I took it to be some kind of elaboratory. To satisfy a curiosity I had to be more particularly inform'd, I edg'd close to the mat; and, by standing on tiptoe for a full discovery, I saw a sight that gave me no small trouble. The same specifical queen (whose courtesy for our kind usage the other day, can never be enough applauded) was now employed in the hard servile labour of beating corn for the king's dinner, which raised the noise that made me thus inquisitive. I wish'd myself in her place for her ease; but the queens of that country do esteem it a privilege to serve their husbands in all kinds of cookery, which they would be as loth to lose, as any Christian queen would be to take it from them.

Several Indians of the first rank followed me to our quarters, and used their best endeavours to sift something from us that might give them light into knowing what we were. They sought many ways to make their thoughts intelligible to us, but still we parted without knowing what to fix upon, or how to steer our course in advance of our way to Virginia.

* * * * * *

By better acquaintance with these our deliverers, we learned that we were about fifty English miles from Virginia. That part of it where Jenkin did govern, was call'd Littleton's Plantation, and was the first English ground we did expect to see. He gave me great encouragement to endure the length of the way, by assuring me I should not find either stone or shrub to hurt my feet thorow my thin-soaled boots, for the whole colony had neither stone nor underwood; and having thus satisfy'd my curiosity in the knowledge of what Jenkin Price could communicate, we deferred no longer to resolve how and when to begin our journey to Ackomack.

The Indian he had brought with him (who afterwards

lived and died my servant) was very expert, and a most incomparable guide in the woods we were to pass, being a native of those parts, so that he was as our sheet-anchor in this our peregrination. The king was loth to let us go till the weather was better temper'd for our bodies; but when he saw we were fully resolved, and had pitch'd upon the next morning to begin our journey, he found himself much defeated in a purpose he had taken to call together all the flower of his kingdom to entertain us with a dance, to the end that nothing might be omitted on his part for our divertisement, as well as our nourishment, which his small territory could produce. Most of our company would gladly have deferred our march a day longer, to see this masquerade, but I was wholly bent for Ackomack, to which place I was to dance almost on my bare feet, the thoughts of which took off the edge I might otherwise have had to novelties of that kind.

When the good old king saw that we were fully determined to be gone the next day, he desired as a pledge of my affection to him, that I would give him my camblet coat, which he vowed to wear whilst he lived for my sake; I shook hands to shew my willingness to please him in that or in any other thing he would command, and was the more willing to do myself the honour of compliance in this particular, because he was the first king I could call to mind that ever shew'd any inclinations to wear my old cloaths.

To the young princess, that had so signally obliged me, I presented a piece of two-penny scarlet ribbon, and a French tweezer, that I had in my pocket, which made her skip for joy, and to shew how little she fancy'd our way of carrying them concealed, she retired apart for some time, and taking out every individual piece of which it was furnished, she tied a snip of ribbon to each, and so came back with scissars, knives and bodkins hanging at her ears, neck and hair. The case itself was not excus'd, but bore a part in this new dress: and to the end we might not part without leaving deep impressions of her beauty in our minds, she had prepared on her forefingers, a lick of paint on each, the colours (to my best remembrance) green and yellow, which at one motion she discharg'd on her face, beginning upon her temples, and continu-

ing it in an oval line downwards as far as it would hold out. I could have wished this young princess would have contented herself with what nature had done for her, without this addition of paint (which, I thought, made her more fulsome than handsome); but I had reason to imagine the royal family were only to use this ornament exclusive of all others, for that I saw none other of her sex so set off; and this conceit made it turn again, and appear lovely, as all things should do that are honour'd with the royal stamp.

I was not furnish'd with anything upon the place, fit to make a return to the two queens for the great charity they used to feed and warm me; but when I came into a place where I could be supply'd, I was not wanting that way, according to my power.

Early next morning we put our selves in posture to be gone, *viz.* Major Stephens, myself, and three or four more, whose names are worn out of my mind. Major Morrison was so far recovered as to be heart-whole, but he wanted strength to go thro' so great a labour as this was like to prove. We left him with some others to be brought in boats that the governor had order'd for their accommodation; and with them the two weak women, who were much recovered by the good care and nourishment they receiv'd in the poor fisherman's house.

Breakfast being done, and our pilot Jack ready to set out, we took a solemn leave of the good king. He enclosed me in his arms with kind embraces, not without expressions of sorrow to part, beyond the common rate of new acquaintance. I made Jack pump up his best compliments, which at present was all I was capable to return to the king's kindness; and so, after many "Ha-na Haws," we parted.

* * * * * *

It pleased God to send us dry weather, and not excessive cold. We had made provision of Pone to bait on by the way, and we found good water to refresh us; but all this did not hinder my being tir'd and spent almost to the last degree. Jack very kindly offer'd his service to carry me on his shoulders (for I was brought to a moderate weight by the strict diet I had been in) but that would have been more uneasy to me, in contemplation of his more than double pains, and so I re-

solved to try my utmost strength, without placing so great a weight on his shoulders.

The hopes of seeing English ground in America, and that in so short a time as they made us expect, did animate my spirits to the utmost point. Jack fearing the worst, was of opinion, that we should call at his aunt's town, the queen of Pomunkin, not far out of the way; but Jenkin Price opposed that motion, and did assure me that our journey's end was at hand. His words and my own inclination carried the question, and I resolved, by God's help that night to sleep at Jenkin's house.

But the distance proving yet greater than had been described, and my boots trashing me almost beyond all sufferance, I became desperate, and ready to sink and lie down. Jenkin lull'd me on still with words that spurr'd me to the quick; and would demonstrate the little distance betwixt us and his plantation, by the sight of hogs and cattle, of which species the Indians were not masters. I was fully convinc'd of what he said, but would however, have consented to a motion of lying without doors on the ground, within two or three flights shot of the place, to save the labour of so small a remainder.

The close of the evening, and a little more patience (thro' the infinite goodness of the Almighty) did put a happy period to our cross adventure. A large bed of sweet straw was spread ready in Jenkin's house for our reception, upon which I did hasten to extend and stretch my wearied limbs. And being thus brought into safe harbour by the many miracles of divine mercy, from all the storms and fatigues, perils and necessities to which he had been exposed by sea and land for almost the space of four months, I cannot conclude this voyage in more proper terms, than the words that are the burthen of that psalm of providence, "O that men would therefore praise the Lord for his goodness, and for his wondrous works unto the children of men!"

Our landlord Jenkin Price, and conductor Jack took care to provide meat for us; and there being a dairy and hens, we could not want. As for our stomachs, they were open at all hours to eat whatever was set before us, as soon as our wear-

ied bodies were refresh'd with sleep. It was on Saturday the —— day of January, that we ended this our wearisome pilgrimage, and entered into our King's dominion at Achomat, called by the English Northampton county, which is the only county on that side of the bay belonging to the colony of Virginia, and is the best of the whole for all sorts of necessaries for human life.

HENRY JUNIUS NOTT

[1797—1837]

ST. JAMES CUMMINGS, JR

HENRY JUNIUS NOTT, the son of Judge Abraham Nott and Angelica Michell, his wife, was born in the Union District on the Pacolet River, South Carolina, November 4, 1797. When the boy was seven years old the family removed to Columbia, South Carolina, and Henry soon afterward became a student at the Columbia Academy. He entered the South Carolina College in 1810 and was graduated with the class of 1814. About this time he went with Mr. Ainslie Hall to Scotland, remaining a few months, during which time he visited London, where he gathered material for some of 'The Novelettes of a Traveler.'

He read law, and was admitted to the Bar in 1818. Having formed a law partnership with Colonel David J. McCord, he assisted in compiling the 'Nott and McCord Reports,' containing the decisions of the Constitutional Court from 1818 to 1820, inclusive.

In 1821 he went to Europe to pursue special studies in literature and philosophy. He spent most of his time in France and Holland, and returned to his home to fill the chair of criticism, logic, and the philosophy of languages in the South Carolina College, to which position he had been elected in December, 1824. From that date till his death, October 13, 1837, he served faithfully in promoting the welfare of his *alma mater*.

As a boy Professor Nott had shown an unusual fondness for literature. It is recorded in the family annals that he learned to read at the age of four. He had a remarkable memory; and one instance may be given of his mastery over his mental experiences. When nine or ten years old, after a severe illness, he was sent up the country to an aunt's to recuperate. Among the books he found there was 'Religious Courtship,' by DeFoe. When years afterward he undertook to review the works of DeFoe, he was not able to procure the book in the United States. Having ordered it from London, he gave his sister a detailed synopsis of its contents, to test his memory; and when she read the volume after its arrival she was surprised to note how perfectly he recalled it.* His youthful conversation was filled

*According to our author's niece, Mrs. Celina E. Means, of Shandon, Columbia, South Carolina, from whom much interesting information has been received.

with copious quotations from the Bible, Shakespeare, Milton, Burns, and his other favorites. In fact, he lived with his authors, bringing in their opinions in support of his arguments on matters of daily interest.

He studied law because he thought a son ought to take up his father's profession. Still, the earnest attention he paid to it gave him a fair standing with his professional rivals, among whom were some of the best lawyers in the State; and in the three years of his legal experience he enjoyed a good practice. Then his father, seeing his great love for *belles-lettres,* made no objection to his abandoning law, and even encouraged him to go to Europe for special training. During several years he took advantage of his stimulating opportunities, and developed steadily in scholarly power.

As Dr. M. LaBorde writes in his account of Professor Nott: "He had read and mastered all that was valuable in polite literature, and studied most carefully the department of Criticism. His knowledge of the ancient languages, and more particularly of the Latin, was critical; and to these he added the most familiar acquaintance with the French, the German, and other modern languages. These were his favorite studies, but it would be great injustice to conclude that his knowledge did not extend beyond their limits. It is only true that his chief excellence was to be found in them."

Brilliant in conversational powers, he had the rare courtesy of being an encouraging listener; and, though a hearty lover of fun, he was considerate of the finer feelings of his acquaintances, and was innocent of the experience of having an enemy. The enjoyment of music sweetened his literary labors, and, like Sidney Lanier, he was a skilful flute-player. His work and influence as a professor gained him the admiration and the love of the trustees, the faculty, and the students of his college. He was Chairman of the Faculty from January, 1835, to January, 1836. In administrative ability, in zeal and success in teaching, in the graces and virtues of social intercourse, he was a representative of the best citizenship of his day. Though his life was short and filled with professional obligations, he found time to make a name for himself in two fields of literature—fiction and scholarly criticism.

'Novelettes of a Traveler; or, Odds and Ends from the Knapsack of Thomas Singularity, Journeyman Printer,' in two volumes, was published in New York, 1834. The author shows the fruits of his travels, not only in the variety of places used for the scenes of his stories, but by an enlightened sympathy for mankind in all conditions. The lines from Goethe on the title-page show that Nott himself realized his own catholicity:

"Was eine lange weite Strecke
Im Leben von einander stand,
Das kommt nun unter einer Decke
Dem guten Leser in die Hand."

It is believed that Thomas Singularity was suggested in several particulars by Nott's acquaintance with a printer in Columbia, whose name was Thomas Singletary. The biographical sketch of Thomas Singularity, the longest of the novelettes, is an exhibition of our author's charitable humor, that clothes with grace the vanity, the follies and vices of a roving ne'er-do-weel. The details in this story, and in some of the others in the two volumes, gave "offence to the religious community." It may easily be believed that there are some good people whose skirts have been kept clear of characters like Tommy. For these people to see him through the eyes of Professor Nott is certainly no misfortune: it is rather a refreshment. To deem Nott offensive in the breadth of his treatment is almost to impeach the sterling worth of the bulk of Southern humor long since taken home to our hearts.

The materials for another story, "Cock Robin," were gathered during Nott's early visit to Europe. Here is portrayed the unhappy existence of one who is made the sport of Nature and man in turn. Robert Wilson, or Cock Robin, is a mannikin, a dwarf gentleman. He is petted for his prettiness and brightness in boyhood. When he comes of age, and is still dwarfed, he finds that he is treated with kindly condescension or open mockery whenever he attempts to play the part of a man. In any of the relations of life this seems bad enough; but when he comes to love-making, and proposing to marry, he is horrified at his destiny. Every serious aim of his life is deflected from its object in the direction of those whose amusement it is to score every action of the little man in terms of their own mischief.

"The Andalusian Rope-dancer," the scene of which is laid in Spain, presents a simple and charming love story. Pastoral gallantry and modesty play in the sunshine and fragrance of old Spain. "The Traveler" here is very much at home.

During his residence in Europe, Professor Nott had married a French lady. On the thirteenth of October, 1837, he and his wife were lost in the wreck of the steamer *Home*, off the coast of North Carolina. He was a good swimmer, but ignored the entreaties of his wife and his friends to save himself, preferring to remain by her side to the last. A daughter, Amelia, survived them, and became the wife of William McKenzie Parker. This envelops with peculiar interest the story of "The Shipwreck," in which a father and a mother perish, but their little daughter is saved. The realistic details of the

disaster, and the searching attention directed to the subsequent fortunes of the orphan daughter, strike the reader with a suspicion of what might be called a vague instinct of literary premonition.

The other novelettes—"The Solitary," placed in South Carolina; "The Counterfeiters," in the mountains of North Carolina, and "The French Officer," in France—make up, with those described, a group of what to-day would be considered long short-stories, revealing a close study of environment and temperament, and all cast in a clear and finished literary mould.

In *The Southern Review* Professor Nott published his lives of the four great classical masters, Erasmus, Daniel Wyttenbach, Paul Louis Courier, and Dr. Samuel Parr. These men he treated as heroes of scholarship. Theologian, soldier, editor, reformer, or professor, each appealed to him as a man made admirable in power and dignity through the amelioration of learning. "Who can calculate," he writes, "how many of the rising generation are incited to mental culture by the contemplation of a richly gifted and richly stored understanding? . . . or how many of more mature age have their intellectual ardor kept alive by intercourse with those who can resolve doubts, confuse errors, communicate information, or give certainty to opinion?"

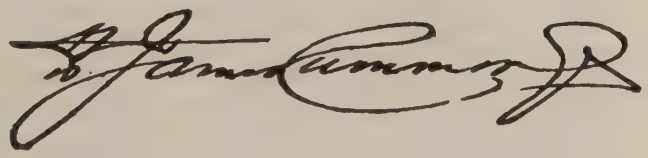
In the two articles on D'Aguesseau and Judge Jeffreys, Professor Nott has drawn at length the difference between the noble and the ignoble Chancellor. He balances praise and blame on a wise discrimination as to their character, and the services to which they applied the laws of their countries in almost the same period. The article on D'Aguesseau has been reprinted as the last paper in the collected works of Hugh Swinton Legaré, edited by his sister. But LaBorde and Duyckinck have credited it to Nott. We may concede collaboration in the authorship. A reading of the last few pages of Nott's article on 'Woolrych's Life of Judge Jeffreys' will tend to confirm the belief that its author had a fair share in the appraisal of D'Aguesseau.

The article 'Travels in China' contains interesting and instructive comments on a series of extracts from a journal of a traveler in China (1820-1821). His study of DeFoe was a work of love. He must have kept the books of that heroic figure in an ample alcove of his library. The labors of DeFoe the politician, historian, moralist, projector, romancer, and reformer, Nott interprets by the light of political and religious history, and the changeable social life of the times. He views with interest the energetic Englishman tilting against the conventionalities of prejudice, ignorance, slothfulness, cruelty and hypocrisy. He regards DeFoe as a man of "uncommon honesty and conscientiousness," and records that "during a period of thirty

years his pen never tired in the cause of liberty, though menaced by penalty, prison and poverty."

Where art and scholarship have joined to express the conceptions of one mind, individual taste must often decide the preference for the results. Perhaps fewer persons would succeed in writing the critical articles of Henry Junius Nott than in matching the stories he has given us. But the difference would not be in the language. For directness, simplicity, and clearness, he is almost a model. His humor in displaying the secret springs of man's actions, and the gentle craft with which he transcribes the beauties of natural scenery, shed a pleasing and varying light on his sentences; and the play of his sprightly phrases furnishes the reader with an enjoyment of delicate surprises.

A scholar, with a strong memory, and with a sincere devotion to other languages, he has treasured as his birthright the native excellences of his mother-tongue. Though stricken in his prime, he is not to be judged by his promise alone; for, by the work he accomplished, he remains a worthy representative of the Southern writers of a past generation.



BIBLIOGRAPHY

Nott and McCord's Reports for the years 1818, 1819, and 1820.
Life of Wyttenbach. Vol. I, May, 1828.
Life of Erasmus. Vol. II, February, 1829.
Memoirs of Dr. Parr. Vol. III, May, 1829.
Travels in China. Vol. IV, August, 1829.
Paul Louis Courier. Vol. V, February, 1830.
The Life and Times of Daniel DeFoe. Vol. VI, May, 1831.
Woolrych's Life of Judge Jeffreys. Vol. VII, August, 1831.
D'Aguesseau. Vol. VIII, February, 1832.

The following two volumes were published for the Proprietors, Charleston, in *The Southern Review,* May, 1828, to February, 1832:

Novelettes of a Traveler; or, Odds and Ends from the Knapsack of Thomas Singularity, Journeyman Printer. 2 vols. New York, 1834.

Cyclopædia of American Biography. New York, Appleton and Company.
Cyclopædia of American Literature. New York, E. A. and G. L. Duyckinck, 1856.
Encyclopædia Britannica, American Supplement. New York.
Dictionary of Authors. By S. Austin Allibone. Philadelphia.
History of the South Carolina College. By Dr. M. LaBorde, Charleston, 1874.
Bench and Bar of South Carolina. By John Belton O'Neall. 2 vols., Charleston, 1859.

TOMMY THE COUNTERFEIT

Thomas Singularity was probably born in the city of Charleston, South Carolina, somewhere about January, 1795. I say probably, for like Homer and Cervantes, the date and place of his birth are somewhat uncertain. This much only is known. About the period just mentioned, as Mr. Zephaniah Hunt, a substantial grocer in that city, and his wife were seated at tea-table, just after nightfall, they were alarmed by a kind of screaming in the passage near the street door. Mrs. Hunt, after listening a little, said, "Husband, a child is certainly crying there." To which Mr. Hunt replied with infinite tranquillity, "I guess as how it's one of them kittens a-mewing" —for they had at that time a litter of kittens of the Angora breed, if I remember right. Hardly had the worthy grocer spoken when they heard such a squall as proved the correctness of his helpmate's supposition. Both husband and wife rushed into the passage, where, to their surprise, they beheld a basket containing a small, half-famished looking child of not more than a month old. This was my friend Singularity! The good couple looked at each other for some time in silence, and then began to wonder and guess, to no purpose, as to the origin of the stranger. One thing was sure—that they could not throw a helpless being like this into the street. Mrs. Hunt, however, declared that in conscience they ought, the very next day, to pack the brat off to the orphan-house, as she doubted not that it "had been conceived in sin, and brought forth in iniquity." Though in all cases a prudent, gainsaying kind of a man, Mr. Hunt's bowels for once yearned with pity, and he

pleaded with his spouse that, inasmuch as their marriage was barren, they should at least give the little unfortunate a domicile till they could make due perquisition about it. This request was proposed in a singularly bland tone, but with that peculiar propriety and force of emphasis he was wont to use when he might not be gainsaid.

From day to day the foundling increased in the affection of his protector, to whom, strange as it may seem, he exhibited a prodigious likeness. This was enough, in the present generation, to excite the surmises and gibes of wicked fancies and slanderous tongues, although it was well known that Zephaniah came from the land of steady habits, and was then a burning and a shining light of orthodox faith. True it was that, "in life's merry morn," he had cut his gambols as wildly as an ass's colt; but he had long ago eschewed his youthful follies, and especially since entering the holy bands of wedlock had been of staid, I had almost said, of saintly demeanor. He was regular every Sunday, or, as he always termed it, Sabbath, in attending morning and evening service, at the latter of which, of a verity, he generally took a comfortable snooze; belonged to the Tract Society, Missionary Society, Peace Society, Temperance Society, Abolition Society, and the Society for the Promotion of Psalmody, whereof he led the bass. But as the bard of Avon has said or sung, "Be thou as chaste as ice, as pure as snow, thou shalt not escape calumny." Various young men, that prowled about when honest people should be at home, abed and asleep, intimated, in what might be called Irish hints, that they had espied the worthy Mr. Hunt at irregular places and at irregular hours. The censorious, too, had expressed their suspicions, that as his helpmate was a good ten years older than himself, and had brought a substantial dowry, his match had proceeded more from a love of filthy lucre than from that ethereal flame which warmed the bosom of chivalry or inspired the lay of the troubadour. The perfect "counterfeit presentment" that the foundling exhibited to the honest man was a constant theme with those who wished to bring him to shame, and was eventually whispered by some kind friend into the ears of his spouse. Now although she had a "pretty considerable" belief in Zephaniah's marital faith and seraphic piety, still it must be confessed that she was but

a woman, and the monster, whom poets portray as green-eyed, communicated a beryl tinge to the cat-like visual ray of Mrs. Hunt, that rapidly assumed the deepest hue of the emerald. She boldly upbraided her husband for contaminating the sanctuary of married life with the unholy fruit of his wayward propensities, and required that the bantling should forthwith be sent a-packing, as one roof could no longer cover both of them. Mr. Hunt, after expressing some astonishment at this outrageous and unmerited attack, replied with marvelous mildness and composure, that, as for turning out of doors a helpless infant, cast, as it were, by Providence under his protection, he could not and would not do it; but as for her staying under the same roof, he, as a Christian, did not think himself authorized to employ any compulsion over one he had ever considered his equal, and that therefore she was at liberty to go when and where to her seemed meet. Upon this she burst into a flood of tears, calling him a cruel, perjured man, with many other such endearing epithets, and then fell into strong hysterics, accompanied by loud screams and violent kicks. As I have before noticed, he was a man of wondrously composed temperament, and not liking scenes of this kind, he slipped off easily into the shop, where he drank a pint of Philadelphia beer qualified with a gill of New England rum; then putting a quid of pigtail tobacco in his mouth, he bid his clerk to keep a tight eye on the shop, and walked off to attend a meeting of the Magdalen Society. Meanwhile the afflicted fair one, stealthily opening an eye, perceived that she was alone; and foreseeing that nothing was to be gained by a farther contest, got up, wiped off her tears with the corner of her apron, and made up her mind to remain rather by her own cozy fireside, than to run the risk of going farther and faring worse. Yet for a long tract of time she continued in the dumps, and poured forth her sorrows to the neighboring gossips, by all of whom her lord and master was vilipended as a barbarous husband and most salacious old heathen. He, perhaps thinking, according to the proverb, that the least said is soonest mended, held "the noiseless tenor of his way" with as much composure as a veteran porker amid the impotent attacks of a nest of hornets, until, persuaded by his sober carriage, one-half of his enemies began to doubt, and the other, turning fairly round,

declared his wife a jealous, weak-minded body, and him an injured saint.

If Mrs. Hunt could not root out this sprout of bad odor that flourished under her very nose, she made up for it by worrying and misusing the infant as much as she could, unbeknown to the vigilant gaze of her husband; and, as business often carried him out of the way, Tommy, it may be supposed, "glinted forth amid the storm." For a long time the little one was without a name, till at length the lady of the house, from the singular leanness and oddity of his exterior, or the singularity of his first appearance under her roof, or malice, called him "Singularity"; and Tom, or Thomas, after a huge tom-cat, to which she found out a striking similarity. Her husband, knowing that "a rose by any other name would smell as sweet," quietly acquiesced. So Thomas Singularity was he called, and as Thomas Singularity will he go down to posterity.

Up to the age of twelve, Singularity was carefully instructed in reading, writing, arithmetic, grammar, and history, and made as good progress as could be expected. With his pen he was so successful that even then he began to be celebrated for the beautiful hand that he so much perfected afterward. I have often seen him write the Lord's Prayer on a piece of paper not so large as the thumb nail, the letters of which could only be read with a magnifying glass. He seemed to have had a kind of instinctive love for reading; for neither Mr. nor Mrs. Hunt had any turn that way, nor did they try to infuse the taste into him. Among other books, he informed that he had read at this period, 'Jack Sheppard,' the famous pickpocket and housebreaker; Sternhold and Hopkins's 'Version of the Psalms,' a poetical 'Life of John Wesley,' the 'Newgate Calendar,' 'Life of Captain Boyle,' Bunyan's 'Pilgrim's Progress,' 'Life of Jonathan Wild,' 'A Hard Shove,' Rochester's 'Poems,' 'Life of Donald M'Donald, the Highland Thief,' Alein's 'Alarm to the Unconverted,' 'George Buchanan,' 'Laugh and Be Fat,' Law's 'Serious Call,' 'Life of Bamfylde Moore Carew' (king of the gipsies), 'Joe Miller,' Cave's 'Lives of the Martyrs,' besides many dream-books, poems, novels and sermons, which had slipped from his memory. But what Tommy told me he prized not less, he picked up much practical wisdom in the ways of the world. He saw daily how

Mr. Hunt made genuine Southside Madeira by pouring Teneriffe into casks bearing the well-known names of Leacock, Newton, and Penfold, to which the custom-house brand had been affixed; how, by mixing old butter with new, he added to the quantity of Goshen; how, by percolation, he took out the peculiar flavor of cider, and by adding thereto a little sugar-candy and cream of tartar, it was converted into Sillery Mousseux; how, by infusing a proper proportion of the required article into neutral spirits, he made Cognac brandy, Jamaica rum, Scheidam, and eke Cologne gin; how he filled bottles, stamped Château Margaux, Hautbrion, and Latour, all out of one tun of St. Estèphe; and how the vintages of the Moselle were dignified with the appellations of Steinberger, Johannesberger, Hochheimer Dom-Dechant, and Rudesheimer Bergwein.

That his principles might be well formed, he was drilled into the longer and shorter Catechisms, and taken regularly to church—I say regularly, though sometimes he had to remain at home for the purpose of assisting the clerk, when business was flush. As Sunday is the only day for the negroes to carry on their little mercantile transactions, and as trading with them, except under particular restrictions, is forbidden by law, Mr. Hunt kept an entrance by the back way, through which these poor creatures could be accommodated without any interruption from a prying and troublesome police. On these occasions Tommy worked cheerfully; for he could now and then, unobserved, fill his pockets with raisins, prunes, or sugar-plums, and frequently play at marbles with the little blackamoors.

Maugre some discomforts from an ill-disposed landlady, Tommy's life had latterly begun to assume a halcyon aspect. But, to make a quotation that we will not mar by retrenchment,

> Pleasures are like poppies spread,
> You seize the flower, its bloom is shed;
> Or like the snow-falls in the river,
> A moment white—then melts for ever;
> Or like the borealis race,
> That flit ere you can point their place;
> Or like the rainbow's lovely form
> Evanishing amid the storm.

One cold winter evening Mr. Hunt requested his clerk to bring him a pint of Madeira, which, just before going to bed, he sipped at intervals while discussing a peck of raw oysters. About two hours afterward he was seized with a violent colic, accompanied with qualms, cold shiverings, and shooting pains in the epigastrium; and sending in great haste for the clerk, he inquired out of what cask he had drawn the wine. When the young man had described the vessel and its locality, poor Hunt exclaimed, with a look of horror and despair, "Oh, it's as I feared! You have given me the sour wine that I sweetened with sugar of lead. Run this moment for Dr. Ramsay." The clerk did as directed; but the doctor just arrived in time to see the sick man breathe his last.

Shortly after this melancholy event, the widow, who, as we have before intimated, never cherished very kindly feelings toward Tommy, sent him to the orphan-house, declaring that in her destitute situation charity began at home; though it was notorious that the stock of wine was sold, by auction, at enormous prices, as old and rare. In the institution just named he remained a couple of years, during which he gave his guardians not a little trouble. He was positively slovenly, comparatively lazy, and superlatively mischievous; which, instead of being viewed as the frequent concomitants of genius, were most unwisely punished. I must confess, too, that from wanting parental admonition, and from the example of bad companions, such as must be met with in similar large and promiscuous collections, he exhibited some little defects that rather detracted from the amiability of his character. He was not quite as observant of truth as could have been wished; he would cheat in his traffickings, and even some suspicions were entertained that he had now and then appropriated the loose change of his companions, when a safe occasion offered. All vices, we have ever thought, are in fact virtues, warped from their original destination. An accurate observer of human nature, and one skilled in mental philosophy, might, in the falsehoods of Singularity, have discovered invention and a talent for fiction; in his cheating, the activity of intellect, calculation, and foresight, necessary for making our way in the world; and in his petty thefts, an astute thriftiness that could readily have been matured into a wholesome economy. His

guardians should have directed into their proper channels the tendencies alluded to, whenever their course became erratic, instead of attempting to dry up the gushing well-heads supplied by nature.

At an examination of the orphan-boys, when Tommy had attained the age of fourteen, Mr. Shepherd, then editor of the *Times,* struck by his uncommonly beautiful penmanship, made some inquiries about him; and hearing that he read well, and had made good progress in arithmetic, etc., without more ado desired to have the lad as an apprentice. Thoroughly rejoiced to get rid of him, the managers said nothing of his various little aberrations, and he was accordingly bound out to the printing business.

It was in the establishment of Mr. Shepherd that my acquaintance with Thomas Singularity commenced. Being about the same age, working side by side for nearly five years, and with a considerable congeniality of disposition, we became like two brothers. To be sure there were points in which we differed broadly, and at times we had those little bickerings incident to human intercourse. As for friendship's being founded on sympathy, mutual esteem, and all that sort of stuff, I have ever considered it as downright fudge. It is nothing more than a kind of habit by which we learn to bear with each other's frailties, and to feel the necessity of each other's society and assistance. Two of the worst disposed horses in the world, after having been a while driven in the same carriage, get on quietly, though at first they kick and bite: so dogs in the same yard live together on a very comfortable footing. And I have always thought that, to obtain true ideas of mankind, we should go down to the brute creation, where animal nature is seen in its unsophisticated forms. Eventually I may say that I got into Tommy's very heart and soul. Not that he evinced the imprudent, thriftless management of his thoughts and actions by the world termed candor; on the contrary, he generally exhibited a most cat-like cunning in conceiving and executing his projects. But from constant intercourse and observation, I saw deep into his nature, and often discovered the concealed springs of his actions, when he flattered himself that he had proceeded the most warily. For his prudence, far be it from me to blame him, knowing that I my-

self in similar circumstances would have used the same well-measured reserve. As self-preservation is the first law of nature, small indeed must be the sagacity of the man that turns a dagger against himself, from misty, suicidal notions, erected into the semblance of a virtue under the name of frankness.

"SNAKE BIT, SNAKE BIT!"

During 1814 the war was going on between the United States and Great Britain, and Charleston was filled with officers beating up for volunteers. One day Singularity had been missing the whole morning, to the no small vexation of Mr. Shepherd, as we had a great press of work. While he was abusing my friend for an idle, dissipated vagabond, we heard military music passing under the window, and looking out, we descried Lieutenant Abram Miller marching before a number of new recruits. I was just withdrawing my head to resume my work, when in spite of the uniform and military cap, I deciphered the features of Tommy himself. Lost in amazement, I exclaimed, "Mercy alive! there's Tom Singularity among 'em." Mr. Shepherd, as soon as he saw that it was in fact he, said, "Good luck to their fishing; they may keep him and welcome. He may make good food for gunpowder, but I am sure he's fit for nothing else."

That night Singularity came to see me, and told me his reasons for embracing the career of arms. He said that he had always felt a martial disposition, but especially at this juncture, when patriotism demanded the services of every true-born American. Moreover, he talked a great deal about glory, chivalry, and other lofty things, all of which I pretended to take for current coin, as I saw that he was much excited by liberal potations. It was clear that poor Tommy had been beguiled by Bacchus into the service of Mars, though he then and ever afterwards spoke of his enlistment as caused alone by his indomitable spirit and thirst for renown. He had courage enough, I think, excepting as to dogs and snakes, and I have seen many men undoubtedly brave that resembled him in this respect.

Singularity made some attempts to draw me into the army,

but finding that I refused with great firmness, he troubled me no more about it. I refused for various reasons. First and foremost, I had conscientious scruples about breaking my indentures, as I had been well treated. I feared also for my religious principles among the swearing, drinking, Sabbath-breaking roisterers that abound in every army; lastly, I had a constitutional relaxation of fiber at the sight of blood, so uncontrollable that I was sure to faint if a physician attempted to bleed me. Such idiosyncrasies are not uncommon, as scientific men well know, though the ignorant and malicious have often charged me with cowardice for this defect of my organization. Are there not persons who cannot endure the sight of a cat, or sicken at the smell of a rose even in the "Persian atargul's perfume"?

In a short time Tommy, to our mutual regret, was ordered off to Canada, and during a couple of years I heard nothing of him; for he always had a mortal aversion to writing letters of mere friendship. If I mistake not, he was attached to Scott's brigade. He had not been long at headquarters before he was employed as secretary to his captain, and eventually, as his talents were known, he in fact did the writing of the whole regiment. In this manner his life was far from being disagreeable. His time was mostly spent with the officers, from whom, for his services in writing, copying, and making out accounts, together with his pay, he received enough to live comfortably and dress genteelly. He did not content himself with wielding the pen only, but, like Cæsar, wished to serve his country with the sword at the same time. He was in the bloody battles of Chippewa, Erie, and Niagara, and performed unheard-of feats of valor. I may say *unheard-of,* literally; because I freely admit that he is not mentioned in the official accounts of those battles, and that his merits, like those of many other valiant private soldiers, have been, with heartless apathy, consigned to oblivion. Neither did he get any promotion during his term of service. The latter circumstance might have been owing to his fondness for artificial stimulation, and his consequent neglect of the petty formalities of military routine. I state his heroic conduct from his own mouth, and I do so with the more particularity, as some mali-

cious persons have very openly expressed their skepticism respecting it.

At the close of the war he obtained his discharge, and resumed his old trade of printing. He worked, coming on gradually to the South, in the offices of the Boston *Sentinel*, New York *Gazette*, Philadelphia *Aurora*, *Niles's Register* (in Baltimore), Norfolk *Herald*, and Raleigh *Star*. Some of these places he quit of his own accord, and from some he was turned away. In 1816, Thomas Wright Lorrain had established the *Telescope* in Columbia (South Carolina), of which paper I was the foreman. I was one day very busily employed in setting up a handbill about the famous horse "Hephestion," when a man in soiled and tattered attire, with a knapsack on his back, entered the office and looked about composedly at the different parts of the establishment. As it was common enough for country people to step in, out of curiosity, to see printing, the entrance of the man excited so little attention that I continued setting without giving him a second look. By and by he approached where I was, and after looking attentively at me, began to ask me questions that left me in doubt whether they arose from ignorance or a wish to quiz me. I gave him very short answers, without even turning my head, hoping to thus get rid of him. It was useless. He kept interrupting and worrying me till I lost all patience, and stopping short, looked him full in the face. In spite of a beard almost patriarchal, and the bronzing from exposure, I retraced the features of my long-lost friend. Needing journeymen, I proposed to Tommy to remain with us, which he cheerfully consented to, as he was at low-water-mark in money. In some things I perceived a considerable change in him. He regularly took a night-cap, as he called it, that is, a stiff drink of grog before going to bed, not unfrequently stimulated in the day, and sometimes indulged in a week's frolicking. His disposition for games of hazard, particularly cards, had increased, and he had caught the mania of buying lottery tickets. In other respects he was the very man he used to be. His old propensity to falling in love, and of thinking all the girls were in love with him, was in no whit diminished. And that my readers may have some idea of this gallant, gay young Lothario, I will try to portray him. He was about five feet four

inches high, not badly put together, but of a leanness altogether wonderful, and a slight tendency to being knock-kneed; his face was pale, and somewhat marked with the smallpox; he had light blue eyes, with a very slight squint; a well-shaped nose, and a mouth not amiss, except a disposition to drop the underlip, which, with the obliquity of his vision, gave to his countenance rather a sinister expression. What he mainly prided himself on was his hair. It was abundant and curly, of a flaxen color, verging towards red. He always let it grow to a considerable length, combing it with great care, and madefacting it with pomatums and perfumed oils. Adown either cheek hung a corkscrew curl, that he cherished and nourished with especial affection.

On Sundays and holidays he delighted to exhibit himself in attire more remarkable, in my opinion, for the dandyism of the cut and colors than elegance of taste. Frock-coats he particularly affected, adorned with frogs and worked all over with braid, which he would button up to his chin to set off his form to advantage. "Yet though on pleasure he was bent, still frugal was his mind"; his showy wardrobe was usually of pelisse cloth, or some equally common stuff, in which the workmanship exceeded the material. Though foppish, something always seemed wanting. He would be without gloves, have a rusty hat, foxy boots, or a rumpled collar. Never was he so happy as when attired for conquest, and mounted on some goat of a horse that would kick, plunge, and curvet (for he was proud of his horsemanship), he could exhibit himself to the fair sex. He wrote *billets doux* and poetry to all the millinergirls and mantua-makers in the place to little purpose; though he was thoroughly satisfied with his success, and related to me some new victory every day.

Our time went on so much to our minds for a few months that we calculated on a long and pleasant sojourn in Columbia. Some untoward circumstances changed all our projects. One Sunday morning, four of us belonging to the *Telescope* office, and one from the office of the *State Gazette*, agreed to set out on a hunting expedition. It is with some shame that I mention the day, as, according to the prejudices and usages of the community, our conduct was anything but proper; still, whatever faults I may have committed, I think it better to leave

them fairly to the mercy and forbearance of the world, than to create any distrust of my narrative by a suppression of circumstances well known to many living witnesses. We had passed the back of the college without encountering any game, when some one proposed crossing a marsh at the foot of the hill, and pushing on for the old fields beyond. Singularity objected to the difficulty and almost impossibility of traversing a quagmire, where we could only get along by stepping, and often jumping, on tussocks, which afforded but a narrow and insecure footing. He also faintly intimated there might be snakes, which in fact I readily saw was his only fear. The majority, however, resolved to bulge through. Tommy yielded a most reluctant assent, on one of the young men's agreeing to take his gun over, as he declared he would not undertake it otherwise. He was somewhat under the influence of liquor, or I am sure he would never have consented. I wished to see how the others succeeded, and therefore waited the last, my friend only excepted. By cautious stepping and an occasional spring, the advance got on pretty well through the bog and bushes, and at length we ascertained from their shouts that they were fairly over. Tommy and myself proceeded more cautiously. I had nearly accomplished my journey over, when, making too short a leap, I sank up to my chest in a soft adhesive mud. A few struggles to disengage myself only plunged me a little deeper. Tommy, who was not far from me, burst into a most immoderate fit of laughter, and had I been within striking distance, I could willingly have knocked his teeth down his throat. I told him his merriment was ill timed, but that when he had helped me out, he might laugh his fill. Instead of aiding me, he hallooed as loud as he could to our companions to come and enjoy the sight. Probably they did not hear him, for no one came. Meanwhile I most earnestly entreated him to lay aside his jesting and assist me, as I was afraid of being smothered. It pleased him eventually to yield to my entreaties, and he was approaching me when he suddenly sprang up and shouted, or rather yelled out, "Snake bit, snake bit!" At the same time I beheld a sight that congealed my blood with horror. Not more than ten yards from me lay, coiled for action, a rattlesnake of the most enormous size. His glittering eyes were fixed on my

friend, his mouth, from which quivered a forked tongue, hissed in the most venomous manner, while his tail, raised aloft, sounded the horrid rattle with a din that stupefied me. I saw that should I be attacked I had no probability of escaping. "I am a dead man," said Tommy; "for he has bitten me twice on the legs, and the poison will work before I can get to a doctor. But," said he, excited by rage and rum, "I'll not die unrevenged." He thereupon, after looking round, tried to break a small dead sapling which seemed of a suitable size for a pole. With much labor he wrenched it off, and rushed onwards with all the impetuosity of desperate passion. In his trepidation he not only struck beyond where he intended, but hit the ground with such violence that the stick snapped in twain, and, yielding him no support, he pitched forwards at full length, and received, in the twinkling of an eye, another bite on the arm. The serpent never moved from his position, but after each attack again resumed his coil for battle. Doubly sure of death, Tommy now approached more carefully. With the fragment of stick which he retained in his hand, he aimed deliberately a most violent blow at the head of his enemy. The stick did not break this time, but his hand was brought near the ground, and the agile animal, shifting his position as quick as lightning, avoided the danger and struck Singularity on the wrist. Glowing with anger, and stirred up to desperation, he drew out his knife and cut a cudgel that appeared sufficiently long and strong to ensure his purpose. Approaching cautiously, he reconnoitered the locality exactly, and was aiming a stroke with a deadly certainty, when the ground on which his front foot was planted gave way, he sank into the bog, and fell so near the snake that he was bitten full on the cheek. Utterly astounded at this succession of mishaps, and exhausted by his exertions, Singularity desisted from the fight and withdrew some steps. He hallooed again for our companions, who instantly answered, as in fact they were returning in search of us.

The serpent, no longer seeing an enemy in front, turned round as if to retreat. This movement brought him within a few feet of where I stood immovable in the mud. I quickly put my gun almost touching him, and pulled trigger. No report followed. The priming had got wet. The horrible

reptile was no sooner aware of my presence than he was thrown into a coil. Again he hissed, his rattle sounded, and he was evidently in the very action of assailing me, when, rallying my strength and raising my gun above my head, I struck him so forcibly that he dropped his head, stunned and disabled. Again he collected his forces and tried to advance, but was stopped by a second blow. From the yielding nature of the bog, my strokes could not have their full effect, and I was becoming more and more exhausted, as much from the intensity of my feelings as the physical exertion. I earnestly implored Singularity to come to my rescue; but he refused positively to venture near the snake again, as he said he felt himself dying. The power of defending myself, and even hope, was lost, when one of my companions came up running, and put an end to my enemy with a load of buckshot. I was speedily extricated from my disagreeable thraldom and set on dry ground.

Before attending to me, Tommy had been laid under a shade-tree, and appeared to be in the last agony. We deliberated whether it would be better to construct an extemporaneous palanquin and bear him into town, or keep him quiet and send for a physician, when one of the young men, who had been examining the snake, cried out, "Halloo, Tom Singularity, get up and take a dram. Why, man, you are more scared than hurt. The snake has not a tooth in his head." And so the fact turned out. The animal from age had lost its fangs, and of course was perfectly harmless. As soon as certified of the truth, Tommy sprang on his feet, and after a swallow from the gin-flask of one of our friends, was himself again. Our joy was not of long duration; for the merciless rascals now commenced a round of jokes on my muddied clothes and Tommy's battle, not much to our comfort. The matter was quickly told in town, with embellishments certainly laughable enough to any but the sufferers.

AT FRASCATI'S AND SCHMALBAUCH'S

In spite of my entreaties, he shouldered his knapsack, and bade adieu to Norfolk. I would have gone with him, but he positively refused, and only begged me to lend him some money, which he promised to repay as soon as possible. I gave him all I had, that is, a ten-dollar bill and four dollars in silver. These things I mention with some particularity, as they are necessary to his history. He either refused to let me go with him, because in spite of our reconciliation, he doubted me, or feared that I might blab his numerous mishaps.

Perhaps two weeks after his departure, a couple of young merchants told me that they had sailed from Norfolk to Charleston with Tommy, in a small coasting schooner; that he had paid four dollars for his passage, because, as he said, he had no more; and that on his arrival they had gone with him to a lottery office, where he had, to their surprise, paid ten dollars for a ticket (my ten-dollar bill, by the by, for he had no other). They further stated that since that time they had not seen Singularity, but that it was reported he had drawn a large prize and gone to the north, New Orleans, or Europe.

Three years after, that is to say, in February, 1823, while I was engaged in the Georgia *Journal* at Milledgeville, I received a letter postmarked Augusta; and who should it be from but Singularity himself. He begged me to try and get him employment, and to send him a few dollars to help him, as he was totally out of funds. As we needed journeymen, I readily got him an engagement, and by the next mail sent him money enough to bring him on.

In his meager face and tattered appearance I saw no trace of European elegance. Yet he had traveled. Even in constructing air castles, the idea of visiting foreign parts had never floated across his brain. The report was true that he had gained a prize in the lottery of five thousand dollars, and the very evening he received his money, falling in with Messrs. Brown and Disney, the first and second mates of the *Boyne,* a Liverpool trader, he invited them to the Carolina coffee-house to take a bowl of punch. They finished the punch and several bottles of champagne, when Mr. Stewart informed them it was time to lock up. The two friends walked with

Tommy to his lodgings, where, finding him shut out from the lateness of the hour, they took him, half-unconscious of his situation, on board the vessel to pass the night. Towards morning he waked up with a feeling of intolerable nausea, and without any distinct remembrance of where he was. The wind springing up about daybreak, the captain had put to sea; and the two mates, aroused suddenly from their slumbers, had entirely forgotten their friend. For ten days Singularity was too sick to think much of his situation. When he began to feel more at ease, the officers comforted him by an assurance that his passage should cost him but a trifle, and that he could return with them. The good understanding did not last long. The captain, Mr. Hunt, was a very temperate man, and kept Tom under a regimen not at all to his mind. The two mates also fell out with him. In consequence of all this, Singularity cut them as soon as he arrived in Liverpool.

England took his fancy so much, that what he at first thought a misfortune he now viewed as providential. An American merchant exchanged his money at par, and he started off for London. "Set a beggar on horseback and he will ride to the devil," says the proverb. Singularity, elated with the state of his finances, struck out into the world like an inexperienced young heir who has just taken possession of a rich heritage. A fine hired equipage, servants in livery, and a free expenditure of money soon got him into fashionable, if not choice society. Perhaps he may have resorted to some little allowable *finesse* to give himself *éclat;* but this I cannot positively assert. Two different English agents in this country mentioned to me that they had seen in London a great Carolina rice-planter, of the name of Singularity, and once, in looking over one of my friend's books, a card dropped out, on which was engraved, "Colonel Singularity." Every one knows the respectability of this title in Europe; and if Tommy had assumed it, it would have been almost impossible for anybody to have gainsaid him, as under our militia system there is little difficulty in obtaining rank in the staff or line, and he had been so long connected with the army that the details of tactics and fortification were familiar to him. Finding that his money disappeared rapidly in Great Britain, he passed over to the

Continent, where, according to his own account, he visited nearly every hole and corner.

It was difficult to say, in many instances, whether he had seen the places he spoke of, or whether his knowledge was gained from books. I do not say he wilfully romanced; yet from the discrepancies of his stories, I know that his memory was rather treacherous in this respect, though its tenacity was otherwise remarkable. How often do all of us doubt whether a thing was read, dreamed, or really occurred; and thus I can easily conceive that one like Tom, who had read and traveled much, might confuse reminiscences so very similar. It is well known also how vividly the reality of mere mental elusions seems imprinted on the minds of persons laboring under *mania à potu*. Not that I would insinuate that my friend was ever entirely *non compos* from drinking—far from it—but the stimulation to which he often resorted might give a more vivid play to fancy, and paint the mere creations of the brain more durably on the memory. How far or how long he traveled matters but little to my purpose; suffice it to say, he certainly had traveled.

Cut off from his usual companions and avocations, and thrown into a different sphere of action, he had adapted himself to the society in which he moved; nor was this very difficult for him. His manners were always specious to strangers. He possessed much confidence, and a skill in imitation that would have suited the stage. Changing from place to place, he could not fall under very exact scrutiny. It is not then wonderful that he got on a good footing with much genteel company, especially when aided by a full purse.

With his curious, restless disposition, he had picked up much knowledge from seeing, hearing, and reading. Few could converse more fluently of the drama, architecture, the sculpture of Canova, or Thorvaldsen, the schools of painting, the engraving of Morghens or Sharpe, and the music of Gretry, Beethoven, Cimarosa, or Rossini. Many things he had studied attentively, though the universality of his pretensions was questionable. He had acquired a better taste in the toilet and his apparel sat about him more debonairly.

The last place at which he remained any time was Paris. Thus far he had had the discretion to avoid play; that is, he had

avoided it except in society, where he had been moderately successful. One night he ventured into the celebrated gaming-house of Frascati, out of mere idleness. Curiosity prompted him to throw down a few napoleons, and in the course of half an hour he had picked up a hundred. Even then, mistrusting his luck, he went away, determined not to put himself a second time in the way of temptation; yet he returned the next evening, and won a more considerable sum. His fate was now fixed. Scarcely could he tear himself from the fascinating spot for a single night, and the constant run of good luck still lured him on. As the playing is perfectly fair, except certain known advantages in favor of the table, a long succession of prosperous fortune is not unfrequent. He had at one time amassed a sum so large that he thought of returning home and buying a cotton plantation. A few thousands were still wanting to do things properly; but he doubted not that he could very easily win them, conceiving that he had acquired a perfect insight into the game. With this idea he hied once more to Frascati's, intending in future to forswear all such ventures. After alternately winning and losing, he began to fall behindhand. He now resorted to what is usually called the English game—that is, doubling your bet every time you lose, on the supposition that it is impossible to lose every time for a number of successive games. A single evening swept off half his gains. In spite of this warning, he dared his fate again. He laid down a considerable sum and lost; he doubled once, twice, thrice—fortune was still adverse; he still went on, ten, eleven, twelve times—he was penniless. I cannot pretend to give the number of times with absolute certainty; that he won largely, and lost speedily, I know from more than one. In his happier days he had made a number of English and American acquaintances, who, having always seen him full-handed, took him for at least a Carolina rice-planter, or Louisiana sugar-maker. From these he borrowed until his repeated applications, together with rumors of his devotion to play, cut off all further hopes in that quarter. He had still in possession a quantity of rings, chains, breastpins, snuff-boxes, and other nick-nacks, which he sold for half their original cost. The additional sums thus raised disappeared immediately at the all-devouring *rouge et noir* table of Frascati. Tommy was now on his last

legs. He pawned his rich and rare wardrobe to the Mont de Piété—lost the money, and could not redeem. Nothing remained but his watch—one of Berthoud's best. This, which cost him three hundred dollars a week before, he was forced to sacrifice for one hundred and fifty. Even then he doubted whether he should not try his fortune once more; but his run of reverses had taught him a little momentary prudence. Having borrowed from all that would lend, that resource was exhausted. He was much in arrears for his lodgings, and to the tradespeople in the Palais Royal, and he foresaw that he was in danger of being left a beggar, where he had none to assist him or any way of assisting himself.

Singularity resolved to return to his own country. She had received him into the world naked, and he therefore trusted she would not reject him should he appear again in that situation.

Not to excite any troublesome inquiries, he pretended a visit to Versailles for three or four days, of which the people of the hotel doubted not, as he often made short excursions, and as he had left everything but a portmanteau. I have before mentioned that his clothes were in pawn, so that in truth he only left empty trunks. He did in fact go to Versailles; but without stopping took the diligence, and pushed on for Havre, whence he embarked for Charleston. The passage-money was a hundred and fifty dollars, of which he could only pay a hundred down, but promised faithfully to make up the remainder the moment he landed; a promise which he did not perform, for the very sufficient reason that he could not. He returned to his old lodgings, inquired for his knapsack—after much search it was, to his great joy, discovered in the garret. Having transferred his slender wardrobe from his portmanteau into his old traveling companion, he set out for the interior without giving himself a second thought about the captain.

When he joined me at Milledgeville he had not a cent in his pocket, nor a second garment to his back. I am almost, for the credit of my country, ashamed to mention his extreme indigence. While many a thing that boasted the mere shape of a man, with neither the soul nor culture that raises him in the scale of creation above the beast that wants discourse of reason, rolled by in his chariot attired in all the taste and elegance that

the foreign tailor could combine, the talented but poor Singularity, draped in tatters, footed his way over the scorching sands of Georgia, unknown, unnoticed.

I may literally say footed; for so torn were his shoes, that his feet were really on the ground. Often have I seen a prodigious fuss made about sending a big man's son to Europe, and every one after his return would talk in raptures of the vast improvement of the young man—no, I beg pardon, of the young gentleman; God save the mark! Tommy had no aristocracy, no wealth to plead for him, and the appeals of talent are too feeble to be heard when every fool can drown them with the chink of dollars.

No one hailed his return. No one spoke of the polish his manners had received, nor the vast funds of knowledge he had picked up. Luckily, his "limber and lightsome spirit bounded up against affliction with the elasticity of a well bent bow." The rude rebuffs he had met with from a merciless world had excited, not depressed him, and he hurled back indignantly the scorn the community had cast on him. Many a time, with a true Byronic elevation of character, has he repeated to me thus:

> Yet I blame not the world, nor despise it,
> Nor the war of the many with one;
> If my soul was not fitted to prize it,
> 'Twas folly not sooner to shun.

Somehow he had got a notion that he resembled Byron in appearance as well as genius, and, I think, seriously meditated at one time laming a foot to complete the resemblance. Even had he been married, I feel convinced that he would have left his wife, merely to render the portrait more striking. I have remarked the same notion in a number of vain, ill-tempered young men, who have very well succeeded in imitating the moodiness of the great bard, and only failed in the intellectual exhibitions.

Many would suppose that after the splendor and luxury Singularity had enjoyed in Europe, he would return with regret to his former humble station. Exactly the contrary. If ever he expressed any longing after his bygone glory, it was the idle wish of a moment. He was like the actor who struts his hour on the stage as sceptered monarch, and who rejoices

when he can escape from the empty pageant to the substantial and homely comforts of a beefsteak or oyster house. He had got into great society, and a kind of pride kept him there; but he told me that often he willingly could have quitted the artificial life of gilded saloons, and slipped amid the hearty mirth and unrestrained manners of a smoky kitchen. His heart sighed after the gin-shops and beer-cellars. In short, "Richard was himself again," with little change. He had assumed rather more of the philosopher. He now rejoiced that he had been so brought up in early life that no fixed principles were instilled into him. "For what," said he, "are they but prejudices that reason has afterwards to correct or modify. Virtue is only what people choose to call so! The thief who pilfers the stranger receives the lash, while the wily gambler who filches his unsuspecting friends is received in every circle. Midnight murder is stigmatized as a crime, yet the duelist with unerring skill takes the life of his unpractised opponent in the face of day, and is greeted as a man of chivalrous honor. Nay, stealing, murder, and prostitution have received the sanction of entire nations!"

His reason for drinking was rather singular, viz., that he loved it. It was like a natural taste for music. He thought that as the Creator wills the happiness of His creatures, all inclinations are implanted to be gratified, and not to use them would look like spurning the blessings placed before us.

Since Singularity's trip to Europe, his estimation of his personal appearance and fascination over the fair sex had wonderfully increased, though it was not small before. Nor would this be astonishing, if he had made half the conquests he boasted of. Some of his most brilliant achievements among the fair sex had happened while his pockets were well lined with gold, which undoubtedly has some influence with the needy female adventurers abounding in all the large cities of Europe.

That his purse had bled freely, my friend sometimes let escape in moments of unguarded conversation; but nothing vexed him more than the base insinuation, that the lovely creatures for whom he had sighed had prized his paltry pelf. Be this as it may, it shows the high estimation in which he held nature's noblest work.

It was not in his nature to be long without some love adventure on hand, nor did ill success in one affair ever discourage him, as his mind was immediately engaged in another. He had made acquaintance with a Dutch farmer of the name of Geiermann Schmalbauch, a man of very sufficient property. The farmer had been lately made major in the militia, and finding out that Tommy had a knowledge of tactics, applied to him for instruction.

"Come and spend next Sunday with me, Mr. Singularity," said he, "and I'll treat you to such watermelons as you never saw in all your travels." Tom consented willingly, expecting, reasonably enough, a good dinner for his visit. When he arrived, he not only found good cheer, but two good-looking daughters, full of life and humor. They treated him with so much kindness that he flattered himself he had made a double conquest, and therefore tried to merit a second invitation. Accordingly he drilled his pupil through the manual exercise, till he could shoulder, present, ground, etc., with great satisfaction to himself. In spite of explanation, the old gentleman's head was in an utter whirl with wheeling, deploying, and echelons; for Tommy had mystified as much as possible.

"Ah! Mr. Singularity," sighed he, in despair, "I can work the exercise famously; but I am afraid them there other matters are too hard for a man at my time of life."

"By no means, Major. You have a prodigious military turn, and if I had a little more time to draw out some diagrams on paper, I could make it all as clear as daylight."

"My dear friend, how kind you are! It's but a short ride. Could you not spend a night occasionally at my house, and *insense* me about it?"

Though his heart bounded for joy, Singularity only consented after much persuasion, and starting many difficulties. No week now passed without two or three visits, as he could go in the evening and return early in the morning, without losing time from his work. But the great difficulty with Tommy was to make a choice. Both girls were pretty and might expect equal fortunes, and both he was sure were smitten with him. In every respect the house was a pleasant one to visit. As the girls were belles they had much company, and kept up a constant round of good cheer and gaiety.

One Sunday morning, about the last of July, Tom set out for the Major's with a parcel of drawings, to illustrate the maneuvers for reviewing a battalion, done with great clearness and beauty. He had also agreed to squire on horseback the young ladies to a camp-meeting. As the day was exceedingly warm and dusty, he was afraid of discomposing and rumpling his shirt-collar and bosom on the way: he therefore put the needful articles for a change in his valise. When within half a mile of the house, he rode aside into a thick wood for the purpose of *adonizing,* as he had often done on the same spot. The ground was muddy, from a shower that had lately fallen, and he thought it would be the better plan to make the adjustments of his toilet without leaving the saddle. His horse, though young and spirited, was docile, and usually stood with great composure during the operation.

Singularity had denuded himself—stowed away the soiled vestments in the valise—a garment of snowy hue, plaited in front most symmetrically, and ironed till it resembled polished ivory, was raised aloft on his arms, and had just enveloped his head, when a colony of yellow-jackets, or small wasps, whose domains had been invaded by his horse's hoofs, assailed the animal *en masse.* Alarmed at the fierce assault, his courser bounded off like lightning, kicking and plunging in vain to disembarrass himself. Tommy could manage any horse without difficulty; but taken by surprise, with his head effectually muffled, all he could do was to seize the mane with both hands. Away went the steed, peppered by myriads of the irritated insects—away he went, with a speed that would have distanced Gilpin, young Lochinvar, or Burger's Bridegroom. From the steed the yellow-jackets extended their attacks to the rider, who now, with fright, surprise, and bodily agony, clung on instinctively with convulsive energy, almost unconscious of anything. The road was crowded with people, thronging to the camp-meeting—ladies and gentlemen, young and old, black and white, tag, rag, and bobtail, in chaises, carriages, and wagons, on horseback, muleback, and footback. Everything cleared the road for the flying horseman, and stood gazing with wonder at the unseemly sight. Accustomed to stop at Schmalbauch's house, the horse dashed through the gate that was standing open, and halted suddenly before the door. The mo-

ment he felt a pause, Tom rid his head of the encumbrance, just in time to see the young ladies escaping from a window. The Major, who was smoking his pipe in the piazza, inquired of Tom, in astonishment, the meaning of his extraordinary and indecent appearance at midday, before a gentleman's house. When Tommy had explained the nature of his misfortune, which threw the old man into a convulsed fit of laughter, he took my friend into the house, where his inconvenient head-dress was restored to its proper location. But what between pain and shame, his gallantry had received a damper for the day. He sent an excuse to the girls and wended his way back. To me he gave some indifferent reason, I remember not what, for returning, but never breathed a word of his mishap. Next day, however, I got fifty versions of it, as the people he had passed on the road learned at Geiermann Schmalbauch's who the equestrian was.

THEODORE O'HARA

[1820—1867]

ROBERT BURNS WILSON

THEODORE O'HARA, soldier, poet, and journalist, was born in Danville, Kentucky, February 11, 1820. He was the son of Kane O'Hara, an Irish gentleman who, having left his own land on account of political oppression, became distinguished in Kentucky as an educator of great learning and ability. The family finally settled in the vicinity of Frankfort, Kentucky. After being prepared under the teaching of his father, Theodore was sent to St. Joseph's College at Bardstown, Kentucky, where he was graduated with high honors. After this he practiced law for a time, but in 1845 he held a position in the Treasury Department at Washington, and the next year was appointed captain in the United States Army.

He served through the Mexican War and was breveted major on the field for gallantry and meritorious conduct. After this war he practiced law in Washington for a time, but when Lopez attempted the liberation of Cuba, O'Hara joined the expedition and led a regiment at Cardenas, in which battle he was severely wounded. Subsequently he was concerned in Walker's adventurous expedition to Central America. He afterward conducted several newspapers in the South with great ability and brilliancy, among them the *Mobile Register.*

At the beginning of the Civil War he joined the service at once, and was put in command of the fort at the entrance of Mobile Bay, which he bravely defended until ordered to retire. After this he served on Albert Sidney Johnston's staff, and was beside that officer when he fell at Shiloh. Later he was chief-of-staff to General John C. Breckinridge, and was in the famous charge at Stone River. He served as chief-of-staff until the end of the war. After the war he engaged in some commercial transactions in Columbus, Georgia, but finally retired to a plantation on the Alabama side of the Chattahooche River, where he died of fever June 7, 1867. In 1873 the Legislature of Kentucky provided for the bringing back of his body to his native State, and in 1874 he was buried with military honors in the State Cemetery at Frankfort.

Fond of adventure, full of restless energy, and of a daring disposition, O'Hara was essentially the soldier of fortune, possessed of the impulsive spirit which induces one to stake all on the hazard of

a die rather than to attain by painful and persistent effort. But, rich as he seems to have been in the great and many gifts of mind and heart which distinguished him, I cannot see that O'Hara was ambitious—unless for military distinction. It may be that the Muses did haunt his every step, weaving about each scene the witchery of idealism and romance so enchanting to the poetic mind; but they certainly did not compel him to put into living verse the varied and picturesque experiences through which he must have passed. He wrote but little. What dreams and fancies he may have failed to transcribe one can only conjecture, and these conjectures must be entertained in silence. The age is impatient of mysteries, and listens with incredulous ear to speculations about unknown possibilities, or to intuitive guesses which it does not understand. The world is a stickler for the tangibility of actual performance. It is, therefore, with actual performance that one must deal here.

O'Hara wrote only two poems which have been preserved to history—one entitled "The Bivouac of the Dead," the other "A Dirge for the Brave Old Pioneer." These are identical in constructive style, and both are elegiac and commemorative. He seems to have written only when special demand was made upon him, and then only in this one vein. It is upon this first mentioned poem, "The Bivouac of the Dead," that O'Hara's claim for immortality must rest. It was written to commemorate the death of his comrades who fell in Mexico, and was read by him upon the occasion of their burial in the plot of ground set apart by the State for their reception in the cemetery at Frankfort. O'Hara now sleeps within the same ground, and may be said to have sung his own memorial, standing upon his unmade grave. The opening stanza of this poem, especially the second quatrain of it, remains unsurpassed in its own field:

> The muffled drum's sad roll has beat
> The soldier's last tattoo;
> No more on life's parade shall meet
> The brave and fallen few.
> On Fame's eternal camping-ground
> Their silent tents are spread,
> But Glory guards, with solemn round,
> The bivouac of the dead.

In my opinion, no amount of tinkering could improve these last four lines. They have been found fault with by some, who contend that there is no truth in the similes presented; that soldiers do not pitch their tents when they bivouac for the night; but as the first couplet plainly points the mind to an ideal and eternal camping-ground,

the image of the "silent tents" follows naturally, while the second couplet refers to the sleeping bodies when they bivouac for the night of death, only until the réveille shall sound. The technical correctness of these similes is beyond question; and, as to their higher poetic sense, their ideal beauty must be apparent to every appreciative mind. To one who cannot perceive this, arguments on the subject can mean nothing.

Some incidents of interest naturally attach themselves to the history of this poem. There is a peculiar completeness to the circle of events pertaining to it. O'Hara—himself a soldier—commemorates in it the death of his companions in battle, and reads it at their burial. After long years, when he had served through another war, he is himself gathered to rest beside them, and his poem, which consecrated the spot, has become a fitting and enduring monument for himself. It is not of equal merit throughout, but there are many lines only less stirring and impressive than those already given.

> The neighing troop, the flashing blade
> The bugle's stirring blast,
> The charge, the dreadful cannonade. . . .

These lines suggest the onward, resistless rush of a mountain torrent; the images which appear before the mind are quickly replaced. The picture is fleeting but vivid, and the touch is broad and masterful. Note how the emphasis is thrown upon the word "charge"; one can hear the command ringing along the expectant lines, and can well imagine how the thrill of battle must have shot through hearts within

> Those breasts that never more may feel
> The rapture of the fight.

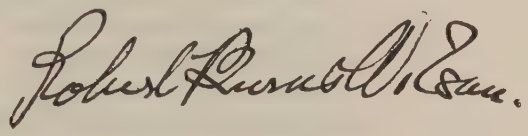
The other poem contains nothing approaching the verses I have quoted.

The place of O'Hara's burial is worth describing. I will, however, attempt but a glimpse of it here. At the moment in which I write, the slanting sunlight of a waning November day comes across the marble-dotted slopes and mounds, which are as green as an April hill, and the soft south wind makes a low moaning in the needled branches of the pines, whose dark clusters are here and there relieved by the pale dead-gold of the changing cypress, the deeper color of the shimmering beech, and at rarer intervals by leafless dogwood trees all aglow with scarlet berries. Out under the darkening masses, through the half-open barrier of tree trunks, one may catch glimpses of the far-off hills, above which burns the golden glory of the sinking sun. At times comes the faint tinkling of distant

bells from the cattle returning to the valley, in which sleeps the unseen city. Far up above the fine tracing of the naked elms, gold-tipped clouds of delicate purple drift through the gray-green of the sky. Close by—beside the tomb of O'Hara, with its sculptured sword and scabbard and encircling wreath of oak and laurel—bends a rose-bush, whose late blooms touch listlessly with their pale lips the cold and unresponsive marble. At a little distance rises the great memorial shaft surmounted by marble cannons and flags, and above these by the winged figure of Victory; and here, among the graves of those who once listened to their angry roar, stand the blackened and silent guns that belched forth death and flame at Buena Vista and Chapultepec—grim guardians now of the quiet warriors who have met the last enemy. A soft radiance suffuses the scene, and the last rays of the sun just touch the wings of Victory where she seems to sway against the clouds. It is here that the full import and beauty of O'Hara's lines may be felt; for, as the hush of evening deepens, one can fancy he hears the slow and measured tread as the majestic figure of Glory keeps on her ceaseless round by this bivouac of the dead, and afar on the eternal camping-ground of Fame the imagination pictures the "silent tents" in which the departed souls rest forever upon the peaceful fields of the hereafter.

O'Hara is lovingly remembered by thousands who knew him personally. He was genial and generous in disposition, and, possessing a mind well stored both from books and with the experiences of an adventurous life, he is said to have been exceedingly happy and brilliant in conversation, having a clear sense of humor, a nimble wit, and a quick tongue at repartee. He was the life and soul of many camp-fire circles in the wars, and the many varied incidents of his life—which cannot be given here, for lack of space—all show him to have been utterly fearless. His impulsive and daring nature made him thirst continually for the excitements of danger, and gave him relish for the chances of the fight. Sensitive and refined himself, his manner toward others, while characterized by an inherent, self-respecting pride, was sufficiently unreserved and hearty, and without the tinge of any belittling vanity or shadow of ostentation. He was something above the medium in stature, slender, graceful, and well proportioned in figure, very erect and military in his bearing, and quick, wiry, and decisive in his movements. His hair was jet black, and his eyes so nearly so that there was but a shade of difference. They were full of alert intelligence, indicating in every glance the vital force and restlessness of his nature. His nose was straight and his mouth was somewhat small; the lips, seeming always close pressed together or slightly "pursed," were almost feminine in their

clearness and delicacy of outline, but showed great firmness and determination as well as refinement. His head was nicely poised and well set on his shoulders, and his hands and feet were very small and well cared for. He died seemingly unconscious of his highest gifts, his greatest fault being his neglecting to follow steadily some definite aim—if that be a fault. Since then the hand of Time, grappling for hidden treasure amidst the ruins of lost and buried incident and circumstance, has saved from the wreck of his life a few lines only, written when he was thinking more of others than of himself, but lines of such transcendent merit that they have fixed the name of Theodore O'Hara in history.



THE BIVOUAC OF THE DEAD

The muffled drum's sad roll has beat
The soldier's last tattoo;
No more on life's parade shall meet
The brave and fallen few.
On Fame's eternal camping-ground
Their silent tents are spread,
But Glory guards, with solemn round,
The bivouac of the dead.

No rumor of the foe's advance
Now swells upon the wind;
No troubled thought at midnight haunts
Of loved ones left behind;
No vision of the morrow's strife
The warrior's dream alarms;
No braying horn or screaming fife
At dawn shall call to arms.

Their shivered swords are red with rust,
Their plumèd heads are bowed;
Their haughty banner, trailed in dust,
Is now their martial shroud.

And plenteous funeral tears have washed
The red stains from each brow,
And the proud forms, by battle gashed,
Are free from anguish now.

The neighing troop, the flashing blade,
The bugle's stirring blast,
The charge, the dreadful cannonade,
The din and shout are past;
Nor war's wild note, nor glory's peal,
Shall thrill with fierce delight
Those breasts that never more may feel
The rapture of the fight.

Like the fierce northern hurricane
That sweeps his great plateau,
Flushed with the triumph yet to gain,
Came down the serried foe.
Who heard the thunder of the fray
Break o'er the field beneath,
Knew well the watchword of that day
Was "Victory or Death."

Long has the doubtful conflict raged
O'er all that stricken plain,
For never fiercer fight had waged
The vengeful blood of Spain;
And still the storm of battle blew,
Still swelled the gory tide;
Not long our stout old chieftain knew,
Such odds his strength could bide.

'Twas in that hour his stern command
Called to a martyr's grave
The flower of his belovèd land,
The nation's flag to save.
By rivers of their father's gore
His first-born laurels grew,
And well he deemed the sons would pour
Their lives for glory too.

Full many a norther's breath has swept
O'er Angostura's plain—
And long the pitying sky has wept
Above the mouldering slain.
The raven's scream, or eagle's flight,
Or shepherd's pensive lay,
Alone awakes each sullen height
That frowned o'er that dread fray.

Sons of the Dark and Bloody Ground,
Ye must not slumber there,
Where stranger steps and tongues resound
Along the heedless air.
Your own proud land's heroic soil
Shall be your fitter grave;
She claims from War his richest spoil—
The ashes of her brave.

Thus 'neath their parent turf they rest,
Far from the gory field,
Borne to a Spartan mother's breast
On many a bloody shield;
The sunshine of their native sky
Smiles sadly on them here,
And kindred eyes and hearts watch by
The heroes' sepulchre.

Rest on, embalmed and sainted dead,
Dear as the blood ye gave,
No impious footsteps here shall tread
The herbage of your grave;
Nor shall your glory be forgot
While Fame her record keeps,
Or Honor points the hallowed spot
Where Valor proudly sleeps.

Yon marble minstrel's voiceless stone
In deathless song shall tell,
When many a vanquished age hath flown,
The story how ye fell;

Nor wreck, nor change, nor winter's blight,
Nor Time's remorseless doom,
Shall dim one ray of glory's light
That gilds your deathless tomb.

THE OLD PIONEER

A dirge for the brave old pioneer!
Knight-errant of the wood!
Calmly beneath the green sod here
He rests from field and flood;
The war-whoop and the panther's screams
No more his soul shall rouse,
For well the aged hunter dreams
Beside his good old spouse.

A dirge for the brave old pioneer!
Hushed now his rifle's peal;
The dews of many a vanish'd year
Are on his rusted steel;
His horn and pouch lie mouldering
Upon the cabin-door;
The elk rests by the salted spring,
Nor flees the fierce wild boar.

A dirge for the brave old pioneer!
Old Druid of the West!
His offering was the fleet wild deer,
His shrine the mountain's crest.
Within his wildwood temple's space
An empire's towers nod,
Where erst, alone of all his race,
He knelt to Nature's God.

A dirge for the brave old pioneer!
Columbus of the land!
Who guided freedom's proud career
Beyond the conquer'd strand;
And gave her pilgrim sons a home
No monarch's step profanes,
Free as the chainless winds that roam
Upon its boundless plains.

A dirge for the brave old pioneer!
The muffled drum resound!
A warrior is slumb'ring here
Beneath his battle-ground.
For not alone with beast of prey
The bloody strife he waged,
Foremost where'er the deadly fray
Of savage combat raged.

A dirge for the brave old pioneer!
A dirge for his old spouse!
For her who blest his forest cheer,
And kept his birchen house.
Now soundly by her chieftain may
The brave old dame sleep on,
The red man's step is far away,
The wolf's dread howl is gone.

A dirge for the brave old pioneer!
His pilgrimage is done;
He hunts no more the grizzly bear
About the setting sun.
Weary at last of chase and life,
He laid him here to rest,
Nor recks he now what sport or strife
Would tempt him further west.

A dirge for the brave old pioneer!
The patriarch of his tribe!
He sleeps—no pompous pile marks where,
No lines his deeds describe.
They raised no stone above him here,
Nor carved his deathless name—
An empire is his sepulchre,
His epitaph is Fame.*

*The last stanza of this ode was written before Daniel Boone's monument had been erected.

CLARENCE OUSLEY

[1863—]

W. M. HARRIS

CLARENCE OUSLEY was born in 1863, in Lowndes County, Georgia. He was educated at the Agricultural and Mechanical College of Alabama at Auburn, "loveliest village of the plain," taking the degree of Bachelor of Arts, the institution being at that time a literary school in fact if not in name.

He had expected to devote himself to the law, but not being favorably impressed with the apprenticeship to patience and poverty through which his young lawyer friends were passing, he went to Texas, where things are not so long in coming to pass, and where neither one's youth nor the fact that he is a stranger stand in the way of his promotion. He soon learned to love Texas—all of it, from the blue tide of the Gulf to the tideless blue of the Panhandle —and has made it his lifetime home.

Having arrived in his adopted State, the work readiest to hand was not law but school-teaching, and at it he went. But the "divinity that shapes our ends" directed his steps to the field of journalism, and he became editor of *Farm and Ranch,* in which capacity he served for two years, at the end of which time he was made managing editor of the *Galveston News.* In 1893 he became manager of the *Galveston Tribune,* an afternoon paper. His successful conduct of this enterprise continued until 1900, when the Galveston storm destroyed almost everything he possessed. His cozy home was in the area of total destruction, and when he came with his family out from its ruins he had to begin life anew.

Having disposed of his interest in the *Tribune,* he was promptly offered, and accepted, the lucrative and important position of managing editor of the *Houston Post,* one of the great dailies of the West.

Ousley's ambitions and independent spirit could not be satisfied with a subordinate position, however prominent; and with that rare courage which, like that of the Puritans, trusts in God and itself and takes the initiative, he proceeded to the great task of founding a morning daily. The result of this effort was the *Fort Worth Record,* which at once took its place in the front rank of Texas dailies, a position which it continues to hold with increasing confidence and success.

While Ousley has thus been a successful business man, he is at heart a literary man. His editorials have a literary quality far above the demands of journalism. Every cultured reader is struck with the purity, propriety, and precision of his language. And yet his editorials are not academic. His clear thought and terse style always carry a message on the practical things of the world in this our day.

But we have not reached this man's heart of hearts when we have found in him the business man and the journalist. We see the real Ousley when the world has retired, the fire in the grate burns low, "the pipe purrs lovingly down in the bowl," and he gives himself to poetry and to us:

"It isn't so bad—this bachelor life—
With a pipe and a book and a fire,
You don't feel the need of a doll of a wife
To talk to, caress and admire.

My friends of the novel don't mind if I yawn
And turn me to memory's throng,
While the pipe purrs lovingly down in the bowl
And the back log is singing a song.

Here are photos and trinkets and trifles galore—
Each prized for a day or an hour
Like sea-weeds and shells from the ebb of the tide,
Or the scent of a tropical flower.

There's Mary, who's married; there's Bess, the old maid;
There's Laura who's gone on the stage,
There's—ah, how the past we imagined was sealed—
Is agape at the tearfullest page.

There's a song that the lips will not form into sound
Though the heart be atune with the air;
The quick will not look on the face of the dead,
Though it clings to the corpse in despair.

There's a presence that deepens the loneliness here,
Like the hush of the uttermost skies—
* * * * * *
The back log's in ashes, the fire has gone out,
And the smoke of the pipe's in my eyes."

But when in the golden hours of the day he looks on the "deep and dark blue ocean," and up into the pale blue peace of "the utter-

most skies," he finds an inspiration as compelling as in that witching hour when "the back log is singing a song":

"The peace of the sky lies light on the sea
With a wind that is as soft as a song,
And the spray of the ocean perfuming the air,
As the proud ship races along.

And the eye of a painter or poet ne'er saw
A vision of sweeter content
Than the blue of the sky and the gray of the wind,
In the hues of the green wave blent.

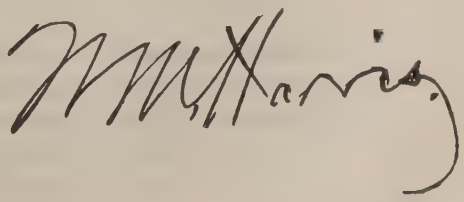
But down in the heart of the fathomless deep,
The grim old mariner knows
There's a moan that the breakers will sound on the shore;
For the sea, though it smiles, hath its woes."

If I must use adjectives, if I must describe Ousley's poetry, I will say that it is intellectual, ethical, spiritual, pathetic. One of his poems, "When Love Saw Duty Clearly," may be designated as embodying all these characteristics. There is in it one single, definite, dominant thought; it has a lofty moral tone; its spiritual beauty is decided and serene; and certainly no one who has known the struggle between love and duty can read it without tears.

It is well-nigh impossible to quote fragments of Ousley's poems, for the reason that they are not made up of jewels of different kinds hung at random on a string; every poem has a single dominant thought running through it and binding it into unity. This is the characteristic to which I allude when I say that he is an intellectual poet: he thinks and he gives us a thought.

Matthew Arnold says, in his introduction to Ward's 'English Poets,' that "the characters of a high quality of poetry . . . . are in the matter and substance of the poetry . . . . and in its manner and style." He adds that "the substance and quality of the best poetry acquire their special character from possessing in an eminent degree, truth and seriousness."

These canons of the great critic accepted, and applied to Ousley's poetry, clearly establish the latter's claim to a place in the anthology of the South.



WHEN LOVE SAW DUTY CLEARLY

Two narrow ways, by merging lines,
  Approached the land of Beauty.
To one, all bowered, Love pursued;
  The other, open, Duty.

And Love was laughing, tripping on,
  With maiden thoughts beguiling
The tedious miles to Beauty land
  Where Sweetheart Hope was smiling—

While Duty walked with measured tread,
  By long, unhalting paces,
As one who looks nor right nor left,
  But forward ever faces.

At length a sound arrested Love,
  And, through the tangle peering,
She spied the form of Duty there,
  The fateful juncture nearing.

In fear she halted, crouching low
  Beside the fragrant brambles,
As Duty paused to view the land
  Of restful, shady rambles.

Then Love sped on; but Duty, too,
  As if by instinct, started.
Love thought to stop; the thought at once
  To Duty was imparted.

For, through the tangle, tearful Love
  Saw Duty only dimly—
A fierce, relentless, monstrous thing,
  Blear-eyed and leering grimly

At last in anger Love rushed on,
  Resolved on sheer defiance.
If that should fail, there still was choice
  Of death before compliance.

She neared the fateful meeting place,
And stood a moment trembling,
Then nerved herself to face her foe,
Her passion ill-dissembling.

But, lo! his look, though firm, was mild,
And even kindly seeming.
About his lofty, handsome head
The light of peace was streaming.

Then Love, discerning, true to self,
Stretched out her hand to Duty,
And, leaning on his arm, went forth
Into the land of Beauty.

THE PHANTOM HORSEMAN

They say it is foolish—perhaps it is queer—
But it's certain as knowing at all:
There's a fine young horseman in buckles and kilts
Goes galloping down in the hall.
I hear him at night, though the noise is less
Than the sound of a scampering mouse;
It is rather the patter of velveted feet
In a solemn old tenantless house.
He is dressed like the boy in the picture up there,
Who was buried in buckles and kilts,
And he varies his pleasure by stalking at times
On dangerous, shadowy stilts;
But mostly he mounts to his good stick horse
With a bit of a string for a rein,
And gallops and canters in cavalier
And canters and gallops again.

I open the door and creep to the stairs,
Sometimes when they think I'm asleep,
And I see him as plain as the picture up there—
Do you wonder I never should weep?
Why I should be grieving when night after night,
As certain as knowing at all,
My fine young horseman in buckles and kilts
Goes galloping down in the hall?

MY GRANDFATHER'S FIG STEM PIPE

An old-fashioned man in a straight back chair
As high as the crown of his thick, white hair—
A tall old man with a Puritan face,
A fine old man with a Cavalier's grace—
Awaiting the harvest of years grown ripe,
Sits peacefully smoking his fig stem pipe.

Anon as his memory traces the years
To the struggles of youth with its fanciful fears,
He smiles at the children who bower the way
From the snow-capped Now to the green Yesterday,
And smiling forgets that the years grow ripe,
And the fire is out in his fig stem pipe.

A woman beside him with gray-streaked hair,
The daughter of her who was wont to sit there,
Has twisted a taper and proffers a flame
As the old man rouses and whispers the name
Of one who was garnered in years grown ripe,
And sends up a prayer with the smoke of his pipe.

A patient old man with an old-fashioned air
Sits calmly awaiting the answer to prayer—
A sweet old man with a beautiful face
Aglow with a faith as enduring as grace—
And the Father is sweetening the years grown ripe,
As smoking is sweetening the fig stem pipe.

WHEN THE MINT IS IN THE LIQUOR

When the mint is in the liquor and its fragrance on the glass
It breathes a recollection that can never, never pass—
When the South was in the glory of a never-ending June,
The strings were on the banjo and the fiddle was in tune,
And we reveled in the plenty that we thought could never pass
And lingered at the julep in the ever-brimming glass.

There was mettle in the morning and adventure in the chase
And Beauty sat the saddle with the poetry of grace;
And the singing of the darkies in the cotton and the corn
Was chorused with the echo of the old familiar horn.
There was splendor in the glamour of the canopy at noon,
And sweetness in the languor of the lazy afternoon,
And the breezes of the evening were the breathings of romance
That quickened into whispers in the rapture of the dance,
While the banjo in the cabin and the fiddle in the hall
With music filled the measure of the night's ecstatic thrall.

O, the beauty of the Southland in the splendor of its prime,
The fragrance and the plenty of a radiant summer time,
When we reveled in the glory that we thought could never pass,
And lingered at the julep in the ever-brimming glass.

A SONG OF THE SIMPLER THINGS

O! sing me a song of the simpler things—
  Of the lives that love and laugh,
I'm tired of War and the song of sweat
  That tells but the Bitter Half.
The earth is strong and the world is well—
  'Tis the singer that's all awry.
The sun is up and will never go down
  'Till the stars are in the sky.

O! sing me a song of the manly man
  Who knows his burden's his own,
The man who laughs in the rain or shine
  While he swings his hoe alone.

It isn't the thing that's done to us
  That burns like a red-hot brand—
It's the thing we do or leave undone
  Because we don't understand.

O! sing me a song of fruits and flowers—
  The tints of the peach and rose,
Of the blush that grows on the virgin cheek,
  Of the fairest thing that grows.
I'm tired of Wars and Alarum Bells
  And the Light That Flames the Sky,
O! sing me a song of the Simpler Things
  That live and love and die.

DIMPLES AND WRINKLES

The deepest of dimples to wrinkles have run
Since Mary was twenty and I twenty-one;
But dimpled or wrinkled, my sweetheart's the same,
From the sunburst of life to its last little flame.

The cheeks that were roses are shrunken and pale,
But their velvety purity never will fail;
And lips that were flushed with the red blood of youth
Are warm with a love as undying as truth.

The blue of her eyes is fading to gray
And the gold of her hair is silver to-day;
But the soul is the same that was orbed in the blue,
And silvern is golden when love lights the view.

And dimpled or wrinkled, a blush will confess
The happiness born of a lover's caress.
For the heart of a woman is tender as true
And the passion it cherishes ever is new.

With Mary at twenty and me twenty-one,
Than dimples naught sweeter was under the sun;
With Mary at sixty and me sixty-one,
Why, dimples were made so that wrinkles might run.

THE SEA HATH ITS WOES

The peace of the sky lies light on the sea
With a wind that is soft as a song,
And the spray of the ocean perfuming the air,
As the proud ship races along.
And the eye of a painter or a poet ne'er saw
A vision of sweeter content
Than the blue of the sky and the gray of the wind,
In the hues of the green wave blent.
But down in the heart of the fathomless deep,
The grim old mariner knows,
There's a moan that the breakers will sound on the shore;
For the sea, though it smiles, has its woes.

The song of the surf as it romps on the beach
Is a joy to the children at play,
For it splashes and dashes and dimples the sand
In a daring and frolicsome way.
And the maiden who watches the sail dip low
On the rim of the sky-kissed sea,
Hears a message of love on the gossiping waves
And the chimes of a wedding to be.
But the crone at her side hears a sad undertone,
For in sorrow her old heart knows
There's a moan in the sound that the surf brings home;
For the sea, though it laughs, hath its woes.

As the sun rides high or the moon swings low,
And the wind sweeps the harp of the sea,
The children will play or the maiden will sing
And the waves lap low in the lea.
But the grim old mariner out on the main
Sees down in the fathomless deep,
And the gray old crone hears the moan in the surf
And the twain and the sad sea weep.

* * * * * *

The peace of the sky lies over it all;
The wind unerringly blows;
The sailors come home and the crone is consoled,
But forever the sea hath its woes.

RUBÁIYÁT OF FAITH

After reading Omar

Where the far east ribbons the new flung day,
  Where the warm west flecks it with gold,
Where the cold north hides in the adamant ice
  And the south in the weird gray wold,
At the corners of earth, in the uttermost parts,
  In the sky and the innermost core,
The psychic may search till his soul wear out
  And seeking but question the more.
But ever the world swings under the law,
And ever the spirit looks upward in awe.

No traveler hence turns hither again,
  Nor the lighting can sunder the veil;
Not a sound comes out of the silence of night—
  On the sea not a sign of a sail—
But deep in the heart of the savage and saint
  The same sweet hope is stirred;
In the listening ear of the spirit sense
  A still small voice is heard.
For never a being went under the sod
But reckoned on seeing the face of his God.

"To-morrow we die," is the coward's excuse
  For the wanton abuse of to-day.
The cup that was given to wassail and wine
  Will never be finer than clay.
The Potter who fashioned the vessels at will
  Can gather the pieces at last,
Transforming the evil, transfixing the good,
  From the wreck of a profligate past.
And ever the mortal is liker the mold,
Forever the crucible betters the gold.

GOO-GOO LAND

Oh! Goo-Goo Land is a long way off,
On the other side of the moon,
Where the sun is bright and the shade is soft
And the fields are green as June.

And Goo-Goo folks are the queerest sort
That ever were seen in dreams;
They cannot walk and they cannot talk,
And they dress in pink sunbeams.

They roll in the grass and they kick their heels,
And frolic and laugh alway,
For it never is night in Goo-Goo Land
But one long holiday.

And no man knows the way up there—
Not even the man in the moon,
Nor the star that shines in the farthest sky,
Nor the sun at highest noon.

But now and then a Goo-Goo falls
From the unknown land above,
And, swift as a meteor, drops unharmed,
In the waiting arms of love.

THOMAS NELSON PAGE

[1853—1922]

CHARLES W. KENT

THOMAS NELSON PAGE was born in Hanover County, Virginia, April 23, 1853. Both the time and the place of his birth made signal contributions to his preparation for authorship by giving tone and color to his best productions. The county was one of those old East Virginian counties that had developed a settled and sedate civilization, with class distinctions marked but not galling, and class responsibilities less onerous because clearly recognized and cheerfully accepted. Important names, such as those of Henry and Clay, were connected with his county, and in contrast with these renowned products of the yeoman class were the Nelsons and the Pages, for example, that contributed their aristocratic blood to the make-up of their distinguished representative.

Page was born between the date of the Clay Compromise, which delayed a civil struggle, and the outbreak of hostilities that could not be avoided. Premonitions of impending war, with alternating hopes dashed with bravado and fears tinged with regret, were in the air. Feverish anxiety quickened the sensibilities and gave *verve* and vividness to the imagination. Not even the playtime of children was free from the new excitement. The stirring events of war fell between the lad's seventh and twelfth years, perhaps the most impressionable of all life. Therefore, the impressions made upon his childish mind were not vague, indistinct, light, and transient, readily obscured by the flight of time or effaced by the accumulation of later experiences; but sharp, well-defined, and so persistent that they seem to-day the joys and woes of yesterday.

No five years in that century could have better matched the plastic five years of a romanticist than those. To the sensitive, thoughtful soul of an alert, quick-witted boy, the eventful progress of this period, with its thickening tragedies and dramatic reliefs, with its mysterious merriment and self-suspecting light-heartedness, would present a spectacle unparalleled both in interest and intensity. Just as he was passing into his teens his State was entering upon the throes of that dire and inexcusable period of Reconstruction, with its unforeseen terrors and its inevitable blight. The exhilaration of hopeful combat had surrendered to the deepening despair of un-

aided helplessness; so soon was the discipline of defeat followed by the sterner discipline of poverty without prospects, and dejection without hope. Thus Page became a part of his State's experiences and they, in turn, an essential part of his mental life and equipment.

The schooldays in Hanover during these years may have offered no especial advantages for academic training, but they taught lessons that gave a firmer texture and a finer finish to life. Fresh from these experiences of vital interest, and with a mind charged with startling events and momentous changes, this scion of a noble house entered Washington College clad in drab homespun, the somber badge of poverty, honest and unabashed. A new spirit had entered the old college when Lee, solemnized by the triumph of a stainless submission, had renounced all hope of a career and dedicated himself to the living youth whose elder brothers had followed him to grim and yawning death. This new spirit was the spirit of adjustment—an adjustment less difficult for Lee because of his unshaken confidence in an overruling righteousness and of his sane trust in self-reliant effort. This spirit breathed upon the young collegian and so informed his life that to-day he is a loyal American, from whom, however, no swelling nationalism obscures the entrancing vision of his native State.

In due time young Page left behind him this favored institution which, bearing the name of a hero who foresaw its origin, had added that of another hero who forestalled its decline and invested it with a new power and a wider prestige. After a brief apprenticeship in the schoolroom, he spent a short time in old Hanover, knitting the broken threads of that experience through which he had learned so well, because so lovingly, the life of his own neighborhood, and forming anew the ties of boyish companionship, for it was Page's good fortune to know with the intimacy of playmates the negroes of his own generation, and with a sort of respectful awe those to whom greater age had brought the lore of woodland and barnyard.

Because under the altered conditions young Page could not look forward to a landlord's ease on far-sweeping acres, or to large opportunities for unremunerated, though not unappreciated, public services, he entered the University of Virginia as a student of law. He sat at the feet of that occidental Gamaliel, John B. Minor, who, for fifty years teaching "the law and the reasons thereof" taught larger lessons of high principles and purpose and impressed upon his numerous disciples his own personality. To the pursuit of the law, ever a jealous mistress, Page devoted himself with such assiduity and success as to win his University's commendation and honors. Succeeding years found him in musty court-rooms in Virginia

counties and cities, learning and practicing law; or on refreshing court greens, meeting and learning men. Here, as well as in drawing-rooms and in public gatherings, he was developing his social nature.

Beneath the substantial accretion of the law lay silent the untroubled depth of his rich and varied experience, awaiting the touch of the art-angel. When subtle memory, quivering emotion, and literary impulse met, then were these depths mightily stirred. It is not surprising, therefore, that his first production was not the initial effort of a tyro, but rather the spontaneous culmination of a training almost ideally suited to effect it. If, then, it be stoutly contended that Page never has surpassed "Marse Chan," it is not meant that his powers have declined, but that never again could he write in similar vein without reminding himself and us of that first golden truth of fancy that poured at white heat and *aus einem Guss* into the matchless mould of well-nigh perfect form. If full destruction should threaten the tasteful Plantation Edition of his works that confronts me as I write, I should impulsively rescue that first volume, 'In Ole Virginia,' for it is the heart of the series. Page is preëminently a short-story writer, and his best short stories are those that record in true Hanover negro dialect war times in Old Virginia. Indeed, whether as stories of local color, human interest, or constructive art, or all combined, Page's short stories are so excellent in degree and kind as to tempt the critic to extravagant laudation, for their style surpasses the style of his longer and more studied productions in naturalness, harmony with subject-matter, and instinctive appreciation of artistic effects.

'On Newfound River: a Love Story of Simple Country Life in Old Virginia,' a story of length but not avowedly a novel, marks Page's transition from short-story writer to novelist. As a novelist he has written 'Red Rock,' 'Gordon Keith,' and the serial now running in *Scribner's Magazine,* entitled 'John Marvel, Assistant.'

Into Page's novels goes so much of personal experience that it is well to inquire here what that later experience has been. Until 1893 he lived in Richmond, enjoying the companionship of his earlier friends and adding to them by travel in this country and in Europe. He married, in 1886, Anne Seddon Bruce of Staunton Hill, Charlotte County, Virginia, to whom he dedicated, of right, the love story of Old Virginia. With her his married happiness was of brief duration, for in 1888 she died and was buried in beautiful Hollywood. He continued his residence and law practice in Richmond for five years and then married Florence Lathrop Field and moved to Washington, his present residence. They have spent much time in their summer home on the Maine coast and in distant travel.

He is a member of several clubs in New York, and a welcome guest at those of many other American as well as English cities. His life is, therefore, cosmopolitan, and has broadened without losing its fixed rooting in his native soil. It is not unlikely, then, that Page's novels have more value as human documents than as pure fiction. They are great recitals of actual life, with its whirlpools, its rapids, its confused currents, and its unfathomed depths. It is fidelity to fact, substantial accord with truth, particularly of conditions, that add to their genuine significance as records of the place and period they portray. Yet these carefully wrought novels of life and manners are not merely historical; they involve dramatic situations and interactions of characters, and give room for subtle character analyses and delineations.

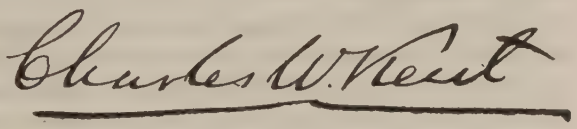
As an essayist, Page enlarges the work of his novels, supplementing their narrative and descriptive elements by expository and argumentative restatements of the same or of similar facts, and passing to other themes that lend themselves less happily to fiction. If the essays lose something in interest by the sacrifice of the imaginative element, they gain distinctly in incontestable accuracy and logical presentation. That the great significance of these essays is in their subject-matter and not in their literary form, means that the author seriously concerns himself with impressing the truth, especially the unknown or the half-known truth, rather than with attracting attention to his acknowledged craftsmanship. The literary charm that permeates his stories like a rare flavor or an impalpable odor may not be detected in these essays, but in them is his ardent and undeterred loyalty to a land and its best traditions.

Perhaps this seriousness verges on overseriousness in his first excursion into the fascinating field of biography. That Page, the romantic idealist of our Southern war-time, was writing the 'Life of Lee,' whom he knew so well in the buoyant college days, piqued expectation; for would not the chivalrous romance of that hero of war and peace be at last adequately realized if not epically idealized? That Page elected, in barrister fashion, to hold a brief for a great client rather than, in artist fashion, to limn a great portrait, was our disappointment but his right. No one can gainsay his success in establishing his two fundamental propositions; that Lee was above all else a Virginian, and that he was an offensive general, splendid in the vigorous audacity of his unconventional campaigning. In this book, too, Page was successful, through his own widespread popularity, in presenting Lee without apology or reserve to the Northern public.

To have achieved notable success as an essayist, biographer, novelist, and short-story writer is certainly a record of distinction;

to have filled with complete worthiness many engagements for historical and patriotic addresses of far more than transient import marks him as gifted in tongue as well as with pen; to be valued most by his friends as a man of large heart and generous sympathy, of clear head and sound judgment, of bountiful gifts as companion and conversationalist, and of high conceptions of right living and religious faith, rank him as more than writer and nothing less than a full-orbed man.

But may not one further word be uttered? Page, at his best, is not a literary craftsman, but a literary artist. This needs no proof for those who know his stories, but further proof may be had in a province where he is perhaps least known—in the realm of poetry. The one hundred and more pages given to his poems furnish a sufficient basis for a fair judgment, and the judgment will pronounce the form varied, the poetic ideal clear and lofty, the workmanship in the main careful and delicate, the poetic quality simple and unstrained; in fine, the whole as worthy of an author whose reading gives him the companionship of the best, whose standards permit no compromises, and whose attainments place him among the best known and most admired of America's living writers.



The Plantation Edition of Page's books is published by Charles Scribner's Sons, his sole publishers.

ESTABLISHING A PROTECTORATE

Extract from "Meh Lady: A Story of the War." From 'In Ole Virginia'; Copyright, 1887, Charles Scribner's Sons, and used here by permission of the author and the publishers.

. . . "TELL 'long in de spring Meh Lady she done breck down, what wid teachin' school, an' settin' up, an' bein' so po', stintin' for Mistis, an' her face gittin' real white 'stid o' pink-like peach-blossom, as it used to be, on'y her eyes dee bigger an' prettier'n ever, 'sep' dee look tired when she come out o' Mistis' chahmber an' lean 'g'inst de do', lookin' out down de lonesome road; an' de doctor whar come from Richmon' to see Mistis, 'cause de ain' no doctor in de neighborhood sence de war, tell Hannah when he went 'way de larst time 'tain' no hope for Mistis, she mos' gone, an' she better look mighty good after Meh Lady too; he say she mos' sick as Mistis, an' fust thing she know she'll be gone too. Dat 'sturb Hannah might'ly. Well, so 'twuz tell in de spring. I had done plant meh corn, an' it hed done come up right good; 'bout mos' eight acres, right below the barn whar de lan' strong (I couldn' put in no mo' 'cause de mule he wuz mighty ole); an' come a man down heah one mornin', riding a sway-back sorrel horse, an' say dee gwine sell de place in 'bout a mon'. Meh Lady hed gone to school, an' I ain' le' him see Mistis, nor tell him whar Meh Lady is nuther; I jes' teck de message an' call Hannah so as she kin git it straight; an' when Meh Lady come home dat evenin' I tell her. She sut'n'y did tu'n white, an' dat night she ain' sleep a wink. After she put her ma to sleep, she come out to her mammy' house, an' fling herself on Hannah' bed an' cry an' cry. 'Twuz jes' as ef her heart gwine breck; she say 'twould kill her ma, an' hit did.

"Mistis she boun' to heah 'bout it, 'cause Meh Lady 'bleeged to breck it to her now; and at fust it 'peared like she got better on it, she teck mo' noticement o' ev'ything, an' her eyes look bright and shiny. She ain' know not yit 'bout how hard Meh Lady been had to scuffle; she say she keep on after her to git herse'f some new clo'es, a dress an' things, an' she oont; an' Meh Lady would jes' smile, tired like, an' say she teachin' now, and don' want no mo' 'n she got, an' her smile meck me mos' sorry like she cryin'.

"So hit went on tell jes befo' de sale. An' one day Meh Lady she done lef' her ma settin' in her cheer by de winder, whar she done fix her good wid pillows, an' she done gone to school, an' Hannah come out whar I grazin' de mule on de ditch-bank, an' say Mistis wan' see me toreckly. I gi' Hannah de lines, an' I went in an' knock at de do', an' when Mistis ain' heah, I went an' knock at de chahmber do' an' she tell me to come in; an' I ax her how she is, an' she say she ain' got long to stay wid us, an' she wan' ax me some'n, and she wan' me tell her de truth, an' she say I al'ays been mighty faithful an' kind to her an' hern, an' she hope Gord will erward me an' Hannah for it, an' she wan' me now to tell her de truth. When she talk dat way, hit sut'n'y hu't me, an' I tole her I sut'n'y would tell her faithful. Den she went on an' ax me how we wuz gettin' on, an' ef we ain' been mighty po', an' ef Meh Lady ain' done stint herse'f more'n she ever know; an' I tell her all 'bout it, ev'ything jes' like it wuz—de fatal truth, 'cause I done promised her; an' she sut'n'y was grieved, I tell you, and de tears roll down an' drap off her face on de pillow; an' pres'n'y she say she hope Gord would forgive her, an' she teck out her breast dem little rocks Marster gi' her when she married, whar hed been ole Mistis', an' she say she gin up all the urrs, but dese she keep to gi' Meh Lady when she married, an' now she feared 'twuz pride, an' Gord done punish her, lettin' her chile starve, but she ain' know hit 'zactly, an' ign'ance he forgive; an' she went on an' talk 'bout Marster an' ole times when she fust come home a bride, an' 'bout Marse Phil an' Meh Lady, tell she leetle mo' breck my heart, an' de tears rain down my face on de flo'. She sut'n'y talk beautiful. Den she gi' me de diamonds, an' dee shine like a handful of lightning-bugs! an' she tell me to teck 'em an' teck keer on 'em, an' gi' 'em to Meh Lady some time after she gone, an' not le' nobody else have 'em, an' would n' me an' Hannah teck good keer o' her, an' stay wid her, and not le' her wuck so hard, an' I tell her we sut'n'y would do dat. Den her voice mos' gin out an' she 'peared mighty tired, but hit look like she got some'n still on her min', an' pres'n'y she say I mus' come close, she mighty tired; an' I sort o' ben' todes her, an' she say she wan' me after she gone, as soon as I kin, to get the wud to Meh Lady's cousin whar wuz heah wounded

indurin' o' de war dat *she* dead, an' dat ef he kin help her chile, an' be her pertector, she know he'll do it; an' I ain' to le' Meh Lady know nuttin' 'bout it, not nuttin' 't all, an' to tell him he been mighty good to her, an' she lef' him her blessin'. Den she git so faint, I run an' call Hannah, an' she come runnin' an' gi' her some sperrits, an' tell me to teck de mule an' go after Meh Lady toreckly, an' so I did. When she got dyah, do', Mistis done mos' speechless; Hannah hed done git her in de bed, which wan't no trouble, she so light. She know Meh Lady, do', an' try to speak to her two or th'ee times, but dee ain' meck out much mo' 'n Gord would bless her and teck keer on her; an' she die right easy jes' befo' mornin'. An' Meh Lady ax me to pray, an' I did. She sut'n'y die peaceful, an' she look jes' like she smilin' after she dead; she sut'n'y wuz ready to go.

"Well, Hannah and Meh Lady lay her out in her bes' frock, an' she sno'ly look younger'n I ever see her look sence Richmon' fell, ef she ain' look younger'n she look sence befo' de war; an' de neighbors, de few dat's left, an' de black folks roun' cum, an' we bury her de evenin' after in the gyardin' right side Marse Phil, her fust-born, whar we know she wan' be; an' her mammy she went in de house after dat to stay at night in the room wid Meh Lady, an' I sleep on the front po'ch to teck keer de house. 'Cause we sut'n'y wuz 'sturbed 'bout de chile; she ain' sleep an' she ain' eat an' she ain' cry none, an' Hannah say dat ain' reasonable, which 'taint, 'cause womens dee cry sort o' 'natchel.

"But so 'twuz; de larst time she cry wuz dat evenin' she come in Hannah' house, an' fling herse'f on de bed, an' cry so grievous 'cause dee gwine sell de place, an' 'twould kill her ma. She ain' cry no mo'!

"Well, after we done bury Mistis, as I wuz sayin', we sut'n'y wuz natchelly tossified 'bout Meh Lady. Hit look like what de doctor say wuz sut'n'y so, an' she gwine right after her ma.

"I try to meck her ride de mule to school, an' tell her I ain' got no use for him, I got to thin de corn; but she oodn't; she say he so po' she don' like to gi' him no mo' wuck 'n necessary; an' dat's de fact, he wuz mighty po' 'bout den, 'cause de feed done gi' out an' de grass ain' come good yit

an' when mule bline an' ole he mighty hard to git up; but he been a good mule in he time, an' he a good mule yit.

"So she'd go to school of a mornin', an' me or Hannah one 'd go to meet her of a evenin' to tote her books, 'cause she hardly able to tote herse'f den; an' she do right well at school (de chil'un all love her); twuz when she got home she so sufferin'; den her mind sort o' wrastlin wid itself, an' she jes' set down an' think an' study an' look so grieved. Hit sut'n'y did hut me an' Hannah to see her settin' dyah at de winder o' Mistis' chahmber, leanin' her head on her han' an' jes' lookin' out, lookin' out all de evenin' so lonesome, and she look beautiful too. Hannah say she grievin' herself to death.

"Well, dat went on for mo' 'n six weeks, and de chile jes' settin' dyah ev'y night all by herse'f wid de moonlight shinin' all over her, meckin' her look so pale. Hannah she tell me one night I got to do some'n, an' I say, 'What 'tis?' An' she say I got to git de wud dat Mistis say to de Cap'n, dat de chile need a pertector, an' I say, 'How?' And she say I got to write a letter. Den I say, 'I cyarn' neither read nor write, but I can get Meh Lady to write it;' an' she say, nor I cyarn', 'cause ain' Mistis done spressify partic'lar Meh Lady ain' to know nuttin' 'bout it? Den I say, 'I kin git somebody at de postoffice to write it, an' I kin pay 'em in eggs;' an' she say she ain' gwine have no po' white folks writin' an' speakin' 'bout Mistis' business. Den I say, 'How I gwine do den?' An' she study a little while, an' den she say I got to teck de mule an' go fine him. I say, 'Hi! Good Gord! Hannah, how I gwine fine him? De Cap'n live 'way up yander in New York, or somewhar or nuther, an' dat's further 'n Lynchbu'g, an' I'll ride de mule to death befo' I git dyah; besides I ain' got nothin' to feed him.'

"But Hannah got argiment to all dem wuds; she say I got tongue in meh head, an' I kin fine de way; an' as to ridin' de mule to death, I kin git down an' le' him res', or I kin lead him, an' I kin graze him side de road ef nobody oon le' me graze him in dee pahsture. Den she study little while, an' den say she got it now—I must go to Richmon' an' sell de mule, an' teck de money an' git on de kyars an' fine him. Hannah, I know, she gwine wuck it, 'cause she al'ays a powerful

han' to 'ravel anything. But it sut'n'y did hu't me to part wid dat mule, he sich a ambitious mule, an' I tell Hannah I ain' done sidin' meh corn; an' she say dat ain' meck no diff'unce, she gwine hoe de corn after I gone, and de chile grievin' so she feared she'll die, an' what good sidin' corn gwine do den? she grievin' mo'n she 'quainted wid, Hannah say. So I wuz to go to Richmon' nex' mornin' but one, befo' light, an' Hannah she wash meh shu't nex' day, an' cook meh rations while Meh Lady at school. Well, I knock off wuck right early nex' evenin' 'bout two hours be sun, 'cause I wan' rest de mule, an' after grazin' him for a while in de yard, I put him in he stall, an' gi' him a half-peck o' meal, 'cause dat de lahst night I gwine feed him; and soon as I went in wid de meal he swi'ch his tail an' hump hese'f jes' like he gwine kick me; dat's de way he al'ays do when he got anything 'g'inst you, 'cause you sich a fool or anything, 'cause mule got a heap o' sense when you know' em. Well, I think he jes' aggrivated 'cause I gwine sell him, an' I holler at him right ambitious like I gwine cut him in two, to fool him ef I kin, an' meck him b'lieve 'tain' nothin' de matter.

"An' jes' den I heah a horse steppin' 'long right brisk, an' I stop an' listen, an' de horse come 'long de pahf right study an' up todes de stable. I say, 'Hi! who dat?' an' when I went to de stall do', dyah wuz a gent'man settin' on a strange horse wid two white foots, an' a beard on he face, an' he hat pulled over he eyes to keep de sun out'n em; an' when he see me, he ride on up to de stable, an' ax me is Meh Lady at de house, an' how she is, an' a whole parecel o' questions; an' he so p'inted in he quiration I ain' had time to study ef I ever see him befo', but I don' think I is. He a mighty straight, fine-lookin' gent'man do', wid he face right brown like he been wuckin', an' I ain' able to fix him no ways. Den he tell me he heah o' Mistis' death, an' he jes' come 'cross de ocean, an' he wan' see Meh Lady partic'lar; an' I tell him she at school, but it mos' time for her come back; an' he ax whichaways, an' I show him de pahf, an' he git down an' ax me ef I cyarn feed he horse, an' I tell him of co'se, do' Gord knows I ain' got nuttin' to feed him wid 'sep' grahss; but I ain' gwine le' him know dat, so I ax him to walk to de house an' teck a seat on de po'ch tell Meh Lady come, an' I teck de horse and cyar

him in de stable like I got de corn-house full o' corn. An' when I come out I look, an' dyah he gwine stridin' 'way 'cross de fiel' 'long de pahf whar Meh Lady comin'.

"Well, I say, 'Hi! now he gwine to meet Meh Lady, an' I ain' know he name nur what he want,' an' I study a little while wherr I should go an' fin' Hannah or hurry myse'f an' meet Meh Lady. Not dat I b'lieve he gwine speak out de way to Meh Lady, 'cause he sut'n'y waz quality, I see dat; I know hit time I look at him settin' dyah so straight on he horse, 'mindin' me of Marse Phil, and he voice hit sholy wuz easy when he name Meh Lady's name and Mistis'; but I ain' know but what he somebody wan' to buy de place, an' I know Meh Lady ain' wan' talk 'bout dat, an' ain' wan' see strangers no way; so I jes' lip out 'cross de fiel' th'oo a nigher way to hit de pahf at dis ve'y place whar de gap wuz, an' whar I thought Meh Lady mighty apt to res' ef she tired or grievin'.

"An' I hurry 'long right swift to git heah befo' de white gent'man kin git heah, an' all de time I tu'nnin' in meh min' whar I heah anybody got voice sound deep an' cl'ar like dat, an' ax questions ef Meh Lady well, dat anxious, an' I cyarn' git it. An' by dat time I wuz done got right to de tu'n in de pahf dyah, mos out o' breaf, an' jes' as I tu'nned round dat clump o' bushes I see Meh Lady settin' right dyah, on de 'bankment whar de gap use' to be, wid her books by her side on de groun', her hat off at her feet, an' her head leanin' for'ard in her han's, an' her hyah mos' tumble down, an' de sun jes' techin' it th'oo de bushes; an' hit all come to me in a minute, jes' as clear as ef she jes' settin' on de gap dyah yis-tidy wid de rose-leaves done shatter all on de groun' by her, an' Cap'n Wilton kissin' her han' to comfort her, an' axin' her oon' she le' him come back some time to love her. An' I say, 'Dyah! 'fo Gord! ef I ain' know him soon as I lay meh eyes on him! De pertector done come!' Den I know huccome dat mule act so 'sponsible.

"An' jes' den he come walkin' 'long down de pahf, wid he hat on de back o' he head an' he eyes on her right farst, an' he face look so tender hit look right sweet. She think hit me, an' she ain' move nor look up tell he call her name; den she mos' jump out her seat, an' look up right swift, an' give a sort o' cry, an' her face light up like she tu'n't to de sun,

an' he retch out bofe he han's to her; an' I slip' back so he couldn' see me, an' come 'long home right quick to tell Hannah.

"I tell her I know him soon as I see him, but she tell me I lie, 'cause ef I had I'd 'a' come an' tell her 'bout hit, an' not gone down dyah interferin' wid white folks; an' she say I ain' nuver gwine have no sense 'bout not knowin' folks, dat he couldn' fool her; an' I don' b'lieve he could, a'tho' I ain' 'low dat to Hannah, 'cause hit don' do to 'gree wid wimens too much; dee git mighty sot up by it, an' den dee ain' al'ays want it, nuther. Well, she went in de house, an' dus' ev'ything, an' fix all de furniture straight, an' set de table for two, a thing ain' been done not sence Mistis tooken sick; an' den I see her gwine 'roun' Meh Lady' rose-bush mighty busy, an' when she sont me in de dinin'-room, dyah a whole parecel o' flowers she done put in a blue dish in de middle o' de table. An' she jes' as 'sumptious 'bout dat thing as ef 'twuz a fifty-cents somebody done gi' her. Well, den she come out, an' sich a cookin' as she hed; ef she ain' got more skillets an' spiders on dat fire den I been see dyah fur I don' know how long. It fyah do' me good!

"Well, pres'n'y heah dee come walkin' mighty aged-like, an' I think it all right, an' dee went up on de po'ch an' shake hands a long time, an' den' meh Gord! you know he tu'n roun' an' come down de steps, an' she gone in de house wid her handcher to her eyes, cryin'. I call Hannah right quick an' say, 'Hi, Hannah, good Gord A'mighty! what de matter now?' an' Hannah she look; den widout a wu'd she tu'n roun' an' walk right straight 'long de pahf to de house, an' went in th'oo de dinin'-room an' into de hall, an' dyah she fine de chile done fling herself down on her face on de sofa cryin' like her heart broke; an' she ax her what de matter, an' she say nuttin', an' Hannah say, 'What he been sayin' to you?' an' she say, 'Nuttin';' an' Hannah say, 'You done sen' him 'way?' an' she say, 'Yes.' Den Hannah she tell her what Mistis tell me de day she die, an' she say she stop cryin' sort o', but she cotch hold de pillar right tight like she in agony, an' she say pres'n'y, 'Please go 'way,' an' Hannah come 'way an' come outdo's.

"An' de Cap'n, when he come down de steps, he went to Meh Lady' rose-bush an' pull a rose off it, an' put 't in a

little book in he pocket; an' den he come down todes we house, an' he face mighty pale an' 'strusted lookin', an' he sut'n'y wuz glad to see me, an' he laugh' a little bit at me for lettin' him fool me; but I tell him he done got so likely an' agreeable lookin', dat de reason I ain' know him. An' he ax me to git he horse, an' jes' den Hannah come out de house, an' she ax him whar he gwine; an' he 'spon' he gwine home, an' he don' reckon he'll ever see us no mo'; an' he say he thought when he come maybe 'twould be diff'unt, an' he had hoped maybe he'd 'a' been able to prove to Meh Lady some'n he wan' prove, an' get her to le' him teck keer o' her an' we all; dat's what he come ten thousand miles fur, he say; but she got some'n in her mine, he say, she cyarn' git over, an' now he got to go 'way, an' he say he want us to teck keer on her, an' stay wid her al'ays, and he gwine meck it right, an' he gwine lef' he name in Richmon' wid a gent'man, an' gi' me he 'dress, an' I mus' come up dyah ev'y month an' git what he gwine lef' dyah, and report how we all is; an' he say he ain' got nuttin' to do now but to try an' reward us all fur all our kindness to him, an' keep us easy, but he wa'n' nuver comin' back, he guess, 'cause he got no mo' hope now he know Meh Lady got dat on her mine he cyarn' git over. An' he look down in de gyardin todes the graveyard when he say dat, an' he voice sort o' broke. Hannah she heah him th'oo right study, an' he face look mighty sorrowful, an' he voice done mos' gin out when he say Meh Lady got that on her mine he cyarn' git over.

"Den Hannah she upped an' tole him he sut'n'y ain' got much sense ef he come all dat way he say, an' gwine 'way widout Meh Lady; dat de chile been dat pesterin' herse'f sence her ma die she ain' know what she wan' mos', an' got in her mine; an' ef he ain' got de dictation to meck her know, he better go 'long back whar he came fum, an' he better ain' never set he foot heah; an' she say he sut'n'y done gone back sence he driv dem Yankeys out de do' wid he s'o'de, an' settin' dyah on he horse at de gate so study, an' she say ef 'twuz dat man he'd be married dis evenin'. Oh! she was real savigrous to him, 'cause she sut'n'y wuz outdone; an' she tell him what Mistis tell me de day she 'ceasted, ev'y wud jes like I tell you settin' heah, an' she say now he can go 'long, 'cause

ef he ain' gwine be pertector to de chile de plenty mo' sufferin' to be, dat dee pesterin' her all de time, an' she jes' oon' have nuttin' 't all to do wid 'em, dat's all. Wid dat she tu'n 'roun' an' gone in her house like she ain' noticin' him, an' he, suh! he look like day done broke on 'im. I see darkness roll off him, an' he tu'n roun' an' stride 'long back to de house, an' went up de steps th'ee at a time.

"An' dee say when he went in, de chile was dyah on de sofa still wid her head in de pillow cryin', 'cause she sut'n'y did care for him all de time, an' ever sence he open he eyes an' look at her so cu'yus, settin' dyah by him fannin' him all night to keep him fum dyin', when he layin' dyah wounded in de war. An' de on'y thing is she ain' been able to get her premission to marry him 'cause he wuz fightin' g'inst we all, an' 'cause she got 't in her mine dat Mistis don' wan' her to marry him for dat account. An' now he gone she layin' dyah in de gre't hall cryin' on de sofa to herse'f, so she ain' heah him come up de steps, tell he went up to her, and kneel down by her, an' put he arm 'roun' her and talk to her lovin'.

"Hannah she went in th'oo de chahmber pres'n'y to peep an' see ef he got any sense yit, an' when she come back she ain' say much, but she sont me to de spring, an' set to cookin' ag'in mighty induschus, an' she say he tryin' to 'swade de chile to marry him to-morrow. She oon' tell me nuttin' mo' 'sep' dat de chile seem mighty peaceable, an' she don' know wherr she marry him toreckly or not, 'cause she heah her say she ain' gwine marry him *at all,* an' she cyarn' marry him to-morrow 'cause she got her school, an' she ain' got no dress; but she place heap o' 'pendence in him, Hannah say, an' he gone on talkin' mighty sensible, like he gwine marry her wherr or no, an' he dat protectin' he done got her head on he shoulder an' talk to her jes' as 'fectionate as ef she b'longst to him, an'—she ain' say he kiss her, but I done notice partic'lar she ain' say he ain'; an' she say de chile sut'n'y is might' satisfied, an' dat all she gwine recite, an' I better go 'long an' feed white folk's horse 'stid o' interferin' 'long dee business; an' so I did, an' I gi' him de larst half-peck o' meal Hannah got in de barrel.

"An' when I come back to de house, Hannah done cyar in de supper an' waitin' on de table, an' dee settin' opposite one

nurr talkin', an' she po'in' out he tea, an' he tellin' her things to make her laugh an' look pretty, 'cross Hannah' flowers in de blue bowl twix' 'em. Hit meck me feel right young.

"Well, after supper dee come out an' went to walk 'bout de yard, an' pres'n'y dee stop at dat red rose-bush, and I see him teck out he pocket-book an' teck some'n out it, and she say some'n, an' he put he arm—ne'm' mine, ef Hannah ain' say he kiss her, I know—'cause de moon come out a little piece right den an' res' on 'em, an' she sut'n'y look beautiful wid her face sort o' tu'nned up to him, smilin'.

"You mine, do', she keep on tellin' him she ain' promise to marry him, an' of co'se she cyarn' marry him to-morrow like he say; she ain' nuver move fum dat. But dat ain' 'sturb he mine now; he keep on laughin' study. Tell, 'bout right smart while after supper, he come out an' ax me cyarn' I git he horse. I say, 'Hi! what de matter? Whar you gwine? I done feed yo' horse.'

"He laugh real hearty, an' say he gwine to de Co'te House, an' he wan' me to go wid him; don' I think de mule kin stan' it? an' her mammy will teck keer Meh Lady.

"So in 'bout a hour we wuz on de road, an' de last thing Meh Lady say wuz she cyarn' marry him; but he come out de house laughin', an' he sut'n'y wuz happy, an' he ax me all sort o' questions 'bout Meh Lady, an' Marse Phil, an' de ole times.

"We went by de preacher's an' wake him up befo' day, an' he say he'll drive up dyah after breakfast; an' den we went on 'cross to de Co'te House, an' altogether 'twuz about twenty-five miles, an' hit sut'n'y did push ole George good, 'cause de Cun'l wuz a hard rider like all we all white folks; he come mighty nigh givin' out, I tell you.

"We got dyah befo' breakfast, an' wash up, an' pres'n'y de cluck, Mr. Taylor, come, an' de Cun'l went over to de office. In a minute he call me, an' I went over, an' soon as I git in de do' I see he mighty pestered. He say, 'Heah, Billy, you know you' young mistis' age, don't you? I want you to prove it.'

" 'Hi! yes, suh, co'se I knows it,' I says. 'Mistis got her an' Marse Phil bofe set down in de book at home.'

" 'Well, jes' meck oath to it,' says he, easy like. 'She's near twenty-three, ain't she?'

" 'Well, 'fo' Gord! Marster, I don' know 'bout dat,' says I. 'You know mo' 'bout dat 'n I does, 'cause you kin read. I know her age, 'cause I right dyah when she born; but how ole she is, I don' know,' I says.

" 'Cyarn' you swear she's twenty-one?' says he, right impatient.

" 'Well, nor, suh, dat I cyarn',' says I.

"Well, he sut'n'y looked aggrivated, but he ain' say nuttin', he jes' tu'n to Mr. Taylor an' say:

" 'Kin I get a fresh horse heah, suh? I kin ride home an' get de proof an' be back heah in five hours, ef I can get a fresh horse; I'll buy him and pay well for him too.'

" 'It's forty miles dyah an' back,' says Mr. Taylor.

" 'I kin do it; I'll be back heah at half-past twelve o'clock sharp,' says de Cun'l, puttin' up he watch an' pullin' on he gloves an' tu'nnin' to de do'.

"Well, he look so sure o' what he kin do, I feel like I 'bleeged to help him, an' I say:

" 'I ain't know wherr Meh Lady twenty-th'ee or twenty-one, 'cause I ain' got no learnin', but I know she born on Sunday de thrashin'-wheat time two years after Marse Phil wuz born, whar I cyar' in dese ahms on de horse when he wuz a baby, an' whar went in de ahmy, an' got kilt leadin' he bat'ry in de battle 'cross de oat-fiel' down todes Williamsbu'g, an' de gener'l say he ruther been him den President de Confederate States, an' he's 'sleep by he ma in de ole gyardin at home now; I bury him dyah, an' hit's "Cun'l" on he tombstone dyah now.'

"De Cun'l tu'n roun' an' look at Mr. Taylor, an' Mr. Taylor look out de winder ('cause he know 'twuz so, 'cause he wuz in Marse Phil' bat'ry).

" 'You needn' teck you' ride,' says he, sort o' whisperin'. An' de Cun'l pick up a pen an' write a little while, an' den he read it, an' he had done write jes' what I say, wud for wud; an' Mr. Taylor meck me kiss de book, 'cause 'twuz true, an' he say he gwine spread it in de 'Record' jes' so, for all de wull to see.

"Den we come on home, I ridin' a horse de Cun'l done

hire to rest de mule, an' I mos' tired as he, but de Cun'l he ridin' jes' as fresh as ef he jes' start; an' he bring me a nigh way whar he learnt in de war, he say, when he used to slip th'oo de lines an' come at night forty miles jes' to look at de house an' see de light shine in Meh Lady' winder.

"De preacher an' he wife wuz dyah when we git home; but you know Meh Lady ain' satisfied in her mine yit. She say she do love him, but she don' know wherr she ought to marry him, 'cause she ain' got nobody to 'vise her. But he says he gwine be her 'viser from dis time, an' he lead her to de do' an' kiss her; an' she went to git ready, an' de turr lady wid her, an' her mammy wait on her, while I wait on de Cun'l, an' be he body-servant, an' git he warm water to shave, an' he cut off all he beard 'sep' he mustache, 'cause Meh Lady jes' say de man she knew didn' hed no beard on he face. An' Hannah she sut'n'y wuz comical, she ironin' an' sewin' dyah so induschus she oon' le' me come in meh own house.

"Well, pres'n'y we wuz ready, an' we come out in de hall, an' de Cun'l went in de parlor whar dee wuz gwine be married, an' de preacher he wuz in dyah, an' dee chattin' while we waitin' fur Meh Lady; an' I jes' slip out an' got up in de j'ice an' git out dem little rocks whar Mistis gin' me an' blow de dust off 'em good, and good Gord! ef dee didn' shine! I put 'em in meh pocket an' put on meh clean shu't an' come 'long back to de house. Hit right late now, todes evenin', an' de sun wuz shinin' all 'cross de yard an' th'oo de house, an' de Cun'l he so impatient he cyarn' set still, he jes' champin' he bit; so he git up an' walk 'bout in de hall, an' he sut'n'y look handsome an' young, jes' like he did dat day he stand dyah wid he cap in he hand, an' Meh Lady say she ain' claim no kin wid him, an' he say he cyarn' intrude on ladies, an' back out de front do' wid he head straight up, an' ride to git her de letter, an' now he walkin' in de hall waitin' to marry her. An' all on a sudden Hannah fling de do' wide open, an' Meh Lady walk out!

"Gord! ef I didn' think 'twuz a angel.

"She stan' dyah jes' white as snow fum her head to way back down on de flo' behine her, an' her veil done fall roun' her like white mist, an' some roses in her han'. Ef it didn' look like de sun done come th'oo de chahmber do' wid her,

an' blaze all over de styars, an' de Cun'l he look like she bline him. An' twuz Hannah an' she, while we wuz 'way dat day, done fine Mistis' weddin' dress an' veil an' all, down to de fan an' little slippers 'bout big as two little white ears o' popcorn; an' de dress had sort o' cobwebs all over it, whar Hannah say was lace, an' hit jes' fit Meh Lady like Gord put it dyah in de trunk for her.

"Well, when de Cun'l done tell her how beautiful she is, an' done meck her walk 'bout de hall showin' her train, an' she lookin' over her shoulder at it an' den at de Cun'l to see ef he proud o' her, he gin her he arm; an' jes' den I walk up befo' her an' teck dem things out meh pocket, an' de Cun'l drap her arm an' stan' back, an' I put 'em 'roun' her thote an' on her arms, an' gin her de res', an' Hannah put 'em on her ears, an' dee shine like stars, but her face shine wus'n dem, an' she leetle mo' put bofe arms 'roun' meh neck, wid her eyes jes' runnin' over. An' den de Cun'l gi' her he arm, an' dee went in de parlor, an' Hannah an' me behine 'em. An' dyah facin' Mistis' picture an' Marse Phil's (tooken when he wuz a little boy), lookin' down at 'em bofe, dee wuz married.

"An' when de preacher git to dat part whar ax who give dis woman to de man, he sort o' wait an' he eye sort o' rove to me disconfused like he ax me ef I know; an' I don' know huccome 'twuz, but I think 'bout Marse Jeems an' Mistis when he ax me dat, an' Marse Phil, whar all dead, an' all de scufflin' we done been th'oo, an' how de chile ain' got no body to teck her part now 'sep jes' me; an' now, when he wait an' look at me dat way, an' ax me dat, I 'bleeged to speak up, I jes' step for'ard an' say:

" 'Ole Billy.'

"An' jes' den de sun crawl roun' de winder shetter an' res' on her like it pourin' light all over her.

"An' dat night when de preacher was gone wid he wife, an' Hannah done drapt off to sleep, I wuz settin' in de do' wid meh pipe, an' I heah 'em settin' dyah on de front steps, dee voices soun'in' low like bees, an' de moon sort o' meltin' over de yard, an' I sort o' got to studyin', an' hit 'pear like de plantation 'live once mo', an' de ain' no mo' scufflin', an' de ole times done come back ag'in, an' I heah meh kerridge-horses stompin' in de stalls, an' de place all cleared up ag'in, an'

fence all roun' de pahsture, an' I smell de wet clover-blossoms right good, an' Marse Phil an' Meh Lady done come back, an' runnin' all roun' me, climbin' up on meh knees, callin' me 'Unc' Billy,' an' pesterin' me to go fishin', while somehow Meh Lady an' de Cun'l, settin' dyah on de steps wid dee voice hummin' low like water runnin' in de' dark—

* * * * * *

"An' dat Phil, suh," he broke off, rising from the ground on which we had been seated for some time, "dat Phil, suh, he mo' like Marse Phil 'n he like he pa; an' Billy—he ain' so ole, but he ain' fur behine him."

"Billy," I said; "he's named after—"

"Go 'way, Marster," he said deprecatingly, "who gwine name gent'man after a ole nigger?"

THE ACCIDENT

Extract from "Run to Seed." From 'Elsket and Other Stories'; Copyright, 1891, Charles Scribner's Sons, and used here by permission of the author and the publishers.

It is astonishing how one man can create a public sentiment. One woman can ruin a reputation as effectually as a churchful. One bullet can kill a man as dead as a bushel, if it hits him right. So Dick Rail injured Jim. For Dick was an authority. He swore the biggest oaths, wore the largest watch-chain, knew his engine better and sat it steadier than any man on the road. He had had a passenger train again and again, but he was too fond of whiskey. It was too risky. Dick affected Jim's standing: told stories about him: made his life a burden to him. "He shan't stay on the road," he used to say. "He's stingier'n——! Carries his victuals about with him—I b'lieve he sleeps with one o' them *I*-talians in a goods box." This was true—at least, about carrying his food with him. (The rest was Dick's humor.) Messing cost too much. The first two months' pay went to settle an old guano-bill; but the third month's pay was Jim's. The day he drew that he fattened a good deal. At least, he looked so. It was eighty-two dollars (for Jim ran extra runs—made double time whenever he could). Jim had never had so much money in his life; had hardly ever seen it. He walked about the

streets that night till nearly midnight, feeling the wad of notes in his breast-pocket. Next day a box went down the country, and a letter with it, and that night Jim could not have bought a chew of tobacco. The next letter he got from home was heavy. Jim smiled over it a good deal, and cried a little too. He wondered how Kitty looked in her new dress, and if the barrel of flour made good bread; and if his mother's shawl was warm.

One day he was changed to the passenger service, the express. It was a promotion, paid more, and relieved him from Dick Rail.

He had some queer experiences being ordered around, but he swallowed them all. He had not been there three weeks when Mrs. Wagoner was a passenger on the train. Carry was with her. They had moved to town. (Mr. Wagoner was interested in railroad development.) Mrs. Wagoner called him to her seat, and talked to him—in a loud voice. Mrs. Wagoner had a loud voice. It had the "carrying" quality. She did not shake hands; Carry did and said she was so glad to see him: she had been down home the week before—had seen his mother and Kitty. Mrs. Wagoner said, "We still keep our plantation as a country place." Carry said Kitty looked so well: her new dress was lovely. Mrs. Wagoner said his mother's eyes were worse. She and Kitty had walked over to see them, to show Kitty's new dress. She had promised that Mr. Wagoner would do what he could for him (Jim) on the road.

Next month Jim went back to the freight service. He preferred Dick Rail to Mrs. Wagoner. He got him. Dick was worse than ever, his appetite was whetted by abstinence; he returned to his attack with renewed zest. He never tired—never flagged. He was perpetual: he was remorseless. He made Jim's life a wilderness. Jim said nothing, just slouched along silenter than ever, quieter than ever, closer than ever. He took to going on Sunday to another church than the one he had attended, a more fashionable one than that. The Wagoners went there. Jim sat far back in the gallery, very far back, where he could just see the top of Carry's head, her big hat and her face, and could not see Mrs. Wagoner, who sat nearer the gallery. It had a curious effect on him; he never

went to sleep there. He took to going up-town walking by the stores—looking in at the windows of tailors and clothiers. Once he actually went into a shop and asked the price of a new suit of clothes. (He needed them badly.) The tailor unfolded many rolls of cloth and talked volubly; talked him dizzy. Jim looked wistfully at them, rubbed his hand over them softly, felt the money in his pocket; and came out. He said he thought he might come in again. Next day he did not have the money. Kitty wrote him she could not leave home to go to school on their mother's account, but she would buy books, and she was learning; she would learn fast, her mother was teaching her; and he was the best brother in the world, the whole world; and they had a secret, but he must wait.

One day Jim got a big bundle from down the country. It was a new suit of clothes. On top was a letter from Kitty. This was the secret. She and her mother had sent for the cloth and had made them; they hoped they would fit. They had cried over them. Jim cried a little too. He put them on. They did not fit, were much too large. Under Dick Rail's fire Jim had grown even thinner than before. But he wore them to church. He felt that it would have been untrue to his mother and Kitty not to wear them. He was sorry to meet Dick Rail on the street. Dick had on a black broadcloth coat, a velvet vest, and large-checked trousers. Dick looked Jim over. Jim winced, flushed a little: he was not so sunburned now. Dick saw it. Next week Dick caught Jim in a crowd in the "yard" waiting for their train. He told about the meeting. He made a double shot. He said, "Boys, Jim's in love, he's got new clothes! you ought to see 'em!" Dick was graphic; he wound up: "They hung on him like breechin' on his old mule. By ——! I b'lieve he was too —— stingy to buy 'em and made 'em himself." There was a shout from the crowd. Jim's face worked. He jumped for him. There was a handspike lying near and he seized it. Some one grabbed him, but he shook him off as if he had been a child. Why he did not kill Dick no one ever knew. He meant to do it. For some time they thought he was dead. He laid off for over a month. After that Jim wore what clothes he chose: no one ever troubled him.

So he went on in the same way: slow, sleepy, stuttering, thin, stingy, ill-dressed, lame.

He was made a fireman; preferred it to being a conductor, it led to being an engineer, which paid more. He ran extra trips whenever he could, up and double straight back. He could stand an immense amount of work. If he got sleepy he put tobacco in his eyes to keep them open. It was bad for the eyes, but waked him up. Kitty was going to take music next year, and that cost money. He had not been home for several months, but was going at Christmas.

They did not have any sight tests then. But the new Directory meant to be thorough. Mr. Wagoner had become a Director, had his eye on the presidency. Jim was one day sent for, and was asked about his eyes. They were bad. There was not a doubt about it. They were inflamed; he could not see a hundred yards. He did not tell them about the extra trips and putting the tobacco in them. Dick Rail must have told about him. They said he must go. Jim turned white. He went to his little room, close up under the roof of a little dingy house in a back street, and sat down in the dark; thought about his mother and Kitty, and dimly about some one else; wrote his mother and Kitty a letter; said he was coming home—called it "a visit"; cried over the letter, but was careful not to cry on it. He was a real cry-baby—Jim was.

"Just run to seed," he said to himself, bitterly, over and over; "just run to seed." Then he went to sleep.

The following day he went down to the railroad. That was the last day. Next day he would be "off." The train-master saw him and called him. A special was just going out. The Directors were going over the road in the officers' car. Dick Rail was the engineer, and his fireman had been taken sick. Jim must take the place. Jim had a mind not to do it. He hated Dick. He thought of how he had pursued him. But he heard a voice behind him and turned. Carry was standing down the platform, talking with some elderly gentlemen. She had on a travelling cap and ulster. She saw him and came forward—a step:

"How do you do?" she held out her little gloved hand. She was going out over the road with her father. Jim took off his hat and shook hands with her. Dick Rail saw him,

walked round the other side of the engine, and tried to take off his hat like that. It was not a success; Dick knew it.

Jim went.

"Who was that?" one of the elderly gentlemen asked Carry.

"An old friend of mine—a gentleman," she said.

"Rather run to seed—hey?" the old fellow quoted, without knowing exactly why; for he only half recognized Jim, if he recognized him at all.

They started.

It was a bad trip. The weather was bad, the road was bad, the engine bad; Dick bad—worse than all. Jim had a bad time: he was to be off when he got home. What would his mother and Kitty do?

Once Carry came (brought by the President) and rode in the engine for a little while. Jim helped her up and spread his coat for her to sit on, put his overcoat under her feet; his heart was in it. Dick was sullen, and Jim had to show her about the engine. When she got down to go back to the car she thanked him—she "had enjoyed it greatly"—she "would like to try it again." Jim smiled. He was almost good-looking when he smiled.

Dick was meaner than ever after that, sneered at Jim—swore; but Jim didn't mind it. He was thinking of some one else, and of the rain which would prevent her coming again.

They were on the return trip, and were half-way home when the accident happened. It was just "good dusk," and it had been raining all night and all day, and the road was as rotten as mud. The special was behind and was making up. She had the right of way, and she was flying. She rounded a curve just above a small "fill," under which was a little stream, nothing but a mere "branch." In good weather it would never be noticed. The gay party behind were at dinner. The first thing they knew was the sudden jerk which came from reversing the engine at full speed, and the grind as the wheels slid along under the brakes. Then they stopped with a bump which jerked them out of their seats, set the lamps to swinging, and sent the things on the table crashing on the floor. No one was hurt, only shaken, and they crowded out of the car to learn the cause. They found it. The en-

gine was half buried in wet earth on the other side of the little washout, with the tender jammed up into the cab. The whole was wrapped in a dense cloud of escaping steam. The roar was terrific. The big engineer, bare-headed and covered with mud, and with his face deadly white, was trying to get down to the engine. Some one was in there.

They got him out after a while (but it took some time), and laid him on the ground, while a mattress was got. It was Jim.

Carry had been weeping and praying. She sat down and took his head in her lap, and with her lace handkerchief wiped his blackened and bleeding face, and smoothed his wet hair.

The newspaper accounts, which are always reflections of what public sentiment is, or should be, spoke of it—some, as "a providential"—others, as "a miraculous"—and yet others as "a fortunate" escape on the part of the President and the Directors of the road, according to the tendencies, religious or otherwise, of their paragraphists.

They mentioned casually that "only one person was hurt—an employee, name not ascertained." And one or two had some gush about the devotion of the beautiful young lady, the daughter of one of the directors of the road, who happened to be on the train, and who, "like a ministering angel, held the head of the wounded man in her lap after he was taken from the wreck." A good deal was made of this picture, which was extensively copied.

Dick Rail's account, after he had come back from carrying the broken body down to the old Upton place in the country, and helping to lay it away in the old enclosure under the big trees on the hill, was this:

"By——!" he said, when he stood in the yard, with a solemn-faced group around him, "we were late, and I was just shaking 'em up. I had been meaner'n hell to Jim all the trip (I didn't know him, and you all didn't neither), and I was workin' him for all he was worth: I didn't give him a minute. The sweat was rolling off him, and I was damnin' him with every shovelful. We was runnin' under orders to make up, and we was just rounding the curve this side of Ridge Hill, when Jim hollered. He saw it as he raised up with the

shovel in his hand to wipe the sweat off his face, and he hollered to me, 'My God! Look, Dick! Jump!'

"I looked and Hell was right there. He caught the lever and reversed, and put on the air and sand before I saw it, and then grabbed me, and flung me clean out of the cab: 'Jump!' he says, as he give me a swing. I jumped, expectin' of course he was comin' too; and as I lit, I saw him turn and catch the lever. The old engine was jumpin' nigh off the track. But she was too near. In she went, and the tender right on her. You may talk about his eyes bein' bad; but by ——! when he gave me that swing, they looked to me like coals of fire. When we got him out 'twarn't Jim! He warn't nothin' but mud and ashes. He warn't quite dead; opened his eyes, and breathed onct or twict; but I don't think he knew anything, he was so mashed up. We laid him out on the grass, and that young lady took his head in her lap and cried over him (she had come and seed him in the engine), and said she knew his mother and sister down in the country (she used to live down there); they was gentle-folks; that Jim was all they had. And when one of them old director-fellows who had been swilling himself behind there come aroun', with his kid gloves on and his hands in his great-coat pockets, lookin' down, and sayin' something about, 'Poor fellow, couldn't he 'a jumped? Why didn't he jump?' I let him have it; I said, 'Yes, and if it hadn't been for him, you and I'd both been frizzin' in h—l this minute.' And the President standin' there said to some of them, 'That was the same young fellow who came into my office to get a place last year when you were down, and said he had "run to seed." 'But,' he says, 'Gentlemen, it was d—d good seed!' "

How good it was no one knew but two weeping women in a lonely house.

THE HOME AND ITS INFLUENCE

From 'Social Life in Old Virginia Before the War'; Copyright, 1897, Charles Scribner's Sons, and used here by permission of the author and the publishers.

. . . The life about the place was amazing. There were the busy children playing in groups, the boys of the family mingling with the little darkies as freely as any other young animals, and forming the associations which tempered slavery and made the relation one not to be understood save by those who saw it. There they were, stooping down and jumping up; turning and twisting, their heads close together, like chickens over an "invisible repast," their active bodies always in motion: busy over their little matters with that ceaseless energy of boyhood which could move the world could it but be concentrated and conserved. They were all over the place; in the orchard robbing birds' nests, getting into wild excitement over catbirds, which they ruthlessly murdered because they "called snakes"; in spring and summer fishing or "washing" in the creek, riding the plough-horses to and from the fields, running the calves and colts, and being as mischievous as the young mules they chased.

There were the little girls in their great sunbonnets, often sewed on to preserve the wonderful peach-blossom complexions, with their small female companions playing about the yard or garden, running with and wishing they were boys, and getting half scoldings from mammy for being tomboys and tearing their aprons and dresses. There, in the shade, near her "house," was the mammy with her assistants, her little charge in her arms, sleeping in her ample lap, or toddling about her, with broken, half-formed phrases, better understood than framed. There passed young negro girls, blue-habited, running about bearing messages; or older women moving at a statelier pace, doing with deliberation the little tasks which were "their work;" whilst about the office or smoke-house or dairy or wood-pile there was always some movement and life. The peace of it all was only emphasized by the sounds that broke upon it: the call of ploughers to their teams; the shrill shouts of children; the chant of women over their work, and as a bass the recurrent hum of spinning-wheels, like the drone

of some great insect, sounding from cabins where the turbaned spinners spun their fleecy rolls for the looms which were clacking in the loom-rooms making homespun for the plantation.

* * * * * *

Such was the outward scene. What was there within? That which has been much misunderstood—that which was like the roses, wasteful beyond measure in its unheeded growth and blowing, but sweet beyond measure, too, and filling with its fragrance not only the region round about, but sending it out unmeasuredly on every breeze that wandered by.

The life within was of its own kind. There were the master and the mistress: the old master and old mistress, the young masters and young mistresses, and the children; besides some aunts and cousins, and the relations or friends who did not live there, but were only always on visits.

Properly, the mistress should be mentioned first, as she was the most important personage about the home, the presence which pervaded the mansion, the centre of all that life, the queen of that realm; the master willingly and proudly yielding her entire management of all household matters and simply carrying out her directions, confining his ownership within the curtilage solely to his old "secretary," which on the mistress's part was as sacred from her touch as her bonnet was from his.

* * * * * *

The master might, by having a good overseer and reliable headmen, shift a portion of the burden from his shoulders; the mistress had no such means of relief. She was the necessary and invariable functionary; the keystone of the domestic economy which bound all the rest of the structure and gave it its strength and beauty. From early morn till morn again the most important and delicate concerns of the plantation were her charge and care. She gave out and directed all the work of the women. From superintending the setting of the turkeys to fighting a pestilence, there was nothing which was not her work. She was mistress, manager, doctor, nurse, counsellor, seamstress, teacher, housekeeper, slave, all at once. She was at the beck and call of every one, especially

of her husband, to whom she was "guide, philosopher, and friend."

One of them, being told of a broken gate by her husband, said, "Well, my dear, if I could sew it with my needle and thread, I would mend it for you."

What she was, only her husband divined, and even he stood before her in dumb, half-amazed admiration, as he might before the inscrutable vision of a superior being.

* * * * * *

As to the master himself, it is hard to generalize. Yet there were indeed certain generic characteristics, whether he was grave and severe, or jovial and easy. There was the foundation of a certain pride based on self-respect and consciousness of power. There were nearly always the firm mouth with its strong lines, the calm, placid, direct gaze, the quiet speech of one who is accustomed to command and have his command obeyed; there was a contemplative expression due to much communing alone, with weighty responsibilities resting upon him; there was absolute self-confidence, and often a look caused by tenacity of opinion. There was not a doubtful line in the face nor a doubtful tone in the voice; his opinions were convictions; he was a partisan to the backbone; and not infrequently he was incapable of seeing more than one side. This prevented breadth, but gave force. He was proud, but rarely haughty except to dishonor. To that he was inexorable. He believed in God, he believed in his wife, he believed in his blood. He was chivalrous, he was generous, he was usually incapable of fear or of meanness. To be a Virginia gentleman was the first duty; it embraced being a Christian and all the virtues. He lived as one; he left it as a heritage to his children. He was fully appreciative of both the honors and the responsibilities of his position. He believed in a democracy, but understood that the absence of a titled aristocracy had to be supplied by a class more virtuous than he believed any aristocracy to be. He purposed in his own person to prove that this was practicable. He established the fact that it was. This and other responsibilities made him grave. He had inherited gravity from his father and grandfather. The latter had been a performer in the greatest work of modern times, with the shadow of the

scaffold over him if he failed. The former had faced the weighty problems of the new government, with many unsolved questions ever to answer. He himself faced problems not less grave. The greatness of the past, the time when Virginia had been the mighty power of the New World, loomed ever above him. It increased his natural conservatism. He saw the change that was steadily creeping on. The conditions that had given his class their power and prestige had altered. The fields were worked down, and agriculture that had made his class rich no longer paid. The cloud was already gathering in the horizon; the shadow already was stretching towards him. He could foresee the danger that threatened Virginia. A peril ever sat beside his door. He was "holding the wolf by the ears." Outside influences hostile to his interest were being brought to bear. Any movement must work him injury. He sought the only refuge that appeared. He fell back behind the Constitution that his fathers had helped to establish, and became a strict constructionist for Virginia and his rights. These things made him grave. He reflected much. Out on the long verandas in the dusk of the summer nights, with his wide fields stretching away into the gloom, and "the woods" bounding the horizon, his thoughts dwelt upon serious things; he pondered causes and consequences; he resolved everything to prime principles. He communed with the Creator and his first work, Nature.

* * * * * *

Whether or not the sons were, as young men, peculiarly admirable may be a question. They possessed the faults and the virtues of young men of their kind and condition. They were given to self-indulgence; they were not broad in their limitations; they were apt to contemn what did not accord with their own established views (for their views were established before their mustaches); they were wasteful of time and energies beyond belief; they were addicted to the pursuit of pleasure. They exhibited the customary failings of their kind in a society of an aristocratic character. But they possessed in full measure the corresponding virtues. They were brave, they were generous, they were high-spirited. Indulgence in pleasure did not destroy them. It was the young French noblesse who affected to eschew exertion even to the

point of having themselves borne on litters on their boar-hunts, and who yet, with a hundred pounds of iron buckled on their frames, charged like furies at Fontenoy. So these same languid, philandering young gentlemen, when the crucial occasion came, suddenly appeared as the most dashing and indomitable soldiery of modern times. It was the Norfolk company known as the "Dandies" that was extirpated in a single day.

But, whatever may be thought of the sons, there can be no question as to the daughters. They were like the mother; made in her own image. They filled a peculiar place in the civilization; the key was set to them. They held by a universal consent the first place in the system, all social life revolving around them. So generally did the life shape itself about the young girl that it was almost as if a bit of the age of chivalry had been blown down the centuries and lodged in the old State. She instinctively adapted herself to it. In fact, she was made for it. She was gently bred: her people for generations (since they had come to Virginia) were gentlefolk. They were so well satisfied that they had been the same in the mother country that they had never taken the trouble to investigate it. She was the incontestable proof of their gentility. In right of her blood (the beautiful Saxon, tempered by the influences of the genial Southern clime), she was exquisite, fine, beautiful; a creature of peach-blossom and snow; languid, delicate, saucy; now imperious, now melting, always bewitching. She was not versed in the ways of the world, but she had no need to be; she was better than that; she was well bred. She had not to learn to be a lady, because she was born one. Generations had given her that by heredity. She grew up apart from the great world. But ignorance of the world did not make her provincial. Her instinct was an infallible guide. When a child she had in her sunbonnet and apron met the visitors at the front steps and entertained them in the parlor until her mother was ready to appear. Thus she had grown up to the duties of hostess. Her manners were as perfectly formed as her mother's, with perhaps a shade more self-possession. Her beauty was a title which gave her a graciousness that well befitted her. She never "came out," because she had never been "in;" and the line between girlhood

and young-ladyhood was never known. She began to have beaux certainly before she reached the line; but it did her no harm: she would herself long walk "fancy free." A protracted devotion was required of her lovers, and they began early. They were willing to serve long, for she was a prize worth the service. Her beauty, though it was often dazzling, was not her chief attraction. That was herself: that indefinable charm; the result of many attractions, in combination and perfect harmony, which made her herself. She was delicate, she was dainty, she was sweet. She lived in an atmosphere created for her—the pure, clean, sweet atmosphere of her country home. She made its sunshine. She was generally a coquette, often an outrageous flirt. It did not imply heartlessness. It was said that the worst flirts made the most devoted wives. It was simply an instinct, an inheritance; it was in the life. Her heart was tender towards every living thing but her lovers; even to them it was soft in every way but one. Had they had a finger-ache, she would have sympathized with them. But in the matter of love she was inexorable, remorseless. She played upon every chord of the heart. Perhaps it was because, when she gave up, the surrender was to be absolute. From the moment of marriage she was the worshipper. Truly she was a strange being. In her muslin and lawn; with her delicious, low, slow, musical speech; accustomed to be waited on at every turn, with servants to do her every bidding; unhabituated often even to putting on her dainty slippers or combing her soft hair—she possessed a reserve force which was astounding. She was accustomed to have her wishes obeyed as commands. It did not make her imperious; it simply gave her the habit of control. At marriage she was prepared to assume the duties of mistress of her establishment, whether it were great or small.

Thus, when the time came, the class at the South which had been deemed the most supine suddenly appeared as the most efficient and the most indomitable. The courage which the men displayed in battle was wonderful; but it was nothing to what the Southern women exemplified at home. There was, perhaps, not a doubtful woman within the limits of the Confederacy. Whilst their lovers and husbands fought in the field, they performed the harder part of waiting at home.

With more than a soldier's courage they bore more than a soldier's hardship. For four long years they listened to the noise of the guns, awaiting with blanched faces but undaunted hearts the news of battle after battle; buried their beloved dead with tears, and still amid their tears encouraged the survivors to fight on. It was a force which has not been duly estimated. It was in the blood.

She was indeed a strange creature, that delicate, dainty, mischievous, tender, God-fearing, inexplicable Southern girl. With her fine grain, her silken hair, her satiny skin, her musical speech; pleasure-loving, saucy, bewitching—deep down lay the bedrock foundation of innate virtue, piety, and womanliness, on which were planted all for which human nature can hope, and all to which it can aspire. Words fail to convey an idea of what she was; as well try to describe the beauty of the rose or the perfume of the violet. To appreciate her one must have seen her, have known her, have loved her.

THE DRAGON OF THE SEAS

(April, 1898)

From 'The Coast of Bohemia'; Copyright, 1888, 1906, Charles Scribner's Sons, and used here by permission of the author and the publishers.

They say the Spanish ships are out
  To seize the Spanish Main;
Reach down the volume, Boy, and read
  The story o'er again:

How when the Spaniard had the might,
  He drenched the Earth, like rain,
With Saxon blood and made it Death
  To sail the Spanish Main.

With torch and steel; with stake and rack
  He trampled out God's Truce
Until Queen Bess her leashes slip't
  And let her sea-dogs loose.

God! how they sprang and how they tore!
The Gilberts, Hawkins, Drake!
Remember, Boy, they were your sires:
They made the Spaniard quake.

Dick Grenville with a single ship
Struck all the Spanish line:
One Devon knight to the Spanish Dons:
One ship to fifty and nine.

When Spain in San Ulloa's Bay
Her sacred treaty broke,
Stout Hawkins fought his way through fire
And gave her stroke for stroke.

A bitter malt Spain brewed that day,
She drained it to the lees:
The thunder of her guns awoke
The Dragon of The Seas.

From coast to coast he ravaged far,
A scourge with flaming breath:
Where'er the Spaniard sailed his ships,
Sailed Francis Drake and Death.

No coast was safe against his ire;
Secure no furthest shore;
The fairest day oft sank in fire
Before the Dragon's roar.

He made th' Atlantic surges red
Round every Spanish keel,
Piled Spanish decks with Spanish dead,
The noblest of Castile.

From Del Fuego's beetling coast
To sleety Hebrides
He hounded down the Spanish host
And swept the flaming seas.

He fought till on Spain's inmost lakes
'Mid Orange bowers set,
La Mancha's maidens feared to sail
Lest they the Dragon met.*

King Philip, of his ravin' reft,
Called for "the Pirate's" head;
The great Queen laughed his wrath to scorn
And knighted Drake instead.

And gave him ships and sent him forth
To sweep the Spanish Main,
For England and for England's brood,
And sink the fleets of Spain.

And well he wrought his mighty work,
Till on that fatal day
He met his only conqueror,
In Nombre Dios Bay.

There in his shotted hammock swung
Amid the surges' sweep,
He waits the look-out's signal cry
Across the quiet deep.

And dreams of dark Ulloa's bar,
And Spanish treachery,
And how he tracked Magellan far
Across the unknown sea.

But if Spain fire a single shot
Upon the Spanish Main,
She 'll come to deem the Dragon dead
Has waked to life again.

*NOTE. It is related that King Philip one day invited a lady to sail with him on a lake, and she replied that she was afraid they might meet "the Dragon."

UNCLE GABE'S WHITE FOLKS

From 'Befo' the War'; Copyright, 1888, Charles Scribner's Sons, and used here by permission of the author and the publishers.

Sarvent, Marster! Yes, sah, dat's me—
  Ole Unc' Gabe's my name;
I thankee, Marster, I'm 'bout yo' see.
  "An' de olt 'ooman?" She's much de same,
Po'ly an' 'plainin', thank de Lord!
But de Marster's gwine ter come back from 'broad.

"Fine ole place?" Yes, sah, 'tis so;
  An' mighty fine people my white folks war—
But you oughter 'a' seen it years ago,
  When de Marster an' de Mistis lived up dyah;
When de niggers 'd stan' all roun' de do',
Like grains o' corn on de cornhouse flo'.

"Live mons'ous high?" Yes, Marster, yes;
  Cut'n' onroyal 'n' gordly dash;
Eat an' drink till you couldn' res'.
  My folks war'n' none o' yo' po'-white-trash;
Nor, sah, dey was ob high degree—
Dis heah nigger am quality!

"Tell you 'bout 'em?" You mus' 'a' hearn
  'Bout my ole white folks, sho'!
I tell you, suh, dey was gre't an' stern;
D' didn' have nuttin' at all to learn;
  D' knowed all dar was to know;
Gol' ober dey head an' onder dey feet;
An' silber! dey sowed 't like folks sows wheat.
"Use ter be rich?" Dat warn' de wud!
  Jes' wallowed an' roll' in wealf.
Why, none o' my white folks ever stir'd
  Ter lif' a han' for d'self;
De niggers use ter be stan'in' roun'
Jes' d' same ez leaves when dey fus' fall down;
De stable-stalls up heah at home
Looked like teef in a fine-toof comb;

De cattle was p'digious—mus' tell de fac'!
An' de hogs mecked de hill-sides look like black;
An' de flocks ob sheep was so gr'et an' white
Dey 'peared like clouds on a moonshine night.
An' when my ole Mistis use' ter walk—
Jes' ter her kerridge (dat was fur
Ez ever she walked)—I tell you, sir,
You could almos' heah her silk dress talk;
Hit use' ter soun' like de mornin' breeze,
When it wakes an' rustles de Gre't House trees.
An' de Marster's face!—de Marster's face,
Whenever de Marster got right pleased—
Well, I 'clar' ter Gord, 'twould shine wid grace
De same ez his countenance had been greased.
De cellar, too, had de bes' ob wine,
An' brandy, an' sperrits dat yo' could fine;
An' ev'ything in dyah was stored,
'Skusin' de Glory of de Lord!
"Warn' dyah a son?" Yes, sah, you knows
He's de young Marster now;
But we heah dat dey tooken he very clo'es
Ter pay what ole Marster owe;
He's done been gone ten year, I s'pose.
But he's comin' back some day, of co'se;
An' my ole 'ooman is aluz pyard,
An' meckin' de Blue-Room baid;
An' ev'ry day dem sheets is ayard,
An' will be till *she's* daid;
An' de styars she'll scour,
An' dat room she'll ten',
Ev'y blessed day dat de Lord do sen'!

What say, Marster? Yo' say, you knows—?
He's young an' slender-like an' fyah;
Better-lookin' 'n you, of co'se!
Hi! you's he? 'Fo' Gord, 'tis him!
'Tis de very voice an' eyes an' hyah,
An' mouf an' smile, on'y yo' ain' so slim—
I wonder whah—whah's de ole 'ooman?

Now let my soul
  Depart in peace,
For I behol'
Dy glory, Lord!—I knowed you, chile—
  I knowed you soon's I see'd your face!
Whar has you been dis blessed while?
  Done come back an' buy de place?
  Oh, bless de Lord for all His grace!
De ravins shell hunger, an' shell not lack
De Marster, de young Marster's done come back!

ONE MOURNER

From 'Befo' the War'; Copyright, 1888, Charles Scribner's Sons, and used here by permission of the author and the publishers.

(*For Irwin Russell, who died in New Orleans in great destitution, on Christmas Eve, 1879.*)

Well, well, I declar'! I is sorry.
  He's 'ceasted, yo' say, Marse Joe?—
Dat gent'man down in New Orleans,
  Whar writ 'bout 'n niggers so,

An' tole, in all dat poetry
  You read some time lars' year,
'Bout niggers, an' 'coons, an' 'possums,
  An' ole times, an' mules an' gear?

Jes' name dat ag'in, seh, please, seh;
  Destrication's de word yo' said?
Dat signifies he wuz mons'us *po'*,
  Yo' say—want meat an' bread?

Hit mout: I never knowed him
  Or hearn on him, 'sep' when you
Read me dem valentines o' his'n;
  But I lay you, dis, seh's true—

Dat he wuz a rael gent'man,
Bright fire dat burns, not smokes;
An' ef he did die *destricute,*
He warn't no po'-white-folks.

Dat gent'man knowed 'bout niggers.
Heah me! when niggers wuz
Ez good ez white-folks mos', seh,
I knows dat thing, I does.

An' he could 'a' tetched his hat, seh,
To me jes' de same ez you;
An' folks gwine to see what a gent'man
He wuz, an' I wuz, too.

He couldn' 'a' talked so natchal
'Bout niggers in sorrow an' joy,
Widdouten he had a black mammy
To sing to him 'long ez a boy.

An' I think, when he tole 'bout black-folks
An' ole-times, an' all so sweet,
Some nigh him mout 'a' acted de ravins
An' gin him a mouf-ful to eat,

An' not let him starve at Christmas,
When things ain't sca'ce nowhar—
Ef he hed been a dog, young Marster,
I'd 'a' feeded him den, I 'clar'!

But wait! Maybe Gord, when thinkin'
How po' he'd been himself,
Cotch sight dat gent'man scufflin',
An' 'lowed fur to see what wealf

Hit mout be de bes' to gin him,
Ez a Christmas-gif', yo' know;
So he jes' took him up to heaven,
Whar he carn' be po' no mo'.

An' jes' call his name ag'in, seh.
How?—IRWIN RUSSELL—so?
I'se gwine fur to tell it to Nancy,
So ef I'd furgit, she'd know.

An' I hopes dey'll lay him to sleep, seh,
Somewhar, whar de birds will sing
About him de live-long day, seh,
An' de flowers will bloom in Spring.

An' I wish, young Marster, you'd meck out
To write down to whar you said,
An' sey, dyar's a nigger in Richmond
Whar's sorry Marse Irwin's dead.

FRANKLIN VERZELIUS NEWTON PAINTER

[1852—]

RICHARD HENRY HUDNALL

THE Painters, who early settled in the valley of Virginia and whose descendants have exerted a notable influence in the commonwealth, were of German descent and Lutheran faith. Franklin Verzelius Newton Painter was born of German and Scotch ancestry in Hampshire County, Virginia (now West Virginia), April 12, 1852. He was reared in the village of Aurora, West Virginia; and after preparatory training in the public schools of the county, he entered (1870) Roanoke College at Salem, Virginia, from which he was graduated with the degree of Bachelor of Arts four years later as the first honor man in his class, receiving also a gold medal for proficiency in metaphysics. He was married in 1875 to Laura Trimble Shickel. Eight children have been born into the home, seven of whom are now (1909) living.

Upon completion of a three years' course at the Lutheran Theological Seminary at Salem, Franklin Painter began his career as a Lutheran clergyman. In the same year, 1878, he was elected professor of modern languages and literature in Roanoke College, a position he held with honor for twenty-eight years. Since 1906 he has been lecturer on pedagogy and the history of education at his *alma mater,* and has devoted much of his time to literary work.

In 1882 he went abroad and pursued his studies, chiefly in Paris and Bonn. In 1885 he established the Virginia Teachers' Reading Association. Roanoke College conferred upon him the degree of A.M. (1877); Pennsylvania College, the degree of D.D. (1895); and Susquehanna University, the degree of Litt. D. (1908).

From this sketch it will be seen that Dr. Painter has been long connected with Roanoke College at Salem. His quiet, beautiful, and attractive home life there has been conducive to study, culture, and authorship. His diversity of gifts, opportunities for study and travel, and intense application, have won for him distinction as scholar, teacher, educator, clergyman, author, and poet. His work and influence have extended far beyond the walls of the class-room. Sermons, literary addresses, and magazine articles are here passed over for a general review of his works of greater scope and compass.

The first of his publications, in point of time and importance, was the 'History of Education' (1886). This appeared in the International Education Series, and includes a comprehensive study of: (1) The Oriental Nations; (2) The Ancient Classical Nations; (3) Christian Education before the Reformation; (4) Education from the Reformation to the Present Time. The great educational ideals and movements of each country and age are traced in the light of social, religious, and political conditions. In consulting original sources, in scholarly grasp of subject-matter, and in the skilful management of details, Dr. Painter exhibits German patience and thoroughness. The book has rendered an eminent service, both to teacher and student, has enjoyed a wide circulation, and is still one of the most popular books of its kind.

In this connection is to be mentioned also his 'Great Pedagogical Essays' (1905), in the main a compilation of original documents in educational history from Plato to Herbert Spencer. Brief biographical sketches of the great educators are followed by representative selections from their works. Critical estimates of the various teachers and educational reformers are to be found in the 'History of Education.' These two works are of great pedagogical value, and can be used together with advantage.

Martin Luther and his work has long been a theme upon which Dr. Painter has delighted to speak and write. His 'Luther on Education' (1889) shows a sympathetic study of the great reformer, and discusses his important contributions to educational history. Former United States Commissioner of Education, Dr. William T. Harris, pronounced this work "a classic on education."

'The History of Christian Worship' (1891), prepared in collaboration with Dr. J. W. Richard of Gettysburg, is of particular interest to the theological student and to the minister. The small volume bearing the suggestive title, 'The Reformation Dawn' (1901), discusses the papal system and reviews somewhat in detail the conditions leading up to the Protestant Reformation.

'Introduction to English Literature' (1894) was followed in 1897 by a companion volume, 'Introduction to American Literature.' Revised and enlarged editions of these admirable text-books, their extensive use by the general reader as well as by students in schools and colleges in all sections of the country, well attest their popularity and usefulness. Two features in particular of these books are to be noted: the first is the great emphasis given to the historic conditions under which the literature of each period is produced; the other recognizes the vital importance of studying literature itself rather than *about* literature. To this end, the author has given prominence only to the great representative writers of each period, which are to be

studied along with the accompanying illustrative selections and critical notes. Biographical details, while given with sufficient fulness, are largely subordinated to a critical study of the aim, value, spirit, and general literary estimate of the works themselves. The 'History of English Literature' (1900) is a considerably enlarged work prepared on the same general plan as the 'Introduction.' The inclusion of a greater number of prominent authors treated at length necessitated the omission of the 'Selections.' The increased amount of material on the historical and social conditions of each period, the literary map and numerous illustrations, add greatly to the usefulness of the book. While designed primarily for the student, yet no better works than these can be recommended to the general reader who wishes a clear, comprehensive, and sympathetic grasp of the history of our literature.

'The Elementary Guide to Literary Criticism' (1903) is a valuable little laboratory manual designed to aid the student in the critical interpretation of literary work. It discusses in the main fundamental principles of literary criticism and the leading kinds of literature. Each chapter concludes with review questions and illustrative and practical exercises.

In 'Poets of the South' (1904), Dr. Painter directs special attention to Poe, Hayne, Timrod, Lanier, and Ryan. Minor poets also receive due consideration. Illustrative selections with critical notes enhance greatly the value of the work.

A larger volume than the preceding, but of more restricted title, is 'Poets of Virginia' (1907). This is an entertaining and instructive account of the Virginia poets, from the occasional, crude poetic effusions of Captain John Smith to the more polished verses of Mrs. Virginia Armistead Garber's "Pocahontas." The author's general plan is to set forth the historic conditions of each period, then name the poets with some biographical facts, and give brief selections with critical comments thereupon. Hence, the work is "not simply a record of individual verse writers, but in part at least, a culture-history of the State." Dr. Painter has done a splendid work here. He is peculiarly fitted for such a task, calling for critical ability, discriminating judgment, a cultivated taste, a poetic temperament, and broad human sympathies. Fitting is it indeed that this attractive volume, with the clear-cut illustrations, opening with the beginning of American literature on Virginia soil and closing with the heroic story in verse of Pocahontas (written in 1907), should have appeared coincident with the tercentennial celebration at Jamestown.

The above-named volume suffers by reason of the modest exclusion of Dr. Painter's own name. Not only has he written much about poets and poetry, but his own lyre has been inspired by the Muse.

'Lyrical Vignettes' (1900) is the title of a neat little volume of "114 poems on 114 pages." In the poetical "Prologue" the singer indicates the purpose and spirit of his work: he would not use "old Homer's martial strain nor Virgil's splendid lyre," nor join the "jingling school of Poe"; but with Wordsworth he would humbly sing "the simple joys and woes that fill our days," and

> "Would reveal with Burns' observant eye
> And sympathetic heart,
> The mystic charms of home, and field, and sky,
> With chaste and reverent art."

Dr. Painter deals here with a variety of themes. A few of the poems of autobiographic interest are tender reflections upon home, family, and early associations. Two poems of four stanzas each give praise to two early English poets—Caedmon, "the first of English bards sublime," and Chaucer, "the poet of the morn." Three of the sad and sweet singers of the South (Hayne, Timrod, and Lanier)—"a chastened but exalted band"—receive a touching and tender tribute. Dr. Painter moves in a happy vein when he sings of nature. "A Morning in the Country," "Camping Out," "Beauty," "With Nature," "A Morning Walk," "The Brooklet," and others, overflow with refreshing breezes, the songs of birds, the running brook, and all the charms of outdoor life, which give fresh inspiration for the duties of the hour. In delicate little touches here and there one notes a marked Wordsworthian flavor.

Taken as a whole, the poems mirror the writer and reveal to us, in a variety of measures, the natural expressions of a kind and pure heart. In general, they are marked by simple thought and diction, refined feeling, melody, and a distinct pervasive ethical quality. A critic of this volume well says: "Dr. Painter is more than a skilled verse-maker—he is a poet. These lyrics are not an organ nor an orchestra, nor an oratorio: but they are the smiles and tears, the singing and the sighing of a soul, sincere, pure, true; that loves nature, that loves man, that loves God."

Two other works of Dr. Painter, 'An Ancient History' and 'An Introduction to Bible Study,' are expected from the press at an early date. In the future he will devote his time largely to literary work. The generally recognized value of his past publications is a guaranty that forthcoming contributions from his pen will be welcomed gladly. His resourcefulness, keen observing faculty, critical acumen, and wide culture have eminently fitted him for a large field of usefulness. The care bestowed upon his literary productions, and the strong impress of his personality and exalted Christian character,

endow his work with power and permanence. His literary style is simple, clear, vigorous, and polished. His thought finds expression in the simple, crisp, short sentence, of which he is a master. His contributions on educational and religious subjects are of permanent value, and have placed teachers under lasting obligations to him. In the preparation of text-books, for which he seems to have a special gift, he has done a good work. He has the faculty of seizing upon vital points and principles and of presenting them with remarkable clearness and vigor. His sermons and literary addresses are characterized by clear-cut thought, breadth of view, apt and appropriate illustration, and convincing logic. His verse shows marked poetic gifts and facility in handling various metrical forms. In all that he writes there is a loftiness of aim and purpose, dignity of tone, and literary finish. Dr. Johnson's splendid tribute to Goldsmith applies well to Dr. Painter—"whatever he touches he adorns."

With a scholar's love for learning, and the art of thinking the thoughts of the wise and using the language of the simple; with the power of gathering what is best and noblest from nature and art, literature and life, Dr. Painter has by word and pen done a noble work, comprehensive in scope, and far-reaching in importance and influence.

Richard Henry Hunnicutt

BIBLIOGRAPHY

A History of Education. New York, D. Appleton and Company (International Education Series), 1886.

Luther on Education. Philadelphia, Lutheran Publication Society, 1889.

History of Christian Worship. Philadelphia, Lutheran Publication Society, 1891.

Introduction to English Literature. Boston, Sibley and Company, 1894.

Lyrical Vignettes. Boston, Sibley and Company, 1900.

The Reformation Dawn. Philadelphia, Lutheran Publication Society, 1901.

Poets of the South. New York, American Book Company, 1903.

Elementary Guide to Literary Criticism. Boston, Ginn and Company, 1903.

Great Pedagogical Essays. New York, American Book Company, 1905.

Poets of Virginia. Richmond, B. F. Johnson Publishing Company, 1907.

Introduction to Bible Study. Boston, Sibley and Company, 1909.

An Ancient History. Boston, Sibley and Company, 1909.

THE AUTHOR AND HIS WORK

From 'The Elementary Guide to Literary Criticism.'

EVERY literary work reveals, to a greater or less degree, the personality of the author. Every literary production may be regarded as the fruitage of the writer's spirit; and there is good authority for saying that "men do not gather grapes of thorns or figs from thistles." A book exhibits not only the attainments, culture, and literary art of the writer but also his intellectual force, emotional nature, and moral character. Wide attainments are revealed in breadth of view and in mastery of large resources. Culture is exhibited in a general delicacy of thought, feeling, and expression. Literary art is shown in the choice of words and in their arrangement in sentences and paragraphs. The artistic sense, without which a finished excellence is not attainable, reveals itself in the proportion, symmetry, and completeness of a work.

The intellectual and the emotional nature of a writer is clearly reflected in his works. Intellectual force, for example, is recognized in the firm grasp of a subject, in the marshaling of details toward a predetermined end, and in the vigor of utterance. The Essays of Macaulay, however much they may lack in delicate refinement of thought and feeling, display a virile force of intellect; and many a page of Carlyle fairly throbs with energy of spirit. A large, sensitive soul manifests itself in sympathy with nature and human life. The "wee, modest, crimson-tippèd" daisy, and the limping wounded hare have touched the tender sympathies of Burns; and it was Wordsworth who said:

> To me the meanest flower that blows can give
> Thoughts that do often lie too deep for tears.

There is no class of society, from kings to beggars, from queens to hags, with which Shakespeare has not entered into sympathy, thinking their thoughts and speaking their words.

The moral character of an author appears in his general attitude toward truth and life. A strong moral sense appears in a firm adherence to right and an unblinded condemnation of wrong. A genial, charitable spirit is shown in a kindly disposition to overlook the weaknesses of men and to magnify their virtues. Life may be looked upon as something earnest, exalted, divine; or it may be regarded as insignificant, wretched, and ending at death.

It is character that gives fundamental tone to literature; and, as Matthew Arnold has said, the best results are not attainable without "high seriousness." The difference between the flippant and the earnest writer is easily and instinctively recognized. No one can read Ruskin, for instance, without feeling his sincerity and integrity, even in his most impracticable vagaries. In Addison, Goldsmith, and Irving we find a genial, uplifting amiability; and Whittier, in his deep love of human freedom and justice, appears as a resolute iconoclast and reformer.

It is sometimes supposed that the art of authorship can be divined from the personality of the writer. In serious authorship this supposition is a mistake. The best writing is more than grace of rhetoric and refinement of intellectual culture. Back of all outward graces there is need of a right-thinking and truth-loving soul. One of the essential things in the training of a great writer is the development of an upright, noble character. Milton was right in maintaining that the great poet should make his life a noble poem. As a rule the writers of the world's greatest classics have been men of sincerity, truth, and honor. Such was the character of Plato, Virgil, Dante, Chaucer, Shakespeare, Milton, Wordsworth, Tennyson, Browning, and many others. Our best American writers, almost without exception, have been distinguished for moral worth. In men like Burns, Byron, and Heine, the absence of a high moral purpose has detracted, in spite of their unquestioned intellectual power, from the excellence of a large part of their writings.

Our knowledge is of two kinds: the first comes from our

own experience; the other, from the experience and testimony of our fellow-men. Personal experience carries with it a conviction and power that do not usually belong to the knowledge received from the testimony of others. What we have experienced has become a part of our lives. The writers of vitality and power are those who draw largely on their individual resources—the treasures of their own experience. They write, not from the memory, but from the heart. If they borrow from others, they assimilate the information, and thus vitalize it before giving it out again.

The best part of our knowledge is that which comes to us through experience and assimilation. It is a permanent possession. When an author's experience, either in an ideal or a realistic form, is introduced in his work, it becomes an interesting biographical element. It presents a part of his life, and often it exhibits the transforming and glorifying power of his genius. In the drama "She Stoops to Conquer," for example, Goldsmith has turned to excellent account a humiliating incident of his youth. His "Deserted Village" is full of childhood reminiscences. Scott's poems and novels are in large measure only an expansion of the mediæval and other lore that he enthusiastically collected in his youth and early manhood. George Eliot's earlier novels are filled with the scenes and characters of her early life; and Dickens's best novel, 'David Copperfield,' is largely autobiographical. An author's best work—that which possesses the greatest degree of interest and vitality—is generally that which springs from the treasure of his deepest experience, and is the fullest expression of his individual thought and feeling.

Every writer of originality and power takes a fundamental view of life. He has settled convictions of some sort in regard to the world in which he lives. Sometimes this view comes from religion and sometimes from philosophy or science, though in any case it is apt to be influenced by the writer's physical condition. German philosophy has influenced many able writers—Coleridge, Carlyle, Emerson, and others in England and America; and at the present time the theory of evolution is leaving a deep impress on literature.

Whence came this magnificent universe? What is the origin and destiny of man? Is the general drift of human

affairs upward or downward? These are great fundamental questions, and the answers we give them lie at the bottom of our thinking and give tone to our writing. The world is not the same to the Christian theist and to the agnostic. Human life has a deeper significance to the man who believes in the loving providence of God than to the man who believes only in the existence of matter and natural law. The man who believes in the presence and sovereignty of God in all things looks hopefully to the future. He is optimistic rather than pessimistic. The presence of an exuberant vitality reveals itself in a cheerful, buoyant tone. Scott's exuberant spirit forms a pleasing contrast with Carlyle's dyspeptic cynicism.

It is often highly important to understand the fundamental beliefs of a writer. His works may be in a measure unintelligible till his standpoint is fully understood. Sometimes his various writings are only an expansion and application of one or two great fundamental principles. The works of Herbert Spencer, for example, are in the main an elaboration of the theory of evolution. Byron represented a skeptical reaction against the conventional manners and beliefs of his day. The essential feature of Emerson's work is found in a single sentence in "Nature." "We learn," he says, "that the Highest is present to the soul of man, that the dread universal Essence, which is not wisdom, or love, or beauty, or power, but all in one, and each entirely, is that for which all things exist, and that by which they are; that spirit creates; that behind nature, throughout nature, spirit is present; that spirit is one, and not compound; that spirit does not act upon us from without, that is, in space and time, but spiritually, or through ourselves."

In like manner it is interesting and sometimes illumining to know the literary school or tendency to which a writer belongs. Every author has his limitations and idiosyncrasies. First of all, he may be a writer of prose alone or of poetry alone. In prose he may confine himself to a single department, as fiction or history; or in poetry he may be chiefly lyric, didactic, or dramatic. Within these narrower spheres he may identify himself with a single tendency or group of writers. In history he may be philosophic or narrative; in fiction he may be a romanticist or a realist; in poetry he may be sub-

jective or objective in his treatment of themes. Scott's romanticism, for instance, which delights in mediæval scenes and incidents, is very unlike Dickens's realism, which depicts the scenes and incidents of actual contemporary life. George Eliot's psychologic novels are different from those of either Scott or Dickens. Bryant's clear descriptions of nature stand in striking contrast with Poe's mystical melodies.

It is important to understand the mood and purpose of an author. We are not in a position fairly to judge a work until we know its spirit and object. Until we know whether the writer is playful or earnest, joyous or sad, satirical or serious, we cannot give his words the right tone and value; and until we see clearly what he is driving at, we cannot properly estimate the successive steps in his production nor judge of its worth as a whole.

The moods expressed in literature are exceedingly various. Since literature is the expression of the intellectual life of man, it embodies the various moods and passions to which human nature is subject. Sometimes, for example, there is laughing humor, as in Holmes's "The Deacon's Masterpiece." Sometimes there is violent anger, as in Byron's "English Bards and Scotch Reviewers." We feel his unrestrained wrath, as he exclaims:

> Prepare for rhyme—I'll publish, right or wrong;
> Fools are my theme, let satire be my song.

Sometimes the mood is one of pensive meditation, as when Gray sits alone in the country churchyard amid deepening twilight:

> The curfew tolls the knell of parting day,
> The lowing herd winds slowly o'er the lea,
> The plowman homeward plods his weary way,
> And leaves the world to darkness and to me.

Sometimes it is a righteous indignation that blazes and burns, as when Carlyle exclaims, in the presence of selfishness and wrong: "Foolish men imagine that because judgment for an evil thing is delayed, there is no justice but an accidental one, here below. Judgment for an evil thing is

many times delayed some day or two, some century or two, but it is sure as life, it is as sure as death! In the center of the world-whirlwind, verily now as in the oldest days, dwells and speaks a God. The great soul of the world is *just.*"

Often the mood or spirit of gifted writers is something too intangible to be firmly grasped, yet its presence is felt as a pervasive and delightful atmosphere. A work is sometimes suffused with the divine touch of genius, as the delicate and indescribable hues of autumn glorify the valleys and mountains. While hovering near the earth for a time, the spirit of genius, as in Shakespeare and Ruskin, sometimes suddenly and spontaneously soars to regions of supernal splendor—altitudes of beauty absolutely inaccessible to ordinary and unaided mortals.

The purpose of a literary work, like its mood or spirit, may be various. In a measure it varies with the department of literature to which the work belongs. The purpose of history, which brings before us the achievements of the past, is chiefly instruction. The oratory of the pulpit and the forum aims at persuasion. Fiction aims primarily at entertainment, though it may also be made the vehicle for religious, sociological, or moral teachings. Poetry aims at pleasure by means of melody, felicity of expression, the picturing of moods and scenes, and the narration of interesting incidents or important events. When the purpose of a production is clearly apprehended we are prepared to judge of the wisdom of the author in his choice and adaptation of means.

The foregoing considerations show us the value of an acquaintance with an author's life. Without this acquaintance we are not prepared, in many cases, to understand or judge his productions. A good biography will acquaint us with the circumstances in which his talents were developed, and disclose to us the autobiographic materials which have been embodied in his works. It will reveal to us his views of life and his principles of art. It will show us, in short, the man behind the work, and thus help us to grasp the full significance of his utterance.

No one is absolutely independent of his surroundings. Men are frequently led, and sometimes driven by them, into the lines of work which they pursue. Hawthorne's stories,

for the most part, grew out of his New England life. Had he been brought up south of the Potomac, they would have been different. Had Irving never gone to England, he would not have written 'Bracebridge Hall'; and had he not sojourned in Spain, he would not have written 'Alhambra' and the 'Life of Columbus.' Byron's 'Childe Harold' is but a poetic record of his travels. Thus it is seen that an author's work, in large measure, grows out of his surroundings and experience, and cannot be thoroughly understood without an acquaintance with his life. It sometimes happens, as Shelley has sung in his interesting "Julian and Maddalo," that

> Most wretched men
> Are cradled into poetry by wrong;
> They learn in suffering what they teach in song.

PROLOGUE

The following poems are from 'Lyrical Vignettes.'

I would not use old Homer's martial strain,
  Nor Virgil's splendid lyre,
Whose tones heroic stir men's hearts amain,
  And deathless deeds inspire.

I would not sound throughout earth's mighty sphere,
  With Milton's thunderous roll,
The Titan deeds of Heaven or Hades drear,
  To awe the startled soul.

I would not stalk across the stage of fame
  With Byron's posing mien,
Nor seek to win the poet's honored name
  With misanthropic spleen.

I would not soar too high above the earth,
  In ether regions rare,
Where Shelley's wraith-like fancies have their birth,
  Unreal though most fair.

I would not join the empty, jingling school,
  Which, in the name of art,
Like Poe, makes hazy, tuneful lines its rule,
  While thrusting truth apart.

I would with Wordsworth sing in humble lays,
  But true in every tone,
The simple joys and woes that fill our days
  With merriment or moan.

I would reveal, with Burns's observant eye
  And sympathetic heart,
The mystic charms of home, and field, and sky,
  With chaste and reverent art.

I would not sing alone the outward grace
  That lights our beaming eyes,
But something of that Spirit's meaning trace
  Who fills the earth and skies.

I care not if the Pharisees of song
  Withhold their critic praise,
If here and there, among the common throng,
  A glad heart greets my lays.

FADED VIOLETS

A little bouquet of faded flowers,
  Kept tenderly through all these years;
It leads us back to the happy hours,
  When love was born with hopes and fears.

The spring-time sun was shining bright,
  And bird songs filled the living air,
As we, with youthful hearts and light,
  To pluck them stooped with tender care.

We little dreamed that joyous day,
  When wandering slow through field and wood,
How God was shaping, in wondrous way,
  For all the after years our good.

Then treasure this bunch of faded flowers
With fonder care, while the years go by,
As a sweet memento of happy hours,
Still sweeter as the end draws nigh.

OUR NEED

An era of transition! Signs of change,
Deep, lasting change, as when the earth indeed,
By forces that from inward fires proceed,
Is cleft in naked plain and mountain range,

Awakes our anxious fears. Oft errors strange,
Utopian dreams of sensual ease, mislead
The anarch clan, while wrong, and faithless greed,
And tyranny the hearts of men estrange.

At such a time we pray, God give us men
Of honest heart, strong intellect and will,
And martyr courage, and deep-wrought belief,
Who will safely guide the reeling world, and when
Opposed, insulted, wronged, like heroes still
Will hold to death the truth and right as chief.

AT GETTYSBURG

'Twas Pickett's famous charge upon the hill,
When he the Union centre dared assail;
The column swept the plain with dauntless will,
Beneath a storm of iron and leaden hail.

A captain led his men with Southern pride,
His sword agleam in dark and sulphurous air;
His only son, who followed near his side,
He bravely led to death or glory there.

As grandly moved the line with steady pace,
A bullet pierced the young and manly form;
The father stopped, stooped down, and kissed his face,
Then turned to breast again the leaden storm.

A NIGHT AT SEA

The laboring ship, with mighty force of will,
  Drives eastward through the sea,
Which far, to circling sky, is smooth and still
  In awful majesty.

Great clouds of dusky smoke the wake o'ercast,
  The struggling engine jars,
While far above the deck each towering mast
  Swings slow among the stars.

Behold the full-orbed moon, majestic, slow,
  In distant splendors rise,
And strike across the deep in golden glow
  A highway to the skies.

A SILENT TRAGEDY

I gazed upon an Indian woman's face,
  In which the depth of infinite sorrow dwelt;
Tho' made for all the wealth of beauty's grace,
  It showed alone the woe the heart had felt.

I read the tragedy of her waning race,
  The wounds that cruel destiny had dealt,
And all the weight of her inferior place,
  As she a slave before her master knelt.

Unceasing moil had bowed her queenly head,
  And wrong, in silence borne, had steeled her heart;
Within her woman's breast all hope was dead,
  And, crushed in soul, she longed for death's fell dart.
O God, to think thy beauteous world below
Can bear unmoved such scenes of speechless woe!

THE STRENUOUS LIFE

I stood beside the loud, tumultuous shore;
The dark and wind-chased clouds drove swiftly by,
And angry, foaming surges rose on high
To smite the frowning cliffs with deafening roar.

I saw the sea in placid mood once more;
Its light was soft beneath the azure sky,
And many white-winged sea-birds far and nigh
In sportive flight the waters circled o'er.

The mirror surface of the mighty deep
With open soul received the day-star's light,
And gave to all the earth in image bright
The glory caught within the waters' sweep.
The strenuous life is grand; but grander far
The placid soul reflecting sun and star.

A HALLOWED SPOT

I wander o'er deserted ways,
By ragged, shrunken streams,
And chastened thoughts of other days
Arise like golden dreams.

For yonder where the cedars grow,
By years and storm-winds rent,
Once stood a vine-clad cottage low,
Where loved ones lived content.

And just in front, beside the race,
There rose an ancient mill,
Whose sad and scattered ruins trace
Its outlines for me still.

And from the shadows of the past
Looks forth a maiden's face,
O'er which my boyish fancy cast
A sweet and peerless grace.

Ah, precious memories wither not,
In spite of fleeting years,
And wandering o'er this hallowed spot,
My eyes are dim with tears.

A MORNING WALK

Softly the breezes descend in the valley,
Tenderly kissing the roses of morning;
Over the mountains, in bright, golden sally,
Break the first sunbeams, the landscape adorning.

Fresh inspiration I find for life's duties,
Forth through the meadows and woodland advancing,
Sweetly exulting in numberless beauties,
Dashing the dewdrops where rainbows are glancing.

Wondrous the temple for man's habitation,
Endless the wisdom with which it's constructed;
Gazing upon the vast works of creation,
Thankfully Godward my thoughts are conducted.

THE TEACHER

The sculptor moulds his piece of plastic clay
Into the beauteous form his soul has caught
In vision bright, that came, perchance, unsought.
And then upon the marble, day by day,

His chisel falls with neither haste nor stay,
Until at last, by skilful touches wrought,
The statue bodies forth his raptured thought,
And joy and fame his patient toil repay.

But higher still the teacher's matchless art:
For he, beyond the sculptor's crumbling goal,
Devotes his talent to the living soul,
And shapes in noble form the mind and heart.
With loving care, upon a godlike plan,
He moulds the image of a perfect man.

BENJAMIN MORGAN PALMER

[1818—1902]

THOMAS CARY JOHNSON

BENJAMIN MORGAN PALMER was born of ancient and honorable stock, in Charleston, South Carolina, January 25, 1818. His father, the Rev. Edward Palmer, long a beloved Presbyterian minister in the Low Country, South Carolina, was the son of Job Palmer and his wife, Sarah Morgan, a lady of energetic and aggressive character. Job Palmer, a highly esteemed citizen of Charleston, had migrated from New England before the Revolution. He was a son of the Rev. Samuel Palmer of Falmouth, Massachusetts, a grandson of the Rev. Thomas Palmer of Middleboro, Massachusetts, and a lineal descendant of William Palmer, who joined the Plymouth Colony in the year 1621, having come over in the ship *Fortune*.

The mother of Benjamin Morgan Palmer, Sarah Bunce, was a daughter of Captain Jared Bunce, a man of unusual worth. Jared Bunce was born in Hartford, Connecticut; he traced his paternal ancestry back to an Alderman Bunce, who lived in London in the days of Cromwell; his mother was a Griswold, and was connected with the Stanleys, whose remote ancestor was Edward Stanley, Earl of Derby. Sarah Bunce Palmer was a woman of uncommon intellectuality, strength of will, capacity to appreciate, sunniness of disposition, and love of the beautiful. She exercised a potent sway over her gifted son. She taught him the rudiments of learning and of morals. She read to, and with him, Shakespeare's plays, Milton's 'Paradise Lost,' and Scott's novels, thus helping him to attain that luxuriance, beauty, and precision of diction for which he was to become so remarkable.

After his parents had removed to Walterboro, young Benjamin Morgan Palmer came under the tuition of the Rev. J. B. Van Dyck, a faithful, capable, and inspiring teacher. Young Palmer further pursued academical studies in Amherst College (1832-1834); served in a tutorial capacity, and later as teacher of a village school (1834-1836). In January, 1837, he entered the University of Georgia, whence he was graduated with the first honors in August, 1838. Having decided to enter the ministry of the Presbyterian Church, he took his theological training in Columbia Seminary, Columbia, South Carolina. In the Walterboro School, in Amherst, in the University of Georgia, and in Columbia Seminary, he at once became,

and continued to be, famous for his powers in debate and oratory, and for his capacities for leadership, as well as for academical acquisition.

His school-days over, he devoted himself at once and persistently to the pursuit of his calling. He preached for some months during the summer of 1841, in Anderson, South Carolina, served as preacher and pastor of the First Church of Savannah, Georgia, from November, 1841, to January, 1843; as preacher and pastor of the First Church, Columbia, South Carolina, from January, 1843, to October, 1855; as professor of ecclesiastical history and polity in Columbia Seminary (1854-1856); and as preacher and pastor of the First Presbyterian Church of New Orleans, from 1856 to 1902, save for a period of exile (1862-1865), during which he preached in the Army and taught in Columbia Seminary.

He was one of the greatest preachers of his century, and of the first nineteen centuries of the Christian era. His ideal of Christian worship was as beautiful and noble as the Cologne Cathedral, and his ideal of the part the chief minister should take in the worship of the congregation corresponded. It was his to lead the people in the worship of God in spirit and in truth; to enable them to see God as He has revealed Himself in His works and in His word; and, as seeing Him thus truly revealed, to go out to Him with all the homage of their souls. Accordingly, every part of the service was conducted with great clearness and beauty, but the sermon was the chief part. In it God was revealed to man. In it the preacher, conscious of the obligation lying on him, so acquitted himself that his preaching lingered in the memories of those who heard it as among their most precious treasures.

Dr. Palmer was a real preacher of the Gospel, regarding the Bible as the Word of God. Capable of the finest expository preaching, he was driven by the bent of his mind very largely to topical preaching, in which method the logical and systematizing tendencies have the freest and noblest application. His plan, upon announcing his text, was to show exactly what the text in its historical connections meant; to set forth in perspicuous terms the doctrinal teachings he had drawn from it; to enforce this doctrine by a series of arguments generally powerful in themselves and so happily put as to carry general conviction to the hearts of his hearers; and to follow all this with an application in which the truth, previously developed by interpretation and argument, would be pressed with mighty powers of appeal and persuasion. A magician in his use of the English tongue, and at his best when inspired by a great audience, Dr. Palmer gave his people rich truths in language of beauty, clearness, power, and

splendor. A pulpit bearing, in which were united grace of physical action, unstudied and honest feelings of deference to his audience, and singular personal humility, in union with a conscious sense of majesty as the messenger of the Most High, gave a power to his spoken words which no printed page can show. Possessed of a voice of vast compass, and indefinite flexibility, obedient to his variant moods, vibrant with a living faith, pulsating with hope or thrilling with joy, warming with love or sobbing with sorrow, swathing itself with woe or ailing in despair, thundering against sin, wrong, crime, and interpreting to his hearers every feeling of his soul—this voice gave his discourse a large increment of effectiveness. Finally, the known character of the man—that of a man to be found whenever wanted and always found in the path of light and duty, of a man "with a soul to feel another man's woe," of a pastor ready to brave every form of danger lying along the path of duty, of a man with an assured and positive faith—enhanced his power with the people who knew his daily life. The sober truth is that he was endowed by nature and grace with all the powers for genuine pulpit oratory. These powers he had trained in a consummate way. He was not merely capable of clear, instructive, powerful, and impressive speech; it was his to do all this in a wonderful way, thrilling the very soul with that which he made it see and feel. Prodigally endowed for preaching, it was as a living preacher that he did his greatest work. Several volumes of sermons taken from his lips by shorthand and, after some small revision by him, published, are well worthy of study; but men have not cared to read these sermons as they did to hear them from his mouth. Such are the two octavo volumes published between 1875 and 1877.

Dowered with powers of commanding eloquence, he early came into demand as anniversary orator, commencement orator, and for a great variety of occasional addresses; and was thus led to produce many noble orations in the course of his life. For the same reason, and because of his complete self-command, his tact, his wide culture, broad intelligence, and his generally philosophic and masterful grasp of all subjects with which he dealt, he was ever a leader in the courts of the church in which he sat. After James Henley Thornwell, he was the ecclesiastic of widest and most persistent influence in the communion to which he belonged. His defence of her principles and of her right to an independent existence, in speeches in and before her General Assemblies, as well as in articles published in the newspapers and periodicals, were amongst the more potent forces which have wrought for her separate existence down to this day.

Like the sons of Southern gentlemen generally in ante-bellum

times, he had made a study of civil government. In his mature manhood, because of the political excitement ending in the war between the sections, in the reconstruction measures, and in the infliction of the lottery evil upon his adopted State, he became a profound student of political and sociological problems. He reached, settled, and decided convictions on some subjects of high debate among his fellow citizens. In 1860 he espoused the cause of secession and did more, perhaps, than any other citizen of his city, or State, to wheel Louisiana into the ranks of seceding states. He expressed his long pent-up views in a sermon on Thanksgiving Day of that year, one of the few political sermons he was ever guilty of preaching—a sermon which was heard in profound stillness and sent his hearers home silent, but which was followed after a few hours by the ringing of bells, beating of drums, and shouts of the people for secession—a sermon which was published over and over again and affected every corner of his State and every section of the great Southwest. In the concluding words of this sermon he voiced truly his patriotic devotion to his country: "It only remains to say that whatever be the fortunes of the South, I accept them for my own. Born upon her soil of a father thus born before me—from an ancestry that occupied it while yet it was a part of England's possessions—she is in every sense my mother. I shall die upon her bosom. She shall know no peril but it is my peril, no conflict but it is my conflict, and no abyss of ruin into which I shall not share her fall. May the Lord God cover her head in this her day of battle." He may have been unwise in the advocacy of secession at the time and in some of the arguments. None may question the moral loftiness of his aims, the ardor of his devotion to the South, or the ability with which he championed her rights and labored in her behalf, for victory in War and for her rehabilitation after she had been overwhelmed and despoiled.

The lottery evil, fastened on Louisiana in 1868, while she was in the clutches of "carpet-bag" rulers, and by a syndicate of New York gamblers which had been formed in 1863, was enabled to maintain itself, by means in moral character like itself, and by the aid of a United States District Judge who played into its hands, till far toward the end of the century. The enemies of the lottery, having secured the insertion into the State Constitution of 1879 of a provision prohibiting all lotteries after 1895, though hating the institution, regarded it as doomed, and showed it for the most part only negative hostility. Meanwhile its corrupting influence was reaching almost every class, from the poorest negro laborer to persons on the topmost steps of social and political ladders. It came to control largely the press of the State; it overawed or dictated to politicians, the Legislature, the

judiciary, and bankers and merchants not a few. In direct contradiction to its promise, about 1890 it began the effort to secure the renewal of its charter for twenty-five years from January 1, 1894. Undebauched patriots and citizens of Louisiana became aroused. They determined to crush the monster. In the summer of 1891 they organized the Louisiana Anti-Lottery League. It opened its campaign through a public meeting held Thursday evening, June twenty-fifth, in the Grand Opera-house, New Orleans. Dr. Palmer made the speech of the evening. He was introduced by Colonel William Preston Johnston, Chancellor of Tulane University, in the following words:

"It is now my privilege to introduce to you a man who, by his talents, his eloquence, and his virtues, well deserves the title of the first citizen of New Orleans." Dr. Palmer spoke without notes, without a line; but of an open sore that had provoked his thought and indignation for years. The newspaper report of his speech does not read like one of his masterpieces; but, judged by the effect it produced, it was a great oration. Demosthenes had uttered a philippic; the Athenians were going to fight. From that hour the foes of the lottery felt sure that they would crush it; and crush it they did.

His most widely known book is his 'Life and Letters of James Henley Thornwell' (1876). For the preparation of a biography of Thornwell, Palmer possessed every qualification—intimate knowledge of the subject, in his domestic, his social, his ecclesiastical, and his civil relations. He had the capacity to appreciate, besides the temperament and the rhetorical and artistic power needed in order to represent Thornwell's life. In this work he tells how genius rose superior to obstacles, how Divine grace prepared and trained it for the sublime mission of subsequent life; how it shone in sunshine and shadow. He sketches the historic arena on which Thornwell ran his course, and shows how his life was interwoven with the life of his age; how he was affected by it, and it by him. Of the literary style, it has been well said: "No reader can fail to be struck by the rhythmical flow and musical cadence of the sentences, the graceful elegance of expression, the copiousness and yet appropriateness and vigor of diction, the graphic vividness of portraiture, and the transparent clearness and masterly ability of didactic statement and exposition which characterized the book."

In 'The Family in its Civil and Churchly Aspects,' (1876), the gist of the teaching is that "The family is really the model of the State"—not simply a device for the maintenance of the species, but a strongly compacted government in which the nature of law is punctually expounded by the actual enforcement of it; that in it "the

great principles are unfolded upon which all human government rests and society is created in germ"; that, in its development through the patriarchal and national stages, the simple law of the household expands through all the ramifications of the commonwealth; and that "a true statesmanship must glean its great essential principles from the subordination first established in the family"; that "the nearer a government is conformed to this ideal, in the distribution of power and in the combination of influences by which society shall be controlled, the more perfect will it be both in its conception and administration"; that "man needs to be moulded as well as controlled"; that "the family is a school of education as well as an empire of law; and that its superlative value is found in the combination of influence with authority, under which men are trained to the obedience which requires to be enforced." The book is remarkable for the succinct brevity of the style, coupled with a lucid exhibition of the principles involved. It has been pronounced, by a masterful critic of the author's work, to be "the ablest thing that Dr. Palmer ever wrote."

His little volume on the 'Formation of Character' (1889), consists of twelve lectures delivered on as many Sunday evenings. The lectures had been delivered in response to a request signed by twenty-five young men of his congregation. A stenographic report of the lectures had been placed, subsequently, in Dr. Palmer's hands for his revision that they might be published. As published, they are thoroughly sane, strong and rich in thought, with the usual ear-marks of his style.

'The Broken Home; or Lessons in Sorrow' (1890) consists of sketches of each of the several deceased members of his own family and a sketch of his mother. They were prepared originally for a purely family purpose and without thought of publication, some earlier, and some later, in his life. "But the Freemasonry of those in sorrow would pour the balm into other hearts which the Spirit of Consolation may have given to each." From the simple desire of comforting those who mourn, this story of repeated bereavements was told. It would be hard to find in all literature a saner, sweeter, loftier Christian spirit than runs through this book. It is worthy of a place in every mourning household. The literary style of the sketches is wonderfully beautiful. Each one is a poem in limpid, nervous prose. They linger on the ear like sweet, sad music.

The 'Theology of Prayer as Viewed in the Religion of Nature and the System of Grace' (1894) stands in a class by itself, having been designed to fill a gap which had hitherto existed in theological literature. It is a real and an able contribution to practical Christian theology.

'The Threefold Fellowship and the Threefold Assurance' (1902), his last volume, is a work on the same theological and artistic level with his 'Theology of Prayer.'

His orations, published in the current periodicals of their days, were almost invariably remarkable for fluency, breadth of view, increasingly given in the progress of the discourse, general solidity of argument, affluent, pertinent and ennobling illustrations, climacteric arrangement, and for entertaining, thrilling, emotional, and volitional effect on the hearers.

He was a man of the highest intellectual, ethical, and religious character, free to a remarkable degree from all petty vanities, of Christlike humility, transparent simplicity, honesty and honor, of broad and intense love for his fellowman of every name and every race, and of devotion to God. His powers wrought with great energy, harmony, ease, balance, and splendor. He was great as a man, as Christian minister, citizen, patriot, leader of the people.

Were his various writings, published and unpublished, collected in a body, they would constitute a rich mine for historical workers in both secular and civil spheres. His epoch was one of great questions; he was an acute and profound observer, and was capable of reflections of the greatest value.

In consequence of serious injuries, received in a street-car accident, Dr. Palmer died May 25, 1902.

Thos. Cary Johnson

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Reunion Overture of the Northern General Assembly to the Southern Presbyterian Church. 1870.

The Life and Letters of James Henley Thornwell. 1876.

The Family Covenant in Churchly and Civil Aspects. 1876.

The Formation of Character. 1889.

The Broken Home, or Lessons in Sorrow. 1890.

Hindrances to Union with the Church. 1891.

The Theology of Prayer, as Viewed in the Religion of Nature and in the System of Grace. 1894.

The Threefold Fellowship and the Threefold Assurance. 1902.

(For full bibliography, see Thomas Cary Johnson's 'Life and Letters of Benjamin Morgan Palmer.')

EULOGY ON ROBERT E. LEE

Extracts from Address delivered at the St. Charles Theater, New Orleans, October 18, 1870.

. . . But these crude suggestions, which fall almost impromptu from my lips, suggest that which I desire to offer before this audience to-night. I accept Robert E. Lee as the true type of the American man, and the Southern gentleman. A brilliant English writer has well remarked with a touch of sound philosophy that when a nation has rushed upon its fate, the whole force of the national life will sometimes shoot up in one grand character, like the aloe which blooms at the end of a hundred years, shooting up in one single spike of glory, and then expiring. And wherever philosophy, refinement and culture have gone upon the globe, it is possible to place the finger upon individual men who are the exemplars of a nation's character, those typical forms under which others less noble, less expanded, have manifested themselves.

That gentle, that perfect moderation, that self-command which enabled him to be so self-possessed amidst the most trying difficulties of his public career, a refinement almost such as that which marks the character of the purest woman, were blended in him with that massive strength, that mighty endurance, that consistency and power which gave him and the people whom he led such momentum under the disadvantages of the struggle through which he passed.

Born from the general level of American society, blood of a noble ancestry flowed in his veins, and he was a type of the race from which he sprang. Such was the grandeur and urbaneness of his manner, the dignity and majesty of his carriage, that his only peer in social life could be found in courts and among those educated amidst the refinements of courts and thrones. In that regard there was something beautiful and appropriate that he should become in the later years of his life the educator of the young. Sir, it is a cause for mourning before high heaven to-night, that he was not spared thirty years to educate a generation for the time that is to come; for as in the days when the red banner streamed over the land, the South sent their sons to fight under his

flag and beneath the wave of his sword, these sons have been sent again to sit at his feet when he was the disciple of the Muses and the teacher of philosophy. Oh, that he might have brought his more than regal character, his majestic frame, all his intellectual and moral endowments, to the task of fitting those that should come to the crisis of the future, to take the mantle that has fallen from his shoulders and bear it to the generations that are unborn.

General Lee I accept as the representative of his people, and of the temper with which this whole Southland entered into that gigantic, that prolonged, and that disastrous struggle which has closed, but closed as to us, in grief. Sir, they wrong us who say that the South was ever impatient to rupture the bonds of the American Union. The War of 1776, which, sir, has no more yet a written history than has the War of 1861 to 1865, tells us that it was this Southland that wrought the Revolution of 1776. We were the heirs of all the glory of that immortal struggle. It was purchased with our blood, with the blood of our fathers, which yet flows in these veins, and which we desire to transmit pure and consecrated, to the sons that are born to our loins. The traditions of the past sixty years were a portion of our heritage, and it never was easy for any great heart and reflective mind even to seem to part with that heritage to enter upon the perilous effort of establishing a new nationality.

Mr. President, it was my privilege once to be thrilled with a short speech, uttered by one of the noblest names clustering upon the roll of South Carolina—for, sir, South Carolina was Virginia's sister, and South Carolina stood by Virginia in the old struggle as Virginia stood by South Carolina in the new, and the little State, small as Greece, barren in resources but great in the grandeur of the men, in their gigantic proportions, whom she, like Virginia, was permitted to produce—I heard, sir, one of South Carolina's noblest sons speak thus: "I walked through the Tower of London, that grand repository where are gathered the memorials of England's martial prowess, and when the guide, in the pride of his English heart pointed to the spoils of war, collected through centuries of the past, said this speaker, lifting himself upon tiptoe that he might reach to his greatest height, I said, 'You cannot

point to one single trophy from my people, or my country though England engaged in two disastrous wars with her'." Sir, this was the sentiment. We loved every inch of American soil, and loved every part of that canvas (pointing to the Stars and Stripes above him) which as a symbol of power and authority, floated from the spires and from the mastheads of our vessels; and it was after the anguish of a woman in birth that this land which now lies in her sorrow and ruin took upon herself that great peril; but it is all emblematized in the regret experienced by him whose praises are upon our lips, and who, like the English Nelson, recognized duty engraved in letters of light as the only ensign he could follow, and who, tearing away from all the associations of his early life, and abandoning the reputation gained in the old service, made up his mind to embark in the new, and with that modesty and that firmness, belonging only to the truly great, expressed his willingness to live and die in any position assigned to him.

And, I accept this noble chieftain equally as the representative of this Southland in the spirit of his retirement from struggle. It could not escape any speaker upon this platform to allude to the dignity of that retirement—how from the moment he surrendered, he withdrew from observation, holding aloof from all political complications, and devoting his entire energies to the great work he had undertaken to discharge. In this he represents the true attitude of the South since the close of the war—an attitude of quiet submission to the conquering power, and of obedience to all exactions—but without resiling from those great principles which were embalmed in the struggle, and which as the convictions of a lifetime, no honest mind could release.

All over this land of ours there are men like Lee—not as great, not as symmetrical in the development of character, not as grand in the proportions which they have reached, but who, like him, are sleeping upon memories that are holy as death—and who, amidst all reproach, appeal to the future, and to the tribunal of history, when she shall render her final verdict in reference to the struggle closed, for the vindication of the people embarked in that struggle. We are silent, resigned, obedient, and thoughtful, sleeping upon solemn memories, Mr. President; but as said by the poet-preacher in the Good Book,

"I sleep, but my heart waketh," looking upon the future that is to come, and powerless in everything except to pray to Almighty God who rules the destinies of nations, that those who have the power may at least have the grace given them to preserve the constitutional principles which we have endeavored to maintain. And, sir, were it my privilege to speak in the hearing of the entire nation, I would utter with the profoundest emphasis this pregnant truth: That no people ever traversed those moral ideas which underlie its character, its constitution, its institutions and its laws, that did not in the end perish in disaster, in shame and in dishonor. Whatever be the glory, the material civilization of which such a nation may boast, it still holds true that the truth is immortal, and that ideas rule the world.

And now, I have but a single word to say, and that is that the grave of this noble hero is bedewed with the most tender and sacred tears ever shed upon a human tomb.

I was thinking in my study this afternoon, striving to strike out something I might utter on this platform, and this parallel between the first Washington and the second occurred to me. I asked my own heart the question, Would you not accept the fame, and the glory, and the career of Robert E. Lee just as soon as accept the glory and career of the immortal man who was his predecessor? Sir, there is a pathos in fallen fortunes which stirs the sensibilities and touches the very fountain of human feeling. I am not sure that at this moment Napoleon, the enforced guest of the Prussian king, is not grander than when he ascended the throne of France. There is a grandeur in misfortune, when misfortune is borne by a noble heart with the strength of will to endure, and endure, without complaining or breaking. Perhaps I slip easily into this train of remarks, for it is my peculiar office to speak of that chastening with which a gracious Providence visits men on this earth, and by which he prepares them for heaven hereafter; and what is true of individuals in a state of adversity is true of nations when clothed in sorrow. Sir, the men in these galleries that once wore the gray are here to-night that they may bend the knee in reverence at the grave of him whose voice and hand they obeyed amidst the storms of battle; the young widow, who but as yesterday leant upon the arm of her

soldier husband, but now clasps wildly to her breast the young child that never beheld its father's face, comes here to shed her tears over this grave to-night; and the aged matron, with the tears streaming from her eyes as she recalls the unforgotten dead, lying on the plains of Gettysburg, or the heights of Fredericksburg, now to-night, joins in our dirge over him, who was that son's chieftain and counselor and friend. A whole nation has risen up in the spontaneity of its grief to render the tribute of its love. Sir, there is a unity in the grapes when they grow together in the clusters upon the vine, and holding the bunch in your hand you speak of it as one; but there is another unity when you throw these grapes into the wine press, and the feet of those that bruise these grapes trample them almost profanely beneath their feet together in the communion of pure wine; and such is the union and communion of hearts that have been fused by tribulation and sorrow, and that meet together in the true feeling of an honest grief to express the homage of their affection, as well as to render a tribute of praise to him upon whose face we shall never look until on that immortal day we shall behold it transfigured before the Throne of God.

THE PRESENT CRISIS AND ITS ISSUE

Extract from an Address delivered at Washington and Lee University, June 27, 1872.

. . . It would be an immense protection against these debasing tendencies if, amid the exactions of our new position, we could carry over those gentlemanly instincts which have hitherto characterized our people. In employing this unusual term, I do not mean that dainty mannerism which puts on the air, without the quality, of the gentleman. But I refer to that exquisite education of the conscience which makes duty and benevolence the habit of the soul; that fastidious honor which cannot, even in thought, condescend to meanness; that lofty self-respect which will observe the proprieties and practice the virtues of life, with the readiness of impulse; that nobleness of principle which makes it as easy to be brave and true as it is to breathe; that instinct of rectitude which shrinks from the false and the base as from the contamination of the plague. It

would be a rare combination this, of courtly honor with the hardness of toil. But if labor is ennobled when wrought by the hands of a freeman, how much more when associated with the dignity of the gentleman?

Let us guard, then, with the jealousy of genuine alarm, against that despicable spirit of utilitarianism which, like a hucksterer in the shambles, is always haggling with truth about her price. She is immeasurably more precious in herself than in all the uses to which men may put her. Truth, integrity and honor are the highest attributes of any people, and the enjoyment of regulated freedom, under a wise and constitutional government, is its noblest privilege and reward.

Coupled with this, *we must retain from the past that individuality of character which makes a man a solid unit in society*. This attribute has with us been largely the product of circumstances. An agricultural people, living apart from one another, every man in the center of a given circle of dependence for whom he was called to think and plan, there was nourished a personal independence which we cannot afford to lose. On the contrary, in a crowded population, men are cheapened in value, like the leaves in a forest. The individual comes to be little more than a single brick in a blank wall, answering only to so many square inches of a common surface. Through a perpetual commingling, thought ceases to be a fresh production of the mind, and there is substituted for it a public opinion which is caught and given back, just as one breathes in and breathes out a common atmosphere. This explains the amazing rapidity with which the wildest heresies are propagated amongst the masses, whose multiplied voices are but the reverberations of a single sound which echo prolongs. It explains the caprice, with which hosannas are turned into execrations at the bidding of demagogues, who are "the pest of republics as courtiers are of monarchies." It explains the sadder fact, how the few who do think are browbeaten and crushed, and yield up their convictions and conscience to be trampled in the dust by the buffaloes of the herd, as they snuff the air and scour the plain.

This is one of the chief perils of the Republic. For as the people are the fountain of power, they must in the elective franchise coalesce in a joint expression of will; and as with

the increase of population, the drill of party becomes more and more rigid, the sense of personal responsibility becomes more obscure, and the exercise of it more difficult. You will not understand me as advocating that impracticable individualism which splits upon hairs into a thousand schisms, but that honesty of mind which will lead every man to contribute his quota to a true public sentiment, of which his conscience will not be ashamed. For, depend upon it, with the extinction of this individual responsibility, there is no longer the possibility of virtue. In the massive language of Mr. Webster, "a sense of duty pursues us ever; it is omnipresent, like the Deity." If the sense of it be within the soul, there is the rejection of the Divine control; and the nation slides down the steep declension into moral decay and death.

Finally, we must carry over to the future a patriotism that is born of adversity and trial, more intense and purer than in the prosperous and joyful past. Love of country is inextinguishable, because it is filial. It ranks with that we owe to the parents who begot us, and have given to us their image and their name. But I plead for it not upon the cold footing of duty, but as a precious sentiment of the heart. As a principle, it strikes its root far down into the conscience; but its bloom must expand into a holy passion, and its fruit ripen into acts of enduring service for the public weal. The best affections of the soul are those which strengthen under trial. The alloy of selfishness burns away in the crucible, and the pure love comes forth with a power of endurance which nothing can exhaust. It is thus we bear up each other under the discipline of life; not through the compulsion of necessity, nor the cold obligation of duty, but with a warm devotion which finds its joy in those ministries of love. A genuine patriotism is not that which shouts itself hoarse amid holiday celebrations; but when the country groans in the anguish of a great crisis, waits upon its destiny, though it be that of the tomb. And this land of ours, furrowed by so many graves and overshadowed with such solemn memories, calls for a consecration of the heart which shall be equal to its grief. The patriotism which these days demand must refine itself into martyrdom. It must suffer as well as act. Strong in the consciousness of rectitude, it must nerve itself to endure contradiction and scorn. If need

be, it must weep at the burial of civil liberty; and wait with the heroism of hope for its certain resurrection. Such a spirit will wear out the longest tyranny, and assist at the coronation of a brighter destiny.

Young gentlemen of the University, I have delivered the message with which I felt myself charged. I have not been able to address you with the fopperies of rhetoric. I have done you the higher honor of supposing you capable of sympathizing with the deep emotions of my own heart. When your note of invitation reached me some months ago, it touched me with the solemnity of a call from the grave. I felt, as I turned my steps hither, that I was making a pilgrimage to my country's shrine. I should be permitted to stand uncovered at the tomb of the immortal chief who sleeps in such grand repose beneath the academic shades where he found rest after heroic toils. Should I look upon it as the emblem of my country's death? Or should I prophesy beside it the birth of a new career? Memories holy as death have been throwing their shadow upon my spirit; and I have spoken in the interest of country, of duty, and of truth. The dim forms of Washington and of Lee—twin names upon American History, as well as upon your own walls—appear before me the Rhadamanthus and the Minos, who shall pronounce judgment upon every sentiment uttered here. If aught said by me should draw the frown of their disapproval, may the Angel of Pity drop a tear and blot it out forever!

Standing upon the soil which gave birth to a Washington, a Madison, a Jefferson, a Henry, a Randolph, a Marshall, a Jackson and a Lee; and lifting the scroll which hangs around the ensigns of my native State, the names of Pinckney, Laurens, Rutledge, Lowndes, McDuffie, Hayne, Calhoun—I summon their immortal shades around his tomb whom a nation has so lately mourned. In their dread presence I solemnly declare that the principles of our Fathers are our principles to-day; and that the stones upon which the temple of American liberty was first built are the only stones upon which it shall ever be able to stand. And you, gentlemen, representing the young thought and hope which must shortly deal with these mighty issues, I swear each one of you by an oath more solemn than that of Hannibal, not that you will destroy Rome

but that you will save Carthage. I charge you, if this great Republic like a gallant ship must drive upon the breakers, that you be upon the deck, and with suspended breath await the shock—perchance she will survive it—but if she sink beneath the destiny which has devoured other great kingdoms of the past, that you save from the melancholy wreck our ancestral faith, and work out yet upon this continent the problem of a free, constitutional and popular government. And may the God of destinies give you a good issue!

INDICTMENT OF THE LOTTERY COMPANY OF LOUISIANA

Extract from an Address delivered at the Grand Opera House, New Orleans, June 25, 1891.

What does the lottery do in all of its manipulations but simply shift the products of a preceding industry from one hand to another hand without the imparting in the process of a particle of value to that which is thus transferred? It may be said that there are customers who not being producers are under the same charge of using up what they do not create. It only emphasizes the position already taken, for even the non-producing class, as for example professional men, live upon that which they in a sense create. The lawyer may not create a new material product, but man being as he is there could be no basis of personal property without the machinery of justice, and he is the representative and organ of that justice, and just in so far as he conserves that which others create, and protects them in the enjoyment of the same, he is worth his living though he may not be a creator of a new material product. The physician who restores health to one who is incapacitated by disease from labor, or who ameliorates the suffering which disease inflicts, becomes by virtue of his calling a necessity to society and is worth in the exercise of his profession all that it costs to maintain him.

And the preacher, of whom I stand before you a representative, taking even the lowest economic view of his profession as a consumer and not a producer, is an important part of that necessary police force without which the order and position

and propriety of society cannot be preserved. All not being then producers, but consumers, yet in the exercise of their several callings add to the value of what is created and render secure the enjoyment of the same. But what value does the Lottery Company protect, not to say what value does the Lottery Company create?

Let me illustrate this so that it shall be understood by all present to-night. That company issues, if you please, a thousand tickets of $500 value apiece, creating thus within its vaults a fund of $500,000. It has first got to take $250,000 of that and deposit it safely in its own locker as its portion of the plunder. It then takes the other half, the $250,000, and divides it into twenty-five shares of $10,000 each and puts these into the wheel and the five hundred men may take their chances as to which of them shall get these twenty-five prizes. When at last the prizes are realized, what has been accomplished? Simply the transfer of $500,000 out of the pockets of one thousand individuals, one-half of it to enrich those who run the machine and the other half divided among twenty-five men, leaving four hundred and seventy-five to hold the empty bag and gain the loss.

Mr. Chairman, I do not wish to appear harsh, but will you draw for me the line between this and absolute stealing? If twenty-five men can put their hands into the pockets of four hundred and seventy-five men and take the $250,000 by which they are enriched without giving to those four hundred and seventy-five any equivalent, where is the distinction any other than barely a metaphysical distinction without even a hair-breadth's width to mark it between that and what we call in common style a theft? Now, sir, I know the reply to this. There are but two methods by which we acquire property, either by gift or purchase. Now I ask whether these four hundred and seventy-five men have made a gift to the successful winners of the prizes. Each one of those four hundred and seventy-five men, so far from being willing to donate their loss so that it shall become the other's gain, each one of them has been hoping and wishing that he might put into his own pocket the coveted treasure. Was there any good will in the transfer from the loser to the gainer? Is it a purchase? What equivalent has been rendered? It is simply grotesque to speak

of that being purchase money which does not amount to one-twentieth of the value of the thing purchased. But, it is urged in answer to this that the parties contract and make the bargain between themselves as to this gain and loss, and that as the losers agreed to take their chances with the rest, it is constructively although not actually a gift on their part.

Now it appears to me, Mr. Chairman and fellow citizens, one of the plainest principles of ethics that what a man has no right to do, he has no right to bargain to do, and no contract between man and man to do a thing that is unlawful can ever be made right in the sight of man or God simply by the fact that it is a contract between them. I go beyond this and say that the deliberateness of the act when two or more men sit down together and combine to do a thing which in itself was not right to do, the deliberateness of the act makes it more criminal than if it sprung from the spontaneous and sudden act of an individual, and more than all you have in the contract to do the wrong thing not only this deliberateness, but you have the concurrence of two wills, doubling the crime on the part of both. The man who staked his property had no right to stake that property on a chance and the man who won the property upon that stake had no original right to take it. It was neither a gift nor a purchase and consequently the agreement between the parties to stand simply by the chance was an immoral agreement and no Legislature can possibly make it legitimate. Here then is my first position against the lottery, when I say that it disorganizes society and is incompatible with the safety of the State. It strikes at that fundamental law of labor. It has said to these one thousand men, "There is no need for you to work. There is a shorter way by which you can enrich yourselves and your families." Those one thousand men are called away from their proper duties and they fail in meeting that fundamental obligation to live either by the toil of their hands or by the work of their understanding.

But, more than this, sir. When I have said there is no equivalent given and no new value imparted when there is transfer of money from one hand to the other through the lottery and its agents, it is a lesson industriously taught the people not only to live by luck, but to live upon the misfortune of their neighbors. I beg the attention of the audience to the an-

nouncement of this principle. Sir, it is a solemn thing for any body of men to inculcate it as at all right and proper that we should live simply and alone upon the losses of those that are unlucky. If I win the $10,000 prize, those that entered into the chance with me have lost just that much and I am enriched through their poverty. Now, sir, let the lottery exist five and twenty years. If only twenty-five men out of five hundred succeed in gaining what the lottery promises, how long will it take to transfer the entire wealth of the State of Louisiana into the hands of one out of twenty of its citizens? What will be the condition of things when one-twentieth of the population own everything upon the soil? And let me ask, sir, how long is any community going to stand that sort of thing? When the country has been led straight up or driven up to the very verge of a precipice, do you suppose that, like a herd of buffaloes, all the people of this State are going to leap that precipice into the boiling and hissing depths below? No, sir; they must and they will recoil, and if this lottery cannot be destroyed by forms of law, it must unquestionably be destroyed by actual revolution.

I fear that I may be trespassing upon the time of the other speakers. (Cries of "No, no, go on, go on!") I sometimes hear the apology for the lottery after this sort: "Oh, it is all wrong. It is immoral, we grant that, but then it is one of the evils which to society is incident and we cannot help ourselves. It is just like drinking. The State knows that the saloon is a deep injury to the State, and if in her power would gladly suppress it, but as men must and will drink, it is wise for the State to throw around existing saloons such restrictions as shall diminish the harm and make the evil less as it bears upon society at large." Now, the analogy is drawn. "Gambling is in human nature. Men will gamble, and why should not the State deal with the lottery exactly as it deals with the saloons? Give it license to do its work." But, sir, without dwelling too long upon the statement, let me dissipate the illusion by showing where the analogy fails.

Saloons exist, but they exist under protest. They exist under not only the protest of the government, but under restraints such as the State will be able to throw around them. It stands by itself and simply answers the wishes and demands

which are made upon it by those who desire the liquor which is sold them, but if you want the parallel to be exact you must convert all the saloons in the country into one grand saloon syndicate and that syndicate must go to the Legislature and demand a charter, and in order that their rights may be beyond invasion ever afterwards it must be imbedded in the Constitution that they and they alone shall have the right to satisfy the thirst of the people. What next? They open their tap-rooms upon every corner in every city where they gain access, and they hang out their prices, from the pint, earthen mug, quite up to the gallon and hogshead. And according to the money the parties are willing to pay this saloon syndicate will drown the country with what they desire and what proves their ruin. Not only that, but they have their agents walking the streets thrusting invitations into your face as you walk quietly in your citizenship along the streets of this city to tell you how cheap you may get this drink that you wish, and so they become the propagandists of the saloon.

That is the crime which I now charge against the lottery. It is not only a gambling place such as other gambling places that are in this city, meeting under the cover of night to satisfy the wishes and anticipations of those who love the gambling, but it becomes the apostle of gambling. It becomes the propagandist of gambling, it goes forth under the charter of the State to persuade man, woman and child wherever they meet them to gamble. It carries the solicitation into our very homes. It meets our cooks when they are going with the basket to get the master's breakfast and induces them to gamble. How long, sir, would the country stand a syndicate of saloons, and I ask how long will Louisiana or the country stand this syndicate of gamblers? What I charge, therefore, upon the lottery is not simply that it is a gambling concern but that it is a university for the instruction in gambling and a high endowment in order to stimulate the process of gambling by and through the country at large. I have only one thing more to say and I am done.

I have said the lottery must go, because the State cannot be allowed to perish. Why, sir, before the half of twenty-five years have elapsed if this lottery should gain its charter, every man that is able to leave the State of Louisiana will

abandon it. Whilst you are holding out our invitations to invite capital and invite population, who shall drain your morasses and stimulate industry and create the wealth of the State, you are holding up this forbidding thing to drive every desirable citizen away from Louisiana. Worse than that, sir—when you have an institution that goes openly before the Legislature and seeks to bribe it, that in less than ten years after its recharter will carry in its pocket every governor in the State, remove every honest judge from the bench, and put their men in the places to do their bidding, what then will Louisiana be worth? I, sir, was not born upon the soil of Louisiana, but I am her son by adoption. I have spent thirty-five years, almost the half of a long life, in what I believe is honest and virtuous labor for the good of this people. It will not be in my power to abandon this State, even though I might desire to escape the odium attaching it. My dead are here and the narrow house is already built in which after a year or two of active service I expect to be laid aside to enjoy the quiet repose which heaven has afforded to them, but before that event takes place, I desire to see this land of my adoption redeemed. I want her redemption to be accomplished by her own act. These beautiful plains, this delicious climate, taking the year round superior to any other upon this continent, these beautiful streams which like silver threads almost convert a portion of our State into a modern Venice—are we, sir, to abandon such a land as this, created by beneficent heaven and secured by the patriotism of the fathers that went before us? Are we, to deliver her, bound hand and foot, to such an enemy as this? Unless she be redeemed by her own act then the appeal must be made to the virtue and the intelligence of the entire country. Mr. Chairman, I need not say to one like you, so versed in moral truths, that the world is ruled by ideas, and it is not competent to any isolated community to live against the moral convictions of the world.

Scarce recovered as a people from the blow inflicted upon us coming in that precise way, the moral sentiment of the world, right or wrong, was arrayed against the institution of slavery and it went down. The moral sentiment of mankind is against the lottery, and all the countries that have given it a temporary existence have found that it exhausted the resources

of the land and have more or less divested themselves of the curse; but if, notwithstanding all these things the curse should still be inflicted upon us, Louisiana must become a lost Pleiad in the sisterhood of States, and she will go forth an outcast pariah with the scarlet letter of shame branded forever upon her forehead.

THE TRIBUNAL OF HISTORY

Address before the Confederate Reunion in Louisville, Kentucky, May 30, 1900.

Confederate Veterans and Fellow Citizens:—Accustomed through sixty years to address public assemblies, I am nevertheless subdued with awe in your presence to-day; for we stand together under the shadow of the past. It is the solemn reverence one might feel in the gloom of Westminster Abbey, surrounded by England's illustrious dead. Indeed, we are here the living representatives of countless comrades who sleep in lonely cemeteries throughout the land, where perchance a single monumental shaft is the ghostly sentinel keeping watch over the bivouac of the dead.

It is five and thirty years since the Confederate War was closed, and about thirty-nine years since it was begun, and it is sometimes asked why we should stir the ashes of that ancient feud? Why should we not bury the past in its own grave, and turn to the living issues of the present and the future? To this question, comrades, we return the answer with a voice loud as seven thunders, because it is history, because it is our history and the history of our dead heroes, who shall not go without their fame. As long as there are men who wear the gray, they will gather the charred embers of their old campfires and in the blaze of these reunions tell the story of the martyrs who fell in the defense of country and of truth.

Nay, more than this; it is the story of a strife that marks an epoch in the annals of the American people. It is known to every schoolboy in the land that two parties existed at the formation of our government, who could not agree in locating the paramount sovereignty which should decide upon all issues arising between the States themselves. The Federalists, as they were termed, demanded a strong government, concen-

trating power in the national administration; the Republicans, on the other hand, contended for the distribution of power among the States claiming their original sovereignty among their reserved rights. Both parties were too strong to allow the question to be determined by arbitration or through forensic discussion. It was, therefore, permitted to slumber beneath certain ambiguities of expression in the Constitution itself, to be settled by the exigencies of the future, not as an abstract principle, but as as accomplished fact. I need not remind you how this issue was raised in 1832, and was postponed through the conciliatory legislation of that period. Such an issue could not, however, sleep forever. The admission of new States into the Union, with their conflicting interests, must reopen the question and compel its decision. Thus it arose in our day, leading to the establishment of our Southern Confederacy, and to the Civil War that followed.

Fellow citizens, it is simply folly to suppose that such a spontaneous uprising as that of our people in 1860 and 1861 could be effected through the machinations of politicians alone. A movement so sudden and so vast, instantly swallowing up all minor contentions, would only spring from great faith deeply planted in the human heart and for which men are willing to die. Whatever may have been the occasion of the war, its *cardo causæ,* the hinge on which it turned, was this old question of State sovereignty as against national supremacy. As there could be no compromise between the two, the only resort was an appeal to force, the *ultima ratio regum.* The surrender at Appomattox, when the tattered remnant of Lee's great army stood guard for the last time over Southern liberties and rights, drew the equatorial line dividing between the past and the future of American History. When the will of the strongest, instead of "the consent of the governed," became the base of our national structure, a radical transformation took place. The principle of confederation gave way to that of consolidation, and the American nation emerged out of the American republic.

It is not my design, however, to discuss these issues. On the contrary, I have traced the remote origin of the Confederate War for a purpose which is entirely conciliatory, and to explain some things which may appear contradictory. It

enables both parties in this struggle to give full credit to each other for patriotic motives, though under a mistaken view of what that patriotism may have required. It shows why no attempt was ventured to bring attainder of treason against the Southern chiefs, which could not afford to be ventilated before any civil court under the terms of the American Constitution. It explains how through a noble forbearance on both sides (always excepting the infamies of the reconstruction period) the wound has been healed in the complete reconciliation of a divided people. It explains how we of the South, convinced of the rightfulness of our cause, can accept defeat without the blush of shame mantling the cheek of a single Confederate of us all: and while accepting the issue of the war as the decree of destiny, openly appeal to the verdict of posterity for the final vindication of our career. In making this appeal, veterans, in your name, I am brought to the subject of this day's discourse, which is to set before you the tribunal of history before which all the issues of the past continue to be tried and which in the view of many sound thinkers is rendering a proximate judgment in what is occurring before us in the immediate present.

[Having thus reached his subject, the orator proceeded to show, by luminous and noble historical parallels drawn from ancient, mediæval, and modern history, that peoples have often "mourned their dead and the principles for which they in vain had fought," and yet been vindicated by the true historians of the after-time.]

. . . What I affirm then is this: That the value of these final generalizations is scarcely impaired by the doubts as to this or that minute fact. Contemporaneous history, written in the interests of prejudice and passion, may be largely a libel, and future criticism may be sorely puzzled to distinguish between the truth and its travesty; yet in the aggregate result these, by a strange smelting process, are sifted out as not material to the issue. As we may poison a fountain, but cannot poison the ocean, so we may corrupt single facts, but cannot transmute the whole history of a people into a lie. A thousand hints of the truth will lie imbedded in the record, which antiquarian research will disentomb. The long silent voices will deliver their testimony in the court of final adju-

dication, and in these solemn historic retractions the good and the brave will find an honest vindication.

Fellow citizens, the application of this discourse is left to silence and to you. That which hath been is now, and that which is to be hath already been. Invective and reproach will continue in the sacred name of history to be poured upon those who deserve only her applause. The faithful witnesses of the truth will go in cloud and sorrow to the tomb, burying their principles only in a protest. But they will do it in the certain faith of a resurrection. As for their own fame, they can afford to wait. Eternity is long, and it is their lifetime. Upon the lip of that boundless sea their prophetic gaze is fixed upon the burnished throne which human justice makes its last tribunal, and before which the nations and the centuries are burnished for trial. Defamation and slander rest as lightly on their calm spirits as the salt spray that crystallizes upon the silent rock. If, too, the warnings of the past, like the prophecies of Cassandra, are heard only to be disbelieved, still let the despots of earth know they are but sowing the dragon's teeth of an armed and fierce retribution. Constitutional freedom has not come forth from the conflict of ages to be stifled now, when her broad shield is thrown over two continents. She will reappear again and again amid the birth-throes of regenerated States, for regulated liberty is to the commonwealth what piety is to the Church—the very law of its life. Both have struggled through corruption and decay to a more complete realization. But if the day should come when despotism shall so far consolidate its power as to crush all human freedom beneath its iron heel then will be consummated the second apostasy of man after the flood in the usurpation of Nimrod. History will have completed its cycle, and nothing will remain but the call to universal judgment.

LETTER TO HIS FATHER

New Orleans, La., December 25, 1878.

My Venerable and Precious Father:—I write you simply a note of congratulation and love on this your birthday, which puts you, I believe, in your ninety-first year. According to human arithmetic, how near you are to immortal youth! And what a clear, bright day has your life been on the earth! A few private sorrows have thrown a momentary mist over the face of the sun—but with what a blessed light it has shined upon others, at least, if not upon yourself. It has been a long life, undimmed by a single reproach—as it seems to us, not obscured by a single mistake—a life never embittered by human enmities—as judged by any earthly standard, a life of rare gentleness and humility, of singular consecration to duty, of transparent sincerity and religious devotion, a whole burnt offering of service and of sacrifice to God, and to man.

Pardon me, my Father; I have too much reverence for God's sacred truth to shock you with any extravagances of speech—or to imply that you do not require, like the rest of us, the dear atoning blood to cleanse you from unrighteousness before God. Rather, it is because you have been able through Divine grace to "adorn the Gospel"—and through a long life of most conspicuous consistency, to reveal the virtues of a sanctified nature: it is this which compels this outburst of admiring joy from your poor son, who has only the grace to venerate that which he cannot equally exemplify. When was there a time in all your long career, that men did not put the crown of their reverence upon your head? and a reverence, too, not stately and stiff, as being only rendered by the judgment and conscience—but reverence shading off into love, warm, deep and personal, making it as well the homage of the heart. Do you wonder then that your children rise up around you in your old age, and "call you blessed"? Feeling its influence in the shaping of their own character and destiny, they rejoice in the beauty of your life's sunset, even more than in the glory of its noonday brightness. The sun will set with you in its drapery of crimson and gold, hiding

itself for a little behind the stars, and rising again in the Eternal Day. Death will touch you with its gentle sleep and its terrors be lost in the translation to the home of the Redeemed: and we, who survive, will gaze upon you in the immortal ascension: and cry as the prophet to Elijah, "my Father, my Father, the chariot of Israel and the horsemen thereof." Let the tears and benedictions of your children rest upon you, beloved and honored Father; and let your blessing be their legacy!

I am still alone—though Augusta will be with me a week hence. With Christmas wishes to all of Sarah's household, I am as ever, Your dutiful son,

B. M. Palmer.

JOHN PATTERSON

[1863—]

JAMES LANE ALLEN

JOHN PATTERSON was born of Scotch ancestry, near Lexington, Kentucky, June 10, 1863. He had part of his college training in Kentucky University at Lexington, part in the State College at Lexington, and part later at Harvard University, where he was graduated in 1883.

During the years at Lexington he studied Greek under John Henry Neville, whom no well-liked student of his has ever perhaps in after years been able to think of without a fresh flame of devotion. Neville was one of those magnificently inspiring men who, here and there in the South at the end of the Civil War, went to heroic posts in its ruined colleges with the determination to rekindle their fires out of their ashes. The intellectual history of the nation furnishes no finer spectacle: native men, self-made by indomitable will and molded in the austerity of lofty ideals, gathering about them the often ragged, often hungry youths of the land's best blood, and beginning to marshal these into new armies amid the graves of their fathers—into new legions of light: Homer's impetuous infantry, the deliberate miners and sappers of Thucydides, the lone sentinels of Æschylus.

Such a Southern teacher of such Southern youth—there are never many of them, never enough of them, in any country—was John Neville: a nobly endowed, nobly endowing man, loving, as he loved nothing else, the Greek and Roman tongues with their literatures, and wisely persuaded of the fixed greatness of these in the world's fixed greatness.

The influence of such older men on younger men is what largely perpetuates the professions; it makes up what may be called the heredity of the lecture-room, the parentage and inheritance of purpose; it passes the torch on from hand to hand, so that when one teacher vanishes through one door, another enters through another door, and the room is never left empty. If the subject of this sketch has himself become a teacher of Greek, and an intimate translator and original critic of part of its literature, it was then and there that his feet were started in the long road and his hands ordered to get busy.

John Patterson's first book was a volume entitled 'Lyric Touches.' It was warmly received by the poetry-reading part of the American

public whom it reached; and certainly after many years it is possible to recall in it one poem at least of a grave, enduring loveliness. But, having heard him, Nature said to him: "My son, I have listened! Now do you listen—not to those who touched the lyre but whom the lyre *touched*!" She brought back to his ear across the ages the undying music that was Greece. His other teacher, Nature, which was his own nature, ordered him back to the work in which his first teacher had drilled him; and since then, to the enrichment of American scholarship in one of its rarest fields of culture, he has made it the chief study of his life.

Here, then, in a broad survey of what the toiling Americans of to-day may be variously doing for the welfare of the Republic—especially among those toilers who may be styled its undecorated citizens of the humanities—here, then, is his place, his plea, the exact significance and philosophy of him: that he is a native-born teacher of the Greek language and literature in the South, who brings his critical method and poetic spirit to bear upon some of its masterpieces as a present service to his profession, so making his scholarly post a starting-point for original work. And the rarity, the exclusiveness, the remoteness of some of the things he has undertaken is the reason why such work should be widely uncovered and widely recognized. In the vast, rude, stormy on-rolling of our civilization toward its uncomprehended destiny, it is the rare, still things brought freshly forward into it from old lands of unalterable wisdom, strength, and beauty that are needed for American guidance and American solace and American delight.

John Patterson's first achievement in the field of Greek was a metrical translation of the 'Medea' of Euripides, which appeared in 1894; this, in 1900, was followed by the 'Cyclops,' his most ambitious and learned output; he has since been at work on a critical edition and metrical translation of "Bion's Lament for Adonis," with a monograph on the "Cult of Adonis"; other essays and original researches already published in American and foreign periodicals are promised in collected form; and he is scarcely yet in the graver years where such researches commonly begin to reward the searcher and to find their way outward to a responsive auditory.

Meantime his course in the actual steps of his profession has led steadily upward. The first school after leaving Harvard was a private one for boys in the country, near Midway, Kentucky; thence he was called to the position of principal of the High School in Versailles, Kentucky; in 1894 he was chosen to fill the chair of Greek in the Louisville High School; and in 1902 he became the co-principal of the Patterson-Davenport School in that city; in 1907

he was elected professor of Greek in the University of Louisville; since then he has been made Dean of the College of Liberal Arts and Sciences of the New Academic Department of that University: and in 1908 Dean with full executive authority: a Greek prophet not without honor in his own American land.

SOME LYRICS OF "PSEUDO-ANACREON"

From *Poet-Lore,* Summer Number, 1897.

Nec siquid olim lusit Anacreon
Delevit ætas.—Horace, IV, IX, 9-10.

Wine and love were the changeless theme of Anacreon's lyre, but the theme was expanded in verses whose simplicity, imagery, neatness, and sweetness charmed the ancients. The metric of the choruses of those musician-poets, Æschylus, Sophocles, and Euripides, with its intricate art for expressing excitement, passion, and contrast of emotions must have been understood by the cultured only. The majority of the people must have turned from the magnificent measures of the drama with a truer appreciation to the simpler lyric sentences of the humbler poets whose "songs gushed from the heart." The metrical groups employed in the choruses of the drama bore strictly determined antithetical relation to each other, and were arranged in complicated periods; but the lyric systems used previously by Anacreon were uniform and little else than lines, and were not true verses. Even the imitations or pretended imitations of Anacreon have a melody about them, however, which strongly appeals to us, freighted as the verses are with delicacy of fancy, lightness of theme, and variety of illustration.

Among the vineyards of Teos, about the time that Cyrus the Great began to reign over the Persians, B.C. 559, the Greek lyric poet Anacreon was born. Little is known of his life except that, on account of his genius, he was cultivated by

Polycrates, Tyrant of Samos, and was afterward invited to Athens by Hipparchus, the son of Pisistratus. After the death of the latter, Anacreon is supposed to have returned to Teos, where he died in his eighty-fifth year, choked, as legend tells us, by a stone of the fruit, the joyful juice of which he loved and sang.

Of his writings extant in the time of Suidas and Athenæus only some merest fragments have been preserved. The little poems that long passed for the songs of Anacreon are now known to be the *studentenlieder,* as it were, of a post-classical age. It is not the purpose of this article to discuss the date and authenticity of the verses translated here, but to endeavor to show something of their rhythm and meaning, as the art of "Pseudo-Anacreon." In the following unaffected, vivid panorama of the passing spring I have rendered the Greek into English in a way that may give to the ear some suggestion of the sound of the Greek verses, although, since Greek poetry depends much on vowel-quantity, not chiefly on accent, as the English, the suggestion is imperfect:

Lo! how, spring aglow, the Graces
Intersperse the bursting roses;
Lo! how billows of the ocean
Are unbending to the calmness;
Lo! how yon didapper diveth;
Lo! how journeyeth the a-wing crane—
Then unveilèd Titan glitters;
Of the clouds the shades are scudding:
And the crops of mortals glitter
Earth swells peeping out with fruit.
Now the plucking hand in flowers
Hath showered Bacchus's vintage
Pressed o'er leaf and o'er tendril.

Anacreont. 37.

In the second line, ῥόδα βρύουσιν the true meaning is rather, "make the roses burst forth." And in the ninth line, τὰ βροτῶν ἔργα "the work of mortals," refers to the cultivation of the fields; the last three verses meaning that the hand of the gatherer has caused the grape-clusters to make flowers-of-color of the juice of the boisterous god bloom upon leaf and tendril.

The next ode which I shall translate, attempting, not so exactly as in the first, to reproduce the original metre, is addressed to Cupid. Apart from the simple beauty of the Greek ode and its fine, almost dramatic movement, expressed in language whose subtle coloring is the despair of a translator, it may possess an attraction for the reader, because he may see in it a resemblance to Edgar A. Poe's "Raven," about the creation of which Poe chose to weave such a skillful and fanciful explanation.

ΕΙΣ ΕΡΟΤΑ

Once upon a midnight season,
While the Arctus stars are circling
To the hand of the Boötes,
And the race articulate
Lieth overcome and weary:
Then a hard by halting, Eros
Fell to tapping at my lattice.
Who, cried I, doth rap my door?
Thou wilt dash my dreams asunder.
But quoth Eros, "Open to me,
I am but a baby; fear not;
Drenchèd am I, in the moonless
Midnight gone astray."
Pitiful I heard his plaining,
And forthwith the lamp a lighting,
Opened wide; and lo! a baby
Bearing wings and bow and quiver.
Near my hearth I placed him.
Then I warmed his hands with stroking,
Fell to pressing from his flowing
Tresses dripping water.
Quoth he, when the frost abated
"Come, this arc let's try,
If anon my reeking bow-string
Suffers harm." He draws, he strikes me
To my heart's core, like a breese.*
Up he springeth with loud laughter,
"Mine host," quoth he, "speak me peace;
This my bow is still uninjured—
Thy heart's pain shall ne'er surcease."

*A gad-fly.

While the metre of the preceding ode is of an everyday type and the knocking visitor is an old theme, it is interesting to note that in a poetical introduction to his 1831 volume, an introduction afterward suppressed, Poe wrote:

> For being an idle boy lang syne
> Who read Anacreon and drank wine, etc.
>
> *Ingram's 'Poe,'* Vol. I, p. 103.

I proceed with my purpose of giving to the reader a faint gleam of the beauty of these lyrics, by an imitation in English of the ode εἰς περιστεράν:

TO A DOVE

Loved bird of dusky feather,
Whence, whence thy pinions fleet?
On atmosphere whence coursing
Exhalest thou such perfume,
Siftest such drizzling sweet?
Who art? and what thy message?—
"Anacreon hath sent me
Unto his boy, Bathyllus,
Who, now, of all hearts reigneth
Master and despot, he.
My Cytherean mistress
Hath vended me seas over,
My price a neat chanson;
And I such love tasks render
Unto Anacreon.
And, seest, now his missives
I'm carefully conveying—
I'm told my gentle master
Will me anon be freeing.
But I, an he release me,
Will bide with him his vassal.
For why should I go winging
The mountains o'er and fields,
Within the woodlands perching,
Greedy for rustic diet?
I fare on wheaten and pelf,
Filching from willing fingers,
Of Anacreon himself.
He giveth me to drinken

The wine upon his lip.
And I when I have drunken
Fain through the dances flutter,
The while my pinions' shadows
Over my master dip.
And lulled to airy slumber
I brood upon his shell.
Thou hast my story, go!
To prattling hast thou set me,
Mortal like a crow."

The dove is made to exhibit delicately and tenderly the affection which it feels for both the lyric master and his shell, by the use of such words as τὸν οἶνον ὃν προπίνει, or the wine which Anacreon sips first; δεσπότην ἐμοῖσε πτεροῖσε ὁμοκιάζω "cover my master with the shadow of my wing;" again with ἐπ' αὐτῷ τῷ βαρβίτῳ καθεύδω, otherwise to "sleep upon the shell itself." What bliss to slumber upon that melodious lyre-heart! This ode is also an example of the simple strength of a style of expression with verbs exquisitely shaded in meaning, apt nouns and so few adjectives.

The dainty ode, one of several, εἰς ἑαυτὸν, "To Himself," has a delicious airiness about it, light with careless sophistry:

They say to me, the women,
"Anacreon, poor old poet,
If there, within our mirror
Thy locks no longer show it;
And lo; thy bald pate glistens!"
As for my locks, I wot not
If there they be, or vanished;
Thus much I wot, fair jesters,
To play the boy in pleasure
Should be the graybeard's wisdom,
The nearer him Death's measure!

Love for the rose is set forth in the following tribute to it, which I translate with no attempt at imitating the Greek metre:

ΕΙΣ ΡΟΔΟΝ

The rose of the Loves,
  Let us steep it in wine;
The beauty-leaved rose
  Round our temples entwine,
While we drink, while we smile.
  Rose, fairest flower,
  Boast of Spring's bower,
Even gods you beguile.
Cythéré's bright boy
  Twists the rose in his hair,
As he leads on the dance
  With the Graces to share.
Crown me then while I play,
  O dear Bacchus, to thee!
Round thy shrine, god of wine,
  With a deep-bosomed girl,
Rosy wreaths on my brow
  I shall whirl, I shall whirl.

In the last ode to be translated, another "To Himself," the philosophy of an old sybarite is expressed. In the original an inimitable grace lingers in light sweetness over a haunting pathos:—

On the myrtle's polished pillows
And upon the lotus-grasses,
I outstretching fain to tipple.
And, his tunick Eros linking
To his neck with rushy fetter,
Let him hasten serve me wine.
Like a chariot wheel is running
Life a turning, turning, turning;
And as specks of dust shall lie we
When our crumbling bones decline.
Why with unguents moist my marble,
With vain honors steep my terrace?
Me anoint that yet am living.
Thicken thou my locks with roses,
And invite hetæra fair.
Heed thee, ere I make departure
Netherward to join the Chorus,
  Eros, I would scatter care!

The word τερείναις, "polished," in the first line, means worn smooth, and possibly insinuates the frequent use by the poet of this dainty couch; and προπίνειν, "tipple," in the third line, conveys the idea, also, of a health drunk first to Eros. In the sixth line a fine choice of verbs is again discovered in διαχονείτω, which has an underlying meaning of hurry as well as serve, harmonizing with the simile of the chariot-swiftness of life's course. The eleventh and twelfth verses of the *carmen* refer to the customs of the ancients of pouring perfumes on sepulchres, and, "libation," χοαί, of both oil and honey on graves, in honor of the dead.

The poet Pseudo-Anacreon may lack the art of "The pure violet-weaver" Sappho, the divine chief lyrist, in weaving adjectives of which the splendor and color of meaning are like elusive rainbows; but a delicate shading projects his verbs, and a clearness rings and gleams from his nouns and adjectives, which emit a tenderness of tone and tint that dwell in the sense once experiencing them. His songs pervade the heart and make it mellow, even if they do not lift "the beauty-drunken soul on Sapphic wings."

THE HANDKERCHIEF

Exquisite, airy thing,
  Linen and lace,
Soft as a white dove's wing,
  Brushing her face.

Pure as the tea-rose bloom,
  Queen of its band,
Holding the light perfume
  Caught from her hand.

Bordered with slender lines
  Silken, and cleft
Fine as the spider twines
  Into his weft:

This is the handkerchief
  Delicate, sweet,
Fallen like lily-leaf
  Down by her feet.

NOT NOW, SAD DEATH

Not now, sad Death, not in the happy spring—
  Thou did'st but jest, and I thy pardon crave.
Life, life is in the lilt of everything;
  The dial points to nest and not to grave.

This is the hour for men to sing and sow,
  For blade and bud and round of happy rhyme.
My hand waits on the cross-lute and the hoe—
  So, Death, some other time, some other time.

Not now, still Death; the summer's not for sleep:
  I have so much to do. My ripening fields
In which I've labored long, I fain would reap,
  My laurel tree its precious chaplet yields.

I could not rest in peace: my harvest waits,
  My grain ungarnered and my wine-press dry.
Just when men's plaudits flatter at my gates?
  Some churl may go with thee—not I, not I!

Not now, pale Death, not in the autumn speak.
  Carmine and rouge on dancing beeches glow,
The joyful tide runs in the russet's cheek,
  A draught of sweet red wine's on lips I know.

'Tis wine and love and life in autumn days—
  Crimson and gold; and roses on the brow:
The harvest-feast and tipsy vintage maze—
  Not thou, pale Death, in autumn, O not thou!

Not now, cold Death, not in the Winter-time.
  The chimney-corner seat is bright and snug,
The spinning apple sings a juicy rhyme,
  And guid brown ale with wassail crowns the mug.

No tankard gaily passes 'mong the dead;
  None lift the ballad in thy icy keep.
Though wintry rains leak on his fallen head,
  Yet lo! the sleeper will forever sleep!

THE SILENT GATES

Through the silent gates
There come the slow, sweet breath
    Of roses dozing,
And whispered intercourse
    Of wind and leaves.

There the shadows fall
Like wings of weary birds
    Feebly fluttering,
Till sunbeams cover them
    With nets of gold.

Through the silent gates
There come the quick, coarse cry
    Of ravens calling,
And the sodden sound
    Of falling clay.

There the marble doors
Infold their snow in which
    Are traced sad legends
And the carven names
    Of guests within.

There our sleepers sleep—
And you and I who wake
    Beyond the grating
Of the silent gates,
    Are drowsy, waiting.

BION'S LAMENT FOR ADONIS*

Dedicated as a grateful tribute to W. W. Goodwin of Harvard University

Ah! fair Adonis, fair Adonis, dead!
"Dead, fair Adonis." Loves responsive wail.
No more in purple splendor sleep, O queen;
Be sleepless, wretched, thou; in sable stoled,
Beat wild thy breasts and cry to all, "Is dead
The fair Adonis!"
Ah! fair Adonis: Loves responsive wail.

The fair Adonis lies upon the hills—
Adonis' white thigh torn, which white tusks tore—
And gently breathing out his life, abandons
Cytherea while the dark blood drops
Adown his ivory flesh; beneath his brows
His eyes grow glazed, and fleeteth from his lips
The rose, and dieth round his lips the kiss,
Which living, Cypris never will secure,
And yet his lips may solace as of yore,
Unconscious dying lips to kisses pale!
Ah! fair Adonis: Loves responsive wail.

A deep, deep wound 's upon Adonis' thigh;
A deeper, Cytherea, on thy heart.
There at his feet his faithful beagles howl,
And mountain nymphs bewail; here Aphrodite
Hath loosed her plaits; adown the coppice strays
Distract, unbraided, sandalless:
The brambles pluck her tresses as she moves,
And flaunt the blossoms of her sacred blood.
On through the distant hollows is she hurried
Shrilly plaining, still unto the throng
Repeating, wailing her Assyrian spouse.
Yond round his navel clots his curdling blood,
His chest bedashed with crimson from his thigh,
And—where the whilom snowy spaces lay—
His breasts beneath are purpled. Ah! Adonis.

*The translation is from the Greek of Bion, and is made from the text constituted by Mr. Patterson to be published in his edition of Bion's "Lament for Adonis."
A Translation.

"Oh! Cytherea" Loves responsive wail.
Her fair love 's lost, and lost her grace divine—
For fair was Cypris' form while lived Adonis,
But with Adonis Cypris' beauty died.
"Alas! Adonis," murmur all the mounts,
And all the oak trees murmur, "Ah! Adonis."
The rivers voice the grief of Aphrodite,
"Adonis" weep the wells upon the hills.
The blooms fret red from blood, and Cytherea
Upon the mountain shoulders, up and down
The valley chanteth still her plaintive dirge:
"Alas! alas! and fair Adonis, dead";
Back shouted Echo "Fair Adonis, dead."
Ah! Cypris' grievous love who had not wept?

Alas! when first she saw and understood
Adonis' mortal wound; when first she saw
The crimson-flow about his mangled limb,
With arms outflung she fell to moaning, "Stay
Adonis, O ill-starred Adonis stay,
That I may find thee this last time of all;
Enfold thee and commingle lips with lips.
An instant wake, and kiss me just once more.
Kiss me so long as lives a kiss, until
Thy breath of life shall flow into my mouth,
Into my soul, and I shall drain thy sweet
Love-potion to the dregs, quaff off thy love,
This kiss my keepsake for Adonis' self;
Since thou art fleeing me, O my ill-starred,
Far fleeing me, Adonis, and art going
To Acheron the hated king and grim.
While I enduring live, and am a god,
Forbid to follow thee!
Receive my spouse, Persephone, for thou
Art mightier far than I; and down to thee
Doth all of beauty drift. Ah! hapless I,
Who have unglutted sorrow, who bewail
Adonis dead to me, and in thy thrall.
Thou diest, O thrice-longed for, and thy longing
Will hover o'er me like a plaintive dream.

Bereft is Cytherea, Loves are idle
In the palace. Perished, too, my zone
Along with thee—Bold hunter, why so mad
To match thy beauty 'gainst the wild boar's strength?"
Thus Cypris plained: the Loves responsive wail,
"Ah! Cytherea, fair Adonis, dead!"
Weepeth the goddess till the flood of tears
Equals Adonis' blood: and drop for drop,
Spring from the ground in bloom, blood turned to rose
And tears to trembling wind-flower.
Ah! fair Adonis, fair Adonis, dead!

No more in wild woods, Cypris, weep the youth,
A bed of simple grass, a pall of leaves
Are ready for Adonis—would the dead
Adonis had thy couch, O Cyprian queen!—
Who dead is fair, fair dead, like one asleep.
Depose him in soft robes, in which he nestled,
In which by thee he dallied out the night
Relaxed in sleep divine on bed all-gold,
That longs for still the pressure of Adonis.
Come, strew the earth with wreaths and blossoms all,
Since for his frozen form, yea, all the flame
Of flowers is quenched. Come, spill the jars of oils
And Syrian unguents—let the perfumes die
With him—Adonis, thine own perfume's dead.

He 's laid in purple vestment—O the rare
Adonis! Round him groan the weeping Loves,
Clipping their tresses for Adonis,
One's balanced on his arrows, one his bow,
One's mounted on his quiver, whilere one
Hath loosed Adonis' sandal; one will pour
Water from golden ewer; and one lave
Adonis o'er; while perched behind one seeks
Back with his wings to fan the fleeting breath.
Ah! Cytherea: Loves responsive wail.

Hymen hath quenched each lamp upon the lintels,
And hath untwined the bridal wreath—no more,
Ah, never more the song is "Hymen," "Hymen,"

But "Alas!"—"Alas!" and "Ah! Adonis!"
The Graces more than Hymen ever mourn
The son of Cinyras, "dead, fair Adonis"
Repeating in response. They shrilly cry,
In shriller strain than even thou, Dione.
The Muses wail, "Adonis, O Adonis!"
And sing to him, who heareth not their song.
Nor is he loth—Death's Maid releases none.

O Cytherea, stay thy groans: this morrow
Stop the beating of thy breasts: thou must
Again lament, and in the future years
Thy lot be sorrow!

SAMUEL MINTURN PECK

[1854—]

THOMAS C. McCORVEY

NATHAN HASKELL DOLE, in a biographical sketch of Rudyard Kipling, says: "Fortunate for special purposes is the man of one race and language who is born amid the men of another, and thus inherits two tongues and the knowledge of two peoples." The thoughtful student of American history will recognize the fact that the principle here enunciated applies with some degree of force to the man of Puritan New England and Middle States ancestry who was born and reared amid the cavalier civilization of the South. Especially favored, for the interpretation in literature of the life of his people, is the man so born and reared whose fortune it was to spend several years of the formative period of his life in the free, democratic atmosphere of the great Northwest. There is thus presented to him, by inheritance and by personal experience, American life and institutions from the viewpoint of three civilizations differing from each other in many material respects. Such circumstances of birth and rearing offer the best guaranty that the literary worker will be free from the trammels of provincialism; while the product of his brain and pen will lose, in no sense, the flavor of the soil from which it springs. The advantages of the environment here suggested are well illustrated in the life and work of Samuel Minturn Peck, of Alabama, probably one of the best known writers of verse in the *post-bellum* period of Southern literature.

Samuel Minturn Peck was born at Tuscaloosa, Alabama, November 4, 1854. The old Peck home, where he first saw the light, is still standing amid its broad ancestral acres; and it is now (1909) the property of the poet himself. His father, Elisha Wolsey Peck, who was Chief Justice of the Supreme Court of Alabama from 1868 to 1873, was born in Schoharie County, New York, in 1799; so it will be seen that the two generations, father and son, have lived in three centuries. The Peck family was of Welsh origin; but their American progenitor came to this country as early as 1640; so that by two and a half centuries of blending with English blood Celt has been overshadowed by Saxon in the family lineage. There is also a dash of Frankish blood in the veins of the poet through the intermarriage of one of his Peck ancestors with a Frenchwoman.

The grandfather of Judge Peck was a captain in the Revolutionary War and, with two of his sons, fought at the battle of Saratoga; but as his home in Westchester County was burned during that war the efforts of the poet, a few years ago, to trace the authentic records of this service were baffled. Judge Peck was admitted to the Bar at Syracuse, New York, and he came to Alabama in 1825. He settled for the practice of his profession at old Elyton (now a suburb of the new city of Birmingham), the county seat of Jefferson County; but a few years later he moved to Tuscaloosa, then the capital of Alabama. His many years of leadership in his profession in the State is one of the most notable traditions of the Bar of western Alabama. While he reached the highest judicial position in the State, as already mentioned, he was first of all a great trial lawyer. Judge Peck married Lucy Lamb Randall of Talladega, who was born at Norwich, Connecticut, 1808, and came to Alabama with her parents as a girl of seventeen, in 1824. Her family was of English origin; but they had come to America in 1639, and in her veins was some of the best Puritan blood of New England. Judge and Mrs. Peck both lived to a green old age and reared a large family of children, of whom the youngest and only surviving member is Samuel Minturn Peck.

The childhood of the poet was spent at Tuscaloosa; but in 1865 his father removed with his family to Sycamore, Illinois. Judge Peck afterward purchased a home at Rockford, in that State, intending to spend his remaining days in the Northwest; but, as he himself afterward said, he grew "homesick for the old red hills of Alabama," and he returned to his Tuscaloosa home in 1867. It thus came about that a part of the elementary education of the poet was in the public schools of the Northwest; but, after the return of the family to the South, he entered the University of Alabama, in 1871, from which institution he was graduated as Master of Arts in 1876. After his graduation, to gratify his parents rather than from his own preference, he began the study of medicine, and received his degree of Doctor of Medicine from Bellevue College, New York, but never entered upon the practice of his profession. In later years, after he had fairly begun his literary career, he took several graduate courses of Columbia University, New York, among which were "The Drama from the Days of the Greeks," "The Ethics of the Drama," and "The Evolution of the Modern Essay."

But schools and colleges and universities were not the only educational agencies that gave direction to the poet's career. He was reared in a home of culture. While his father was not, in the ordinary sense, "a literary lawyer," he knew well the history of human

institutions, and he found especial delight in Church history, being a devout communicant of the Protestant Episcopal Church. Mrs. Peck was herself a woman of decided literary culture—a fact especially evidenced by the charming style of her letters. She could no doubt have made a success in the field in which her son has become distinguished, had she not esteemed the duties of motherhood a higher sphere. It was in the atmosphere of such a home that the poet's talents took shape. It cannot be said that "he lisped in numbers," for he did not begin rhyming until he was well into his twenties. His first efforts in this direction were printed in the local newspapers under a *nom de plume*. The first poem for which he received any pay was "The Mock Orange," published in the *Youth's Companion*, and about the same time *The Independent* accepted and paid for "A Legend." These impersonal recognitions of his talents from critical editors may be said to have fairly started the poet on his literary career. Soon his lighter verses began appearing in *The Century* "Bric-à-Brac," and they at once won for him a marked popularity, being copied more widely perhaps than any contemporary work of similar character. It may be said in passing, that when the poet first began publishing verses, his practical father was inclined to regret the fact; but after his first book appeared Judge Peck read it through and seemed much pleased, and never again offered any objection to the verse-writing of his son.

In the earlier days of Dr. Peck's literary career, he was especially fascinated by the society verse of William M. Praed, Austin Dobson, and Frederick Locker—of whom the last mentioned was his chief love. While he read and admired "the bards sublime," like Shakespeare and Milton, his individual taste always drew him nearer to the minor poets of our tongue, like Herrick and Suckling and Moore. He was somewhat afraid of such poets as Byron and Poe, whose weird spell has blighted many weaker singers; for keen sensitiveness to their subtle charms affects their votaries with their undoubted mannerisms. He has always loved Wordsworth, whose sane, out-of-door conceits could never throw the baleful influence of imitation around any young verse-writer. And here is to be found one of the excellencies of Dr. Peck's work. He is not an imitator. While he has never aspired "to build the lofty rhyme," one cannot find the echo of some stronger bard in the notes which he utters.

Dr. Peck's first volume, 'Cap and Bells,' appeared in 1886. On the whole, it had a very kindly reception from the critics and from the public; but perhaps there was a modicum of truth in the dictum of the *New York Critic*, that it "smelled rather too much of the ball-

room." While it contains some of his tenderest lyrics, like "A Knot of Blue," it is really a collection of his earlier society verse; and the artificial French forms of versification, so much in vogue at that period—ballade, rondeau, villanelle, and triolet—are notably conspicuous. This training in writing verse in fixed forms no doubt rendered a good service to the poet, in that it conduced to the clear-cut, concise, symmetrical style for which his later efforts are noted. Whatever effect this reining in of his muse may have had upon the boldness of his flights, it certainly made him a past master in the technique of versification.

After his first volume, the poet turned more and more to nature—to the woods and fields and to themes of human interest. The title of his second volume, 'Rings and Love-Knots', 1892, is hardly suggestive of its best contents. The over-redolence of the ballroom here gives place to the fresh odors that are wafted from "An Alabama Garden" and from "Blackberry Blossoms"; while nowhere else in American literature will be found a more exquisite lyric than "The Grapevine Swing." In the same volume is found "My Grandmother's Turkey-tail Fan," which in quaint, delicate humor is worthy of comparison with the best work of Dr. Holmes himself; but it is in no sense an imitation of anything that the New Englander wrote.

Dr. Peck's third volume, 'Rhymes and Roses,' appeared in 1895. While it shows him still the master in "patrician rhymes," there are indications of a developing power to project bold outlines and fill them—"to sound the depths and to reach the higher levels of human nature." But, as the poet himself has facetiously lamented, "Give a dog a bad name, and you might as well hang him!" He has been classed as a writer of society verse and love songs, and his reputation along these lines has overshadowed in the public mind any efforts he has made in other directions. In the volume in question, he groups together twenty-six "Lyrics of Nature," eighteen "Love Songs," thirteen "*Vers de Société*," nine poems, "In Divers Keys," and "A Winter Lay," in the order mentioned.

Since the appearance of this last volume, Dr. Peck has published many poems in leading magazines, and it is his intention to gather them together, at some time in the future, in a book which his friends believe will best show the maturity of his poetic talent. Some time ago he published in a well-known journal a poem of forty lines, in a simple eight-line stanza, entitled "I Want to Hear the Old Songs." The ink was hardly dry on the print when he received a request from a prominent publisher to permit him to use the poem as the *only* preface to a collection of the old and best loved songs, entitled 'Home Songs.' One can hardly read those stanzas without a gather-

ing of mist in his eyes—so tender and true, so suggestive of the days that are no more. In this connection it may be mentioned that the anthologists have treated the Alabama poet with marked appreciation. Although only his first little book had appeared when Edmund Clarence Stedman and Ellen Mackay Hutchinson published their 'Library of American Literature,' he was creditably represented in it; and since then his work has found its way into most of the collections. The exquisite lyrical quality of his verses has always appealed to composers, and many of his choicest songs have been wedded to musical notes and have been sung by happy-hearted boys and girls, as well as by maturer people, from Maine to California. The poet is something of a musician himself, and he set to music some of his earlier songs. When he was a medical student in New York, he went one evening to hear a popular actress, and was surprised and gratified to hear her sing one of his own compositions, for which she received a rapturous encore from a critical audience.

Besides the three collections of Dr. Peck's poems, already mentioned, he has written two other books in verse, on the special request of publishers, to elucidate pictures—the pictures having been sent him to inspire the verses. One of these books is entitled 'The Golf Girl,' and the other 'Fair Women of To-day.'

In 1892 Dr. Peck made his formal bow to the public in another rôle—as a writer of prose sketches and short stories. For some time previous to that date his stories had been appearing in the magazines; and one of them especially, "The Trouble at St. James's," which was published in an Easter number of *The Outlook*, attracted wide attention. Altogether, he had published something like twenty-five stories and sketches when he selected from them eleven, in which the scenes were laid in his native State, and grouped them into a volume entitled 'Alabama Sketches.' The shortest and the last in the book, "Far from the Front," is one of the strongest. It is a counterpart in prose of Frank O. Ticknor's immortal poem, "Little Giffen of Tennessee," as a condensed epic of the non-slave-owning Confederate soldier.

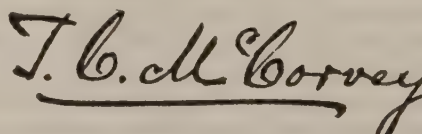
In personal appearance Dr. Peck is prepossessing. He has a tall, graceful, and muscular figure; and when seen indulging in his favorite pastime of bicycling he might be taken for a star "guard" or "tackle" on a great football eleven. He is still a *young* bachelor, for his fifty or more summers have left in his lineaments little trace of their passing. Of late years he has spent much time abroad, having taken five trips across the Atlantic. His favorite European region is southern France, the land of the Troubadours—a preference due possibly to the dash of French blood in his veins. In fact,

one catches in the songs of the Alabama poet something akin to the far-away Provençal notes that were hushed forever by the cruel crusade of Simon de Montfort. When in America, he divides his time between New York City and his old plantation home on the outskirts of Tuscaloosa.

An interesting side light upon some of Dr. Peck's work may be had from the following short extract from one of his recent personal letters—not intended, of course, for publication—dated Zurich, Switzerland:

"Perhaps you may be shocked—especially in the case of a poet—but I must say that big mountains have no charm for me. Just because a mountain is huge and covered with snow, I do not think it beautiful. I like beauty that is associated with life, or the capacity to support life, and human life in particular. I do not care for a flat country, and I do not object to mountains—if they are useful. To see a vast space of the earth's surface entirely useless gives me no pleasure. It may be sublime; but personally grace always appeals more to me than grandeur. I would much rather see a hillside with a pretty stream flowing beneath it, some orchards, sheep, woods, hedges, and flowers—I do not mind a few rocks thrown in for variety—than Mont Blanc in all its glory. So you see Switzerland cannot be my favorite region. . . . . Now I am writing this at a house where the Righi and Pilatus can be viewed from the dining-room windows. I don't know which is Pilatus and which is the Righi—and I don't care!"

It was fortunate, perhaps, for Dr. Peck's poetic art that he inherited a comfortable fortune, for he has thus been relieved of the necessity for turning out rapidly a stream of "pot-boilers." He has written chiefly for the love of his art, and the consequence is a rare finish in his work. He still writes as the spirit moves him; but sometimes weeks, even months, go by without his touching pen to paper. Whether or not he has won, or will win, any degree of immortality, no one can say at present; but the lover of verses that are tender and true to nature who reads "The Grapevine Swing" must conclude that here, at least, is one simple little lyric that the world will not readily let die.



BIBLIOGRAPHY

Cap and Bells. New York, White, Stokes and Allen, 1886.

Rings and Love-Knots. New York, Frederick A. Stokes Company, 1892.

Rhymes and Roses. New York and London, Frederick A. Stokes Company, 1895.

The Golf Girl. Illustrated by Maud Humphrey. New York, Frederick A. Stokes Company, 1899.

Fair Women of To-day. New York, Frederick A. Stokes Company, 1901.

Alabama Sketches. Chicago, A. C. McClurg and Company, 1902.

ALABAMA

From 'Cap and Bells.' Copyright, 1886, White, Stokes, and Allen, and used here by permission of the author and the Frederick A. Stokes Company.

Why shines the moon so wan and white?
Why drift the shades so thick to-night
Beneath the winds that wail in flight
  Across the sobbing foam?
I watched the happy swallows flee
Beyond the lurid autumn sea;
They fled and left the gloom to me,
  Far—far from home.

Know'st thou that balmy Southern land,
By myrtle crowned, by zephyrs fanned,
Where verdant hills and forests grand
  Smile 'neath an azure dome?
'Tis there the stars shed softer beams
As if to bless the woods and streams;
'Tis there I wander in my dreams,
  Far—far from home.

I long to hear the murmuring pine,
To see the golden jasmine twine,
For there my fancy builds her shrine
  Where'er my footsteps roam.

O, sunny land, for thy sweet sake
A thousand tender memories wake;
For thee my heart is like to break,
  Far—far from home.

PAUL HAMILTON HAYNE

From 'Cap and Bells.'

All strains are his. But most his lines
  Are fraught with peace and woodland pleasures,
With bough-swing of the Georgian pines
  Enwoven through the golden measures.

Beneath the purple muscadine
  Sweet Fancy brings him many a vision,
Where frolic Dryads, laughing, twine
  In airy cirques and songs Elysian.

Who notes the frosts that fringe his brows!
  His tide of song is swelling sweeter,
With breathings of the myrtle boughs
  And sunny roses in the meter.

Who cavils at the wings of Time!
  They only waft him tones more tender
That he may chant in mellow rhyme
  Of woodland charms and cloudland splendor.

The winsome Nine, a lissome throng,
  With dimpled smiles still linger near him;
And still supreme in Southern song,
  He pipes and millions joy to hear him.

THE GRAPEVINE SWING

From 'Rings and Love-Knots.' Copyright, 1892, Frederick A. Stokes Company.

When I was a boy on the old plantation,
Down by the deep bayou,
The fairest spot of all creation,
Under the arching blue;
When the wind came over the cotton and corn,
To the long slim loop I'd spring
With brown feet bare, and a hat-brim torn,
And swing in the grapevine swing.

Swinging in the grapevine swing,
Laughing where the wild birds sing,
I dream and sigh
For the days gone by
Swinging in the grapevine swing.

Out—o'er the water-lilies bonnie and bright,
Back—to the moss-grown trees;
I shouted and laughed with a heart as light
As a wild-rose tossed by the breeze.
The mocking-bird joined in my reckless glee,
I longed for no angel's wing,
I was just as near heaven as I wanted to be
Swinging in the grapevine swing.

Swinging in the grapevine swing,
Laughing where the wild birds sing—
Oh, to be a boy
With a heart full of joy,
Swinging in the grapevine swing!

I'm weary at noon, I'm weary at night,
I'm fretted and sore of heart,
And care is sowing my locks with white
As I wend through the fevered mart.

I'm tired of the world with its pride and pomp,
And fame seems a worthless thing.
I'd barter it all for one day's romp,
And a swing in the grapevine swing.

Swinging in the grapevine swing,
Laughing where the wild birds sing,
I would I were away
From the world to-day,
Swinging in the grapevine swing.*

A SOUTHERN GIRL

From 'Rings and Love-Knots.'

Her dimpled cheeks are pale;
She's a lily of the vale,
Not a rose.
In a muslin or a lawn
She is fairer than the dawn
To her beaux.

Her boots are slim and neat —
She is vain about her feet
It is said.
She amputates her *r*'s,
But her eyes are like the stars
Overhead.

On a balcony at night
With a fleecy cloud of white
Round her hair—
Her grace, ah, who could paint?
She would fascinate a saint,
I declare.

'Tis a matter of regret,
She's a bit of a coquette,
Whom I sing:

*William Gilmore Simms wrote a poem on this subject, which may be found in Weber's 'Selections from the Southern Poets.'

On her cruel path she goes
With a half-a-dozen beaux
To her string.

But let all that pass by,
As her maiden moments fly
Dew empearled;
When she marries, on my life,
She will make the dearest wife
In the world.

AUNT JEMIMA'S QUILT

From 'Rhymes and Roses.' Copyright, 1895, Frederick A. Stokes Company.

A miracle of gleaming dyes
Blue, scarlet, buff and green;
O ne'er before by mortal eyes
Such gorgeous hues were seen!
So grandly was its plan designed,
So cunningly 'twas built,
The whole proclaimed a master mind—
My Aunt Jemima's quilt.

Each friendly household far and wide
Contributed its share;
It chronicled the country side
In colors quaint and rare.
From belles and brides came rich brocade
Enwrought with threads of gilt;
E'en buxom widows lent their aid
To Aunt Jemima's quilt.

No tapestry from days of yore,
No web from Orient loom,
But paled in beauteous tints before
This strange expanse of bloom.
Here glittering stars and comet shone
O'er flowers that never wilt;
Here fluttered birds from worlds unknown
On Aunt Jemima's quilt.

O, merry was the quilting bee,
When this great quilt was done;
The rafters rang with maiden glee,
And hearts were lost and won.
Ne'er did a throng of braver men
In war clash hilt to hilt,
Than sought the smiles of beauty then
Round Aunt Jemima's quilt.

This work of art my aunt esteemed
The glory of the age;
No poet's eyes have ever beamed
More proudly o'er his page.
Were other quilt to this compared,
Her nose would upward tilt;
Such impudence was seldom dared
O'er Aunt Jemima's quilt.

Her dear old hands have gone to dust,
That once were lithe and light;
Her needles keen are thick with rust,
That flashed so nimbly bright.
And here it lies by her behest,
Stained with the tears we spilt,
Safe folded in this cedar chest—
My Aunt Jemima's quilt.

PHYLLIS

From 'Rhymes and Roses.'

The singing of sweet Phyllis
Like the silver laughing rill is,
And her breath is like the lily's
In the dawn.
As graceful as the dipping
Summer swallow, or the skipping
Of a lambkin is her tripping
O'er the lawn.

To whom shall I compare her?
To a dryad? No! She's rarer.
Beyond a poet's fancies.
Like Bopeep.
She is merry, she is clever.
Surely had Bopeep been ever
Half so winsome, she had never
Lost a sheep.

Her eyes are like the heather,
Or the skies in April weather;
And as blue as both together
In the spring.
Alas! I need a metre,
As I pipe her, that is sweeter,
And a rhythm that is fleeter
On the wing.

Beyond a poet's fancies,
Though the muse had kissed his glances,
Is her dimple when it dances
In a smile.
Oh, the havoc it is making—
Days of sorrow, nights of waking—
Half a score of hearts are aching
All the while.

Sweet Phyllis! I adore her,
And with beating heart implore her
On my loving knees before her
In alarm.
'Tis neither kind nor rightful
That a lassie so delightful
Should exert a spell so frightful
With her charm.

A WINTER DAY

From 'Rhymes and Roses.'

Pent in his lair until the storms be past,
Sequestered from the north wind's stinging blast,
The bumble bee in cozy slumber dreams
Of mossy dingles and soft rippling streams
O'erhung by flowerets waiting to be won
When blue-eyed Spring leads back the ardent sun.
And Winter's restless wrath is all forgot
Neath spell of primrose and forget-me-not.
The cricket too hath buried in the mould
His Autumn sorrow from a world a-cold;
Or else a guest beside the cottage hearth
He wakes again his minstrelsie and mirth;
And as he gaily sweeps his elfin lyre
His lay finds answer in the crackling fire,
Which echoes back his summer-toned refrain
Of joyous revels in the golden grain.

MY GRANDMOTHER'S TURKEY-TAIL FAN

From 'Rings and Love-Knots.'

It owned not a color that vanity dons
  Or slender wits choose for display;
Its beautiful tint was a delicate bronze,
  A brown softly blended with gray.
From her waist to her chin, spreading out without break
  'Twas built on a generous plan:
The pride of the forest was slaughtered to make
  My grandmother's turkey-tail fan.

For common occasions it never was meant:
  In a chest between two silken cloths
'Twas kept safely hidden with careful intent
  In camphor to keep out the moths.
'Twas famed far and wide through the whole country side,
  From Beersheba e'en unto Dan;
And often at meeting with envy 'twas eyed,
  My grandmother's turkey-tail fan.

Camp-meetings, indeed, were its chiefest delight.
Like a crook unto sheep gone astray
It beckoned backsliders to re-seek the right,
And exhorted the sinners to pray.
It always beat time when the choir went wrong,
In psalmody leading the van.
Old Hundred, I know, was its favorite song—
My grandmother's turkey-tail fan.

A fig for the fans that are made nowadays,
Suited only to frivolous mirth!
A different thing was the fan that I praise,
Yet it scorned not the good things of earth.
At bees and at quiltings 'twas aye to be seen;
The best of the gossip began
When in at the doorway had entered serene
My grandmother's turkey-tail fan.

Tradition relates of it wonderful tales.
Its handle of leather was buff.
Though shorn of its glory, e'en now it exhales
An odor of hymn-books and snuff.
Its primeval grace, if you like, you can trace:
'Twas limned for the future to scan,
Just under a smiling gold-spectacled face,
My grandmother's turkey-tail fan.

BESSIE BROWN, M.D.

From 'Cap and Bells.'

'Twas April when she came to town;
The birds had come, the bees were swarming.
Her name, she said, was Doctor Brown:
I saw at once that she was charming.
She took a cottage tinted green,
Where dewy roses loved to mingle;
And on the door, next day, was seen
A dainty little shingle.

Her hair was like an amber wreath;
  Her hat was darker, to enhance it.
The violet eyes that glowed beneath
  Were brighter than her keenest lancet.
The beauties of her glove and gown
  The sweetest rhyme would fail to utter.
Ere she had been a day in town
    The town was in a flutter.

The gallants viewed her feet and hands,
  And swore they never saw such wee things;
The gossips met in purring bands
  And tore her piecemeal o'er the tea-things.
The former drank the Doctor's health
  With clinking cups, the gay carousers;
The latter watched her door by stealth,
    Just like so many mousers.

But Doctor Bessie went her way
  Unmindful of the spiteful cronies,
And drove her buggy every day
  Behind a dashing pair of ponies.
Her flower-like face so bright she bore,
  I hoped that time might never wilt her.
The way she tripped across the floor
    Was better than a philter.

Her patients thronged the village street;
  Her snowy slate was always quite full.
Some said her bitters tasted sweet;
  And some pronounced her pills delightful.
'Twas strange—I knew not what it meant—
  She seemed a nymph from Eldorado;
Where'er she came, where'er she went,
    Grief lost its gloomy shadow.

Like all the rest, I too grew ill;
  My aching heart there was no quelling.
I tremble at my doctor's bill—
  Aid lo! the items still are swelling.

The drugs I've drunk you'd weep to hear!,
They've quite enriched the fair concocter,
And I'm a ruined man, I fear,
Unless—I wed the Doctor!

THE DYING SCOUT

From 'Rhymes and Roses.'

Oh, make me a grave 'neath the jasmine vine
Where the blooms like censers swing,
Wafting a fragrance richer than wine
At night where the mockbirds sing.
Let me sleep to the songs of the caroling birds
And the lays that the winds repeat;
Where the moldering leaves at dawn are stirred
By the touch of the wild doe's feet.
Make me a grave
Where the fern leaves wave
And the shimmering mosses creep;
Sweet rest be mine
'Neath the jasmine vine,
In the heart of the wildwood deep.

Oh, make me a grave where the wild birds sing
And place no stone at my head;
Its golden arms let the jasmine wring
And toll its bell for the dead.
I could not rest by a sculptured wall,
So dig me a grave where I die,
Where the moonbeams fall through the pine trees tall
Like a blessing sent from the sky.
Make me a grave
Where the fern leaves wave
And the shimmering mosses creep;
Sweet rest be mine
'Neath the jasmine vine,
In the heart of the wildwood deep.

A FAIR ATTORNEY

From 'Cap and Bells.'

Alas! the world has gone awry
  Since Cousin Lillian entered college,
For she has grown so learned I
  Oft tremble at her wondrous knowledge.
Whene'er I dare to woo her now
  She frowns that I should so annoy her,
And then proclaims, with lofty brow,
  Her mission is to be a lawyer.

Life glides no more on golden wings,
  A sunny waif from Eldorado;
I've learned how true the poet sings,
  That coming sorrow casts its shadow.
When tutti-frutti lost its spell,
  I felt some hidden grief impended;
When she declined a caramel,
  I knew my rosy dream had ended.

She paints no more on china plaques,
  With tints that would have crazed Murillo,
Strange birds that never plumed their backs
  When Father Noah braved the billow.
Her fancy limns, with brighter brush,
  The splendid triumphs that await her,
When, in the court, a breathless hush
  Gives homage to the keen debater.

'Tis sad to meet such crushing *noes*
  From eyes as blue as Scottish heather;
'Tis sad a maid with cheeks of rose
  Should have her heart bound up in leather.
'Tis sad to keep one's passion pent,
  Though Pallas' arms the Fair environ,
But worse to have her quoting Kent
  When one is fondly breathing Byron.

When Lillian's licensed at the law
  Her fame, be sure, will live forever;
No barrister will pick a flaw
  In logic so extremely clever.
The sheriff will forget his nap
  To feast upon the lovely vision,
And e'en the Judge will set his cap
  At her, and dream of love Elysian.

MY LITTLE GIRL

From 'Cap and Bells.'

My little girl is nested
  Within her tiny bed,
With amber ringlets crested
  Around her dainty head;
She lies so calm and stilly,
  She breathes so soft and low,
She calls to mind a lily
  Half hidden in the snow.

A weary little mortal
  Has gone to slumber-land;
The Pixies at the portal
  Have caught her by the hand.
She dreams her broken dolly
  Will soon be mended there,
That looks so melancholy
  Upon the rocking-chair.

I kiss your wayward tresses,
  My drowsy little queen,
I know you have caresses
  From floating forms unseen,
O, Angels, let me keep her
  To kiss away my cares,
This darling little sleeper,
  Who has my love and prayers!

I WONDER WHAT MAUD WILL SAY!

From 'Cap and Bells.'

Dear Harry, I will not dissemble,
  A candid confession is best;
My fate—but alas, how I tremble!—
  My fate I must put to the test:
This morning I gathered in sadness
  A strand from my locks slightly gray;
To delay any longer were madness—
  I wonder what Maud will say!

The deed it were well to do quickly—
  Macbeth makes a kindred remark:
I wonder if Mac felt as sickly
  When he carved the old king in the dark!
The fellows who marry all do it,
  But what is the usual way?
Heigho! don't I wish I were through it!
  I wonder what Maud will say!

Pray advise. Would you fix up a letter
  With rhymes about roses and trees?
To tell it perchance would be better:
  Alas, must I get on my knees?
No; kneeling is now out of fashion
  Except in a novel or play.
Ah, love is a Protean passion!
  I wonder what Maud will say!

Would you give her a pug or a pony,
  A picture or only a book;
A novel—say Bulwer's "Zanoni,"
  Or a poem—"Lucile," "Lalla Rookh";
Bonbons from Maillard's, or a necklace
  Of pearls, or a mammoth bouquet?
By jove! I am perfectly reckless—
  I wonder what Maud will say!

Shall I speak of the palace at Como
  Which captured the heart of Pauline?
There's a likeness of Claude in a chromo;
  Would you buy it and practice the scene?
But no! I'm no Booth, nor an Irving;
  My fancy has led me astray.
To a lover so true and deserving
  I wonder what Maud will say!

Could I warble like Signor Galassi,
  In passionate song I would soar—
I recall she applauded him as he
  Serenaded the fair Leonore;
My strain should resound love-compelling,
  Far sweeter than Orpheus' lay;
Already my bosom is swelling—
  I wonder what Maud will say!

Shall I tell her my love very gravely,
  Or propose in a moment of mirth,
Or lead to the subject suavely,
  And mention how much I am worth?
Old fellow, I know I shall blunder;
  When she blossoms as bright as the day.
My wits will be dazzled. Oh, thunder!
  I wonder what Maud will say!

A KNOT OF BLUE

(For the Boys of Yale.)
From 'Cap and Bells.'

She hath no gems of lustre bright
  To sparkle in her hair;
No need hath she of borrowed light
  To make her beauty fair.
Upon her shining locks afloat
  Are daisies wet with dew,
And peeping from her lissome throat
    A little knot of blue.

A dainty knot of blue,
A ribbon blithe of hue,
It fills my dreams with sunny gleams—
That little knot of blue.

I met her down the shadowed lane,
Beneath the apple tree,
The balmy blossoms fell like rain
Upon my Love and me;
And what I said, or what I did
That morn, I never knew,
But to my breast there came and hid
A little knot of blue.

A little knot of blue,
A love-knot strong and true,
'Twill hold my heart till life shall part—
That little knot of blue.

THE OLD SONGS

I want to hear the old songs,
The songs I used to hear,
When every day brought happiness,
And Fancy flouted fear;
When sunset's glory ever new,
Foretold a morn more bright—
I want to hear the old songs,
Oh, sing me one to-night.

I want to hear the old songs,
No trilling, no roulade,
Where music dons her lace and gems
And trips in masquerade.
But give to me the simple strain
That seeks the heart outright,
And nests within its deepest part—
Ah, sing me one to-night.

I want to hear the old songs,
  Their names I need not tell;
The quaint old names mean naught to you,
  But I can feel their spell.
Each one, a key, can ope to me
  The garden of delight
That blossomed in my vanished youth:
  Oh, sing me one to-night.

I want to hear the old songs—
  I never hear them now—
The tunes that cheer the tired heart
  And smooth the care-worn brow.
Heard in the twilight's dreamy hour,
  Best suited to their flight,
Each cadence like a blessing falls—
  Ah, sing me one to-night.

I want to hear the old songs,
  The gentle lullabies
That reft me of my weariness,
  And closed my childish eyes;
The fabled music of the spheres
  Besides those strains would blight.
The dear old songs my mother sang—
  Oh, sing me one to-night.

FAR FROM THE FRONT

Copyright, A. C. McClurg and Company, 1902, and used here by permission of the publishers.

. . . THE fire sent lights and shadows dancing about the room, now leaping across the rafters, now lingering on the bed where the children lay peacefully sleeping. Anne stopped knitting and leaned her head upon her thin, worn hand. She was hungry, but her heart was hungriest of all. What was beyond the storm and darkness, far away? Where was her husband to-night? If she could only know he was alive and well she could battle with want a while longer. Perhaps with

the coming grass the cow would still give milk enough for the children. She herself would continue to exist some way. She could boil herbs, or catch fish in the creek. She thought if she could only get a letter from Ben she could live through anything.

The cat stopped purring, and Anne, with her tired head upon her hand, began to nod from very weariness. In a semi-conscious state she crooned softly a lullaby that she sung her children to sleep with. Then she fell asleep. Hungry people are prone to dream, and Anne dreamed of far-off Virginia. She was with her husband, and yet she was most unhappy, for she had left her children behind, and she could hear them, far away, crying with hunger and calling for her.

Suddenly she woke and sprang to her feet. What was that? A step on the cabin porch. Whose could it be at this hour? Whoever it was did not knock. Instead, the door was suddenly opened. She shrank back.

"Ben! Ben!" she sobbed, and a tattered, travel-stained, dripping figure in Confederate gray clasped her tightly in his arms.

The next moment she drew her husband to the fire, and as she heaped on the wood her trembling and tearful laughter was pitiful to witness. She could not control herself.

"Oh, Anne," cried Latham, "how thin and starved you look!" Then he walked to the bed where the children lay.

Leaving the fire she stood beside him.

"Don't wake them," he said: and bending down he kissed them.

"I hadn't heard from you in three months, Ben, and I feared you were dead," said Anne; "and now you are here—oh, Ben, I am so happy!"

"I was sick in the hospital," said the man, with his arm around her waist; "and when I got back to camp, John Holmes had a letter from his wife in which she said you and the children were nigh starvation, and when I heard that word I started for home."

Latham gazed at his wife tenderly.

"And you—oh, Anne!—you are starving!" he exclaimed, for Anne's thin face turned gray, and reeling, she would have fallen had he not caught her in his arms.

"Thank God, there's some bacon left in my knapsack," said Latham, placing his wife in a chair.

In a few minutes the frying-pan was sputtering on the fire, and the frying bacon filled the cabin with its savory scent, and a hurriedly made hoe-cake lay baking before the hot coals.

"Oh, Ben, how long is your furlough?" asked Anne, suddenly, as she sat by her husband's side with the color coming slowly back to her hollow cheeks. Hunger and sorrow forgotten in the joy of Latham's return, the only mote that could mar her happiness was the thought of a future parting.

"Never mind about the furlough," replied Ben, moving uneasily in his chair. "We won't talk about it to-night. After a man's been fighting four years he has a right to kiss his wife and children without thinking about the war."

"How long is it going to last, Ben?"

Latham had risen to his feet and was walking the cabin floor.

"God knows! But it can't last much longer unless men learn to live without food and clothes. It's got mighty nigh to that pass now. We can't hold out a year. It's two to one, and we ain't had any luck since Stonewall Jackson was killed. The men fight as well as ever, but how they have the heart to keep it up is a wonder, with letters coming from home telling of wives and children in woeful want."

Ben Latham stopped and looked at his wife with a reddish light shining in his haggard eyes that almost frightened her.

"The men are fighting for their country, Ben," said the wife, encouragingly.

"For their country!" exclaimed Latham. "What is country to a man when wife and children are starving?"

The scant meal was now ready and the two sat down to eat. There was much to be heard and told. In answer to her husband's questions, the wife gave the story of her struggles and makeshifts. When she had finished, Latham inquired how much food there was in the cabin, and Anne replied that there was enough meal for two days, but when it was gone there was no more corn in the barn to be ground, and the potatoes had all rotted weeks ago.

Then the man said the country was full of game. During the four years' strife between North and South there had been

little hunting, with the result that the wild creatures, unharmed, had multiplied almost beyond belief. So that Latham told Anne he was sure he could trap enough game to keep the family till garden and field could yield their produce; and furthermore, till the truck grew he could also weave fish-traps of white-oak splints, and catch fish in Sipsey River. Oh, he could manage, said the husband.

"But won't you have to go back to the army before the crop's made?" said Anne.

The little supper had been eaten and the woman was now clearing the table.

"Anne," said Latham, with a touch of impatience, "I've just come; don't let us talk of my leaving."

"I'm sorry I spoke of it, Ben; but I'm so glad to have you back again, the thought of your leaving keeps rising before me like a ghost," replied the wife, with tears in her sad, weary eyes.

"Well, let ghosts alone to-night. I've seen enough dead men," said Latham, with a mirthless laugh that sounded dry and forced.

Husband and wife continued to talk, but something as intangible as a shadow marred all efforts at cheerfulness. At last Anne, after a silence, exclaimed: "How glad all the neighbors will be to see you, Ben. They'll have a thousand questions to ask. There hasn't been anybody home from the army in six months."

"I don't want to see any of the neighbors," said Latham, almost shortly.

"Oh, Ben!"

Anne looked at her husband in grieved surprise, and the tattered soldier continued, as if by way of necessary explanation: "I haven't time, Anne, for going about saying howd'ye and shaking hands. That's for people with fat barns and smokehouses. I must forage for you and the children. I shall be away most of the daytime hunting and fishing."

Anne was troubled. Something was wrong, and she could not fathom it. A vague apprehension of some unseen evil haunted her. She longed to question her husband in order to relieve her mind of anxiety, but she knew not how to form her questions, even had she not feared to ask them. Ben was keeping something from her, she was sure.

The latter viewed his wife's sorrowful face, and his conscience smote him. He kissed her several times.

"There, Anne; come, cheer up. Neighbors be hanged! I don't want to think of anybody but you and the children tonight."

Anne forced a smile, and Latham, lit his pipe, but it did not seem to soothe him. In a few minutes he was again walking the floor. Meantime the storm raged outside.

"Anne, do you have visitors often? Is there much passing on the road?"

The wife replied that few people came to the house, and there were few wayfarers.

"I'm glad of that," said Latham, in a tone of relief, resuming his seat by the fire.

This remark, so unlike the Ben Latham of old, was too much for Anne. Bursting into tears, she threw her arms about her husband's neck.

"Oh, Ben! Ben! what is it? I'm so frightened. You are not as you used to be. Something dreadful has happened or is going to happen. Tell me—tell me what it is?"

"Nothing is going to happen, Anne. What nonsense! You've been so much alone you've grown notiony. What'll happen is that you'll be seeing spirits and ghosts if you don't rid your brain of such fancies," said the man, kissing his wife and laughing.

But the laugh was nervous and hollow, and the next moment he started to his feet.

"What's that, Ann? Don't you hear something?"

"Nothing but the storm," said the woman.

"Yes; there's some one at the gate—it's a man's tread—he's coming to the door. Great God!" exclaimed Latham, excitedly.

Startled by her husband's wild look, a dreadful thought came to Anne. Had hardship and hunger turned his brain?

"Ben! Ben!" she cried, wringing her hands, "nobody is coming to harm us."

"Anne, I mustn't be seen," said Latham, greatly agitated.

There was a knock at the door.

"Anne, wife," said the man, grasping the woman's arm, "I'm a deserter. When I heard John Holmes's wife's letter,

I deserted. I ran off in the night. I couldn't stay when I knew you and the children were starving."

The knock came again.

"If I'm seen, I shall be disgraced, and the punishment for desertion is death," whispered Latham, hoarsely.

Anne Latham looked at her husband. If he had deserted, it was not by reason of cowardice, nor to go over to the enemy, but for love of her and his children. Patriotism is born at the hearthstone, and man fights and dies for it. What is country but an assemblage of homes? There was an enemy far from the front attacking Ben Latham's home—an enemy that only he could battle with, and he had come home tattered and war-worn to fight hand-to-hand with hunger for those he loved. These or similar thoughts came to Anne Latham, and with them a flood of affection for her husband.

"Hush, Ben," she said, "and open the door. Most likely it is some traveller who has lost his way, and doesn't know you."

The knock rang again, for the third time, and as Ben Latham opened the cabin door a dripping man in a captain's uniform of Confederate gray entered the room.

Anne Latham recognized the officer. It was Ben's captain, and with a cry of alarm she clutched her husband's arm.

"Great Scott! Latham, is it you! I was lost and rode for the first light. By Jove, it's a stormy night—as bad as some we had in Virginia. In heaven's name, man, why are you staring so? What's the matter?"

Ben Latham stood indeed like a man frozen, and gazed at his Captain dazed and speechless.

"Who would have believed you'd have treated your Captain so? And after fighting under him for four years! Man, I'm ashamed of you. Don't forget you're a soldier."

Still Ben Latham was silent, and the Captain looked at him astonished.

"This is your wife, I presume, and these are your children." The officer went to the bed and surveyed the little sleepers.

As he did so Latham fell into a chair and began to sob as he had not done since he was a child. His wife stood over him filled with bewildered distress. She turned to the Captain.

"Captain," she said, "you have a furlough, and you are

going home to your family. Be merciful to a man who couldn't get a furlough and hadn't seen his wife and children in three years."

"Why, I never knew that! If I had known the fact he should have had leave long ago." The Captain looked at Anne thoroughly mystified. "But I can't understand your husband's strange conduct toward me."

"Captain," continued Anne, "my husband may have done wrong, but he couldn't help it. He heard that his wife and children were about to starve, and he hurried home."

"I've hurried, too. It is not more than ten days since Lee's surrender."

"What, sir?" asked the wife, eagerly. "Lee's surrendered?"

"Yes; and the war's over. Hasn't your husband told you?" asked the Captain.

Ben Latham's sobs ceased, and he sat like a man in a dream.

"Mrs. Latham," said the Captain, kindly, "there wasn't a braver man in my company than your husband, but he's worn out, and I fear he's going into a fever. That only can account for his strange behavior to-night."

But Anne was not listening. She was kneeling by her husband.

"Ben, did you hear the Captain? Lee's surrendered, and the war's over. The Captain thinks you must have left for home the same day he did."

The Captain had gone to the door to view the weather. The storm was over.

"Do you understand, Ben? You were never missed from the company, for Lee surrendered a few hours after you left, and—and nobody knows your secret but me."

JAMES JOHNSTON PETTIGREW

[1828—1863]

N. W. WALKER

JAMES JOHNSTON PETTIGREW was born in Tyrrell County, North Carolina, July 4, 1828, and died near Bunker Hill, Virginia, July 17, 1863. He was the third and youngest son of the Hon. Ebenezer Pettigrew and Ann Shepherd, his wife, both of distinguished North Carolina ancestry.

The Pettigrew family was of remote French origin. Branches of it settled at an early date in both Scotland and Ireland. James Pettigrew, of the Irish branch, an officer in the army of William III at the battle of the Boyne, received a grant of land from the Crown and established a family at Crilly House, in County Tyrone, Ireland. One of his younger sons, also James by name, "seems to have fallen out bitterly with his people . . . probably on account of difference in religion," and emigrated to America about 1740. After living a few years in Pennsylvania, he moved first to Virginia, then to North Carolina, and settled finally in Abbeville, South Carolina, about 1768, where he lived to be an old man and founded the family of which the late Hon. James L. Petigru was a distinguished representative. Charles Pettigrew, third son of James Pettigrew and founder of the North Carolina family, was born in Pennsylvania, in 1743. He came to North Carolina with his father, and there preferred to remain when the latter continued his southward migration in 1768. For several years Charles Pettigrew taught school, first in Bute County, then in Edenton, where he became rector of old St. Paul's Church after being admitted to holy orders in 1775. In 1794 he was elected Bishop of the new Diocese of North Carolina, but died before his consecration. His only son was the Hon. Ebenezer Pettigrew, father of the subject of this sketch. Mr. Pettigrew was elected on the Whig ticket to represent North Carolina in the Twenty-fourth Congress (1835-'37). Excepting this brief period of service to his State, "his life was passed in the cultivated and quiet retirement of his paternal estate of Bonarva, in Tyrrell County," where his illustrious son was born on the date before mentioned.

Johnston Pettigrew was prepared for college at the famous Bing-

ham School in Hillsboro. Entering the University of North Carolina in 1843, he was graduated with highest honors in 1847. He is generally regarded as one of the most brilliant students ever educated at that time-honored institution. In the words of Mr. Trescot, "his scholastic career was so brilliant as to have become a tradition."

Among the distinguished visitors present at the commencement of 1847 were President James K. Polk, himself an alumnus of the University of North Carolina, and Commodore Maury. Both of these gentlemen were deeply impressed by the genius and ability of the brilliant young valedictorian. At the suggestion of Commodore Maury, the President, a few months later, tendered to Mr. Pettigrew, then only nineteen years of age, an assistant professorship in the Naval Observatory at Washington. He accepted the position, but remained at the Observatory only a few months, leaving in the autumn of 1848 to take up the study of law in the office of James M. Campbell, Esq., of Baltimore. Here he remained until the end of the year, when he went to Charleston, South Carolina, to continue his law studies in the office of his relative, James L. Petigru. He was admitted to the Bar of South Carolina in December, 1849. In January, 1850, he went to Berlin to devote himself for two years to the study of civil law and the foreign languages in the German universities. At the end of this period he traveled extensively in Europe before returning to the United States, visiting Germany, Hungary, Switzerland, Italy, France, Spain, England, Scotland, and Ireland. He became proficient in the languages of Germany, France, Italy, and Spain, and acquired a good reading knowledge of Arabic and Hebrew. He was attracted especially by the language and people of Spain, and conceived the purpose of writing a history of that country. At the time of his visit there the Hon. Daniel M. Barringer, of North Carolina, then United States Minister to the Court of Madrid, tendered him the position of secretary to the legation, but he declined the appointment. In November, 1852, he returned to the United States and associated himself with his kinsman, James L. Petigru, for the practice of law in Charleston. Young Pettigrew remained at the Bar only four or five years. He served as representative in the South Carolina Legislature at its special session in 1856, and in the regular session of 1857. In this body he distinguished himself by a very eloquent speech in support of a bill to modify the judiciary system of the State and to establish an independent supreme court of appeals, and especially by his able minority report opposing the reopening of the African slave trade. Unfortunately he was defeated in the election of 1858, and seems to have been sorely disap-

pointed. The defeat, however, gave him an opportunity to carry out a long-fostered plan.

From early life Pettigrew had cherished a desire for military service. Even while a student in Berlin he had made a futile attempt to enter the Prussian army. The Italian war, in progress at the time of his defeat, aroused his sympathy, and he decided to apply for a staff appointment in the army of Sardinia. He accordingly went to Italy in 1859, and his application to Count Cavour was accepted, but on his way to join the army he was met by the news of the peace of Villafranca (July 11, 1859). Thus he was foiled in his purpose. "I concluded," he says, "to spend the summer in some agreeable country within call in case of a renewal of hostilities, when the opportunity would be renewed of which the armistice, or rather the peace, had deprived me." Returning to South Carolina late in 1859, he printed, in 1861, for private circulation among his friends, the only literary work he left, 'Spain and the Spaniards,' an octavo volume of 430 pages.

Long before going abroad, Johnston Pettigrew had seen the lowering clouds of civil war, and he returned with a deepened conviction "that every hour was bringing nearer the unavoidable conflict." Trescot thinks his second trip to Europe was prompted by a "desire to see large and active service abroad, and by the persuasion that all he could learn there would find its early and fitting use here."

At the outbreak of the war he did service first in South Carolina, where he was offered the position of Adjutant-general of the State. He declined the appointment, however, and soon went to Virginia, in the spring of 1861, where he joined Hampton's Legion as a private. In July following he was elected, without his solicitation, Colonel of the Twelfth Regiment North Carolina Volunteers, which later became the Twenty-second Regiment North Carolina Troops. He was soon offered promotion to a brigadier-generalship, but, with characteristic modesty, declined, preferring to remain with his regiment. When the promotion was tendered a second time, at the urgent solicitation of his friends, he accepted it. He was twice wounded; first, quite grievously, at Seven Pines, where he was left unconscious on the field and captured; and again at Gettysburg, where he commanded Heth's Division during the immortal charge on Cemetery Hill. He was mortally wounded in a skirmish at Falling Waters on the morning of July 14, 1863, while protecting the rear of the army on its dreary march back across the Potomac from the bloody field of Gettysburg. Three days later, at the home of a Mr. Boyd near Bunker Hill, Virginia, he breathed his last. His body was taken to Raleigh, North Carolina, the capital of his native

State, and there interred. In November, 1865, his remains were removed to the family cemetery at Bonarva, in Tyrrell County, where they now rest.

Cultured scholar, wise statesman, chivalrous soldier, and refined Christian gentleman, Johnston Pettigrew has been aptly called "the Sir Phillip Sidney of the South." In the words of Mr. Ludwig Lewisohn: "There can be no question that Pettigrew was as noble a type of true manhood as America has produced." There is, indeed, no more picturesque character to be found in the annals of Southern history, nor a figure whose career was more fraught with dramatic incident.

"A man tried in many high offices
And critical enterprises,
And found faithful in all.

* * * * * *

Resolute, moderate, clear of envy, yet not wanting
In that finer ambition which makes men great and pure.
In honor—impregnable;
In simplicity—sublime.
No country ever had a truer son—no cause a nobler champion;
No people a bolder defender—no principle a purer victim."

It is to be regretted that 'Spain and the Spaniards' was not given wider circulation. Only a small edition was printed, and that for private circulation among the author's friends. The book is now almost inaccessible. A more interesting volume of its kind is not to be found, and there is no doubt that it would have been accorded a hearty welcome had it been published to the world. The full title is 'Notes on Spain and the Spaniards, in the summer of 1859, with a glance at Sardinia,' by a Carolinian (J.J.P.)—Charleston, 1861.

That the author had the temperament of the man of letters, and possessed literary ability and skill of a high order, will readily be seen by even a glance at his work. "Large tolerance and intellectual flexibility" are everywhere apparent, and one realizes here and there the touch of the master's hand and feels that nothing could be much finer than some of his descriptive passages. Deep poetic feeling and imagination, delicate humor, refined wit, a "rare gift for the happy word," are some of the author's ear-marks. His style is elevated, vigorous, and vital; always clear, never involved, it is subtle, artistic, refined. At times, it is true, he is perilously near to becoming too oratorical, may apostrophize too freely, and on occasions lack a certain restraint; but these literary sins belonged more to the time

and country in which he wrote than to the individual author. That one so abundantly endowed for high literary achievements should have been cut down even so young, when he had had only time to give "roseate promise" of what was in him, is one of the tragedies of American literature.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Spain and the Spaniards. By James Johnston Pettigrew. Charleston, 1861.

Memorial of General J. Johnston Pettigrew. By William Henry Trescot. Charleston, 1870.

Biographical Sketch of James Johnston Pettigrew. By William S. Pettigrew. *The University of North Carolina Magazine,* Vol. VI, 1886-'87.

Biographical Sketch of James Johnston Pettigrew. By S. B. Weeks. 'Biographical History of North Carolina,' Vol. VI.

Pickett or Pettigrew? By William R. Bond. Scotland Neck, North Carolina, 1901.

Grandfather's Tales of North Carolina History. By R. B. Creecy. Raleigh, 1901.

Sketches by Louis G. Young and others. 'History of North Carolina Regiments,' 5 Vols. Goldsboro, 1901.

Pettigrew and Trescot. By Ludwig Lewisohn. *Sunday News,* Charleston, August 30, 1903.

The Pettigrew Family. By William S. Pettigrew. 'Church History in North Carolina,' De Rossett. Wilmington, 1892.

The Death of Pettigrew. By Louis G. Young. 'Our Living and Our Dead,' Vol. I.

Pettigrew's Brigade at Gettysburg. 'Our Living and Our Dead,' Vol. I. By Louis G. Young.

THE GATEWAY OF THE SUN, MADRID

From 'Spain and the Spaniards.'

The famous Puerta del Sol, or Gate of the Sun, is the great square of Madrid. No longer a gate, it is in the very center of the city. In the last seven years, the mania for improvement has reached even this hallowed precinct, and a semi-circular space of buildings at the north has been demolished, in order to enlarge and to give it some regularity of shape. One of the first buildings destroyed was the little church of *Nuestra Señora del Buen Succso,* with its illuminated clock that stood to the east between the *Calle de Alcalá* and the *Calle de San Jeronymo.* This is one of the few churches I ever entered in Madrid, as, for the most part, they possessed no attractions. Not so with the Buen Suceso, which was the resort of the fashionable world, owing partly to its situation and partly to its privileges. As Madrid hours are very late, many a fair dame used, on her way home in the morning, to repent here the indiscretions of the evening's entertainment, and its privileges of celebrating mass as late as two P.M., drew the slothful to its altars. It was, moreover, an exceedingly convenient place for the loungers on the Plaza, and its clock is poorly replaced by the one over the *Casa de Correos.* Readers of the old comedies will particularly regret its loss. Strangers from a distance, judging by the world-wide renown of the Puerta del Sol, expect to find a park of many acres, laid out in grass-plats and fountains. On the contrary, it is scarcely wider than some of our great avenues, and is paved with glaring stones. But it is the heart of the Spanish monarchy. All the principal streets of the city empty into it. Everybody going from one quarter to another, and all the diligences cross it; every one who has more at home, and nothing to do, (about ninety-nine per cent.) goes to the Puerta del Sol, to enjoy its sunshine; every one who has a picayune's worth to buy or sell, passes by the Puerta del Sol; every one who desires to tell, or hear a falsehood, goes to the Puerta del Sol, so that about guard-mounting, the place is crowded with a motley assemblage of all ages and costumes. Le Sage certainly knew nothing about Madrid, or he never would have taken the

trouble to call up the Devil-upon-two-sticks, *El Diablo Cojuelo,* to retail scandal. Los Diablos Cojuelos, that saunter about this square, without the external cloven hoof, would willingly have saved his real majesty the trouble of appearing. The middle-class of the population are, for the most part, idlers, whether *empleados* or *cesantes;* the lower is composed of the very dregs of the populace from every city in Spain; the former always ready to excite, the latter always ready to carry out a revolution. Imagine them collected together, and solely occupied with each other's defects, and form an idea if you can of the conversation. If I believed one fortieth part of what I heard there, I would have thought there was not one honest man, woman, or child above ten years of age, in the city; that the judges were corrupt, the ministers traitors, the priests atheists, the lawyers rogues, the doctors murderers, and the editors and telegraph agents a fraternity of liars. There is some truth in what they whisper about, but the superstructure of scandal is so enormous as to make one despair of finding the little layer of veracity below. In this place no reputation is sacred, and no slander too surprising not to find some believers. I was told the most abominable things about the president of the ministry, with a circumstantiality of narrative calculated to carry conviction. My informant was a *cesante.* All the rest were handled in the same manner, and neither sex spared. The demolition of the church del Buen Suceso will be severely felt in the next world, for instant confession and absolution would be necessary to save some of these offenders.

The affair of the one hundred and thirty thousand loads of stone was at this time making a great commotion. Without entering into the matter minutely, it is sufficient to state that a member of the ministry of Sartorius was charged with being privy to a corrupt contract with the Government for the delivery of stone. He had been impeached, but the Senate had failed to convict. Since then, a person behind the scenes had come out with an exposé of an exceedingly damaging nature to the offender, who had replied from London. This brought forth a renewed attack. The Puerta del Sol was in its glory, the defenders of the Sartorius ministry carrying the war into Africa, by attacking O'Donnel, whose character could

ill afford to lose anything. Unfortunately, the sun left but a small strip of shade in front of the Casa del Correos, so that the crowd was rather compact. Peace was maintained, however, for no one objected to the abuse of his friends, provided his own liberty of speech was not restricted. The correspondents of the foreign newspapers wrote that the O'Donnel ministry would scarcely survive the shock caused by the failure to convict, or, perhaps, the attempt to shield the peccant minister, and that a revolution was not improbable. Of this I saw no signs whatever, and Spaniards make no secret of such things, so that the rumor is apt to reach your ear long before the event, and is half forgotten ere the result is actually accomplished; but the ferment might have assumed larger proportions had not the Morocco difficulty intervened. The Puerta has naturally been a focus of insurrections, as it commands the circulation of the city, and a few barricades thrown up at each street would be inconvenient. For the same reason, a strong guard is placed there to suppress the first outbreak. A regiment of determined men, with artillery, could easily put down any insurrection; but, unfortunately, Spanish insurrections generally commence with the military itself, and, as I once heard an old legitimist say, after the coup d'état of the Garde Nationale: "Ma foi, il faut bien une armée pour la garder."

Notwithstanding all these defects, the Puerta del Sol has great attractions for a native, and also for a traveller. A certain phase of life is seen to perfection, and, in a social point of view, it is one of the liveliest spots in the world. The ever-moving crowd and gay shops of the Boulevards, are wanting; nor is there any resemblance to the crush of Fleet street and the Strand; but, by way of compensation, it offers the costumes of every province in Spain. The gay majo of Andalusia, the soberer colors of Aragon, the working dress of the Gallican brush against the last foppery from Paris. Thousands cross it in a thousand directions, and for a thousand purposes. Now the crowd makes way for a battalion of infantry with flying colors, not large, but fine-looking fellows, well formed, and of active march; or an escort of cavalry, with trumpets sounding the marcha real, announces the approach of royalty. The tinkling of little bells, followed by a priest

with the eucharist, on his way to cheer some departing soul, hushes the confusion into respectful silence, and causes the more devout to fall upon their knees before the mystical elements. These are temporary interruptions; the great business of slandering is immediately renewed.

THE CATHEDRAL—LA IGLESIA MAYOR—SEVILLE

From 'Spain and the Spaniards.'

The principal monument at Seville is the Cathedral—la Iglesia Mayor—the largest and grandest in all Spain, and for impressive effect unequalled in the world, even by the Basilica of St. Peter's. The characteristic excellencies of the principal Spanish Cathedrals are enumerated in the following quatrain:

Sevilla en grandeza,
Toledo en riqueza;
Compostella en fortaleza,
Leon en sutileza.

Tradition has pointed out the spot as the site of the temples of the various religions which have successively ruled at Seville, commencing with the goddess of the Phœnicians. The Moorish Mosque, erected by Yusouf, the almohade, and completed by Yacoub al Mansour, his son, was, after the re-conquest, purified and consecrated to the worship of the true God, or, as the Mohammedan authors complain, to the adoration of idols; but in the beginning of the Fifteenth Century, it had been so much injured by earthquakes, that the Chapter determined to pull it down, and to erect in its place a temple worthy of the city and of their religion. In the year 1401, the Beneficiaries of the Cathedral being assembled, it was resolved "that, inasmuch as the Church is daily threatened with ruin, from the shocks it has received, and is about to fall in various places, another be built, such as shall find no equal, and shall correspond to the greatness and authority of Seville; and that if the funds of the Church be not sufficient, everyone shall contribute from his salary what may be necessary." . . . And one of the Chapter added: "Let us build a church so great, that those who see it finished will believe us mad."

Most noble resolve, most noble Chapter, and most nobly did they accomplish their proposed object! Without the aid of princes or taxes, by their own savings and the assistance of alms from the faithful, they erected the marvel of Andalusia. The exterior, like that of most Gothic cathedrals, is not impressive when seen from near by; though occupying a large square, it is not disfigured, as is usually the case, by mean houses. Indeed, it is rather fortunate than otherwise in its environs. To the north, on the opposite side of the street, the houses are preserved, as though the Moors had departed but yesterday; and the little colonnade is said to be devoted to the same trades that were carried on in the same place six hundred years ago. On the east is the Archbishop's palace. The Alcazar and the Lonja lie to the south, while the Cathedral itself is surrounded by a terrace, slightly elevated above the level of the street. The western front, as usual, is not finished. A great many reasons are given for this peculiarity about Spanish cathedrals. Some say it is to avoid a payment which was due to Rome upon the completion of every religious edifice; others say to escape the effects of the "evil eye," others, a prosaic want of funds. Be the reason what it may, Spanish churches are seldom entirely complete. The entrance by the north is through La Puerta del Perdon, which leads into the Patio de los Naranjos (the court of the orange trees), surrounded on three sides by the lofty walls of the Parish Church and the Library. The Patio, its fountains, the horseshoe gate of the Perdon, are all Moorish and fine specimens. In the early morning or afternoon this is a delightful spot to while away the hour, listening to the bubbling of the fountains and the conversation of the water carriers who come here to fill their casks, while the breeze rustles amid the dark green leaves and yellow fruit of the orange trees, and the fairy Giralda towers majestically overhead in silent beauty. Most of the Cathedrals, built upon the sites of Moorish mosques, retain the entrance court and fountain for ablution, which was necessary to the Mohammedan worship. To the east of the Patio, near the library entrance, is the stone pulpit, which the inscription pronounces to have served St. Vincent and other persons of distinction in the Church. The Library itself, as most libraries, is uninteresting enough to the sight, but precious

to the mind, as it consists principally of the books presented by Fernan Columbus, with manuscripts of the great navigator himself, and hence styled *La Colombina*. It contains, moreover, a great many historical souvenirs of the re-conquest and subsequent periods. The Sagrario or Parish Church, on the opposite site of the Patio, would be considered handsome if it were not in such immediate proximity to the Cathedral. Some of its wood carvings are beautiful, particularly the altar-piece and the Sta. Veronica above; and a figure of St. John is also well worthy of remark.

The old Sagrario near the gate of the Patio, is converted into a sort of vestiary. The Cathedral, on my first visit, being closed, as the siesta was not quite over, I took a seat here to await the opening of the doors. The sun's rays poured fiercely down, but within all was delightfully fresh and cool. The altar-boys were engaged in the elevating occupation of standing on their heads for a wager, while in the next apartment, separated by a screen, some functionary snored away with the reverberating snort of a Mississippi high-pressure. The example was catching. I took one of the sweetest naps that ever fell to my lot. Soon the grating of the doors awakened me, and I entered the glorious edifice. Without, all had been full of glare, almost blinding; here, a faint, mellow twilight floated among the lofty columns, scarcely disturbing the solemn gloom which hushed one into an involuntary silence. The sound of footsteps was lost in its immensity, though its size could only be appreciated by comparison with some of the human species. Since leaving Seville, I have had an opportunity of revisiting most of the mediæval cathedrals, and I can truly say that none of them compare with this in inspiring the feeling of grandeur in the object and humility in the subject, which is the peculiar merit of the Gothic architecture. I have twice been to the Minster of Strasbourg for the express purpose of comparing them, but it has appeared cold and impressionless—sterile, so to speak, whereas the soul must be hard indeed that can enter here and not feel inspired with an overwhelming sense of awe and reverence. Its founders were truly impressed with the divine conception of religion. Nowhere else is the Christian thought so appropriately expressed in stone; and if I were to select the two edifices of

Christendom that had most successfully attained the end for which they were erected, it would be the Cathedrals of Milan and Seville, the exterior of the former and the interior of the latter being respectively all that could reasonably be demanded of architecture.

The ground plan is that of the Mosque, which preceded it, being a parallelogram of some four hundred and fifty feet in length and more than three hundred and fifty in width, with large chapels on the northern and southern sides. Between these are the five aisles, extending east and west, formed by noble colonnades and surmounted by graceful arches, sustaining the roof, some eigthy or a hundred feet above. There are in fact seven aisles, but two of them are occupied by lateral chapels. The center aisle and the transept, forming the cross, are more elevated, attaining the enormous height of a hundred and forty-five feet, while the dome is still more lofty. Rich as the Cathedral is in treasures of every description, in paintings, sculpture, jewels, it contains nothing gaudy or striking, with a single exception—no huge frescoes to divert the attention from the great end of the architect. The eighty-seven windows, painted in the most beautiful style of mediæval German art, to represent Scripture scenes, some of them twenty or thirty feet in length, are scarcely noticed. Everything has been made subservient to the purpose of elevating the creature to the contemplation of the great Creator, in whose hands are all the corners of the earth. Truly it does merit the distinction of "La Grande." How much nobler an inspiration than that of the Greeks, who sought merely to embody the highest conception of worldly beauty, and whose ideas of religion scarcely rose above the ground on which they stood. And the conduct of the worshippers here seems prompted by a sympathy in accordance with the spirit of the place. Every purely worldly enjoyment is banished. From this point of view the chairs of the French and the pews of the English churches are equally destructive to any elevation of feeling, inasmuch as they necessarily recall one from meditation on things above to the mere comforts of the body. Spanish ladies, if they desire to sit, have a mat carried by a servant and placed upon the pavement in the veritable Eastern style, while the men, noble and peasant alike, kneel upon the marble mosaic.

The internal arrangement of the Cathedral resembles that of most others in Spain. The center aisle from the transept to within fifty or a hundred feet of the great western entrance, is occupied by the *coro* (the choir), closed toward the west by the trascoro, but open toward the high altar, which occupies a similar position on the opposite side of the *entre los dos coros*. Each is railed off by a handsome grating—*reja*—of ornamental steel, and a little gangway connects the two. The *rejas* in the Spanish Cathedrals are always worthy of the attention of travellers, and give some idea of what the gold and silver and steel work in these churches was before the War of Independence. The whole high altar is a magnificent piece of skill and ornamentation, and the *retablo*, extending nearly up to the roof, is famous even in Spain. It is of *alerce* wood, and divided into forty-four compartments, which represent scenes from the Scripture history. Far up above, seemingly in the clouds, is a crucifix, projected apparently upon a background of dark velvet. At certain hours of the day, depending upon the season, the rays of the sun, through the stained windows of the cimborio or dome over the transept cross, fall upon this crucifix, which is thus brilliantly illuminated, while the rest of the edifice remains in profound gloom. The effect is beyond measure impressive. The *coro* is finely ornamented within, and above it are the grand organs, whose deep tones, swelling through the Cathedral on a feast day, and filling its recesses with the immensity of their volume, are indeed magnificent. One of them, built by Jorge Bosch, the largest in the world, contains a hundred and nineteen stops, and five thousand three hundred and twenty-six pipes; the other, by Verdalonga, is almost as large. Sacred music is still preserved in its purity and grandeur at Seville, resembling, in this respect, the cities of Germany. The artist, who performed on great occasions in 1852, was a master, and did full justice to the noble instrument, though this summer I heard no music that was remarkable. Around the *coro* and high altar, on the outside, are numerous small altars and chapels, containing many works of art, famous, some of them, for their excellence, others for their antiquity. Among them is a celebrated image, in wood, of the Virgin, by Montañes, probably the finest specimen of wood carving in Spain. It is per-

fectly exquisite, the embodification of the highest and purest style of Andalusian beauty, a Murillo solidified. A quantity of ornaments of a rich description, glittering jewels and costly silks, have been placed upon it, greatly impairing the effect; but a certain amount of silver about these images serves to heighten the relief, only it requires great judgment to know when to stop. For the artistic reputation of Spain, it is to be regretted that its sculpture consists almost entirely of either wood or earth in its various preparations. Its churches are crowded with images which, if in marble, would receive the unqualified approbation of the artistic world. As it is they are generally hurried over with a passing notice, partly because when seen by strangers they have been removed from the situations for which they were originally intended by the artist, and partly because of the cheapness of the material out of which they are made, as though the excellence of the conception were not the same, whether executed in marble or terra-cotta.

* * * * * *

As the excellence of the Cathedral does not consist so much in the contemplation of particular parts as in the general effect of the whole, it should be visited at all hours of the day in order to appreciate it fully. A stranger, with a guide and a guide book, will detect, perhaps acknowledge, its manifold beauties; but really to feel it, he should saunter in alone, with a mind free from preoccupation and ready to imbibe its mysterious influences. I was never more profoundly impressed than one evening, about sunset, in the month of September. The vesper chaunt had just ended, and the last notes of the organ, faintly echoing their mellow cadence, were dying away in the vaulted roof. Priests and choristers hurried out, with doubtless very prosaic feelings—it was their daily occupation—and I was left almost alone, with here and there a pious devotee lingering before some favorite altar. The expiring rays of the sun streamed in through the western portal, but were lost in the vast recesses of the edifice; the whole eastern portion lay shrouded in gloom. A faint gleam of light, struggling through the painted windows of the dome, fell upon the lofty crucifix, and seemed to point to the life of purity beyond. At such a time, one cannot but feel that there is an ethereal

spirit within, a spark of the Divine essence, which would fain cast off its prison house of mortality and flee to the Eternal existence that gave it birth. This edifice is one of the few creations of man that realizes expectation. Morning, noon or night, none can enter without acknowledging that he stands on holy ground. The accessories, the trembling swell of the organs, the sweet odor of incense, the beautiful works of art, which elsewhere distract the attention, here combine in universality of grandeur to establish that harmony of the soul so conducive to devotion; and if the excellence of architecture consist in the accomplishment of the rational purpose assigned, to this must the palm be awarded. Political economists may reason that such an expenditure in unproductive stone withdraws from the general circulation a sensible capital; the severe reformer may preach against the adoration of saints and images; the abstract philosopher may denounce the appeal to the senses, but their remonstrance will fall pointless upon the heart. There are occasions when humanity rises above the earthly rules of logic, and acknowledges obedience only to those hidden laws which govern the divine portion of our nature, and whose sequence is beyond the reach of human intellect.

SPANISH LADIES

From 'Spain and the Spaniards.'

Upon the delivery of your letter of introduction, a Spanish gentleman immediately presents you with his house, *Mi casa está á su disposicion* or *esta casa es suya,* without thereby intending to make you a conveyance, and give you the right to institute an action of ejectment, which would involve you in all the troubles of housekeeping, but merely to inform you that you are welcome in the evening, if you can find anyone in. Do not think, however, that he or the household are going to put themselves out in the slightest degree. Some families are at home on stated evenings, and it generally happens that you find them in; but if you do not, why, you can pass on to another acquaintance, and there is no offense meant and none taken. Nothing can surpass the fairy aspect of a family eve-

ning party, viewed from the grating. The suspended lamps give just enough light to see the sparkling drops of the fountain, and to recognize the ladies, half hid among the flowers. With their beauty so suited to a scene of the kind, they scarcely seem to be of this earth. You enter, are welcomed, pointed to a seat. If the ladies of the house be agreeable you are seldom the only guest. The time flies by; chocolate, sweetmeats, perhaps ices, perhaps pure water, help it along. The watchman cries the hour in your hearing. Heavens! can it be so late? You place yourself at the feet of your fair entertainers (*me pongo á los piés de vm. señorita*). They kiss your hand (*beso la mano á vm. cabellero*). You skip along the street as though supported on the airy pinions of the wind. You dream of black eyes and glossy hair, of guitars and delicate fingers, of fairies seated in opening rosebuds, waving their fans to you and enveloping your eyes with tiny lace veils.

"But," my lady readers will exclaim, "what is all this rhapsody about? You go into a house with a court; see some ladies with fans and guitars; you drink a little water, eat a cake, and come out raving about fairies and angels. We see nothing wonderful in all that. There must have been some very intellectual conversation; pray, what were you talking about?" Alas! you cannot tell. You do not remember three words that were uttered. It was very witty, very graceful, very charming; even the pauses were delicious, but exactly what it was you cannot recollect. It did not impress you as displaying profound erudition. Indeed, the education of Spanish ladies is generally somewhat neglected. They learn from books little, except the rudiments, and of the outside world beyond the Pyrenees have exceedingly confused ideas. A young Aragonesa, who had just left school with a prize, and was full of intelligence and patriotism, once asked me if Morocco and America were not near each other. There are numerous exceptions, but reading, writing, a little arithmetic, geography, poetry, Spanish history, and the lives of the saints, with a tolerable knowledge of French and music, is all one need usually expect. Of the whole list of "ologies" they are entirely innocent. Your lady questioners turn away with indignation, and ask how a woman can be agreeable who is ignorant of conchology, does not know sienite from hornblende, and

could not solve a quadratic equation to save herself from the eternal perdition. For answer, I refer them to the Emperor of the French, who laid the loftiest diadem in Christendom at the feet of one of Andalusia's daughters, and has seen no reason to repent the sacrifice. The truth is, that the whole charm of either man or woman does not consist in the amount of the outside world they have managed to cram into the inside of their brains—a system that should be styled inducation rather than education. You would be very much shocked, in walking through a flowery grove at sunset, if your companion were to break away after some new species of the Hygomedon Septentrionalis, or the jaw-tooth of a decaying red-sandstone monster. I am sure that no Andaluza would, but in these matters everyone must follow his own taste. Were some beneficent divinity to present the author with a pencil dipped in the hues of the rainbow, he might undertake to explain the mystery of their powers of fascination; without such supernatural aid he would probably meet, at least deserve, the fate of Prometheus. The women of every country have some peculiar attraction. To these alone is it reserved to unite all. Their inexpressible beauty has, doubtless, much to do with it, and it certainly is beyond description. The most crazy dream of poetry in its wildest conceptions never surpassed this reality. The mere contour of the face is a small part, for her beauty, like that of her country, is subjective, and consists rather in the expression, in the mingled softness and fire, the enthusiasm that sparkles forth. Those unfathomable eyes are but the windows of the soul, and that inimitable grace of person which enchants the beholder, is only a part of the harmony of the universe that seeks in her a connecting link between our mortal cloaks and the mystic music pervading creation. While in repose, the expression of her face, in tender sympathy with the soul, is pensive, even melancholy, but, upon the approach of a friend, she returns to earth like the awakening of a morning in spring. Every feature beams with attraction, and precious pearls drop from her rosy lips. Who that has a heart to lose, could refuse to lay it at her feet? Ah! Love was surely born in Spain. Artless and unsuspecting in her thoughts, she receives every expression of admiration without vanity, and seems to value

it rather because of the source whence it proceeds, than as a tribute to her own charms. The simplicity of her manner is only to be equalled by the kindness of her heart. All this, united with an ardent temperament, renders her capable of the noblest deeds of self-devotion, of which the maid of Zaragoza is no isolated example. The great peculiarity of the Spanish women is their sincerity and open-heartedness. They will speak to you with praise of the ladies of other countries, admire their beauty and good qualities, but add *no tienen franqueza como nosotras* (they are not frank as we are). Spain is no land of hypocrites. It is the absence of frankness which makes women *ruséc* and fickle, defects thoroughly detested by both sexes. The character of a flirt, or whatever may be the proper appellation—I mean a beauty who delights in general admiration, and makes use of her charms to bewilder the susceptible, without experiencing any emotion beyond that of gratified vanity, who, in a word, thinks only of herself and her triumphs—is as little understood as admired. . . . . Sincerity and constancy in the women correspond to obstinacy or tenacity in the men, for which they have been famous since the days of Hannibal. Spanish women are passionate, and if they do fall in love it is a serious matter. When they give their hearts, it is forever. Self is forgotten, and their whole existence wrapped up in devotion to the object of their choice. Three-fourths of the misery, and no inconsiderable portion of the crimes, of such frequent occurrence in the Peninsula, are attributable to this cause. The lower class still use the dagger to revenge themselves upon a rival or a traitor, and if the higher ranks are less demonstrative, it is not because they feel less keenly. But can a woman inspire devotion who is incapable herself of jealousy?

You are seldom left in doubt as to the position you occupy in her estimation. One consequence is, that the system of marriage sales which reigns in England and France has only moderate sway in Spain. In France, young ladies have no liberty whatever. It would be an insult to venture beyond the merest formal courtesies. They are taken from the convent, and remain in a most irksome state of restraint until marriage—to which event they look forward as the door of freedom—and accept any suitable *parti* who has been selected

by their parents. In England, they have full liberty, but the same end is attained in a different way. Mama and the daughter go out to the chase together, and any poor fellow who has a title or a fortune is hunted down remorselessly. The practical results of this system seem to be better than that of the French, but in itself it is infinitely more humiliating and disgusting. In Spain, a medium between the two prevails. They have far more liberty than in France, far less than in England. Young people are allowed to say agreeable things to each other, and insinuating compliments frequently pass. But whatever may be the restraint imposed, few Spanish ladies would sell themselves or allow themselves to be sold by their parents. Of course, in an old country where wealth is not easily accumulated, some regard must be had to that commodity. Probably every woman would like to make what is considered a good match, and sometimes there as well as elsewhere

> The Knave of Diamonds tries his wily arts,
> And wins (Oh! shameful chance!) the Queen of Hearts.

But it is, nevertheless, a truth that six marriages out of ten are made against the better judgment of the parents, though I cannot say that in the long run the parties seem any the happier therefor. Love often overrides prudential considerations. "At first sight they have changed eyes;" and, if the history of Dona Clara de Viedma and Don Luis is no longer re-enacted in all particulars, the spirit which dictated it still survives.

* * * * * *

An idea has obtained circulation abroad to the effect that Spanish ladies, particularly the Andaluzas, spend their days in idleness. Nothing, in my opinion, could be farther from the truth. Women here certainly do not perform the onerous and unsuitable tasks which are imposed upon them in less gallant countries, nor do I think they should. Nature never intended the weaker sex to do the work of the world. But every young lady of the better class possesses a knowledge, more or less thorough, of the art of housekeeping; though it is true that the simplicity and temperate habits of the Spaniards render this a comparatively light duty. The dwellings in Seville are models of neatness, and not surpassed in Holland, and trav-

ellers, who have penetrated into their interior life, will sustain me in saying that the scene presented by the second Patio, so far from being one of idleness, appears rather to be an imitation of the mansion of Penelope as drawn by Homer. An Andaluza would be surprised to learn that there are countries in the world where it is considered little less than disgraceful for ladies of fashion to manage household affairs.

THE ALHAMBRA

From 'Spain and the Spaniards.'

I HAVE not attempted to describe the Alhambra. That were presumption. Even the genial writings of our own celebrated countryman, whose name is a household word in the palace of Al Ahmar, seem tame and artificial beside the moonlit glories of the reality. Of most of the great triumphs of architecture it is easy to convey a reasonably distinct idea by the united labors of pen and pencil. But the genius of Moorish art, like the perfume of a rose, cannot be imprisoned in fetters. Its thousand columns, its endless figures, its inscriptions torturing the ingenuity, all combine to produce the indistinctness which is its characteristic. As a summer palace it seems to be perfect. Its spacious marble courts, its delicate columns, its bubbling fountains and curtained doors suggest, irresistibly, the idea of a refreshing coolness and blissful repose. The Alhambra, however, to be appreciated must be seen by moonlight. Then, seated alone in the hall of the Abencerrages, and looking forth upon the Fountain of the Lions, does it become repeopled with the spirits of by-gone days. Boabdil and his queens, Zegris, Abencerrages, Gomeles, Gazules, Abenamars, crowd its audience halls, or saunter along its silvery corridors, while the warning spirit points ominously to the few sands yet remaining ere the Christian bugles shall sound at its gates. The Alhambra is seldom mentioned by Arabic historians in any unusual strains of commendation. Ibn Batutah does not even allude to it. We can thus form some conception of the grandeur and beauty of the palaces of Azzahra and Azzahira upon the banks of the Guadalquivir, which fire the imagination of their writers. Indeed the city of Grenada was built in the

decadence of the Moorish Empire, when its territory was restricted to the upper valley of the Genil and the sea coast of Malaga and Almeria, and its treasury exhausted by war and tribute, so that it boasts few edifices of note except the Alhambra itself. The founder of the kingdom, Al Ahmar, was the same I have mentioned as aiding St. Ferdinand in the conquest of Seville, and this was the last of the great Mohammedan cities of Spain. And yet the ruins of the Alhambra, the least celebrated of the Moorish palaces, is the gem and wonder of our age.

SARAH MORGAN BRYAN PIATT

[1836—1912]

EMERSON VENABLE

SARAH M. B. PIATT, wife of John James Piatt, was born August 11, 1836, at Lexington, Kentucky, of which State her father's as well as her mother's family were among the early settlers. Her grandfather, Morgan Bryan, and his brothers founded and were proprietors of "Bryan's Station," famous in the old Indian wars, nearly one hundred and thirty-five years ago; having come from North Carolina with or soon after Daniel Boone, whose wife, Rebecca Bryan, was their cousin. Mrs. Piatt's mother, whose maiden name was Mary Spiers, died when the daughter was less than eight years old. Some years later her father, Talbot Bryan, who had lived in the South (in Louisiana, Alabama, and Florida), remarried, and his children remained with their maternal grandmother until the latter's death, at Lexington, when they were sent for a time to board and have their early schooling in Woodford County, near Versailles. Still later, after living for some time with her stepmother, who was wealthy and owned many slaves (all Mrs. Piatt's people were or had been slaveholders) the girl was placed with a paternal aunt, Mrs. Annie Boone—referred to as "Aunt Annie" in one of her poems—at New Castle, Henry County, where she was graduated at the Henry Female College, a fashionable school then under the directorship of a cousin of Charles Sumner. Mrs. Piatt was early a great reader, having an excellent memory—reading all the good books in prose or verse she could find. It will be seen how frequently she used phrases from the Bible, with which she was familiar. She began to write verses at an early age, but it was only by accident that any of these were first published—the first of all having been shown by a cousin to an editor in Texas, who printed it in his paper—the Galveston *News*. Not long afterward, several pieces of extraordinary merit were taken by a friend and shown to George D. Prentice, the distinguished editor of the Louisville *Journal*, a paper which did much to encourage young writers of the period, in the South and Southwest. Mr. Prentice confidently predicted her eventual recognition as first in rank of women poets in America—a position which has since been claimed for her by several critics of high authority in the United States and in Great Britain.

It was at New Castle, several years after her graduation from the Henry Female College, and after she had become widely known in Kentucky and the Southern States, and indeed throughout the country, as a poet, that she and Mr. Piatt first met, and they were married there June 18, 1861. Before making their permanent home in Ohio, Mr. and Mrs. Piatt lived five or six years at Washington, D.C., where Mr. Piatt held a position under his friend, Secretary Chase, in the Treasury Department. Since 1882, they lived nearly thirteen years in Ireland, where Mr. Piatt served as United States Consul at Cork, and also for a few months at Dublin. While abroad Mr. and Mrs. Piatt had among their acquaintances and friends many of the leading poets and authors of England, Ireland, and Scotland, including Jean Ingelow, Aubrey de Vere, Edward Dowden, Lady Wilde, Philip Bourke Marston, Edmund Gosse, Austin Dobson, Alice Meynell, Katherine Tynan, John Stuart Blackie and others, and all Mrs. Piatt's later volumes of verse were first published in London, where, as well as at Dublin and Edinburgh, they won their highest and warmest more recent appreciation.

"It is since her marriage in June, 1861," says Mrs. Piatt's biographer, in R. H. Stoddard's 'Poets' Homes,' "that her more individual characteristics of style have manifested themselves, especially the dramatic element, so delicate, subtle and strong, which asserts her intellectual kinship with Mrs. Elizabeth Barrett Browning."

Mrs. Piatt's poems are introspective and personal to the last degree. They depict the essential life of woman, in its various phases, voicing her ambitions, longings, joys, disappointments, doubts, anguish, prayer. The tone of the verse is often sorrowful, sometimes deeply tragic. "In the rush of these hopeless tears," writes Mr. William Dean Howells, "this heart-broken scorn of comfort, this unreconcilable patience of grief, is the drama of the race's afflictions; in the utter desolation of one woman's sorrow, the universal anguish of mortality is expressed. It is not pessimism; it does not assume to be any sort of philosophy or system; it is simply the bitter truth, to a phase of human experience through which all men must pass, and the reader need not to be told that such poems were lived before they were written."

Another admirer of Mrs. Piatt's unique and exquisite art, Mr. William Henry Venable, writes: "Mrs. Piatt is a woman of original and exceptional genius—a poet whose name shines in American literature:

'Like some great jewel full of fire.'

. . . She is inimitable in her own vivid, bold, and suggestive

invention and manner. Whatever she writes has meaning—and the significance is often deep—sometimes strange and elusive—never commonplace. . . . Her rare artistic skill has been admired by many who appreciate the technical difficulties of the poetic craft."

Equally emphatic is the praise accorded her genius by a contemporary English critic, who declares that her best work is "not easy to equal, much less to surpass, on either side of the Atlantic."

Perhaps an incorrect impression is casually conveyed in one or two of the critical extracts quoted. For sadness and melancholy, though marking much of Mrs. Piatt's verse, have not prevented her characteristic cheerfulness and merriment from asserting themselves, particularly in her many pieces relating to children and child-life. Perhaps no more notable recognition of this pleasant atmosphere can be cited than what a critic in the London *Athenæum* wrote of her volume entitled 'The Witch in the Glass,' saying: "It is a pleasure to turn to Mrs. Piatt's healthy and humorous poetry. There is no need this time of day to assert her claim to recognition on our side of the Atlantic—has not her genius been honored by a hundred pens? and have we not ourselves already given our good word to her 'Irish Garland' and to various other happy manifestations of her peculiar vein of pathos and piquancy? Mr. Howells has rightly praised her 'for not writing like a man,' and it is just this feminine insight, this fortunate tact in thought and phrase, that gives her verses their unique and incommunicable charm. . . . There is plenty of room in the world yet for verse of this quality. It is exquisitely fresh and wholesome—the unaffected utterance of one who, to use Wordsworth's delightful phrase, is 'not too bright and good for human nature's daily food'."

And Katherine Tynan, in a long review of Mrs. Piatt's 'Selected Poems,' three years before, had said: "Only we thank the writer for the gift she has given us and the world—a gift as perfect and spontaneous as the song of a blackbird, this, next to the skylark's, is the sweetest bird-song heard in Ireland, as passionate and innocent as the heart of a rose."

Emerson Venable

BIBLIOGRAPHY

A Woman's Poems. 1871.
A Voyage to the Fortunate Isles, and Other Poems. 1874.
That New World, and Other Poems. 1876.
Poems in Company with Children. 1877.
Dramatic Persons and Moods. 1880.
The Children Out of Doors, and Other Poems (with Mr. Piatt). 1885.
An Irish Garland. 1885.
Selected Poems. 1885.
In Primrose Time. 1886.
Child's-World Ballads. 1887.
The Witch in the Glass. 1889.
An Irish Wild-Flower. 1891.
An Enchanted Castle. 1893.
Poems, in two vols. 1894.
Child's-World Ballads, second series. 1896.

SOMETIME

Copyright, Houghton, Mifflin and Company, and used here by permission of the author and the publishers.

Well, either you or I,
  After whatever is to say is said,
Must see the other die,
  Or hear, through distance, of the other dead,
    Sometime.

And you or I must hide
  Poor empty eyes and faces, wan and wet
With Life's great grief, beside
  The other's coffin, sealed with silence, yet
    Sometime.

And you or I must look
  Into the other's grave, or far or near,
And read, as in a book,
  Writ in the dust, words we made bitter here,
    Sometime.

Then, through what paths of dew,
What flush of flowers, what glory in the grass,
Only one of us two,
Even as a shadow walking, blind may pass,
Sometime!

And, if the nestling song
Break from the bosom of the bird for love,
No more to listen long
One shall be deaf below, one deaf above,
Sometime.

For both must lose the way
Wherein we walk together, very soon:
One in the dusk shall stay,
The other first shall see the rising moon,
Sometime.

Oh! fast, fast friend of mine!
Lift up the voice I love so much, and warm;
To wring faint hands and pine,
Tell me I may be left forlorn, forlorn,
Sometime.

Say I may kiss through tears,
For ever falling and for ever cold,
One ribbon from sweet years,
One dear dead leaf, one precious ring of gold,
Sometime.

Say you may think with pain
Of some slight grace, some timid wish to please,
Some eager look half vain
Into your heart, some broken sobs like these,
Sometime!

A DOUBT

It is subtle, and weary, and wide;
It measures the world at my side;
  It touches the stars and the sun;
It creeps with the dew to my feet;
  It broods on the blossoms, and none,
Because of its brooding, are sweet;
It slides as a snake in the grass,
Whenever, wherever I pass.

It is blown to the South with the bird;
At the North, through the snow, it is heard;
  With the moon from the chasms of night
It rises, forlorn and afraid;
  If I turn to the left or the right
I can not forget or evade;
When it shakes at my sleep as a dream,
If I shudder, it stifles my scream.

It smiles from the cradle; it lies
On the dust of the grave, and it cries
  In the winds and the waters; it slips
In the flush of the leaf to the ground;
  It troubles the kiss at my lips;
It lends to my laughter a sound;
It makes of the picture but paint;
It unhaloes the brow of the saint.

The ermine and crown of the king,
The sword of the soldier, the ring
  Of the bride, and the robe of the priest,
The gods in their prisons of stone,
  The angels that sang in the East—
Yea, the cross of my Lord, it has known;
And wings there are none that can fly
From its shadow with me, till I die!

A CHILD'S CONCLUSION

"Mamma," he said, "you ought to know
The place. Its name is wicked, though.
Not China. No. But if you fell
Through China you would be there! Well.

"Fred said somebody very bad,
Named Satan, stayed down there, and had
Oh, such a fire to burn things! You
Just never mind. It can't be true.

"Because I've digged and digged to see
Where all that fire could ever be,
And looked and looked down through the dark
And never saw a single spark.

"But Heaven is sure; because if I
Look up, I always see the sky—
Sometimes the gold-gates shine clear through—
And when you see a thing, it's true!"

THE END OF THE RAINBOW

May you go to find it? You must, I fear;
  Ah, lighted young eyes, could I show you how—
"Is it past those lilies that look so near?"
  It is past all flowers. Will you listen, now?

The pretty new moons faded out of the sky,
  The bees and butterflies out of the air,
And sweet wild songs would flutter and fly
  Into wet dark leaves and the snow's white glare.

There were winds and shells full of lonesome cries,
  There were lightnings and mists along the way,
And the deserts would glitter against my eyes,
  Where the beautiful phantom-fountains play.

At last, in a place very dusty and bare,
Some little dead birds I had petted to sing,
Some little dead flowers I had gathered to wear,
Some withered thorns and an empty ring,

Lay scattered. My fairy story is told.
(It does not please her: she has not smiled,)
What is it you say?—Did I find the gold?
Why, I found the End of the Rainbow, child!

CAPRICE AT HOME

No, I will not say good-bye—
Not good-bye, nor anything.
He is gone. . . . I wonder why
Lilacs are not sweet this spring.
How that tiresome bird will sing!

I might follow him and say
Just that he forgot to kiss
Baby, when he went away.
Everything I want I miss.
Oh, a precious world is this!

. . . What if night came and not he?
Something might mislead his feet.
Does the moon rise late? Ah me!
There are things that he might meet.
Now the rain begins to beat:

So it will be dark. The bell?—
Some one some one loves is dead.
Were it he—! I cannot tell
Half the fretful words I said,
Half the fretful tears I shed.

Dead? And but to think of death!—
Men might bring him through the gate:
Lips that have not any breath,
Eyes that stare—And I must wait!
It is time, or is it late?

I was wrong, and wrong, and wrong;
I will tell him, oh, be sure!
If the heavens are builded strong,
Love shall therein be secure;
Love like mine shall there endure.

. . . Listen, listen—that is he!
I'll not speak to him, I say.
If he choose to say to me,
"I was all to blame to-day;
Sweet, forgive me," why—I may!

THE FAVORITE CHILD

Which of five snowdrops would the moon
Think whitest, if the moon could see?
Which of five rosebuds flushed with June
Were reddest to the mother-tree?
Which of five birds, that play one tune
On their soft-shining throats, may be
Chief singer? Who will answer me?

Would not the moon know, if around
One snowdrop any shadow lay?—
Would not the rose-tree, if the ground
Should let one blossom droop a day?
Does not the one bird take a sound
Into the cloud, when caught away,
Finer than all the sounds that stay?

Oh, little, quiet boy of mine,
Whose yellow head lies languid here—
Poor yellow head, its restless shine
Brightened the butterflies last year!—
Whose pretty hands may intertwine
With paler hands unseen but near:
You are my favorite now, I fear!

EVERYTHING

(A Fairy Tale)

You'd call his room a pleasant place:
Satin and rose-wood, lights and lace,
And fruits and wines were there. (Ah, well!)
And yet the rich man rang his bell—
When lo! he saw a fairy flit
From outside dusk to answer it.

Her flower-like eyes, so faint and blue,
Looked at him through her veil of dew;
Though every gracious thing he had,
His face was fretful, tired, and sad:—
"Pray, sir," she whispered, "did you ring?"
He said: "Yes, I want—everything!"

The fairy laughed and walked away.
Ragged and rosy at his play,
A boy who had the grass, the dew,
Birds, bees, the sun, the stars, like you,
She met: "What do you want?" sighed she.
"Oh, I have everything!" said he.

THE GIFT OF TEARS

The legend says: In Paradise
God gave the world to man. Ah me!
The woman lifted up her eyes:
"Woman, I have but tears for thee."
But tears? And she began to shed,
Thereat, the tears that comforted.

(No other beautiful woman breathed,
No rival among men had he.
The seraph's sword of fire was sheathed,
The golden fruit hung on the tree.
Her lord was lord of all the earth,
Wherein no child had wailed its birth.)

"Tears to a bride?" "Yea, therefore tears."
"In Eden?" "Yea, and tears therefore."
Ah, bride in Eden, there were fears
In the first blush your young cheek wore,
Lest that first kiss had been too sweet,
Lest Eden withered from your feet.

Mother of women! Did you see
How brief your beauty, and how brief,
Therefore, the love of it must be,
In that first garden, that first grief?
Did those first drops of sorrow fall
To move God's pity for us all?

Oh, sobbing mourner by the dead—
One watcher at the grave grass-grown!
Oh, sleepless for some darling head
Cold-pillowed on the prison-stone,
Or wet with drowning seas! He knew
Who gave the gift of tears to you!

A WORD WITH A SKYLARK

If this be all, for which I've listened long,
Oh, spirit of the dew!
You did not sing to Shelley such a song
As Shelley sung to you.

Yet, with this ruined Old World for a nest,
Worm-eaten through and through—
This waste of grave-dust stamped with crown and crest—
What better could you do?

Ah me! but when the world and I were young,
There was an apple-tree,
There was a voice came in the dawn and sung
The buds awake—ah me!

Oh, Lark of Europe, downward fluttering near,
Like some spent leaf at best,
You'd never sing again if you could hear
My Blue-Bird of the West!

REPROOF TO A ROSE

Sad rose, foolish rose,
  Fading on the floor,
Will he love you while he knows
  There are many more
  At the very door?

Sad rose, foolish rose,
  One among the rest:
Each is lovely—each that blows;
  It must be confest
  None is loveliest.

Sad rose, foolish rose,
  Had you known to wait,
And with dead leaves or with snow
  Come alone and late—
  Sweet had been your fate!

Sad rose, foolish rose,
  If no other grew,
In the wide world, I suppose
  My own lover, too,
  Would love—only you!

MY WEDDING RING

My heart stirr'd with its golden thrill
  And flutter'd closer up to thine,
In that blue morning of the June
  When first it clasp'd thy love and mine.

In it I see the little room,
  Rose-dim and hush'd with lilies still,
Where the old silence of my life
  Turn'd into music with "I will."

Oh, I would have my folded hands
  Take it into the dust with me:
All other little things of mine
  I'd leave in the bright world with thee.

AN EMIGRANT SINGING FROM A SHIP

Sing on; but there be heavy seas between
The shores you leave and those
Toward which you sail. Look back, and see how green,
How green the shamrock grows;
How fond your rocks and ruins toward you lean;
How bright the thistle blows,
How red the Irish rose!

—He waves his cap, and, with a sorry jest,
Flies singing like a bird
That is right glad to leave its island next.
I wonder if he heard,
What time he kissed his hand back to the rest,
The cry, till then deferred,
The mother's low, last word.

Boy-exile, youth is light of heart, I ween;
And fairy-tales come true,
Sometimes, perhaps, in lands we have not seen.
Sing on; the sky is blue.
Sing on (I wonder what your wild words mean);
May blossoms strange and new
Drift out to welcome you!

Sing on. The world is wide, the world is fair;
Life may be sweet and long.
Sing toward the Happy West—yet have a care
Lest Ariel join your song!
(You loved the chapel-bell, you know a prayer?)
If winds should will you wrong,
God's house is builded strong!

Sing on, and see how golden grain can grow,
How golden true and vine,
In our great woods; how apple-buds can blow,
And robins chirp and shine.
And—in my country may you never know,
Ah me! for yours to pine,
As I, in yours, for mine.

ALBERT JAMES PICKETT

[1810—1858]

THOMAS McADORY OWEN

ALBERT JAMES PICKETT, justly entitled to be called the historian of Alabama, was a native of Anson County, North Carolina, where he was born August 13, 1810. His parents were Colonel William Raiford and Frances (Dickson) Pickett. They belonged to the land-and-slaveholding class. Colonel Pickett was a merchant and planter. Both in North Carolina and in Alabama he took a lively and intelligent interest in political affairs. In 1818 he removed to Alabama, and settled in what is now Autauga County.

Brought to the State in 1818, the son, Albert, was thrown into an aggressive and picturesque pioneer society, and grew up with a personal knowledge of the Indian tribes and the political and business leaders of the State. He received his early education in the schools of Neil Blue and Joseph Hall. In 1828 he entered an academy in Stafford County, Virginia, where he remained two years. Returning home, he entered the law office of his brother, William Dickson Pickett, but his tastes were not at all in the direction of the law, and he devoted much of his time to general reading, to miscellaneous studies, and to writing for the newspapers.

After his marriage, in 1832, he became a planter. In 1837 he settled permanently in Montgomery, where he continued to reside, alternating between town and country, until his death twenty-one years later. Mr. Pickett for ten years devoted himself with energy to his estates, but with alert and vigorous mind he took an active part not only in public affairs, but in all of the progressing interests of the farm and field. Whether serving as foreman of a grand jury, condemning the abolitionists, or as aide-de-camp on the staff of Governor C. C. Clay during the Creek Indian troubles of 1836, or protesting against the further introduction of negroes into the State, or discussing improved farm conditions, or acting as chairman of the citizens' committee of Montgomery on the erection of a State capitol, he was at all times earnest, vigorous, and patriotic.

In 1847 Mr. Pickett made public his intention of writing a history of Alabama. This task he had long had in mind. His motive in undertaking the work was a desire to preserve in enduring and useful form the annals of the State from its earliest times, and in this

way to render what he conceived to be a lasting public service. With characteristic zeal, he set about assembling the necessary materials. In the collection of data and in the actual preparation and publication of the work four years were employed.

At the outset Mr. Pickett confessed to an appreciation of his limitations, and yet his labors in a remarkable way anticipate the application of many of those principles which underlie modern historical methods. At this time the libraries in the State—public, institutional and private—contained only books of a purely literary character, together with a few of the more general historical works. The State Historical Society had not yet been organized. No historical collections existed, accessible to him, anywhere in the South, and it was not possible for him to visit the libraries in the North. It became necessary, therefore, for him (1) to purchase a library of rare and costly historical works; (2) to open up an extensive correspondence with scholars, public men, and citizens; and (3) to visit and interview personally old settlers and pioneers, for the purpose of securing original material, whether in the form of documents, or as traditions and recollections. He spared neither expense, time, nor energy. Hundreds of dollars were invested in books; hundreds of people were interviewed; and hundreds of miles were traveled. He declares that it was the hardest work of his life. His manuscripts, preserved in the hands of the writer, and now being edited for publication *in extenso,* are evidence of a zeal unsurpassed, a lofty spirit of fidelity to his self-imposed task, and a comprehension of the true principles of historical composition.

In 1857 the results of his work appeared, from the press of Walker and James, Charleston, South Carolina, under the title of 'History of Alabama, and Incidentally of Georgia and Mississippi from the Earliest Period.' It was received with unbounded praise, and to date has continued the principal authority for the story of the early exploration, settlement, and organization of the State. It has had high praise from the leading historians of the country. In style it is simple and unpretentious. The narrative has an even and dignified flow, and is altogether free from affectation or any attempt at fine writing. The whole field is covered in an orderly and progressive way, and throughout there is a linking and a coordination of the events presented. And yet it is not to be forgotten that, owing to the impossibility of securing data for certain periods, the narrative is wanting in that completeness now made possible through the discovery of new but at that time inaccessible materials. Possibly a just criticism is that the work does not come

up to the promise of the title; and, again, the author would have conferred a much more lasting service if he had brought the work down at least to the close of the Mexican War.

This task done, the active and vigorous mind of Mr. Pickett could not remain unemployed. He at once projected a new and more elaborate work, covering the larger field of the old Southwest. Although prosecuted with great assiduity, it was never completed, and the manuscripts and notes collected are supposed to be lost.

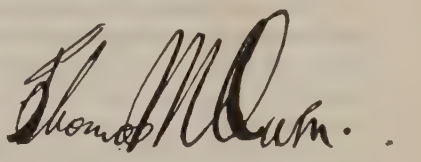
Mr. Pickett delivered several public addresses, and contributed in no small way to the advancement of the educational interests of the State. Among others, he made the annual address before the Alabama Historical Society, July 12, 1854, on "The Origin and Progress of History in the Eastern Hemisphere."

Mr. Pickett was in all respects a good man, and a patriotic citizen. He was a member of the Protestant Episcopal Church at the time of his death. He was generous, charitable, and public-spirited. He was without ostentation, of a social nature, and possessed a vein of humor. His impulses were strong, and his fidelity to duty was one of his noblest traits. He was without political ambitions, and yet his interest in public affairs was ardent and unabated throughout life. While loving literature, and devotedly absorbed in the study of history, he was by occupation a planter, and his life was that of a country gentleman of the old school.

His wife was Sarah Smith Harris, to whom he was married, near Montgomery, Alabama, March 20, 1832. She was the oldest daughter of William and Mary (Alston) Harris. During the last year of his life Mr. Pickett was in failing health; and on October 28, 1858, he passed away. He is interred in Oakwood Cemetery, Montgomery. He was the father of twelve children; and numerous descendants survive. One of his daughters was the wife of Rev. Dr. Samuel Smith Harris, Bishop of Michigan; and another married Michael L. Woods, Esq., Colonel of the Forty-sixth Alabama Infantry Regiment, C.S.A. One son, Colonel William R. Pickett, was Quartermaster-general of Alabama during the War of Secession.

Colonel Pickett was a voluminous writer, his pen being attracted to a score or more of subjects of public concern. His 'History of Alabama' is, however, the work on which his fame will rest. As stated above, it was first published in two volumes in 1851, and is a model of typographical excellence. In 1896, Robert C. Randolph, a son-in-law, reprinted the work in a single volume, with a portrait of the author as a frontispiece. In 1900 another edition appeared, consisting of the sheets of the first reprint, together with a series of

annals, bringing the work from 1819 down to the latter date, and containing an index to the whole. The annals and the index were prepared for the last edition by the writer of this sketch.



BIBLIOGRAPHY

Presentment against the Abolitionists. 1835.

An Address to the Democratic Republicans of Autauga County. 1835.

Presentment of the Grand Jury of Montgomery County, Alabama, against the introduction of negroes from other States for sale by traders, etc. 1845.

Reply to objections urged against a prohibitory law in relation to the introduction of negroes. 1845.

Letter on negro introduction, etc. 1845.

The Red Lands of Alabama. 1847.

Eight Days in New Orleans. 1847.

Sketch of Old Mordecai. 1847.

George W. Creagh. 1848.

Invasion of the territory of Alabama by one thousand Spaniards. 1849.

Arrest of Aaron Burr in Alabama, 1807. 1850.

History of Alabama. 2 vols. 1851.

Education. 1853.

Hampden's Letters to a student of the University of Alabama. 1854.

Origin and Progress of History, etc. 1854.

The Mystery of a Century. 1857.

Letters from Pensacola. 1858.

Contributions to newspapers on various topics, 1835-1858. See Owen's Bibliography of Alabama, in Report of the American Historical Association, pp. 1107-1110. 1897.

Brief Biographical Sketch of Albert James Pickett. By Crawford M. Jackson. 1859.

Alabama. (Brewer.) Pp. 110, 452-53. 1872.

Public Men in Alabama. (Garrett.) P. 714. 1872.

The Alstons of North and South Carolina. 1901.

Personal Reminiscences of Colonel Pickett in Transactions of the Alabama Historical Society. By Colonel Michael L. Woods. Vol. IV, pp. 597-611. 1899-1903.

(The principal authorities for the life of Mr. Pickett and his family connections are his History of Alabama, Vol. II, 439-41.)

THE SOUTHERN INDIANS

All selections are from 'History of Alabama.'

The Choctaws were superior orators. They spoke with good sense, and used the most beautiful metaphors. They had the power of changing the same words into different significations, and even their common speech was full of these changes. Their orations were concise, strong, and full of fire. Excessive debauchery, and a constant practice of begging, constituted their most glaring faults; and it was amusing to witness the many ingenious devices and shifts to which they resorted to obtain presents.

Timid in war against an enemy abroad, they fought like desperate veterans when attacked at home. On account of their repugnance to invading the country of an enemy, in which they were unlike the Creeks and Chickasaws, they were often taunted by these latter nations with cowardice. Frequently, exasperated by these aspersions, they would boldly challenge the calumniators to mortal combat upon an open field. But the latter, feigning to believe that true Indian courage consisted in slyness and stratagem, rarely accepted the banter. However, in 1765, an opportunity offered in the streets of Mobile, when Hoopa, at the head of forty Choctaws, fell upon three hundred Creeks, and routed and drove them across the river, into the marsh. Hoopa alone killed fifteen of them, and was then despatched himself by a retreating Creek. They were pursued no further, because the Choctaws could not swim.

They did not torture a prisoner, in a protracted manner, like other tribes. He was brought home, despatched with a bullet or hatchet, and cut up, and the parts burned. The scalp was suspended from the hot-house, around which the women danced until they were tired. They were more to be

relied upon as allies than most other American Indians. The Creeks were their greatest enemies. In August, 1765, a war began between them, and raged severely for six years. Artful in deceiving an enemy, they attached the paws or trotters of panthers, bears, and buffaloes to their own feet and hands, and wound about the woods, imitating the circlings of those animals. Sometimes a large bush was carried by the front warrior, concealing himself and those behind him, while the one in the extreme rear defaced all the tracks with grass. Most excellent trackers themselves, they well understood how to deceive the enemy, which they also effected by astonishing powers in imitating every fowl and quadruped. Their leader could never directly assume the command, but had, rather, to conduct his operations by persuasion.

* * * * * *

The Chickasaws have never been conquered. They could not be defeated by De Soto with his Spanish army in 1541; by Bienville, with his French army and Southern Indians, in 1736; by D'Artaguette, with his French army and Northern Indians; by the Marquis De Vaudreuil, with his French troops and Choctaws, in 1752; nor by the Creeks, Cherokees, Kickapoos, Shawnees, and Choctaws, who continually waged war against them. No! they were "the bravest of the brave;" and even when they had emigrated to the territory of Arkansas, not many years ago, they soon subdued some tribes who attacked them in that quarter.

* * * * * *

The Chickasaws, although at the period of 1771 a small nation, were once numerous, and their language was spoken by many tribes in the Western States. They were the fiercest, most insolent, haughty, and cruel people among the Southern Indians. They had proved their bravery and intrepidity in constant wars. In 1541, they attacked the camp of De Soto in a most furious midnight assault, threw his army into dismay, killed some of his soldiers, destroyed all his baggage, and burnt up the town in which he was quartered. In 1736, they whipped the French under Bienville, who had invaded their country, and forced them to retreat to Mobile. In 1753, MM. Bevist and Regio encountered defeat at their hands.

They continually attacked the boats of the French voyagers upon the Mississippi and Tennessee. They were constantly at war with the Kickapoos and other tribes upon the Ohio, but were defeated in most of these engagements. But, with the English as their allies, they were eminently successful against the Choctaws and Creeks, with whom they were often at variance.

* * * * * *

The Cherokees were of middle stature, and of an olive color, but were generally painted, while their skins were stained with indelible ink, representing a variety of pretty figures. According to Bartram, the males were larger and more robust than any others of our natives, while the women were tall, slender, erect, and of delicate frame, with features of perfect symmetry. With cheerful countenances, they moved about with becoming grace and dignity. Their feet and hands were small and exquisitely shaped. The hair of the male was shaved, except a patch on the back part of the head, which was ornamented with beads and feathers, or with a colored deer's tail. Their ears were slit and stretched to an enormous size, causing the persons who had the cutting performed to undergo incredible pain. They slit but one ear at a time, because the patient had to lie on one side forty days for it to heal. As soon as he could bear the operation, wire was wound around them to expand them, and when they were entirely well they were adorned with silver pendants and rings.

Many of them had genius, and spoke well, which paved the way to power in council. Their language was pleasant. It was very spirited, and the accents so many and various that one would often imagine them singing in their common discourse.

They had a particular method of relieving the poor, which ought to be ranked among the most laudable of their religious ceremonies. The head men issued orders for a war dance, at which all the fighting men of the town assembled. But here, contrary to all their other dances, only one danced at a time, who, with a tomahawk in his hand, hopped and capered for a minute, and then gave a whoop. The music then stopped till he related the manner of his taking his first scalp. He concluded his narration, and cast a string of wampum, wire,

plate, paint, lead, or anything he could spare upon a large bear-skin spread for the purpose. Then the music again began, and he continued in the same manner through all his warlike actions. Then another succeeded him, and the ceremony lasted until all the warriors had related their exploits and thrown presents upon the skin. The stock thus raised, after paying the musicians, was divided among the poor. The same ceremony was used to recompense any extraordinary merit.

The Cherokees engaged oftener in dancing than any other Indian population; and when reposing in their towns, almost every night was spent in this agreeable amusement. They were likewise very dexterous at pantomimes. In one of these, two men dressed themselves in bear-skins, and came among the assembly, winding and pawing about with all the motions of that animal. Two hunters next entered, who, in dumb show, acted in all respects as if they had been in the woods. After many attempts to shoot the bears, the hunters fired, and one of them was killed and the other wounded. They attempted to cut the throat of the latter. A tremendous scuffle ensued between the wounded bruin and the hunters, affording the whole company a great deal of diversion. They also had other amusing pantomimic entertainments, among which was "taking the pigeons at roost."

* * * * * *

When Bossu visited Fort Toulouse, upon the Coosa, he found that the Creeks and Alabamas were happy people. They lived with ease, had an abundance around them, and were at peace with the surrounding savages. While at the fort, Bossu heard a Chief deliver the following beautiful speech:

"Young men and warriors! Do not disregard the Master of Life. The sky is blue—the sun is without spots—the weather is fair—the ground is white—everything is quiet on the face of the earth, and the blood of men ought not to be spilt on it. We must beg the Master of Life to preserve it pure and spotless among the nations that surround us."

Not only were the Creeks and Alabamas at peace with other nations, at this time, but gave evidences of warm and generous hospitality. They thronged the banks of the river, which now meanders along the borders of the counties of Autauga, Montgomery, Dallas and Lowndes, as Bossu slowly

made his way up the beautiful stream—greeted him with friendly salutations, and offered him provisions, such as bread, roasted turkeys, broiled venison, pancakes baked with nut oil, and deers' tongues, together with baskets full of eggs of the fowl and turtle. The Great Spirit had blessed them with a magnificent river, abounding in fish; with delicious and cool fountains, gushing out from the foot of the hills; with rich lands, that produced without cultivation; and with vast forests, abounding in game of every description. But now the whole scene is changed. The country is no longer half so beautiful; the waters of Alabama begin to be discolored; the forests have been cut down; steamers have destroyed the finny race; deer bound not over the plain; the sluggish bear has ceased to wind through the swamps; the bloody panther does not spring upon his prey; wolves have ceased to howl upon the hills; birds cannot be seen in the branches of the trees; graceful warriors guide no longer their well-shaped canoes; and beautiful squaws loiter not upon the plain, nor pick the delicious berries. Now, vast fields of cotton, noisy steamers, huge rafts of lumber, towns reared for business, disagreeable corporation laws, harassing courts of justice, mills, factories, and everything else that is calculated to destroy the beauty of a country and to rob man of his quiet and native independence, present themselves to our view.

* * * * * *

In drawing our account of the Creek war to a close, we cannot refrain from indulging in some reflections upon the bravery, endurance, self-sacrifice, and patriotism of the Red Sticks. Let us, for a moment, recapitulate their achievements, never yet rivalled in savage life. They defeated the Americans at Burnt Corn, and compelled them to make a precipitate retreat. They reduced Fort Mims, after a fight of five hours, and exterminated its numerous inmates. They encountered the large force under Coffee, at Tallasehatche, and fought till not one warrior was left, disdaining to beg for quarter. They opposed Jackson at Talladega, and, although surrounded by his army, poured out their fire, and fled not until the ground was almost covered with their dead. They met Floyd at Auttose, and fought him obstinately, and then again rallied and attacked him, a few hours after the battle, when he was

leading his army over Heydon's Hill. Against the well-trained army of Claiborne they fought at the Holy Ground, with the fury of tigers, and then made good their retreat across the Alabama. At Emuckfau, three times did they charge upon Jackson, and when he retreated towards the Coosa they sprang upon him, while crossing the creek at Enitachopco, with the courage and impetuosity of lions. Two days afterwards, a party under Weatherford rushed upon the unsuspecting Georgians at Calebee, threw the army into dismay and confusion, and stood their ground in a severe struggle, until the superior force of Floyd forced them to fly, at daylight. Sixty days after this, Jackson surrounded them at the Horse-Shoe, and, after a sanguinary contest of three hours, nearly exterminated them, while not one of them begged for quarter. At length, wounded, starved, and beaten, hundreds fled to the swamps of Florida; others went to Pensacola, and, rallying under Colonel Nichol, attacked Fort Bowyer. Fierce scouting parties, during the whole war, had operated against them, from point to point, and they were not fully overcome until Major Blue made the expedition just related.

Thus were the brave Creeks opposed by the combined armies of Georgia, Tennessee, and the Mississippi Territory, together with the federal forces from other States, besides numerous bands of bloody Choctaws and Chickasaws. Fresh volunteers and militia, from month to month, were brought against them, while no one came to *their* assistance, save a few English officers, who led them to undertake enterprises beyond their ability to accomplish. And how long did they contend against the powerful forces allied against them? From the 27th of July, 1813, to the last of December, 1814. In every engagement with the Americans, the force of the Creeks was greatly inferior in number, except at Burnt Corn and Fort Mims.

Brave natives of Alabama! to defend that soil where the Great Spirit gave you birth, you sacrificed your peaceful savage pursuits! You fought the invaders until more than half your warriors were slain! The remnant of your warlike race yet live in the distant Arkansas. You have been forced to quit one of the finest regions upon earth, which is now occupied by Americans. Will they, in some dark hour, when Alabama is

invaded, defend this soil as bravely and as enduringly as you have done? Posterity may be able to reply.

* * * * * *

The Creeks had at length determined to leave the Americans in quiet possession of the lands, which were surrendered with such reluctance at the treaty of Fort Jackson. The floodgates of Virginia, the two Carolinas, Tennessee, Kentucky and Georgia were now hoisted, and mighty streams of emigration poured through them, spreading over the whole territory of Alabama. The axe resounded from side to side, and from corner to corner. The stately and magnificent forests fell. Log cabins sprang, as if by magic, into sight. Never before or since, has a country been so rapidly peopled.

THE TRADERS AND THE INDIANS

Thus we see that the territory of Montgomery county, now the focus of so much wealth and intelligence, was then a wilderness, inhabited by Indians and the few singular characters who have been named. Indeed, all over the territory of Alabama and Mississippi, wherever an Indian town of importance was found, white traders lived. Some of them became wealthy, but like all property acquired in a commerce with Indians, it generally left the owner in his old age. One of these up-country traders, "Woccocoie Clarke," living at Woccocoie, in the modern Coosa county, transported his merchandise and skins upon seventy pack-horses. His squaw, who was of great assistance to him, he called Queene Anne, for Clarke was an Englishman.

Besides skins of various kinds, the traders bought up beeswax, hickory-nut oil, snake-root, together with various medicinal barks, and transported them to Augusta and Pensacola on pack-horses and to Mobile and New Orleans in large canoes. The pack-horses used in this trade were generally small ones, raised in the nation, but were capable of sustaining heavy loads and of enduring great fatigue. A saddle of a peculiar shape was first placed upon the pony. The load consisted of three bundles, each weighing sixty pounds. Two of these bundles were suspended across the saddle, and came down by

the sides of the pony, while the third was deposited on top of the saddle. The whole pack was covered with a skin to keep off the rain. Thus the pony sustained a load of one hundred and eighty pounds. Even liquids were conveyed in the same manner. Taffai, a mean rum, was carried on these horses in small kegs. Indeed, these hardy animals transported everything for sale; and even poultry of all kinds was carried in cages made of reeds strapped upon their backs. A pack-horseman drove ten ponies in a lead. He used no lines, but urged them on with big hickories and terrible oaths. Accustomed to their duty, they, however, seldom gave trouble, but jogged briskly along. The route and the stopping places became familiar, and, as evening approached, the little fellows quickened their trot with new life and activity. When the sun retired over the hills the caravan stopped; the packs were taken off, piled in a heap, and covered with skins; the horses were belled and turned out to find their food, which consisted of grass and young cane. It was usually late the next morning before the horses were collected and packed, for no person in an Indian country is fool enough to regard time. An attack from the natives upon traders was of rare occurrence. They imagined that they needed the supplies which they brought into their country, and regarding these singular merchants as their best friends, did not even rob them. A pack-horseman always drank taffai—it cheered him in the forest and emboldened him in distress. With a bottle slung by his saddle he often indulged, while those before and behind him followed his custom. Those going to Pensacola and other places were frequently in want of the stimulant, and it was customary for the traders whom they met coming from the market, to halt and treat and interchange jokes. The trader who suddenly rushed by a thirsty party was long remembered as a mean fellow.

Nothing stopped these men on their journey. They swam all swollen creeks and rafted over their effects or produce. Where they had no canoes, rivers were crossed in the same manner. If they reached a stream having large cane on its banks, these were presently cut, ten feet long, and tied up into bundles about three feet in circumference, which were placed in the water. Across these others were laid, which formed an

admirable raft, capable of sustaining great weight. Logs were, also, often employed in the construction of rafts. Guided by long grapevines, they were generally dragged safely across to the opposite side, where the wet ponies stood, ready to receive their packs again. Then all hands drank taffai, and journeyed on, with light hearts and laughing faces. The average travel was twenty-five miles a day. The route from Pensacola was a well-beaten path, leading up the country and across the fatal Murder Creek, and thence to within a few miles of the Catoma, when it diverged into several trails, one of which led to Tookabatacha, along the route of the old Federal road, the other to Montgomery and Wetumpka, by the Red Warrior's Bluff, now Grey's Ferry, upon the Tallapoosa. This trail continued to the Tennessee river.

BIENVILLE AND FORT TOULOUSE

But to return to Bienville and his romantic expedition. Around the stockading the governor cut entrenchments, and one hundred years afterwards, Jackson placed an American fort upon the ruins, which assumed his name. Bienville occupied the summer and fall in completing the fort and outhouses, and in exploring the surrounding country. He visited Tookabatcha, upon the Tallapoosa, and extended his journey among the lower Muscogees, upon the Chattahoochee —even crossing that river, and conferring with the Chiefs in the towns of Coweta and Cusseta, within the present limits of Georgia. Upon all these dangerous excursions he was accompanied by only a few faithful Canadians, and always performed his journeys on foot. Was not this whole expedition most interesting—nay, romantic! Here was the former Governor of Louisiana, and now the Lieutenant Governor, in the Centre of Alabama, in the deepest depths of her forests, among people with whom he had been at war, and who were yet tampered with by the English, visiting their towns, distributing presents, and exhorting them to form alliances with the French colony of Louisiana, and to expel the English who should attempt to form posts among them. Yes! citizens of the counties of Montgomery, Coosa, Tallapoosa, Macon and

Russell, reflect that one hundred and thirty-seven years ago the French Governor of Louisiana—the great and good Bienville—*walked* over your soil, and instituted friendly relations with its rude inhabitants—among whom not a solitary white man had a permanent abode—and established a small colony upon the east bank of the Coosa!

Giving the fort the name of "Toulouse," in honor of a distinguished French Count of that name, who had much to do with the government of France and her colonies, and leaving in command Marigny de Mandeville with thirty soldiers, and one of the priests, Bienville turned his boats down the river, and, after a prosperous voyage, arrived at Mobile with the Indians and Canadians who had accompanied him.

Thus, we see, that although the French had been residing upon the Mobile river since 1702, and the Canadians had several times explored Central Alabama, yet no attempt was made to form permanent settlements in this region until twelve years afterwards, when it was so successfully accomplished by Bienville.

BATTLE OF THE HOLY GROUND

Claiborne, having determined to advance to the enemy's strong-hold, the line of march was taken up by an army consisting of Colonel Russell's third regiment, Major Cassels' battalion of horse, a battalion of militia, under Major Benjamin Smoot—Patrick May being adjutant, Dale and Heard captains, and Girard W. Creagh one of the lieutenants—the twelve months' Mississippi Volunteers, under Colonel Carson, and one hundred and fifty Choctaws, under Pushmatahaw numbering, in the aggregate, near one thousand men. A few days before, nine captains, eight lieutenants, and five ensigns, signed a remonstrance, in respectful language, against the march to the nation, and presented it to the general. They set forth that the time of service of many would soon expire, that the weather was cold, that they were too scantily supplied with clothing and food for such a campaign, and that the route to the enemy's towns was entirely a *pathless* one; but they stated their willingness to obey, if Claiborne should resolve to proceed.

Claiborne moved in a northeastern direction, until he

reached the high lands south of Double Swamp, at the distance of eighty miles, where he built a depot, called Fort Deposit, situated in the present county of Butler, and where he left the wagons, cannon, baggage and the sick, with one hundred men, as a guard. Thirty miles further brought him into the immediate neighborhood of the Holy Ground, which had been reached without the aid of a single path. The pork being exhausted, the troops were in a suffering condition, for they had only drawn, when leaving Fort Deposit, three days' allowance of flour. Econachaca (Holy Ground) had recently been erected by Weatherford, the prophets having assured the Indians that here no white man could approach without instant destruction. It was strongly fortified in the Indian manner, and had for some months formed a point to which those who had been routed in battle retreated, and where a great amount of plunder had been stored. It was situated upon a bluff, on the eastern side of the Alabama river, just below the present Powell's Ferry, in the county of Lowndes. Here many of the white prisoners and friendly Indians were burned to death, by order of the prophets, and when Claiborne was almost within sight of the town with his advancing army, Mrs. Sophia Durant and many other friendly half-breeds were mustered in the square and surrounded by lightwood fires, designed to consume them.

The troops advanced toward the town in three columns, the centre commanded by Colonel Russell, at the head of which was Claiborne himself, Lester's guards and Wells' dragoons acting as a corps of reserve.

At noon Carson's right column came in view of the town, and was vigorously attacked by the enemy, who had chosen their field of action. The town was nearly surrounded with swamps and deep ravines, so that the enemy, who afterwards retreated, could not be successfully pursued. Major Cassels, who had been directed to form his battalion of horse on the river bank, west of the town, failing to effect such a movement, fell back on the head of Carson's regiment, who, however, advanced and took his position. The third regiment, coming up in gallant style, did its duty. Major Smoot assumed his position in a proper manner, and all would have been right if Cassels' cavalry had not failed to obey orders, thereby permitting

hundreds of the enemy to escape along the Alabama river, by the western border of the town. The Indians, headed by Weatherford, for a short time fought with considerable fury, but afterwards fled with great rapidity. The short engagement resulted in the death of thirty Indians and negroes, whose bodies were afterwards counted upon the field. Many must have been severely wounded. Lucket, an American ensign, was killed and twenty men were wounded.

Several hours before the battle began the Indian women and children had been conveyed across the river, and were securely lodged in the thick forests of the region now familiarly known as the Dutch Bend of Autauga county. Here the retreating warriors, some of whom came over in boats, while others swam, joined them. Weatherford, seeing that his forces had deserted him, now pushed hard for his own safety. Coursing with great rapidity along the banks of the Alabama, below the town, on a gray steed of unsurpassed strength and fleetness—which he had purchased a short time before the commencement of hostilities of Benjamin Baldwin, late of Macon county—came at length to the termination of a kind of ravine, where there was a perpendicular bluff ten or fifteen feet above the surface of the river. Over this, with a mighty bound, the horse pitched with the gallant Chief, and both went out of sight beneath the waves. Presently they rose again, the rider having hold of the mane with one hand and his rifle firmly grasped in the other. Regaining his saddle the noble animal swam with him to the Autauga side.

THE VINE AND OLIVE COLONY

In addition to the ruinous failure of the vine and olive, the French were continually annoyed by unprincipled American *squatters*. Occupying their lands, without a shadow of title, they insultingly told the French that they intended to maintain their footing at all hazards. Several law suits arose, and although our Supreme Court decided in favor of the grantees, yet the latter became worn out with controversies, and allowed the intruders in many cases to retain possession for a small remuneration. On the other hand, many honorable Americans purchased their grants for fair considerations, and thus the French refugees were gradually rooted from the soil.

But, in the midst of all their trials and vicissitudes, the French refugees were happy. Immured in the depths of the Tombigby forest, where for several years want pressed them on all sides—cut off from their friends in France—surrounded by the Choctaws on one side, and the unprincipled squatters and land-thieves on the other—assailed by the venom of insects and prostrating fevers—nevertheless, their native gaiety prevailed. Being in the habit of much social intercourse, their evenings were spent in conversation, music and dancing. The larger portion were well educated, while all had seen much of the world, and such materials were ample to afford an elevated society. Sometimes their distant friends sent them rich wines and other luxuries, and upon such occasions parties were given and the foreign delicacies brought back many interesting associations. Well cultivated gardens, and the abundance of wild game, rendered the common living of the French quite respectable. The female circle was highly interesting. They had brought with them their books, guitars, silks, parasols and ribbons, and the village, in which most of them dwelt, resembled, at night, a miniature French town. And then, farther in the forest, others lived, the imprints of whose beautiful Parisian shoes on the wild prairie, occasionally arrested the glance of a solitary traveler. And then, again, when the old imperial heroes talked of their emperor, their hearts warmed with sympathy, their eyes kindled with enthusiasm, and tears stole down their furrowed cheeks.

WILLIAM WYATT BIBB, FIRST GOVERNOR OF ALABAMA

No sooner had the flourishing State of Alabama been thoroughly organized, than the citizens were called upon to mourn the death of their first governor. Riding in the forest one day, the horse of Governor Bibb fell with him to the ground, and he then received an injury from which he never recovered. He died at his residence, in the county of Autauga, in July, 1820, in the fortieth year of his age—calm, collected, peaceful—surrounded by numerous friends and relations.

Governor Bibb was five feet ten inches in height, with an erect but delicate frame. He was exceedingly easy and graceful in his bearing. His interesting face bore the marks of deep thought and great intelligence. His eyes, of a dark color, were mild, yet expressive. Whether thrown into the company of the rude or the refined, his language was pure and chaste. No one ever lived, either in Georgia or Alabama, who was treated with a greater degree of respect by all classes. This was owing to his high moral character, unsurpassed honor, excellent judgment, and a very high order of talents. Entirely free from that dogmatism and those patronizing airs which characterize many of our distinguished men, he invariably treated the opinions of the humblest citizen with courtesy and respect. He was, however, a man of firmness, swaying the minds of men with great success, and *governing by* seeming to *obey*.

In all the stations which he filled, Governor Bibb was eminently successful. When quite a young man his skill and attention as a physician, in the then flourishing town of Petersburg, Georgia, secured for him an extensive practice. He next went into the legislature from Elbert county, and, serving four years in that body, acquired a popularity rarely attained by one of his age. At the early age of twenty-five he was elected to Congress under the General Ticket System, by a vote so large as to leave no doubt but that he was a great favorite with the people. He immediately became a leading member of the lower House of the National Legislature—was an able and fearless advocate of the war of 1812, and a conscientious supporter of the administration of Madison. His contempor-

aries, at his first election, were Bolling Hall, George M. Troup and Howell Cobb. He had not been long in Congress before his popularity caused him to come within a few votes of being elected to the office of Speaker of the House. Afterwards the legislature of Georgia elected him to the Senate of the United States. He was thus a member of Congress from 1806, until 1816, when, as we have seen in the preceding pages, he was appointed by the President, Governor of Alabama *Territory,* and was afterwards elected by the people Governor of the *State* of Alabama. In reference to his Congressional career, we have often heard, from the lips of many of his distinguished contemporaries, that the practical order of his mind, the wisdom of his views, and the peculiar music of his voice, contributed to render him one of the most attractive and effective of speakers.

When Governor Bibb first established himself as a physician he married Mary, only daughter of Colonel Holman Freeman, of revolutionary memory, and then a citizen of Wilkes county. She was one of the most beautiful and accomplished ladies of her day, and has ever been esteemed and admired by the early inhabitants of Alabama. She is now residing in the county of Dallas, in the enjoyment of fine health. Governor Bibb left two children by this lady—a son and a daughter. The latter, the late Mrs. Alfred V. Scott, who died some years ago, was much like her father in the mildness of her disposition, the grace and ease of her manners, and the intellectual beauty of her face.

After the death of Governor Bibb his brother, Thomas Bibb, who was President of the Senate, became the acting governor. He was a man of strong mind and indomitable energy.

In the preceding pages we have alluded to the mother of Governor Bibb. She was one of the most remarkable women we ever knew, for energy, decision, and superior sense. When Captain Bibb, her husband, died, he left her with eight children, and an estate much embarrassed by debt. Benajah, the ninth child, was born a few months after the death of his father. Mrs. Bibb worked the estate out of debt—educated her children, and lived to see them all in affluence, and many of them enjoying offices of honor and profit. She was known

to the early inhabitants of Alabama, by whom she was much esteemed, as Mrs. Barnett, having married a gentleman of that name. Thomas Bibb resembled his mother more than any of the children, in the native strength of his mind and the energy of his character. The memory of Governor William Wyatt Bibb is preserved in the name of a county in Georgia, and one in Alabama.

But here we lay down our pen. The early history of Alabama, as far as it rests in *our* hands, is ended, and our task is accomplished. To some other person, fonder than we are of the dry details of State legislation and fierce party spirit, we leave the task of bringing the history down to a later period.

ALBERT PIKE

[1809—1891]

JAMES D. RICHARDSON

ALBERT PIKE was born in Boston, Massachusetts, December 29, 1809. His father died when he was but a child. He was of good lineage, descended from an old English family prominent in Devonshire in the Fourteenth Century. His ancestors in this country were men of mark, as is attested in the history of Essex County, Massachusetts. The Pikes, from the first settlement of the town of Newbury, to which they came as pioneers in 1635, have been noted for intelligence, liberality of opinions, and independence of action. We should expect to find the descendants of such men just what we have found them, energetic, unappalled at difficulties, determined for what was right and brave in defence of their sentiments. Such was Nicholas Pike, author of the first arithmetic published in America, the friend of George Washington, and the planter of the liberty tree in front of his residence in 1775, the branches of which arch State Street, Boston, to this day. Such was General Zebulon Montgomery Pike, who explored the Rocky Mountains, gave name to Pike's Peak, and died in battle in the War of 1812. Such is the poet-soldier, Albert Pike, one of the heroes at Buena Vista, of whom General Taylor made honorable mention. The family has given us scholars, poets, clergymen, teachers, statesmen, jurists, and soldiers.

Albert Pike's father removed to Newburyport, Massachusetts, when he was about four years of age, and he was reared there. He received his education in succession at the primary and grammar schools, at a private school, in an academy at Framingham, Massachusetts, and in August, 1825, passed his examination and entered the freshmen class at Harvard. To support himself and pay for his tuition at college, it was necessary for him to teach while pursuing his studies. He did so for six months in the fall and winter of that year, at Gloucester, teaching young men seven or eight years older than himself; then returned home and studied, fitting himself to enter the junior class. He taught in the town of Fairhaven six months, then in the grammar school at Newburyport, first as assistant and then as principal, and afterward for two or three years taught a private school there until March, 1831. He was by heredity and by nature a thinker, a student, and poet, large-minded, high-

strung, sensitive, chivalrous, conscious of his powers, yet diffident and modest; he was steadfast in his determination to do something and be a power in the world. Surrounded by rigid Puritans, who had little toleration for sentiment and scorned poetry and "flowery talk," as they called everything imaginative and ideal, he longed to breathe a freer air and lead a wider life than the purely materialistic one of wage-earning. All of his efforts therefore tended to this end, to make money enough to go to the newer western world. The Pacific coast was the goal for which he started in 1831. After stopping at St. Louis, Santa Fé, Fort Smith and Van Buren, he settled in Little Rock, Arkansas, where under the *nom de plume* of "Casca" he contributed a series of articles on the political topics of the day to the Little Rock *Advocate*. These attracted so much attention by their merit that he was offered and accepted the position of associate editor of the *Advocate,* which position he occupied for some time. In that Southern town he found the atmosphere he needed; he was loved and admired, his talents were appreciated, he was encouraged to put forth all his powers, and there he found fortune and fame.

In 1833 he was elected Assistant Secretary of the Council of the Territorial Legislature, commenced the study of law, and was admitted to the Bar in that State in the winter of 1834. He was married to Miss Mary Ann Hamilton, October 10, 1834, and continued to reside in Little Rock. His poem, "Hymns to the Gods," which first appeared in *Blackwood's Magazine* for June, 1839, and other sketches published from 1831 to 1854, entitle him to high rank as one of the poets of our country.

Professor Wilson (Christopher North) said of him to Dr. Shelton Mackenzie: "His massive genius marked him out to be the poet of the Titans." In 1834 he published "Prose Sketches and Poems"; "Ariel" appeared in 1834 or 1835; in 1836 appeared the "Ode to the Mocking-bird," which was republished in *Blackwood's* for March, 1840. From time to time other detached poems appeared in various publications and were always warmly welcomed by the readers. Finally, in 1854, he printed a collection of his poems, entitled 'Nugæ,' but only for private distribution.

In 1836 he was employed to supervise the publication of 'Revised Statutes of Arkansas,' for which work he received great credit. In the spring of 1835 he bought the *Advocate,* and soon afterward formed a copartnership in the law with William Cummins, which continued for several years. Finding that his management of the *Advocate* interfered with the law business, he, at the end of two years, sold the paper and devoted his entire time to the practice and study of law. In 1840 he was elected attorney of the Real Estate

Bank, and in 1842 one of the trustees, holding the two offices in succession for about twelve years.

In 1846 he raised a squadron of cavalry which he commanded with the rank of Captain, and served in the war with Mexico, having received special mention from Generals Taylor and Wool. Here he met Major Robert E. Lee, afterward General of the Confederate Army.

As a lawyer, he was admitted to the Bar of the Supreme Court of the United States in 1849, where later a high eulogy was passed upon him by Daniel Webster. He practiced before that court with much distinction and won many cases, including some for the Creek Indians, some for the Choctaws, and a few for the Cherokees. In all questions relative to the Roman law, he was regarded as excellent authority. He translated the Pandects into English, and after he came to Washington to reside, in 1868, he spent several years completing a work relative to all the maxims of the Roman and the French law, including in his researches the twenty-two volumes of Duranton, several of Porthier, the five volumes of Marcade, who ranks as the highest authority of all (not excepting the courts of France and the most admirable of all writers on the law), and other works. To this he added the comments upon them of the French Courts and text writers, and of the Pandects.

In 1861 when Arkansas cast her lot with the Confederacy, he was made a Brigadier-general and placed in command of the Indian Territory. As the Agent of the Confederate Government he negotiated a number of treaties with the Indian tribes. After the close of the Civil War, he settled in Memphis, and practiced law and edited a morning daily paper there for about two years. In 1868 he removed to Washington, where he resided for the remainder of his life, except for a short period of time, when he lived in Alexandria, Virginia. He died in Washington, D.C., on April 2, 1891, lamented by all. His death was perfectly peaceful; from moment to moment the change was so slight, the extinction of the vital flame so gradual, that it was scarcely perceptible when the last breath was drawn and his great spirit returned to God. He had relinquished the active practice of the law about 1879 and after that appeared in the courts only by his briefs and pleadings in writing. He had been a fine Greek and Latin scholar, had taught himself many languages, and a great number of dialects, among them the Sanscrit, Hebrew, Old Samaritan, Chaldean, Persian and American Indian. From these he went on to a study of the Parsee and Hindoo beliefs and traditions and of the *Rig-Veda* and *Zend-Avesta*. He left fifteen large manuscript volumes of translations and commentaries of these ancient Aryan writings.

He was made a Mason in Little Rock in 1850, and devoted himself during the latter years of his life to the interests of the order and received all of the honors that it was possible to have conferred, culminating with the position of Grand Commander of the Mother Supreme Council of the World of the Scottish Rite, a position which he held for thirty-two years and until his death. He was the most eminent Mason in the world, not solely by virtue of his position in the order, but by his scholarly attainment, his admirable treatises on Masonic law and symbolism, his profound knowledge of statecraft, theology, and ethnology, his broad and comprehensive grasp of every subject and the even balance of his judgment. These great qualities constituted him the arbiter and judge of all questions that concerned the Supreme Councils of the world. Hallam calls him the "Homer of America," the "Zoroaster of modern Asia," a "Profound Philosopher, a Great Jurist, a Great Philologist, a Profound Ethnologist, and a Great Statesman and without doubt or rival, the Greatest of American Poets."

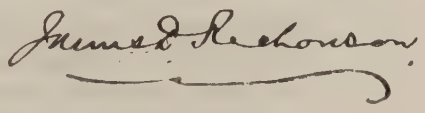
He was the author of more than twenty volumes of Masonic literature, besides the volumes of prose and poetry that gave him general fame. "Words Spoken of the Dead," his allocutions as Grand Commander, his allocutions as Provincial Grand Master of the Royal Order of Scotland, the Rituals of the Masonic Degrees from the fourth to the thirty-third, inclusive, which were rewritten by him, the Rituals of Consecration, of Installation, of the Lodge of Sorrow, the Funeral Service of the Knights Kadosh, innumerable addresses and lectures on Symbolism and Kindred Masonic subjects, the Morals and Dogma—a book of inestimable value to the Masonic student—and besides these, many essays, translations and compilations, which have never been printed, but which are carefully guarded in the library of the Supreme Council at Washington.

It has been well said that Albert Pike was a king among men by the divine right of merit; so majestic in appearance that wherever he moved on highway or byway, every passer-by turned to gaze upon him and admire him. Six feet two inches tall, with the proportions of a Hercules, and the grace of an Apollo! A face and head massive and leonine, recalled in every feature some sculptor's dream of a Grecian god. His long, wavy hair, flowing down over his shoulders added a strikingly picturesque effect, and the whole expression of his countenance told of power, combined with gentleness, refinement, and benevolence.

God never made a gentler gentleman, a better citizen, or a truer man. He climbed Fame's glittering ladder to its loftiest height. He died amid his books and pictures, his birds and flowers, with a full

faith in a glorious immortality. The world is his mausoleum and all mankind his mourners.

Standing as he did, preëminent as a man, lawyer, poet, scholar, and author, his merit was recognized to such an extent that the Congress by resolution of both houses set apart a United States Reservation in the Capital City of the country, to be dedicated to his memory, and it is occupied by a heroic statue of this leader, an honor which has never been accorded to any other person who served in the ranks of the Confederacy.



EVERY YEAR

All selections are from 'Poems,' and used here by permission of Mrs. Lillian Pike Roome and F. W. Allsopp, owners of copyright.

Life is a count of losses,
Every year;
For the weak are heavier crosses,
Every year;
Lost Springs with sobs replying
Unto weary Autumns' sighing,
While those we love are dying,
Every year.

It is growing darker, colder,
Every year;
As the heart and soul grow older,
Every year;
I care not now for dancing,
Or for eyes with passion glancing,
Love is less and less entrancing,
Every year.

The days have less of gladness,
Every year;
The nights more weight of sadness,
Every year;

Fair Springs no longer charm us,
The winds and weather harm us,
The threats of death alarm us,
Every year.

There come new cares and sorrows,
Every year;
Dark days and darker morrows,
Every year;
The ghosts of dead loves haunt us,
The ghosts of changed friends taunt us,
And disappointments daunt us,
Every year.

Of the loves and sorrows blended,
Every year;
Of the charms of friendship ended,
Every year;
Of the ties that still might bind me,
Until Time to Death resigns me,
My infirmities remind me,
Every year.

Ah! how sad to look before us,
Every year;
While the cloud grows darker o'er us,
Every year;
When we see the blossoms faded
That to bloom we might have aided,
And immortal garlands braided,
Every year.

To the Past go more dead faces,
Every year;
As the loved leave vacant places,
Every year;
Everywhere the sad eyes meet us,
In the evening's dusk they greet us,
And to come to them entreat us,
Every year.

"You are growing old," they tell us,
"Every year;
"You are more alone," they tell us,
"Every year;
"You can win no new affection,
"You have only recollection,
"Deeper sorrow and dejection,
"Every year."

Too true!—Life's shores are shifting,
Every year;
And we are seaward drifting,
Every year;
Old places, changing, fret us,
The living more forget us,
There are fewer to regret us,
Every year.

But the truer life draws nigher,
Every year;
And its Morning star climbs higher,
Every year;
Earth's hold on us grows slighter,
And the heavy burden lighter,
And the Dawn immortal brighter,
Every year.

Our life is less worth living,
Every year;
And briefer our thanksgiving,
Every year;
And Love, grown faint and fretful,
With lips but half regretful,
Averts its eyes regretful,
Every year.

TO POSEIDON

I

God of the mighty deep! wherever now
The waves beneath thy brazen axles bow;
Whether thy strong, proud steeds, wind-winged and wild,
Trample the storm-vexed waters round them piled,
Swift as the lightning flashes that reveal
The quick gyrations of each massive wheel—
While round and under thee, with hideous roar,
The broad Atlantic, with thy scourging sore,
Thundering like antique Chaos in his spasms,
In heaving mountains and deep-yawning chasms,
Fluctuates endlessly; while through the gloom,
Their glossy sides and thick manes flecked with foam,
Career thy coursers, neighing with mad glee,
In fierce response to the tumultuous sea:—
Whether they tread the shifting sands below,
Among wrecked ships, where the green sea-plants grow,
Broad-leaved, and sighing with eternal motion
Over the pale, cold tenants of the ocean:
Oh, come! our lofty altars for thee stand,
Smoking with incense, on the level strand.

II

Perhaps with loose rein now thy horses roam
Over the Adriatic. No salt foam
Stains their fine limbs, but softly, leisurely,
They tread with silver feet that still, calm sea,
Fanning the waters with their flowing manes,
That gleam like mist in sunshine; while shrill strains
From clamorous trumpets round thy chariot ring,
And green-robed sea-gods praising thee, their king,
Chaunt loudly; while Apollo bends his gaze
Lovingly on thee, and his soft, clear rays
Tame thy wild coursers' eyes. The air feels warm
On the sea's forehead, where the cold, harsh storm
So lately thundered, and the rebel winds
That Æolus in cave and den now binds,

Beat their broad wings. Perhaps long leagues below
Thou sleepest in green caves, where sea-flowers glow
Brighter than sapphires: many a monster cumbers
The sand around thee; aged Triton slumbers
Care-free and still; and glad, sweet, bright eyes peep
From many a nook, watching thy dreamless sleep.

III

Perhaps thou art resting on some Indian isle,
Under a broad, thick tree, where, many a mile,
Stretches a sunny shore, with golden sands,
Piled in fantastic shapes by Naiads' hands;
Where the small waves come coyly, one by one,
And curl upon the beach, like molten gold,
Thick-set with jewellery, rare and old.
Sea-nymphs sit near, and with small delicate shells
Make thee such melody, as in deep dells,
Of a May-night, is by the Fairies made,
When, frolicking with some sober shade,
They sound their silver flute, soft, faint, and sweet,
In strange but exquisite tunes; and delicate feet
Dance softly on the grass-blades gemmed with dew,
That bend, not break: all wanton airs that blew
So lately through the spice-trees, hover there,
With overladen wings that loan to the air
Wealth of perfume. Oh! wilt thou not arise,
And come with them to our new sacrifice?

ODE TO THE MOCKING-BIRD

Thou glorious mocker of the world! I hear
  Thy many voices ringing through the glooms
Of these green solitudes; and all the clear,
Bright joyance of their song enthralls the ear,
  And floods the heart. Over the sphered tombs
Of vanished nations rolls thy music-tide:
  No light from History's starlit page illumes
The memory of these nations: They have died:
  None care for them but thou; and thou mayst sing,
  Over me, too, perhaps, as thy notes ring
Over their bones by whom thou once wast deified.

Glad scorner of all cities! Thou dost leave
  The world's mad turmoil and incessant din,
Where none in others' honesty believe,
Where the old sigh, the young turn gray and grieve,
  Where misery gnaws the maiden's heart within;
Thou fleest far into the dark green woods,
  Where, with thy flood of music, thou canst win
Their heart to harmony, and where intrudes
  No discord on thy melodies. Oh, where,
  Among the sweet musicians of the air,
Is one so dear as thou to these old solitudes?

Ha! what a burst was that! The Æolian strain
  Goes floating through the tangled passages
Of the still woods; and now it comes again,
A multitudinous melody, like a rain
  Of glassy music under echoing trees,
Close by a ringing lake. It wraps the soul
  With a bright harmony of happiness,
Even as a gem is wrapped, when round it roll
  Thin waves of crimson flame; till we become,
  With the excess of perfect pleasure, dumb,
And pant like a swift runner clinging to the goal.

I cannot love the man who doth not love,
As men love light, the songs of happy birds;
For the first visions that my boy-heart wove,
To fill its sleep with, were that I did rove
Through the fresh woods, what time the snowy herds
Of morning clouds shrunk from the advancing sun,
Into the depths of Heaven's blue heart, as words
From the Poet's lips float gently, one by one,
And vanish in the human heart; and then
I revelled in such songs, and sorrowed, when,
With noon-heat overwrought, the music-gush was done.
I would, sweet bird, that I might live with thee,
Amid the eloquent grandeur of these shades,
Alone with Nature!—but it may not be:
I have to struggle with the stormy sea
Of human life until existence fades
Into death's darkness. Thou wilt sing and soar
Through the thick woods and shadow-chequered glades,
While pain and sorrow cast no dimness o'er
The brilliance of thy heart; but I must wear,
As now, my garments of regret and care,
As penitents of old their galling sackcloth wore.

Yet, why complain? What though fond hopes deferred
Have overshadowed Life's green paths with gloom?
Content's soft music is not all unheard:
There is a voice sweeter than thine, sweet bird,
To welcome me, within my humble home;
There is an eye, with love's devotion bright,
The darkness of existence to illume.
Then why complain? When Death shall cast his blight
Over the spirit, my cold bones shall rest
Beneath these trees; and from thy swelling breast
Over them pour thy song, like a rich flood of light.

AULD LANG SYNE

"Should auld acquentance be forgot,
"And never brought to min'?
"Should auld acquentance be forgot,
"And Auld Lang Syne?

"For Auld Lang Syne, my Joe!
"For Auld Lang Syne;
"We'll tak' a cup o' kindness yet
"For Auld Lang Syne."

"An' surely ye'll your glasses fill,
"An' surely I'll fill mine,
An' we'll tak' a right gude willy-wought
"For Auld Lang Syne.
"For Auld Lang Syne, etc.

'Tis mony a year sin' first we met,
Wi song an' jest and wine,
And aft we saw the day-star rise
In Auld Lang Syne.
For Auld Lang Syne, etc.

We a' hae had our ups and doons,
Great sorrows, joys divine;
And some hae won, and some hae lost,
Sin' Auld Lang Syne.
For Auld Lang Syne, etc.

And some hae foemen been, and charged
In column and in line,
Each fighting for his flag and faith,
And Auld Lang Syne.
For Auld Lang Syne, etc.

And they who lost, nae malice bear,
Nor murmur nor repine;
And they who won, the losers luve,
For Auld Lang Syne.
For Auld Lang Syne, etc.

And some hae seen the simmer sun
On mony a broad land shine,
And wandered mony a weary foot,
Sin' Auld Lang Syne.
For Auld Lang Syne, etc.

The laurel and the cypress on
Some grassy graves entwine,
Where those are laid who lo'ed us weel
In Auld Lang Syne.
For Auld Lang Syne, etc.

And some we luve, in foreign lands
To see their ain land pine,
And backward look, wi' fond regret,
To Auld Lang Syne.
For Auld Lang Syne, etc.

We a' hae had our luves and hates—
The hates we a' resign,
But keep the luves a' fresh and green,
For Auld Lang Syne.
For Auld Lang Syne, etc.

"An' there's a han', each trusty frien',
"And gi'e 's a han' o' thine!
"An' we'll tak' a right gude willy-wought,
"For Auld Lang Syne.
"For Auld Lang Syne, etc."

An' when we shut the book o' life,
An' a' of earth resign,
The memory shall, if sad, be sweet,
Of Auld Lang Syne.
For Auld Lang Syne, etc.

THE WIDOWED HEART

Lachrymæ pondera vocis habent.
Tristis eris, si solus eris: dominæque relictæ
Ante oculos facies stabit, ut ipsa, tuous.

Thou art lost to me forever!—I have lost thee, Isadore!
Thy head will never rest upon my loyal bosom more;
Thy tender eyes will never more look fondly into mine,
Nor thine arms around me lovingly and trustingly entwine—
Thou art lost to me forever, Isadore!

Thou art dead and gone, dear loving wife, thy heart is still and cold,
And mine, benumbed with wretchedness, is prematurely old:
Of our whole world of love and joy thou wast the only light,
A star, whose setting left behind, ah me! how dark a night!—
Thou art lost to me forever, Isadore!

The vines and flowers we planted, Love, I tend with anxious care,
And yet they droop and fade away, as though they wanted air;
They cannot live without thine eyes to feed them with their light:
Since thy hands ceased to train them, Love, they cannot grow aright;
Thou art lost to them forever, Isadore!

Our little ones inquire of me, where is their mother gone—
What answer can I make to them, except with tears alone?
For if I say, "To Heaven," then the poor things wish to learn
How far it is, and where, and when their mother will return:
Thou art lost to them forever, Isadore!

Our happy home has now become a lonely, silent place;
Like Heaven without its stars it is, without thy blessed face:
Our little ones are still and sad;—None love them now but I,
Except their mother's spirit, which I feel is always nigh!—
Thou lovest us in Heaven, Isadore!

Their merry laugh is heard no more, they neither run nor play,
But wander round like little ghosts, the long, long Summer-day:
The spider weaves his web across the windows at his will,
The flowers I gathered for thee last are on the mantel still—
Thou art lost to me forever, Isadore!

Restless I pace our lonely rooms, I play our songs no more,
The garish Sun shines flauntingly upon the unswept floor;
The mocking-bird still sits and sings, O melancholy strain!
For my heart is like an Autumn-cloud that overflows with rain;
Thou art lost to me forever, Isadore!

Alas! how changed is all, dear wife, from that sweet eve in Spring,
When first my love for thee was told, and thou to me didst cling,
Thy sweet eyes radiant through their tears, pressing thy lips to mine,
In our old arbor, Dear, beneath the over-arching vine;
Those lips are cold forever, Isadore!

The moonlight struggled through the leaves, and fell upon thy face,
So lovingly upturning there, with pure and trustful gaze;
The Southern breezes murmured through the dark cloud of thy hair,
As like a happy child thou didst in my arms nestle there;
Death holds thee now forever, Isadore!

Thy love and faith so plighted then, with mingled smile and tear,
Was never broken, Darling, while we dwelt together here:
Nor bitter word, nor dark, cold look thou ever gavest me—
Loving and trusting always, as I loved and worshipped thee;
Thou art lost to me forever, Isadore!

Thou wast my nurse in sickness, and my comforter in health,
So gentle and so constant, when our love was all our wealth:
Thy voice of music cheered me, Love, in each desponding hour,
As Heaven's sweet honey-dew consoles the bruised and broken flower;
Thou art lost to me forever, Isadore!

Thou art gone from me forever; I have lost thee, Isadore!
And desolate and lonely I shall be forever more:
Our children hold me, Darling, or I to God should pray
To let me cast the burthen of this long, dark life away,
And see thy face in Heaven, Isadore!

TO A ROBIN

(Written in New Mexico on hearing the song of the only red-breast I ever saw there.)

Hush, where art thou clinging,
And what art thou singing,
Bird of my native land?
Thy song is as sweet as a fairy's feet
Stepping on silver sand.
And thou art now
As merry as though thou wert singing at home,
Far away, in the spray
Of a warm shower raining through odorous gloom;
Or as if thou wert hid, to the tip of thy wing,
By a broad oaken leaf in its greenness of Spring,
With thy nest lurking 'mid a gray heaven of shade,
To protect thy dear young from all harm fitly made.

Hush, hush! Look around thee!
Bleak mountains impound thee!
Cliffs gloomy, rocks barren and dead;
A desolate pine doth above thee incline,
But yields not a leaf for thy bed,
And lo! below,
No flowers of beauty or radiance bloom,
But weeds—grayheads—
That mutter and moan when the wind-tides loom.

And the rain never falls in the warm, sunny Spring,
To freshen thy heart or to strengthen thy wing.
But thou livest a hermit these deserts among,
Where Echo alone makes reply to thy song.

And while thou art chanting,
With head thus up-slanting,
Thou seemest a thought or a vision,
That flits with quick haste o'er the heart's lonely waste,
With an influence soothing, elysian:
Or a lone sweet tone,
That sounds for a time in the ear of sorrow;
Ah! soon, too soon,
I must bid thee a long and a sad good morrow:
But if thou wilt turn to the South thy wing,
I will meet thee again at the end of Spring;
And thy nest may be made where the peach and the vine
Shall shade thee, and tendril and leaf shall entwine.

Art thou not a stranger,
And darer of danger,
That over these mountains hast flown?—
For the land of the North is the clime of thy birth,
And here thou, like me, art alone.
Go back on thy track;
It were wiser and better for thee and me,
Than to moan, alone,
So far from the waves of our own bright sea;
Then the eyes that we left to grow dim, months ago,
Will greet us again with their idolized glow.
Let us haste, then, sweet bird, to revisit our home,
Where the oak-leaves are green, and the sea-waters foam.

THE MAGNOLIA

(Song)

What, what is the true Southern Symbol,
The Symbol of Honor and Right,
The Emblem that suits a brave people
In arms against number and might?
'Tis the ever green stately Magnolia,
Its pearl-flowers pure as the Truth,
Defiant of tempest and lightning,
Its life a perpetual youth.

French blood stained with glory the Lilies,
While centuries marched to their grave;
And over bold Scot and gay Irish
The Thistle and Shamrock yet wave:
Ours, ours be the noble Magnolia,
That only on Southern soil grows
The Symbol of life everlasting:—
Dear to us as to England the Rose.

Paint the flower on a field blue as Heaven,
Let the broad leaves around it be seen,
"Semper virens" the eloquent motto,
Our colors the Blue, White and Green.
Type of Chivalry, loyalty, virtue,
In Winter and Summer the same,
Full of leaf, full of flower, full of vigor—
It befits those who fight for a name.

For a name among Earth's ancient Nations,
Yet more for the Truth and the Right,
For Freedom, for proud Independence,
The old strife of Darkness and Light.
Round the World bear the flag of our glory,
While the nations look on and admire,
And our struggle immortal in story,
Shall the free of all ages inspire.

What though many fall in the conflict,
And our blood redden many a field?
The foe's on our soil, fellow-soldiers!
And God is our strength and our shield.
Through the fire and the smoke bear our banner
Ever on, while a fragment remains!
What though we are few and they many?
The Lord God of Armies still reigns.

ORA ATQUE LABORA

(Pray and Work)

Swiftly flashing, hoarsely dashing,
Onward rolls the mighty river;
Down it hurries to the sea,
Bounding on exultingly;
Still the lesson teaching ever,
Ora atque labora.

Trembling fountains on blue mountains,
Murmuring and overflowing
Through green valleys deep in hills,
Send down silver brooks and rills;
Singing, while in sunlight glowing,
Ora atque labora!

Onward flowing, ever growing,
In its beauty each rejoices;
While on Night's delighted ear,
Through the amber atmosphere,
Sounds the murmur of their voices,
Ora atque labora!

Archly glancing, lightly dancing,
See its eddies chase each other;
Round old roots they flashing whirl,
Over ringing pebbles curl;
Each one singing to his brother,
Ora atque labora!

Still descending, mingling, blending,
Lo! a broad, majestic river!
Under whose perpetual shocks,
Lofty crags and columned rocks
Shaken, echo as they quiver,
Ora atque labora!

Hoarsely roaring, swiftly pouring
Through tall mountains cloven asunder
Over precipices steep,
Plunging to abysses deep,
Loud the cataract's voices thunder,
Ora atque labora!

Sunlight shifting, white mist drifting
On its forehead, thence it marches,
Swelled with freshets and great rains,
Shouting through the fertile plains,
Spanned with aqueducts and arches
Ora atque labora!

Thus Endeavor striveth ever
For the thankless world's improvement:
Each true thought and noble word,
By the dull earth, though unheard,
Making part of one great movement—
Ora atque labora!

Work then bravely, sternly, gravely—
Life for this alone is given;
What is right, that boldly do,
Frankly speak out what is true—
Leaving the result to Heaven,
Ora atque labora!

A DIRGE

Over a companion, killed by Comanches and buried in the prairie.

Thy wife shall wait
Many long days for thee;
And when the gate
Swings on its unused hinges, she,
Opening her dim and grief-contracted eye,
And still forbidding hope to die
Longing for thee will look;
Till like some lone and gentle summer brook,
That pineth in the summer-heat away
And dies some day,
She waste her mournful life out at her eyes.
Vainly, ah! vainly we deplore
Thy death, departed friend! No more
Shalt thou be seen by us beneath the skies.
The barbed arrow has gone through
Thy heart, and all the blue
Hath faded from thy clay-cold veins, and thou,
With stern and pain-contracted brow,
Like one that wrestled mightily with death,
Art lying there.
Whether above the skies,
Thou at thy death didst soar,
And treadest Heaven's floor
With great joy beaming in thine eyes;
Or buried there
Commencest an eternal sleep,
And shalt in atoms only rise to the air—
As thinks despair:
We bid thee here a last, long, sad adieu!
Rest there, pale sleeper!
Another trophy of the grim old Reaper,
Cut down and withering under unknown skies.
Farewell! our course yet farther westward lies.
Thy grave is deeper than the wolf can go,
And we have driven the wheels above thee, so

That the Indian may not find thy sepulchre.
Farewell! for now the trains begin to stir;
And we with quivering lip
And lingering and reluctant step,
Must leave thee here, alone. Once more, farewell!

ODE

When shall the nations all be free,
And Force no longer reign;
None bend to brutal Power the knee,
None hug the gilded chain?
No longer rule the ancient Wrong,
The Weak be trampled by the Strong?—
How long, dear God in Heaven! how long,
The people wail in vain?

Do not th' Archangels on their thrones,
Turn piteous looks to Thee,
When round them thickly swarm the groans
Of those that would be free?
Of those that know they have the right
To Freedom, though crushed down by Might,
As all the world hath to the light
And air which Thou mad'st free?

The ancient Empires staggering drift
Along Time's mighty tide,
Whose waters, running broad and swift,
Eternity divide:
How many years shall pass, before
Over their bones the sea shall roar,
The salt sand drift, the fresh rains pour,
The stars mock fallen Pride?

What then the Great Republic's fate?
To founder far from land,
And sink with all her glorious freight,
Smitten by God's right hand?

Or shall she still her helm obey
In calm or storm, by night or day,
No sail rent, no spar cut away
  Exultant, proud and grand?

The issues are with God. To do,
  Of right belongs to us:
May we be ever just and true,
  For nations flourish thus!—
JUSTICE is mightier than ships;
RIGHT, than the cannon's brazen lips;
And TRUTH, averting dark eclipse,
  Makes fortunes prosperous.

July 4, 1853.

SHELLEY

The frail bark foundered, and the waves
Quenched a great light and left the world to mourn
It is enough to make the poet sick
Of his high art, and scorn the clamorous world,
And life, and fame, that guerdon dearly won
By broken hopes, sad days, and early death,
When he remembers the short bitter life,
And sad end of poor SHELLEY.

Fare thee well,
Young star of Poetry, now set forever!
Yet, though eclipsed forever to this world,
Still thy light fills the earth's dull atmosphere,
A legacy inestimable. Man
Hath done thee wrong, wronging himself the more,
By cold neglect, and small appreciation
Of thy divinest songs. The day will come
When justice will be done thee. Adonis,
The bound Prometheus, will become great lamps
Lit on the edges of thick darkness, blazing
Over broad lands and out on weltering seas,
Like glorious suns that midnight change to noon;

Great beacons on the fringes of the sea,
Speaking the glories of the hoary Past
To future ages, far in the womb of Time,
And flashing inspiration on that sea,
And all the earnest souls that journey there.
Then none of all the muse's younger sons
Will rival thee, except that glorious one,
Who burned thy corpse on Italy's fair shores.
But what is fame to thee? Small recompense
For persecution, obloquy, and wrong;
For poverty and shattered hopes, and life
Embittered till it was no pain to die!

1835.

TO APOLLO

From 'Nugæ.' The extract is from "Hymns to the Gods."

Most exquisite poet! Thou, whose great heart's swell
Pours itself out on mountain, lawn, and dell;
Thou who dost touch them with thy golden feet,
And make them for the Painter's use complete;
Inspired by whom the Poet's eyes perceive
Great beauty everywhere—in the slow heave
Of the unquiet sea, or in the roar
Of its resounding waters—on the shore
Of pleasant streams—in the dark, jagged rift
Of savage mountains, where the black clouds drift
Flushed with swift lightning—on the broad dark brow
Of silent Night, that solemnly and slow
Walks up the sky. Oh, thou, whose influence
Tinges all things with beauty, makes each sense
Double delight, and clothes with a delicate grace
All that is young and fair; while all the base
Flits far, like darkness!—thou that art in truth
Incarnate loveliness hear, while our youth
With earnestness yearning cry!
Answer our hymn, and come to us, Most High!

DIXIE

Southrons, hear your country call you!
Up, lest worse than death befall you!
To arms! To arms! To arms, in Dixie!
Lo! all the beacon-fires are lighted—
Let all hearts be now united!
To arms! To arms! To arms, in Dixie!
Advance the flag of Dixie!
Hurrah! hurrah!
For Dixie's land we take our stand,
And live or die for Dixie!
To arms! To arms!
And conquer peace for Dixie!
To arms! To arms!
And conquer peace for Dixie!

Hear the Northern thunders mutter!
Northern flags in South winds flutter!
Send them back your fierce defiance!
Stamp upon the accursed alliance!

Fear no danger! Shun no labor!
Lift up rifle, pike, and sabre!
Shoulder pressing close to shoulder,
Let the odds make each heart bolder!

How the South's great heart rejoices
At your cannons' ringing voices!
For faith betrayed, and pledges broken,
Wrong inflicted, insults spoken.

Strong as lions, swift as eagles,
Back to their kennels hunt these beagles!
Cut the unequal bonds asunder!
Let them hence each other plunder!

Swear upon your country's altar
Never to submit or falter,
Till the spoilers are defeated,
Till the Lord's work is completed.

Halt not till our Federation
Secures among earth's Powers its station!
Then at peace, and crowned with glory,
Hear your children tell the story!

If the loved ones weep in sadness,
Victory soon shall bring them gladness—
To arms!
Exultant pride soon banish sorrow,
Smiles chase tears away to-morrow.
To arms! To arms! To arms, in Dixie!
Advance the flag of Dixie!
Hurrah! hurrah!
For Dixie's land we take our stand,
And live or die for Dixie!
To arms! To arms!
And conquer peace for Dixie!
To arms! To arms!
And conquer peace for Dixie!

EDWARD COOTE PINKNEY

[1802—1828]

WRIGHTMAN F. MELTON

EDWARD COOTE* PINKNEY† was born in London, England, October 1, 1802, the seventh of the ten children of William Pinkney and Ann Maria (Rodgers) Pinkney, who were married in 1789. William Pinkney, the father, did not have the advantage of a college education, but through native ability and constant study became the leading American lawyer of his time, Minister to the Court of Saint James and Attorney-general of the United States. While resident in London as special Minister to England he studied Latin, Greek, and elocution. In forensics Lord Erskine was his model. William Pinkney was a close student of English literature as well; he delighted in Shakespeare, Milton, Addison, and Johnson, and regarded the Bible not only as the Word of God but as the first of all literary works. He studied it closely, and his numerous great speeches show his familiarity with Biblical thought and phrase.

Maria Ann Rodgers, the mother of Edward Pinkney, was a native of Havre de Grace, Maryland. She was the daughter of John Rodgers, Esq., and a sister of Commodore John Rodgers of the United States Navy.

When Edward was two years old (August, 1804) the family returned to the United States, where for about a year William Pinkney was Attorney-general of Maryland. In 1806 the family returned to England, the father having been appointed Minister Extraordinary with Monroe, at that time Minister Resident of the United States in London. On Monroe's return to the United States Pinkney succeeded him and occupied the position until 1811. On November 24, 1810, William Pinkney wrote to President Madison: "The claims of my family to my professional exertions have been too long neglected." The family arrived in Annapolis in June, 1811, when Edward was about nine years old. In December of that year William Pinkney was appointed Attorney-general of the United States and held this position until February, 1814. During this time

*Since Coote appears in the baptismal register, and since the name is twice so spelled in a memorial printed two days after the editor's death and in his own paper, on which his brother Frederick was an assistant, we may as well accept the name Coote and commend the poet-editor's good judgment in never spelling out his unattractive middle name.

†The Maryland family spelled their name Pinkney, the Carolineans, Pinckney.

Edward was a student in the Baltimore College and in St. Mary's College, Baltimore.

In 1816, when William Pinkney was appointed Minister to the Court of St. Petersburg, with some special mission to be executed in Naples, Edward, at the age of fourteen, entered the United States Navy. He resigned his position in the Navy in 1822, in his twentieth year; the reason for his resignation is said to have been his determination to challenge his superior officer, Commodore Ridgely, as the result of an unwitting offence. Ridgely declined the challenge, and Pinkney posted him in the streets of Baltimore.

Edward C. Pinkney was admitted to the Bar in 1824, and on the twelfth of October of the same year was married to Miss Georgiana McCausland, daughter of Marcus McCausland, an Irish gentleman who had settled in Baltimore some years before. As a lawyer Pinkney was not successful, and after two years of struggle and failure he offered his services to the Mexican Navy; for some reason he was not assigned to a position, although it seems that his offer had been accepted. He returned to Baltimore, broken in health and spirit, to renew his fruitless struggle at the Bar. In recognition of Pinkney's literary attainments, first manifested in his "Rodolph—A Fragment," published in 1823 and later emphasized by the appearance in 1825 of a thin, unpretentious volume of poems, he was appointed professor of rhetoric and belles-lettres in the University of Maryland, a position without emolument. In December, 1827, he was chosen editor of *The Marylander,* a political paper founded in the interests of John Quincy Adams. From the first issue of the paper, on Wednesday, December 3, 1827, it was obvious that a brilliant editorial career was opening before Pinkney, but unfortunately his health was already irremediably broken. Early in the spring of 1828 he had to give up his editorial duties, and on Friday night, April 11, 1828, at ten minutes past ten o'clock, he peacefully expired. He was buried in the Unitarian Cemetery near Baltimore, but in May, 1872, his remains were moved to Greenmount Cemetery, Baltimore, where they now lie within hailing distance of Sidney Lanier's grave. Pinkney was survived by his wife and a son; the wife always remembered him as her poet-husband.

Baltimore appreciates the distinction of having been, for a time at least, the home of the poets Edgar Allan Poe, Sidney Lanier, Edward Coote Pinkney, Francis Scott Key, James R. Randall, and a host of others of less note; but it is not unfair to the others to say that no one of them was so handsome, gallant, impulsive, fearless, and intense as Pinkney. A pair of "starry eyes" set his muse a-rocking and his hand was ever on the hilt of his sword in readi-

ness to redress an insult. From one of the newspapers of the day Miss Boyle, his biographer, quotes: "We have never seen manly beauty exhibited in such just proportions, or with so much effect. His form rose gracefully a few degrees above the common height of man, every feature, every limb seemed a masterpiece of Nature. The ample forehead, the mild yet piercing eye, the happy blending of color in his countenance, its placid yet melancholy and intelligent expression, rendered him an object of interest to every beholder." Akin to this largeness of frame and form was his largeness of heart, which impulsively responded to the cries of all in need; Goldsmith-like, he would pawn his valuables in behalf of those who seemed to be poorer than himself.

Before commenting on Edward C. Pinkney's poetry it is not out of place to mention that his younger brother, Frederick Pinkney, born October 14, 1804, on board the brig *Mary*, on which his parents were returning from England, was also a man of literary distinction. He was associated with Edward in the publication of *The Marylander*. "In strong contrast to the wild, restless spirit of his poet-brother, the calm beauty of his muse reveals the high hope of his soul." "The high hope of his soul" is well nigh all that Frederick Pinkney's verse does reveal, for he was lacking in the wild, restless spirit, the imaginative creative faculty essential to those higher forms of verse which possess something more than calm beauty.

Bishop William Pinkney, a cousin of Edward, also attempted verse. In a letter to his mother he acknowledges that he cannot write poetry, but assures her that the fever for rhyming is not easily broken. "The Old Clock," his best known poem, shows very clearly that it was influenced by the work of his poet-cousin, Edward.

Without hesitation, we may conclude that Edward was the poet of the Pinkney family; and notwithstanding the fact that he wrote the principal part of his verse at twenty or thereabouts, he was numbered at the time as "one of the five greatest poets" of the country.

His poem entitled "A Health" was counted by the *Athenæum* as one of the prettiest things in American poetry. Poe quoted it in full and gave it no mean praise: "The taint of which I speak (pleasurable sadness) is clearly perceptible even in a poem so full of brilliancy and spirit as the 'Health' of Edward Coote Pinkney. . . . The poem just cited is especially beautiful; but the poetic feeling which it induces we must refer chiefly to our sympathy in the

poet's enthusiasm. We pardon his hyperboles for the evident earnestness with which they are uttered."

The *North American Review* (January, 1824), while finding some fault with the moral tone of Pinkney's "Rodolph," adds: "The author evidently has much of the genuine spirit of poetry; his thoughts are occasionally bold and striking; some passages are wrought with much felicity of expression and clothed with a rich and glowing imagery; and notwithstanding the obscurity, . . . and a few minor imperfections, a highly poetical vein runs through the whole performance."

That Pinkney was a poet born is unmistakably declared by nearly every line he wrote. Nevertheless, it is interesting to consider certain features of his verse, both as to style and as to theme, with a view to ascertaining influences and sources. With all his romanticism his verse abounds in classical touches. In his footnotes he refers to Herodotus, Suetonius, and Horace, while thoughts from Ovid have been detected in his poems.

During some portion of the six years spent by Pinkney in the United States Navy, he was cruising in the Mediterranean Sea, and through his own eager eyes he saw and learned to love Italy. In "A Health," "The Indian's Bride," and some other of the shorter pieces, there are striking reminders of Petrarch.

It is generally understood that Pinkney's "Italy" is in imitation of Mignon's song in Goethe's "Wilhelm Meister." Professor Trent finds that Pinkney's 'Poems' show plainly his indebtedness to Wordsworth and Byron, from both of whom he makes direct quotations. How far Pinkney himself may have influenced other poets would be the subject of another paper.

It is rather of curious interest than of significant importance to ask who inspired the beautiful serenades with which his small volume so abounds. With the exception of one, it is fair to give credit for this inspiration to his wife, Georgiana McCausland—thus described by one who knew her in the flesh: "Her eyes were of a deep violet color, her glossy black hair fell over a forehead exquisitely shaped and as pure and white as polished marble, while on her cheek the rose and lily were equally blended. She played the harp and sang divinely. Her beauty and accomplishments made her a much admired belle."

Pinkney's poetical career, which began with "Rodolph—A Fragment" and ended with "The Beauty—A Fragment," gave way at last to the necessity that compelled him to devote his last year to writing prose for *The Marylander*. This paper was commended for the independence and dignity with which Pinkney defended the

truth and the boldness with which he exposed falsehood. Even in the midst, however, of such occupation he found time for occasional songs printed in the columns of his political newspaper. In fine, we may say that in spite of the brevity of his life, and the painful necessity he was under of devoting a part of his meagre years to writing prose, Pinkney will live as our Petrarch or Carew, standing near the head of the limited list of American Cavalier lyrists.

ITALY

I

Know'st thou the land which lovers ought to choose?
Like blessings there descend the sparkling dews;
In gleaming streams the chrystal rivers run,
The purple vintage clusters in the sun;
Odours of flowers haunt the balmy breeze,
Rich fruits hang high upon the vernant trees;
And vivid blossoms gem the shady groves,
Where bright-plumed birds discourse their careless loves,
Beloved!—speed we from this sullen strand
Until thy light feet press that green shore's yellow sand.

II

Look seaward thence, and naught shall meet thine eye
But fairy isles like paintings on the sky;
And, flying fast and free before the gale,
The gaudy vessel with its glancing sail;
And waters glittering in the glare of noon,
Or touched with silver by the stars and moon,
Or flecked with broken lines of crimson light
When the far fisher's fire affronts the night.
Lovely as loved!—towards that smiling shore
Bear we our household gods, to fix for evermore.

III

It looks a dimple on the face of earth,
The seal of beauty, and the shrine of mirth;
Nature is delicate and graceful there,
The place's genius, feminine and fair:
The winds are awed, nor dare to breathe aloud;
The air seems never to have borne a cloud,
Save where volcanoes send to heav'n their curled
And solemn smokes, like altars of the world.
Thrice beautiful!—to that delightful spot
Carry our married hearts, and be all pain forgot.

IV

There Art too shows, when Nature's beauty palls,
Her sculptured marbles, and her pictured walls;
And there are forms in which they both conspire
To whisper themes that know not how to tire:
The speaking ruins in that gentle clime
Have but been hallowed by the hand of Time,
And each can mutely prompt some thought of flame
—The meanest stone is not without a name.
Then come, beloved!—hasten o'er the sea
To build our happy hearth in blooming Italy.

THE INDIAN'S BRIDE

I

Why is that graceful female here
With yon red hunter of the deer?
Of gentle mien and shape, she seems
  For civil halls designed,
Yet with the stately savage walks
  As she were of his kind.
Look on her leafy diadem,
Enriched with many a floral gem:
Those simple ornaments about
  Her candid brow, disclose
The loitering Spring's last violet
  And Summer's earliest rose;

But not a flower lies breathing there,
Sweet as herself, or half so fair.
Exchanging lustre with the sun,
  A part of day she strays—
A glancing, living, human smile,
  On nature's face she plays.
Can none instruct me what are these
Companions of the lofty trees?—

II

Intent to blend with his her lot,
Fate formed her all that he was not;
And, as by mere unlikeness thoughts
  Associate we see,
Their hearts from very difference caught
  A perfect sympathy.
The household goddess here to be
Of that one dusky votary—
She left her pallid countrymen,
  An earthling most divine.
And sought in this sequestered wood
  A solitary shrine.
Behold them roaming hand in hand,
Like night and sleep, along the land;
Observe their movements:—he for her
  Restrains his active stride,
While she assumes a bolder gait
  To ramble at his side:
Thus, even as the steps they frame,
Their souls fast alter to the same.
The one forsakes ferocity,
  And momently grows mild;
The other tempers more and more
  The artful with the wild.
She humanizes him, and he
Educates her to liberty.

III

Oh say not, they must soon be old,
Their limbs prove faint, their breasts feel cold!

Yet envy I that sylvan pair,
More than my words express,
The singular beauty of their lot,
And seeming happiness.
They have not been reduced to share
The painful pleasures of despair:
Their sun declines not in the sky,
Nor are their wishes cast,
Like shadows of the afternoon,
Repining towards the past:
With nought to dread, or to repent,
The present yields them full content.
In solitude there is no crime;
Their actions are all free,
And passion lends their way of life
The only dignity;
And how should they have any cares
Whose interest contends with theirs?—

IV

The world, or all they know of it,
Is theirs:—for them the stars are lit;
For them the earth beneath is green,
The heavens above are bright;
For them the moon doth wax and wane,
And decorate the night;
For them the branches of those trees
Wave musick in the vernal breeze;
For them upon that dancing spray
The free bird sits and sings,
And glitt'ring insects flit about
Upon delighted wings;
For them that brook, the brakes among,
Murmurs its small and drowsy song;
For them the many coloured clouds
Their shapes diversify,
And change at once, like smiles and frowns,
Th' expression of the sky.

For them, and by them, all is gay,
And fresh and beautiful as they:
The images their minds receive,
  Their minds assimilate,
To outward forms imparting thus
  The glory of their state.
Could aught be painted otherwise
Than fair, seen through her star-bright eyes?
He too, because she fills his sight,
  Each object falsely sees;
The pleasure that he has in her,
  Makes all things seem to please.
And this is love;—and it is life
They lead—that Indian and his wife.

A PICTURE-SONG

How may this little tablet feign the features of a face,
Which o'er-informs with loveliness its proper share of space;
Or human hands on ivory enable us to see
The charms, that all must wonder at, thou work of Gods, in thee!

But yet, methinks, that sunny smile familiar stories tells,
And I should know those placid eyes, two shaded chrystal wells;*
Nor can my soul, the limner's art attesting with a sigh,
Forget the blood, that decked thy cheek, as rosy clouds the sky.

They could not semble what thou art, more excellent than fair,
As soft as sleep or pity is, and pure as mountain-air;
But here are common, earthly hues, to such an aspect wrought,
That none, save thine, can seem so like the beautiful of thought.

The song I sing, thy likeness like, is painful mimicry
Of something better, which is now a memory to me.
Who have upon life's frozen sea arrived the icy spot,
Where men's magnetic feelings show their guiding task forgot.

*See Lanier's "My Springs."

The sportive hopes, that used to chase their shifting shadows on,
Like children playing in the sun, are gone—forever gone;
And on a careless, sullen peace, my double-fronted mind,
Like Janus when his gates were shut, looks forward and behind.

Apollo placed his harp, of old, awhile upon a stone,
Which has resounded since, when struck, a breaking harp-string's tone;
And thus my heart, though wholly now from early softness free,
If touched, will yield the music yet, it first received of thee.

SONG

We break the glass, whose sacred wine
To some beloved health we drain,
Lest future pledges, less divine,
Should e'er the hallowed toy profane;
And thus I broke a heart, that poured
Its tide of feelings out for thee,
In draughts, by after-times deplored,
Yet dear to memory.

But still the old empassioned ways
And habits of my mind remain,
And still unhappy light displays
Thine image chambered in my brain,
And still it looks as when the hours
Went by like flights of singing birds,
Or that soft chain of spoken flowers,
And airy gems, thy words.

*See Ovid's "Metamorphoses," VIII, 13 (Weber).

LINES

From the Portfolio of H——.

We met upon the world's wide face,
  When each of us was young—
We parted soon, and to her place
  A darker spirit sprung;
A feeling such as must have stirred
The Roman's bosom when he heard,
  Beneath the trembling ground,
The God, his genius, marching forth
From the old city of his mirth,
  To lively music's sound.

A sense it was, that I could see
  The angel leave my side—
That thenceforth my prosperity
  Must be a falling tide;
A strange and ominous belief,
That in spring-time the yellow leaf
  Had fallen on my hours;
And that all hope must be most vain,
Of finding on my path again,
  Its former, vanished flowers.

But thou, the idol of my few
  And fleeting better days—
The light that cheered when life was new
  My being with its rays—
And though, alas!—its joy be gone,
Art yet, like tomb-lamps, shining on
  The phantoms of my mind—
The memories of many a dream
Floating on thought's fantastic stream,
  Like storm-clouds on the wind!

Is thy life but the wayward child
  Of fever in the heart,
In part a crowd* of fancies wild,
  Of ill-made efforts part?
Are such accurst familiars thine,
As by thee were made early mine?
  And is it as with me—
Doth hope in birthless ashes lie,
And seems the sun an hostile eye
  Thy pains well-pleased to see?

I trust, not so:—though thou hast been
  An evil star to mine,
Let all of good the world has seen
  Hang ever upon thine.
May thy suns those of summer be,
And time show as one joy to thee,
  Like thine own nature pure;
Thou didst but rouse, within my breast,
The sleeping devils from a rest,
  That could not long endure.

The firstlings of my simple song
  Were offered to thy name:
Again the altar, idle long,
  In worship rears its flame.
My sacrifice of sullen years,
My many hecatombs of tears,
  No happier hours recall—
Yet may thy wandering thoughts restore
To one who ever loved thee more
  Than fickle fortune's all.

And now, farewell!—and although here
  Men hate the source of pain,
I hold thee and thy follies dear,
  Nor of thy faults complain.

*"Crow'd" in the original (1825).

For my misused and blighted powers,
My waste of miserable hours,
I will accuse thee not:—
The fool who could from self depart,
And take for fate one human heart,
Deserved no better lot.

I reck of mine the less, because
In wiser moods I feel
A doubtful question of its cause,
And nature, on me steal—
An ancient notion, that time flings
Our pains and pleasures from his wings
With much equality—
And that, in reason, happiness
Both of accession and decrease
Incapable must be.

SERENADE

Look out upon the stars, my love,
And shame them with thine eyes,
On which, than on the lights above,
There hang more destinies.
Night's beauty is the harmony
Of blending shades and light;
Then, Lady, up—look out, and be
A sister to the night!—

Sleep not!—thine image wakes for aye,
Within my watching breast;
Sleep not!—from her soft sleep should fly,
Who robs all hearts of rest.
Nay, Lady, from thy slumbers break,
And make this darkness gay,
With looks, whose brightness well might make
Of darker nights a day.

SONG

I need not name thy thrilling name,
  Though now I drink to thee, my dear,
Since all sounds shape that magic word,
  That fall[s] upon my ear—Mary;
And silence, with a wakeful voice,
  Speaks it in accents loudly free,
As darkness hath a light that shows
  Thy gentle face to me—Mary.
I pledge thee in the grape's pure soul,
  With scarce one hope, and many fears,
Mixt, were I of a melting mood,
  With many bitter tears—Mary—
I pledge thee, and the empty cup
  Emblems this hollow life of mine,
To which, a gone enchantment, thou
  No more wilt be the wine—Mary.

A HEALTH

I fill this cup to one made up of loveliness alone,
A woman, of her gentle sex the seeming paragon;
To whom the better elements and kindly stars have given
A form so fair, that, like the air, 'tis less of earth than heaven.

Her every tone is music's own, like those of morning birds,
And something more than melody dwells ever in her words;
The coinage of her heart are they, and from her lips each flows
As one may see the burthened bee forth issue from the rose.

Affections are as thoughts to her, the measures of her hours;
Her feelings have the fragrancy, the freshness, of young
  flowers;
And lovely passions, changing oft, so fill her, she appears
The image of themselves by turns—the idol of past years!

Of her bright face one glance will trace a picture on the brain,
And of her voice in echoing hearts a sound must long remain,
But memory such as mine of her so very much endears,
When death is nigh my latest sigh will not be life's but her's.

I filled this cup to one made up of loveliness alone,
A woman, of her gentle sex the seeming paragon—
Her health! and would on earth there stood some more of such a frame,
That life might be all poetry, and weariness a name.

THE OLD TREE

(From the Note-Book of a Traveller.)

I

And is it gone, that venerable tree,
The old spectator of my infancy!—
It used to stand upon this very spot,
And now almost its absence is forgot.
I knew its mighty strength had known decay,
Its heart, like every old one, shrunk away,
But dreamt not that its frame would fall, ere mine
At all partook my weary soul's decline.

II

The great reformist, that each day removes
The old, yet never on the old improves
The dotard, Time, that like a child destroys,
As sport or spleen may prompt, his ancient toys,
And shapes their ruins into something new—
Has planted other playthings where it grew.
The wind pursues an unobstructed course,
Which once among its leaves delayed perforce;
The harmless Hamadryad, that of yore,
Inhabited its bole, subsists no more;
Its roots have long since felt the ruthless plow—
There is no vestige of its glories now!

But in my mind, which doth not soon forget,
That venerable tree is growing yet;
Nourished, like those wild plants that feed on air,
By thoughts of years unconversant with care,
And visions such as pass ere man grows wholly
A fiendish thing, or mischief adds to folly.
I still behold it with my fancy's eye,
A vernant record of the days gone by:
I see not the sweet form and face more plain,
Whose memory *was* a weight upon my brain.
—Dear to my song, and dearer to my soul,
Who knew but half my heart, yet had the whole
Sun of my life, whose presence and whose flight
Its brief day caused, and never-ending night!
Must this delightless verse, which is indeed
The mere wild product of a worthless weed,
(But which, like sun-flowers, turns a loving face
Towards the lost light, and scorns its birth and place,)
End with such cold allusion unto you,
To whom, in youth, my very dreams were true?
It must; I have no more of that soft kind,
*My age is not the same, nor is my mind.

---

*Horace. [Pinkney's note.]

EDGAR ALLAN POE

[1809—1849]

JAMES A. HARRISON

EDGAR ALLAN POE was born in Boston, Massachusetts, January 19, 1809, a year frequently signalized as the birth-year of Gladstone, Darwin, Lincoln, Oliver Wendell Holmes, and other celebrities whose work revolutionized the century. From his birth everything seemed bizarre and fantastic in the course and current of this drama: *fleurs du mal* were thickly strewn along the way; paradoxes abounded; mixed nationalities traversed, as veins traverse marble, a curiously composite nature. His mother was an English actress of whom little is authentically known; his father belonged to the well-known Poe family of Baltimore, in whom Irish and Welsh blood mingled with Scotch and Pennsylvanian ancestral threads, forming a mosaic of blended lineage. The vivid neurotic temperament of the young "Bostonian" (as he called himself on the title page of 'Tamerlane,' his first volume) was doubtless due to that commixture, as well as to the peculiar training which it later underwent in the great School of Circumstances.

David Poe, the poet's father, was a young Baltimore attorney, hardly of age when his children were born. His parents were bitterly opposed to the marriage; but as young Poe loved the stage, and the Widow Hopkins (*née* Arnold) possessed charming gifts, they were married, and began a tour of the country. It was during this Bohemian life, while they were playing in Boston, that little Edgar, a remarkably beautiful child, was born. He had been preceded by William Henry, also gifted with poetic talent, dying young, and followed by a sister, Rosalie, who died in the 'seventies in a Washington church home.

Arriving in Richmond, Virginia, with Mr. Placide's company of players, Mrs. Poe was taken very ill and died after a brief period in direst poverty; David Poe had probably already died of consumption in Norfolk, and the three helpless children were thrown on public charity. The McKenzies, who kept a fashionable girls' school in Richmond, took charge of Rosalie; William Henry was sent to Baltimore relatives; and Edgar was taken in (not adopted) by Mrs. Allan, who induced her husband, John Allan, a well-to-do merchant, to take compassion on the sprightly boy and give him a home. Here he remained, in the household of the Allans, from 1811 to 1827. Five

years of this time, from 1815 to 1820, were spent in England, whither Mr. Allan, a Scotchman by birth, went on business, taking his family with him. Edgar spent these years, so far as is known, at Dr. Bransby's school in Stoke Newington, now a suburb of London. It is not known whether he ever met any of his English, Irish, or Welsh relatives.

On his return to Richmond, in 1820, Mr. Allan put Edgar at the best private schools there, where the boy distinguished himself in classical and other studies, in elocution, and in all kinds of athletic sports. He was sent to the University of Virginia in 1826, a year after it was founded, and there distinguished himself in French, Latin, and Italian, occupying Room No. 13, West Range, now the headquarters of "The Raven Society." Over the door of this room is an interesting bronze plaque presented by the Misses Whiton and Bangs of Washington, District of Columbia, while in the noble library room of the rotunda a striking bronze bust by Zolnay, the Roumanian sculptor, commemorates the presence of the poet. There is absolutely no record of gambling, drunkenness, or dissipation against Poe in the archives of the University. In December, at the end of the scholastic year, Poe returned home and did not go back to the University.

All this time he must have been working at 'Tamerlane, and Other Poems,' a thin little volume which appeared in 1827 in Boston, after he had left the Allan house in consequence of a quarrel with Mr. Allan. The same year Poe joined the Army, under the assumed name of Edgar A. Perry, and was ordered first to Charleston, South Carolina, where he gathered material afterward woven into the celebrated story of "The Gold Bug," and then to Fortress Monroe. This discovery was first made by Mrs. Weiss, and later verified from the Army records by George E. Woodberry. At Charlottesville, the neighboring Ragged Mountains furnished him material (amplified by one of Macaulay's "Essays") for another tale; and his English experiences at Dr. Bransby's school revive spectrally in "William Wilson"; while there seems little doubt that one or two of his early teachers, especially Dr. Blaettermann, moved grotesquely to and fro in his German and French tales.

Tiring of army life and its mathematical schedules, Poe obtained an honorable discharge as sergeant, and was admitted through Senator Ellis's influence to the United States Military Academy at West Point. Meanwhile his devoted friend, the first Mrs. Allan (*née* Valentine), had died, and Poe grieved deeply over the irreparable loss. Never really in love with military life, the poet soon grew restive at the Academy and through purposed insubordination, in-

excusable under the circumstances, was dismissed in December, 1830. In 1829 his second thin volume of poems, 'Al Aaraaf,' appeared, in its title a second time emphasizing the Arabian-Oriental association of his mind; and in 1831 the third volume of poems appeared, when he was twenty-two. The tie with the Allans was now effectively and finally broken, all the more because in 1830 Mr. Allan had married Miss Louisa Gabriella Patterson of New York, and Poe's hope of inheriting Mr. Allan's large fortune was dissipated by the successful arrival of several little Allan heirs. The second Mrs. Allan seems to have been a cold but estimable lady, who had no use for the poet waif and ended by cherishing toward him a bitter resentment, aggravated, it is said, by Poe's unseemly conduct.

At this point ensued another stage-like disappearance of the unhappy wanderer, from 1831 to 1833, leaving us in the dark as to his whereabouts.

The one great thing that Baltimore, where he lived later, did for Poe, was to discover his eminent talent as a short-story writer. In 1833 the Baltimore *Family Visitor*, a weekly publication of short duration, advertised that it would give one hundred dollars for the best short story and fifty dollars for the best poem submitted for publication to its literary columns. The committee of award consisted of Messrs. J. P. Kennedy (author of 'Swallow Barn' and 'Horseshoe Robinson'), Dr. Miller, and Mr. Latrobe, the last of whom, forty-two years later, when the Poe monument was dedicated, told the story.

As early as 1831, when he was only twenty-two, Poe had already begun to develop the exquisite prose style, so lucid, melodious, and imaginative, which afterward characterized all his romances, the natural gift of a great genius flowering in secrecy without aid from any external source. Unconscious of the gift himself, perhaps, but compelled by dire want to exercise it, he submitted to this committee the six now famous "Tales of the Folio Club," written in Roman letters, and bound together in a dainty quarto book, and his poem on "The Coliseum." Almost equally in favor of any one of the six, the committee at last decided on "A Manuscript Found in a Bottle," giving this the one hundred dollar prize, but awarding the fifty dollar prize to a poem by Professor Hewitt.

The other stories were "A Descent into the Maelstrom," "Lionizing," "The Assignation," "Siope and Epimanes," with ten others, all marked by the same logic, precision, bizarre originality and powerful imaginative force, placing Poe at one bound, in his twenty-fourth year, far beyond all his American contemporaries, in the front rank of romantic prose writers. His success soon led to an

engagement, first as contributor, then as editor, with *The Southern Literary Messenger,* lately founded at Richmond, Virginia. Thither he moved, in 1836, with his aunt, Mrs. Clemm, and his "child-wife," Virginia Clemm, his first cousin, whom he married in Baltimore first, and later, again, for some unknown reason, in Richmond, falsifying her age in the wedding license* as he had falsified his own once before on entering West Point.

The Messenger throve for eighteen months under Poe's management, and its columns swarmed with the products of his pen—sketches, poems, merciless anonymous criticisms of his contemporaries, the first instalment of "Autography" articles, and the incongruous overflow of an overworking fancy.

Rumors of bad habits, however, now began to circulate about the young editor, who had been reared in the convivial school of the olden time and sometimes thoughtlessly took a "dram" before breakfast. Mr. Thomas White, proprietor of *The Messenger,* a fanatic on this subject, took umbrage at Poe's obstinacy, and finally, finding remonstrances vain, cancelled the engagement. Poe had never, in the very heyday of his extraordinary activity for *The Messenger,* received a salary that was even decent. A small thousand dollars marked at one period its highest point—the lowest was forty dollars a month. The writer has collected, in Chapter VI of his 'Life and Letters of Poe,' the full statistics of the poet's contributions and remuneration during the year and a half of his connection with the magazine. Poe increased the patronage from seven hundred to five thousand subscribers, and first published in its columns some of his most celebrated pieces—"Morella," "Metzengerstein," "Hans Pfhal," "Shadow," "A Tale of Jerusalem," "Arthur Gordon Pym," etc., etc. Many poems were recast and republished, and new ones were added. The ringing criticisms evoked clamors here, indignation there, admiration everywhere.

"Adrift" is the word that best characterizes the period 1837-1844, when he loitered by the way in New York and Philadelphia, and made the acquaintance of Burton, George R. Graham, and Rufus Griswold, contributed to *The Gift, The Museum, The Dollar Magazine* (in which "The Gold Bug" won a one hundred dollar prize), became the editor of Burton's *Gentleman's Magazine* and *Graham's Magazine* for short periods, and printed the famous "Tales of the Grotesque and Arabesque," evidently inspired in title and contents by the Arabian Nights, albeit of unparalleled ingenuity and poetic power.

*First discovered and given to the writer by Robert Lee Traylor, but "appropriated," without acknowledgment, by an "enterprising newspaper."

Meanwhile a word as to the home life of the Poes might not be out of place at this point. The marriage of the author to his young cousin, Virginia Clemm, was truly the anchor that kept his restless life from going to pieces, and the guardian angel was the strong and sheltering presence of his aunt-"mother," the mother of his Virginia, Maria Clemm. This noble woman has been derided and slandered by Griswold, Stoddard, and other biographers of the poet; but she it was who, in all their troubles and all their poverty, their struggles for actual food, and varied misadventure, held the little family together, kept it from perishing absolutely, and like a true Niobe held aloft her protecting bosom while the storm fell about her defenceless children. The writer has had access to much of her unpublished correspondence, and every letter breathes of vigorous yet tender personality, working day and night at menial duties for the support of her family. Her daughter, Virginia, was a beautiful girl of delicate constitution, a wife at fourteen, destined to be carried away at twenty-five. With her Poe lived on the happiest terms, an almost ideal life of domestic peace, disturbed only by the want and illness that beset them after they went to live at Fordham, New York, where she died of consumption in 1847. All the testimony surrounds this death with singular pathos and lifts it to a pedestal side by side with the tragic romance of Bernardin de St. Pierre.

The last landmark in this crowded existence is the life in New York and in Fordham, the hamlet at the end of Manhattan Island, where the Poes resided from 1846 to 1849.

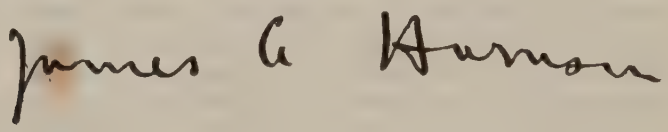
When Philadelphia had lost its interest and its charm, and nothing seemed possible there for the editor and author, Poe resumed his Bedouin-like existence, took up his little family and moved them to New York, where he rambled about the city, and lived in first one lodging and then another—Amity Street, Carmine Street, East Broadway, moving finally, in 1846, to the little cottage at Fordham. N. P. Willis befriended him; he attended Miss Lynch's literary *salons,* he delivered lectures. wrote for many reviews, and became in 1845 editor and first proprietor of *The Broadway Journal.* The same year (January 29, 1845) saw the publication of "The Raven," first in Willis's *Evening Mirror,* and then, a month later, in the *American Whig Review,* appearing again later in the year in book form as 'The Raven, and Other Poems.'

In 1846 the little house at Fordham sheltered the Poes, and here Virginia, the delicate wife, unstrung by suffering and overcome by anxieties of all kinds, succumbed in 1847, and Poe, frantic with grief, was left alone. "The Raven" had prophetically foreshadowed the situation—the lover, the death of a beautiful young woman, the

hopeless, haunting despair. What more was there to live for? And yet over the tomb rose the star of "Ulalume."

In all his later love scenes the writer of this sketch has never been able to discover anything but the purest and noblest feeling; no hint of an *amour* disturbs their purity; and when, on Poe's final visit to Richmond, he revisited Mrs. Shelton, it was to make an honorable proposal of himself to the Elmira Royster of his youth, his first love. She accepted the erratic poet, and the marriage seemed about to take place, when in October, 1849, the end came.

On his way home to Fordham to meet Mrs. Clemm and make the final arrangements, Poe stopped in Baltimore, and was there drugged to death by unknown persons during an exciting political campaign. He expired of brain delirium, superinduced by exposure and drugs, in one of the rooms of the Old Washington Hospital on Broadway, October 7, 1849.



EDGAR ALLAN POE

By W. P. TRENT

I SAW the other day, on the Corso Umberto Primo, two cheap volumes exposed in a bookseller's window. They attracted my attention because one was adorned with a cut of Byron, the other with a wretched likeness of Poe. I could not help contrasting them with a book I had just seen in the Piazza di Spagna—a well printed French monograph on the life and works of Emerson. The contrast seemed instructive. For some years Continental students, especially such as have had a doctor's dissertation to prepare, have been issuing elaborate treatises on this or that British or American writer of eminence—Thomson, Young, Crabbe, Hawthorne, for example; but, so far as my experience goes, cheap editions of the works of these authors are not often exposed in the windows of European book-shops. This means merely that an appeal to a small sophisticated class is one thing, an appeal to what may be fairly called a public, quite another. Some cultivated Frenchmen and Italians feel a deep admiration for Shelley and some for Emerson; but it is Scott and Byron, Cooper and Poe who may really be said to have conquered the Continent. On the other hand, it is equally plain that these conquerors have sometimes been severely, not to say scurvily, treated at home—that their triumph has not been universal and ungrudged.

To inquire why this is true with regard to Poe is perhaps as good a way as any to attack the difficult task of endeavoring to determine what he stands for in literature.

One reason for the impression Poe has made upon many readers in both the Old World and the New is to be found in the fact that his imagination was unique and striking, and most skilfully embodied in literary forms of which he was a consummate master—the melodious lyric of strange, haunting woe and the short story of psychological and physical horror; of marvelous yet plausible adventure; of mystery deftly analyzed and unraveled; of weird, inductible experience. He was not totally free of indebtedness to British and Continental writers of the romantic school, and he certainly gave the Old World very little of that "form and pressure" of the New World which it has continually demanded from American writers. He was very fortunate, too, in securing Baudelaire as a translator and sponsor; and doubtless his wayward life and his strange fate have helped to spread his reputation throughout the world. But when all is said, Poe's Continental fame is probably

based in the main, and firmly, upon the unique and impressive character of his genius.

But the lovers of another great American writer will at once ask: Did not Hawthorne also possess a unique and impressive genius, embodied not only in beautiful and weird short stories, but in sustained romances, in works of a scope which Poe could not compass? And the admirer of Poe must, if he be catholic in taste and judgment, answer that Hawthorne is superior to Poe in sustained genius and comparable to him in the unique and artistic character of his literary work. But Hawthorne's fame is by no means so cosmopolitan as that of Poe. Does it follow, then, that the extent of a writer's fame is not a very important test of his greatness? I do not think so. Without attempting the invidious and difficult task of allotting to two such writers their respective places in their country's literature, we may still point out that Hawthorne has the strength and the weakness of the artist whose genius attaches itself in the main to an epoch and a soil, and Poe the strength and the weakness of the artist whose genius inhabits a region "out of space, out of time." If Hawthorne's genius had been more universal, and if Poe had been less resolute in his artistic purposes and less clear and concrete in his intelligence, might it not have been the New Englander's face looking at me in Rome from the cover of that cheap book? To ask this question is at once to emphasize Poe's merits and to illustrate the value of cosmopolitan fame as a test of eminence.

Poe has made not only a very wide appeal but also a very strong one to some readers. This is another way of saying that his writings have, in our modern jargon, an "atmosphere" of their own; that he himself was endowed with "temperament;" that he is the god of their idolatry to many sympathetic souls. If one could completely explain this phenomenon, one would be master of most of the secrets of life. Without seeking to explain it, we may regard it as a prime factor in Poe's fame.

But writers of "temperament" almost invariably encounter antipathy as well as sympathy, and Poe has not escaped the workings of this law. There are readers who are deaf to haunting melodies, who shun all displays of morbidity, who dislike being made to shudder, who do not enjoy subtle analysis, who cherish a grudge against the inductable. In other words, there have been, there are now, and there probably always will be, persons insensible to Poe's merits and very keenly alive to his defects and limitations. Such antipathetic readers have been regrettably common in America. Sectional prejudice has been visible both in the excessive denunciation and in the

superlative praise Poe's work has received. His life and his character, too, have lent themselves to partisan treatment, which has not been without unfortunate consequences to the cause of impartial criticism. Narrow and rigid ideals of life and literature, inseparable from the rudimentary culture of an Anglo-Saxon democracy which has assimilated strains of population rather than of civilization, have militated against the frank acceptance of the Bohemian and rather decadent Poe as a truly great and original writer within well-defined limits. That he does not overtly make for moral betterment, that the beautiful and the strange rather than the useful and the normal dominate his writings, whether in verse or in prose, accounts in large measure for the fact that our Halls of Fame commemorate half-known or forgotten worthies and have no space for one of the most illustrious names in the entire literature of the Nineteenth Century. The phenomenon is somewhat startling, but it is also, in all probability, entirely transitory. Although it seems idle to expect that Poe will ever make a positive appeal to certain temperaments and certain orders of mind, it seems just as idle to suppose that the zeal of his admirers in America, strengthened as that is by the permanence of his fame abroad, will not in time overcome the indifference and suspicion with which the more utilitarian portion of our public has viewed both the man and his works.

This brief analysis of Poe's standing abroad and at home has been valueless if it does not suggest a few points upon which friends and foes and more or less disinterested students would do well to ponder. In the first place, it seems clear that Poe will gain, if his admirers somewhat moderate the exuberance of their claims in his behalf. If they freely admit that some of his stories, "Berenice" for example, are over-morbid, that most of his efforts at the grotesque are for the elect only, that acute and valuable though his criticism was it was singularly limited and self-centered, that his fingers touched but few strings of the lyre of poetry, that finally condonation is a word that has a better right to figure frequently in his biography than exculpation, we may expect the next quarter of a century to witness a sensible diminution of hostility and imperfect sympathy toward Poe in the reading public of America. Then again, despite Poe's ably expounded theory with regard to the non-existence of really sustained long poems—a theory which could easily be extended to other forms of literature—it remains true that the world has agreed that a few writers have displayed loftily sustained genius, and that these writers form a class apart from and above all others. The world may be wrong in this, but it is a world slow to confess mistakes of the sort; and I fear that Poe and certain

insouciant critics of our day will scarcely succeed in prostrating or standing on its head the pyramid formed by the hierarchies of genius. It is just as well to admit once for all that Poe, great and authentic though his achievements surely are, has a place considerably below the apex of the pyramid we are discussing—or imagining. This fact need not affect one whit the zeal with which his worshipers perform their private devotions, if they are as idolatrous as Baudelaire. The individual has his rights, as well as the world; and what Poe means or should mean to the reader to whom he makes a special appeal is something which in the last analysis must almost entirely escape the objective critic, and must partly escape even the most subtle and sympathetic of subjective or impressionistic critics. It is calm, objective criticism, however, that seems to do most to shape the opinions of the masses of men, that most helps to keep alive a writer's fame; and, if this be true, it is well for an author if his admirers come to some sort of understanding with those who care more for literature in the large than they do for any writer, no matter how illustrious. And, in the case of Poe, it is singularly easy for his admirers to make common cause with objective critics and students of literature.

Poe, both friendly and critical readers will agree, makes a specially strong and wide appeal because he was a master of both the harmonies—he was an exquisite poet and, at his best, the wielder of a prose style subtly adapted to the subjects he treated. "Israfel," "The Raven," "To One in Paradise," the lyric "To Helen," "The Fall of the House of Usher," "Ligeia," "Shadow," "Eleanora"—to name no others—these poems and stories could have proceeded only from a unique and masterly artist, and they are far, very far, from exhausting the best of his memorable achievements. Make this claim, and avoid using with regard to Poe and his works language that is appropriate only to Shakespeare or Milton or Swift or Scott —that is, to large, powerful geniuses—and observe, stanch advocate of his well-deserving and prospering cause, whether the intelligent and catholic-minded readers of your acquaintance will say you Nay. Point out the permanence of the appeal made by poetry, point out the reserve and self-control of Poe's art, emphasize the pathos of his struggles against inherited disease and an alien environment, dwell upon his merits and admit his limitations and defects, and what may be called the neutral body of readers is won for all time.

But behold!—what began as an inquiry has ended as a plea, so impossible is it to preserve an attitude of scientific impartiality in connection with literature, and especially in connection with a man and a writer like Poe, interesting in his life and fascinating in his

works. A plea, however, for ungrudging recognition of the distinction conferred upon American literature by the greatest of Southern writers is one which comes with no bad grace from a Southern man; and a plea for balanced as opposed to partisan and rhapsodical criticism is not out of place in a work which aims to give a conspectus of the literary achievements of a homogeneous group of States. Poe is the greatest ornament of Southern Literature, and he is one of the chief glories of the literature of our nation and our race. We feel all the more convinced of this fact because we find that the praise we give him is echoed back from the four quarters of the globe. Wherever men appreciate the strange and the beautiful embodied in words there Poe is known and admired. Writers in other lands have looked upon him as their master, and they have expressed their wonder when they have been told that a not inconsiderable proportion of his own countrymen are blind to his merits. They do not understand the phenomenon, mainly on account of the fact that Poe's limitations scarcely affect them, since they are not called upon to treat him as the competitor for literary honors, but almost solely as the bestower of literary pleasure. We can understand the phenomenon better because we know that in America he has been too often pitted against this writer or that, and made the subject of partisan praise or blame. In his interest, as well as in that of our national literature, we perceive that it is desirable, for the time being, at least, to decline making invidious comparisons and extravagant claims, to insist only upon such of his merits as have been acknowledged by millions of readers at home and abroad, and to ask whether it really is not an insult to ourselves and our literature to suppose that the decadent and abnormal elements in his work cannot easily be thrown off and the sound and noble elements assimilated. He is a poet and story-teller for all time. Let us hope that he will soon be a source of pleasure and pride to most of his fellow countrymen.

W. P. Trent.

TO HELEN

Helen, thy beauty is to me
  Like those Nicéan barks of yore,
That gently, o'er a perfumed sea,
  The weary, way-worn wanderer bore
  To his own native shore.

On desperate seas long wont to roam,
  Thy hyacinth hair, thy classic face,
Thy Naiad airs have brought me home
  To the glory that was Greece,
And the grandeur that was Rome.

Lo! in yon brilliant window-niche
  How statue-like I see thee stand!
  The agate lamp within thy hand,
Ah! Psyche, from the regions which
  Are Holy Land!

ISRAFEL

And the angel Israfel, whose heartstrings are a lute, and who has the sweetest voice of all God's creatures.—*Koran.*

In Heaven a spirit doth dwell
  "Whose heart-strings are a lute;"
None sing so wildly well
As the angel Israfel,
And the giddy stars (so legends tell)
Ceasing their hymns, attend the spell
  Of his voice, all mute.

Tottering above
  In her highest noon,
  The enamoured moon
Blushes with love,
  While, to listen, the red levin
  (With the rapid Pleiads, even,
  Which were seven,)
  Pauses in Heaven.

And they say (the starry choir
  And the other listening things)
That Israfeli's fire
Is owing to that lyre
  By which he sits and sings—
The trembling living wire
  Of those unusual strings.

But the skies that angels trod,
  Where deep thoughts are a duty,
Where Love's a grown-up God,
  Where the Houri glances are
Imbued with all the beauty
  Which we worship in a star.

Therefore, thou art not wrong,
  Israfeli, who despisest
An unimpassioned song;
To thee the laurels belong,
  Best bard, because the wisest!
Merrily live, and long!

The ecstasies above
  With thy burning measures suit—
Thy grief, thy joy, thy hate, thy love,
  With the fervor of thy lute—
Well may the stars be mute!

Yes, Heaven is thine; but this
  Is a world of sweets and sours;
  Our flowers are merely—flowers,
And the shadow of thy perfect bliss
  Is the sunshine of ours.

If I could dwell
Where Israfel
  Hath dwelt, and he where I,
He might not sing so wildly well
  A mortal melody,
While a bolder note than this might swell
  From my lyre within the sky.

ELDORADO

Gaily bedight,
A gallant knight,
In sunshine and in shadow,
Had journeyed long,
Singing a song,
In search of Eldorado.

But he grew old—
This knight so bold—
And o'er his heart a shadow
Fell as he found
No spot of ground
That looked like Eldorado.

And, as his strength
Failed him at length,
He met a pilgrim shadow—
"Shadow," said he,
"Where can it be—
This land of Eldorado?"

"Over the Mountains
Of the Moon,
Down the Valley of the Shadow,
Ride, boldly ride,"
The shade replied—
"If you seek for Eldorado!"

THE CITY IN THE SEA

Lo! Death has reared himself a throne
In a strange city lying alone
Far down within the dim West,
Where the good and the bad and the worst and the best
Have gone to their eternal rest.
Their shrines and palaces and towers
(Time-eaten towers that tremble not)
Resemble nothing that is ours.
Around, by lifting winds forgot,
Resignedly beneath the sky
The melancholy waters lie.
No rays from the holy heaven come down
On the long night-time of that town;
But light from out the lurid sea
Streams up the turrets silently—
Gleams up the pinnacles far and free—
Up domes—up spires—up kingly halls—
Up fanes—up Babylon-like walls—
Up shadowy long-forgotten bowers
Of sculptured ivy and stone flowers—
Up many and many a marvelous shrine

Whose wreathèd friezes intertwine
The viol, the violet, and the vine.
Resignedly beneath the sky
The melancholy waters lie.
So blend the turrets and shadows there
That all seem pendulous in air,
While from a proud tower in the town
Death looks gigantically down.

There open fanes and gaping graves
Yawn level with the luminous waves;
But not the riches there that lie
In each idol's diamond eye—
Not the gaily-jewelled dead
Tempt the waters from their bed;

For no ripples curl, alas!
Along that wilderness of glass—
No swellings tell that winds may be
Upon some far-off happier sea—
No heavings hint that winds have been
On seas less hideously serene.

But lo, a stir is in the air!
The wave—there is a movement there!
As if the towers had thrust aside,
In slightly sinking, the dull tide—
As if their tops had feebly given
A void within the filmy Heaven.
The waves have now a redder glow—
The hours are breathing faint and low—
And when, amid no earthly moans,
  Down, down that town shall settle hence,
Hell, rising from a thousand thrones,
  Shall do it reverence.

LENORE

Ah, broken is the golden bowl! the spirit flown forever!
Let the bell toll!—a saintly soul floats on the Stygian river;
And, Guy De Vere, hast thou no tear?—weep now or never more!
See! on yon drear and rigid bier low lies thy love, Lenore!
Come! let the burial rite be read—the funeral song be sung—
An anthem for the queenliest dead that ever died so young—
A dirge for her the doubly dead in that she died so young.

"Wretches! ye loved her for her wealth and hated her for her pride,
And when she fell in feeble health, ye blessed her—that she died!
How shall the ritual, then, be read?—the requiem how be sung
By you—by yours, the evil eye—by yours, the slanderous tongue
That did to death the innocence that died, and died so young?"

Peccavimus; but rave not thus! and let a Sabbath song
Go up to God so solemnly the dead may feel no wrong.
The sweet Lenore hath gone before, with Hope, that flew beside,
Leaving thee wild for the dear child that should have been thy bride—
For her, the fair and debonair, that now so lowly lies,
The life upon her yellow hair but not within her eyes—
The life still there, upon her hair—the death upon her eyes.

"Avaunt! avaunt! from fiends below, the indignant ghost is riven—
From Hell unto a high estate far up within the Heaven—
From grief and groan, to a golden throne, beside the King of Heaven!
Let no bell toll, then—lest her soul, amid its hallowed mirth,
Should catch the note, as it doth float up from the damnèd Earth!
And I!—to-night my heart is light!—No dirge will I upraise,
But waft the angel on her flight with a pæan of old days."

THE RAVEN

Once upon a midnight dreary, while I pondered, weak and weary,
Over many a quaint and curious volume of forgotten lore—
While I nodded, nearly napping, suddenly there came a tapping
As of some one gently rapping, rapping at my chamber door.
"'T is some visitor," I muttered, "tapping at my chamber door—
Only this and nothing more."

Ah, distinctly I remember it was in the bleak December
And each separate dying ember wrought its ghost upon the floor.
Eagerly I wished the morrow;—vainly I had sought to borrow
From my books surcease of sorrow—sorrow for the lost Lenore—
For the rare and radiant maiden whom the angels name Lenore—
Nameless here for evermore.

And the silken sad uncertain rustling of each purple curtain
Thrilled me—filled me with fantastic terrors never felt before;
So that now, to still the beating of my heart, I stood repeating
"'T is some visitor entreating entrance at my chamber door—
Some late visitor entreating entrance at my chamber door—
This it is and nothing more."

Presently my soul grew stronger; hesitating then no longer,
"Sir," said I, "or Madam, truly your forgiveness I implore;
But the fact is I was napping, and so gently you came rapping,
And so faintly you came tapping, tapping at my chamber door,
That I scarce was sure I heard you"—here I opened wide the door—
Darkness there and nothing more.

Deep into that darkness peering, long I stood there wondering, fearing,
Doubting, dreaming dreams no mortals ever dared to dream before;
But the silence was unbroken, and the stillness gave no token,
And the only word there spoken was the whispered word, "Lenore!"—
This I whispered, and an echo murmured back the word, "Lenore!"
Merely this and nothing more.

Back into the chamber turning, all my soul within me burning,
Soon again I heard a tapping somewhat louder than before,
"Surely," said I, "surely that is something at my window lattice;
Let me see, then, what thereat is and this mystery explore—
Let my heart be still a moment and this mystery explore—
'Tis the wind and nothing more."

Open here I flung the shutter, when, with many a flirt and flutter
In there stepped a stately Raven of the saintly days of yore.
Not the least obeisance made he; not a minute stopped or stayed he;

But, with mien of lord or lady, perched above my chamber door—
Perched upon a bust of Pallas just above my chamber door—
Perched, and sat, and nothing more.

Then this ebony bird beguiling my sad fancy into smiling,
By the grave and stern decorum of the countenance it wore,
"Though thy crest be shorn and shaven, thou," I said, "art sure no craven,
Ghastly, grim and ancient Raven wandering from the Nightly shore—
Tell me what thy lordly name is on the Night's Plutonian shore!"
Quoth the Raven, "Nevermore."

Much I marvelled this ungainly fowl to hear discourse so plainly,
Though its answer little meaning—little relevancy bore;
For we cannot help agreeing that no living human being
Ever yet was blessed with seeing bird above his chamber door—
Bird or beast upon the sculptured bust above his chamber door,
With such name as "Nevermore."

But the Raven, sitting lonely on that placid bust, spoke only
That one word, as if his soul in that one word he did outpour.
Nothing further then he uttered; not a feather then he fluttered—
Till I scarcely more than muttered, "Other friends have flown before—
On the morrow *he* will leave me, as my Hopes have flown before."
Then the bird said, "Nevermore."

Startled at the stillness broken by reply so aptly spoken,
"Doubtless," said I, "what it utters is its only stock and store
Caught from some unhappy master whom unmerciful Disaster
Followed fast and followed faster till his songs one burden bore—
Till the dirges of his Hope that melancholy burden bore
Of 'Never—nevermore.'"

But the Raven still beguiling all my fancy into smiling,
Straight I wheeled a cushioned seat in front of bird and bust and door;
Then, upon the velvet sinking, I betook myself to linking
Fancy unto fancy, thinking what this ominous bird of yore—
What this grim, ungainly, ghastly, gaunt, and ominous bird of yore
Meant in croaking "Nevermore."

Thus I sat engaged in guessing, but no syllable expressing
To the fowl whose fiery eyes now burned into my bosom's core;
This and more I sat divining, with my head at ease reclining
On the cushion's velvet lining that the lamp-light gloated o'er,
But whose velvet violet lining with the lamp-light gloating o'er
She shall press, ah, nevermore.

Then, methought, the air grew denser, perfumed from an unseen censer
Swung by Seraphim whose foot-falls tinkled on the tufted floor.
"Wretch," I cried, "thy God hath lent thee—by these angels he hath sent thee
Respite—respite and nepenthe from thy memories of Lenore!
Quaff, oh, quaff this kind nepenthe and forget this lost Lenore!"
Quoth the Raven, "Nevermore."

"Prophet!" said I, "thing of evil!—prophet still, if bird or devil!—
Whether Tempter sent, or whether tempest tossed thee here ashore,
Desolate yet all undaunted, on this desert land enchanted—
On this home by Horror haunted—tell me truly, I implore—
Is there—is there balm in Gilead?—tell me—tell me, I implore!"
Quoth the Raven, "Nevermore."

"Prophet!" said I, "thing of evil—prophet still, if bird or devil!
By that Heaven that bends above us—by that God we both adore—
Tell this soul with sorrow laden if, within the distant Aidenn,
It shall clasp a sainted maiden whom the angels name Lenore—
Clasp a rare and radiant maiden whom the angels name Lenore."
Quoth the Raven, "Nevermore."

"Be that word our sign of parting, bird or fiend!" I shrieked, upstarting—
"Get thee back into the tempest and the Night's Plutonian shore!
Leave no black plume as a token of that lie thy soul hath spoken!
Leave my loneliness unbroken!—quit the bust above my door!
Take thy beak from out my heart, and take thy form from off my door!"
Quoth the Raven, "Nevermore."

And the Raven, never flitting, still is sitting, still is sitting
On the pallid bust of Pallas just above my chamber door;
And his eyes have all the seeming of a demon's that is dreaming,
And the lamp-light o'er him streaming throws his shadow on the floor;
And my soul from out that shadow that lies floating on the floor
Shall be lifted—nevermore.

ULALUME

The skies they were ashen and sober;
  The leaves they were crispèd and sere—
  The leaves they were withering and sere,
It was night in the lonesome October
  Of my most immemorial year;
It was hard by the dim lake of Auber,
  In the misty mid region of Weir—
It was down by the dank tarn of Auber
  In the ghoul-haunted woodland of Weir.

Here once, through an alley Titanic,
  Of cypress, I roamed with my soul—
  Of cypress, with Psyche, my Soul.
These were days when my heart was volcanic
  As the scoriac rivers that roll—
  As the lavas that restlessly roll
Their sulphurous currents down Yaanek
  In the ultimate climes of the pole—
That groan as they roll down Mount Yaanek
  In the realms of the boreal pole.

Our talk had been serious and sober,
  But our thoughts they were palsied and sere—
  Our memories were treacherous and sere,
For we knew not the month was October,
  And we marked not the night of the year—
  (Ah, night of all nights in the year!)
We noted not the dim lake of Auber—
  (Though once we had journeyed down here)—
Remembered not the dank tarn of Auber,
  Nor the ghoul-haunted woodland of Weir.

And now, as the night was senescent
  And star-dials pointed to morn—
  As the star-dials hinted of morn,
At the end of our path a liquescent
  And nebulous lustre was born

Out of which a miraculous crescent
  Arose with a duplicate horn—
Astarte's bediamonded crescent
  Distinct with its duplicate horn.

And I said—"She is warmer than Dian;
  She rolls through an ether of sighs—
  She revels in a region of sighs:
She has seen that the tears are not dry on
  These cheeks, where the worm never dies,
And has come past the stars of the Lion
  To point us the path to the skies—
  To the Lethean peace of the skies—
Come up, in despite of the Lion,
  To shine on us with her bright eyes—
Come up through the lair of the Lion,
  With love in her luminous eyes."

But Psyche, uplifting her finger,
  Said—"Sadly this star I mistrust—
  Her pallor I strangely mistrust:
Oh, hasten!—oh, let us not linger!
  Oh, fly!—let us fly!—for we must."
In terror she spoke, letting sink her
  Wings until they trailed in the dust—
In agony sobbed letting sink her
  Plumes till they trailed in the dust—
  Till they sorrowfully trailed in the dust.

I replied—"This is nothing but dreaming:
  Let us on by this tremulous light!
  Let us bathe in this crystalline light!
Its Sibyllic splendor is beaming
  With Hope and in Beauty to-night:—
  See!—it flickers up the sky through the night!
Ah, we safely may trust to its gleaming,
  And be sure it will lead us aright—
Ah, we safely may trust to its gleaming,
  That cannot but guide us aright,
  Since it flickers up to Heaven through the night."

Thus I pacified Psyche and kissed her,
And tempted her out of her gloom—
And conquered her scruples and gloom;
And we passed to the end of the vista,
But were stopped by the door of a tomb—
By the door of a legended tomb;
And I said—"What is written, sweet sister,
On the door of this legended tomb?"
She replied—"Ulalume—Ulalume—
'Tis the vault of thy lost Ulalume!"

Then my heart it grew ashen and sober
As the leaves that were crispèd and sere—
As the leaves that were withering and sere,
And I cried—"It was surely October
On this very night of last year
That I journeyed—I journeyed down here—
That I brought a dread burden down here:
On the night of all nights in the year,
Ah, what demon has tempted me here?
Well I know, now, this dim lake of Auber—
This misty mid region of Weir.
Well I know, now, this dank tarn of Auber,
This ghoul-haunted woodland of Weir."

ANNABEL LEE

It was many and many a year ago,
In a kingdom by the sea,
That a maiden there lived whom you may know
By the name of ANNABEL LEE;
And this maiden she lived with no other thought
Than to love and be loved by me.

I was a child and she was a child,
In this kingdom by the sea,
But we loved with a love that was more than love—
I and my Annabel Lee;
With a love that the wingèd seraphs of heaven
Coveted her and me.

And this was the reason that, long ago,
In this kingdom by the sea,
A wind blew out of a cloud, chilling
My beautiful Annabel Lee;
So that her highborn kinsmen came
And bore her away from me.
To shut her up in a sepulchre
In this kingdom by the sea.

The angels, not half so happy in heaven,
Went envying her and me—
Yes!—that was the reason (as all men know,
In this kingdom by the sea)
That the wind came out of the cloud by night,
Chilling and killing my Annabel Lee.

But our love it was stronger by far than the love
Of those who were older than we—
Of many far wiser than we—
And neither the angels in heaven above,
Nor the demons down under the sea,
Can ever dissever my soul from the soul
Of the beautiful Annabel Lee:

For the moon never beams, without bringing me dreams
Of the beautiful Annabel Lee;
And the stars never rise, but I feel the bright eyes
Of the beautiful Annabel Lee;
And so, all the night-tide, I lie down by the side
Of my darling—my darling—my life and my bride,
In the sepulchre there by the sea,
In her tomb by the sounding sea.

THE BELLS

I

Hear the sledges with the bells—
Silver bells!
What a world of merriment their melody foretells!
How they tinkle, tinkle, tinkle,
In the icy air of night!
While the stars that oversprinkle
All the heavens seem to twinkle
With the crystalline delight;
Keeping time, time, time,
In a sort of Runic rhyme,
To the tintinnabulation that so musically wells
From the bells, bells, bells, bells,
Bells, bells, bells—
From the jingling and the tinkling of the bells.

II

Hear the mellow wedding bells—
Golden bells!
What a world of happiness their harmony foretells!
Through the balmy air of night
How they ring out their delight!
From the molten-golden notes,
And all in tune,
What a liquid ditty floats
To the turtle-dove that listens, while she gloats
On the moon!
Oh, from out the sounding cells,
What a gush of euphony voluminously wells!
How it swells!
How it dwells
On the Future! how it tells
Of the rapture that impels
To the swinging and the ringing
Of the bells, bells, bells,
Of the bells, bells, bells, bells,
Bells, bells, bells—
To the rhyming and the chiming of the bells!

III

Hear the loud alarum bells—
Brazen bells!
What a tale of terror, now, their turbulency tells!
In the startled ear of night
How they scream out their affright!
Too much horrified to speak,
They can only shriek, shriek,
Out of tune,
In a clamorous appealing to the mercy of the fire,
In a mad expostulation with the deaf and frantic fire
Leaping higher, higher, higher,
With a desperate desire,
And a resolute endeavor
Now—now to sit or never,
By the side of the pale-faced moon.
Oh, the bells, bells, bells!
What a tale their terror tells
Of Despair!
How they clang, and clash, and roar.

What a horror they outpour
On the bosom of the palpitating air!
Yet the ear it fully knows,
By the twanging
And the clanging,
How the danger ebbs and flows:
Yet the ear distinctly tells,
In the jangling
And the wrangling,
How the danger sinks and swells,
By the sinking or the swelling in the anger of the bells—
Of the bells,
Of the bells, bells, bells, bells,
Bells, bells, bells—
In the clamor and the clangor of the bells!

IV

Hear the tolling of the bells—
Iron bells!
What a world of solemn thought their monody compels!
In the silence of the night,
How we shiver with affright
At the melancholy menace of their tone;
For every sound that floats
From the rust within their throats
Is a groan.
And the people—ah, the people—
They that dwell up in the steeple,
All alone,
And who tolling, tolling, tolling,
In that muffled monotone,
Feel a glory in so rolling
On the human heart a stone—
They are neither man nor woman—
They are neither brute nor human—
They are Ghouls:
And their king it is who tolls;
And he rolls, rolls, rolls,
Rolls
A pæan from the bells!
And his merry bosom swells
With the pæan of the bells!
And he dances, and he yells;
Keeping time, time, time,
In a sort of Runic rhyme,
To the pæan of the bells—
Of the bells:
Keeping time, time, time,
In a sort of Runic rhyme,
To the throbbing of the bells—
Of the bells, bells, bells—
To the sobbing of the bells;
Keeping time, time, time,
As he knells, knells, knells,

In a happy Runic rhyme,
To the rolling of the bells—
Of the bells, bells, bells—
To the tolling of the bells—
Of the bells, bells, bells, bells,
Bells, bells, bells—
To the moaning and the groaning of the bells.

THE VALLEY OF UNREST

Once it smiled a silent dell
Where the people did not dwell;
They had gone unto the wars,
Trusting to the mild-eyed stars,
Nightly, from their azure towers,
To keep watch above the flowers,
In the midst of which all day
The red sun-light lazily lay.
Now each visitor shall confess
The sad valley's restlessness.
Nothing there is motionless—
Nothing save the airs that brood
Over the magic solitude.
Ah, by no wind are stirred those trees
That palpitate like the chill seas
Around the misty Hebrides!
Ah, by no wind those clouds are driven
That rustle through the unquiet Heaven
Uneasily, from morn till even,
Over the violets there that lie
In myriad types of the human eye—
Over the lilies there that wave
And weep above a nameless grave
They wave:—from out their fragrant tops
Eternal dews come down in drops.
They weep:—from off their delicate stems
Perennial tears descend in gems.

THE CASK OF AMONTILLADO

By permission of H. S. Stone and Company.

(ROME)

THE thousand injuries of Fortunato I had borne as I best could; but when he ventured upon insult, I vowed revenge. You, who so well know the nature of my soul, will not suppose, however, that I gave utterance to a threat. *At length* I would be avenged; this was a point definitely settled —but the very definitiveness with which it was resolved precluded the idea of risk. I must not only punish, but punish with impunity. A wrong is unredressed when retribution overtakes its redresser. It is equally unredressed when the avenger fails to make himself felt as such to him who has done the wrong.

It must be understood that neither by word nor deed had I given Fortunato cause to doubt my good-will. I continued, as was my wont, to smile in his face, and he did not perceive that my smile *now* was at the thought of his immolation.

He had a weak point—this Fortunato—although in other regards he was a man to be respected and even feared. He prided himself on his connoisseurship in wine. Few Italians have the true virtuoso spirit. For the most part their enthusiasm is adopted to suit the time and opportunity—to practise imposture upon the British and Austrian millionaires. In painting and gemmary, Fortunato, like his countrymen, was a quack—but in the matter of old wines he was sincere. In this respect I did not differ from him materially: I was skilful in the Italian vintages myself, and bought largely whenever I could.

It was about dusk, one evening during the supreme madness of the carnival season, that I encountered my friend. He accosted me with excessive warmth, for he had been drinking much. The man wore motley. He had on a tight-fitting parti-striped dress, and his head was surmounted by the conical cap and bells. I was so pleased to see him that I thought I should never have done wringing his hand.

I said to him, "My dear Fortunato, you are luckily met.

How remarkably well you are looking to-day! But I have received a pipe of what passes for Amontillado, and I have my doubts."

"How?" said he. "Amontillado? A pipe? Impossible! And in the middle of the carnival!"

"I have my doubts," I replied; "and I was silly enough to pay the full Amontillado price without consulting you in the matter. You were not to be found, and I was fearful of losing a bargain."

"Amontillado!"

"I have my doubts."

"Amontillado!"

"And I must satisfy them."

"Amontillado!"

"As you are engaged, I am on my way to Luchesi. If any one has a critical turn, it is he. He will tell me—"

"Luchesi cannot tell Amontillado from Sherry."

"And yet some fools will have it that his taste is a match for your own."

"Come, let us go."

"Whither?"

"To your vaults."

"My friend, no; I will not impose upon your good-nature. I perceive you have an engagement. Luchesi—"

"I have no engagement—come."

"My friend, no. It is not the engagement, but the severe cold with which I perceive you are afflicted. The vaults are insufferably damp. They are incrusted with nitre."

"Let us go, nevertheless. The cold is merely nothing. Amontillado! You have been imposed upon. And as for Luchesi, he cannot distinguish Sherry from Amontillado."

Thus speaking, Fortunato possessed himself of my arm. Putting on a mask of black silk, and drawing a roquelaire closely about my person, I suffered him to hurry me to my palazzo.

There were no attendants at home; they had absconded to make merry in honor of the time. I had told them that I should not return until the morning, and had given them explicit orders not to stir from the house. These orders were

sufficient, I well knew, to insure their immediate disappearance, one and all, as soon as my back was turned.

I took from their sconces two flambeaus, and giving one to Fortunato, bowed him through several suites of rooms to the archway that led into the vaults. I passed down a long and winding staircase, requesting him to be cautious as he followed. We came at length to the foot of the descent, and stood together on the damp ground of the catacombs of the Montresors.

The gait of my friend was unsteady, and the bells upon his cap jingled as he strode.

"The pipe," said he.

"It is farther on," said I; "but observe the white web-work which gleams from these cavern walls."

He turned towards me, and looked into my eyes with two filmy orbs that distilled the rheum of intoxication.

"Nitre?" he asked at length.

"Nitre," I replied. "How long have you had that cough?"

"Ugh! ugh! ugh!—ugh! ugh! ugh!—ugh! ugh! ugh!—ugh! ugh! ugh!—ugh! ugh! ugh!"

My poor friend found it impossible to reply for many minutes.

"It is nothing," he said, at last.

"Come," I said, with decision, "we will go back; your health is precious. You are rich, respected, admired, beloved; you are happy, as once I was. You are a man to be missed. For me it is no matter. We will go back; you will be ill, and I cannot be responsible. Besides, there is Luchesi—"

"Enough," he said; "the cough is a mere nothing; it will not kill me. I shall not die of a cough."

"True—true," I replied; "and, indeed, I had no intention of alarming you unnecessarily—but you should use all proper caution. A draught of this Medoc will defend us from the damps."

Here I knocked off the neck of a bottle which I drew from a long row of its fellows that lay upon the mould.

"Drink," I said, presenting him the wine.

He raised it to his lips with a leer. He paused and nodded to me familiarly, while his bells jingled.

"I drink," he said, "to the buried that repose around us."

"And I to your long life."

He again took my arm, and we proceeded.

"These vaults," he said, "are extensive."

"The Montresors," I replied, "were a great and numerous family."

"I forget your arms."

"A huge human foot d'or, in a field azure; the foot crushes a serpent rampant whose fangs are imbedded in the heel."

"And the motto?"

"*Nemo me impune lacessit.*"

"Good!" he said.

The wine sparkled in his eyes and the bells jingled. My own fancy grew warm with the Medoc. We had passed through walls of piled bones, with casks and puncheons intermingling, into the inmost recesses of the catacombs. I paused again, and this time I made bold to seize Fortunato by an arm above the elbow.

"The nitre!" I said; "see, it increases. It hangs like moss upon the vaults. We are below the river's bed. The drops of moisture trickle among the bones. Come, we will go back ere it is too late. Your cough—"

"It is nothing," he said; "let us go on. But first, another draught of the Medoc."

I broke and reached him a flagon of De Grâve. He emptied it at a breath. His eyes flashed with a fierce light. He laughed and threw the bottle upwards with a gesticulation I did not understand.

I looked at him in surprise. He repeated the movement—a grotesque one.

"You do not comprehend?" he said.

"Not I," I replied.

"Then you are not of the brotherhood."

"How?"

"You are not of the masons."

"Yes, yes," I said, "yes, yes."

"You? Impossible! A mason?"

"A mason," I replied.

"A sign," he said.

"It is this," I answered, producing a trowel from beneath the folds of my roquelaire.

"You jest," he exclaimed, recoiling a few paces. "But let us proceed to the Amontillado."

"Be it so," I said, replacing the tool beneath the cloak, and again offering him my arm. He leaned upon it heavily. We continued our route in search of the Amontillado. We passed through a range of low arches, descended, passed on, and, descending again, arrived at a deep crypt, in which the foulness of the air caused our flambeaus rather to glow than flame.

At the most remote end of the crypt there appeared another less spacious. Its walls had been lined with human remains, piled to the vault overhead, in the fashion of the great catacombs of Paris. Three sides of this interior crypt were still ornamented in this manner. From the fourth the bones had been thrown down, and lay promiscuously upon the earth, forming at one point a mound of some size. Within the wall thus exposed by the displacing of the bones, we perceived a still interior recess, in depth about four feet, in width three, in height six or seven. It seemed to have been constructed for no especial use within itself, but formed merely the interval between two of the colossal supports of the roof of the catacombs, and was backed by one of their circumscribing walls of solid granite.

It was in vain that Fortunato, uplifting his dull torch, endeavored to pry into the depth of the recess. Its termination the feeble light did not enable us to see.

"Proceed," I said; "herein is the Amontillado. As for Luchesi—"

"He is an ignoramus," interrupted my friend, as he stepped unsteadily forward, while I followed immediately at his heels. In an instant he had reached the extremity of the niche, and finding his progress arrested by the rock, stood stupidly bewildered. A moment more and I had fettered him to the granite. In its surface were two iron staples, distant from each other about two feet, horizontally. From one of these depended a short chain, from the other a padlock. Throwing the links about his waist, it was but the work of a few seconds to secure it. He was too much astounded to resist. Withdrawing the key, I stepped back from the recess.

"Pass your hand," I said, "over the wall; you cannot help feeling the nitre. Indeed it is *very* damp. Once more let me

implore you to return. No? Then I must positively leave you. But I must first render you all the little attentions in my power."

"The Amontillado!" ejaculated my friend, not yet recovered from his astonishment.

"True," I replied; "the Amontillado."

As I said these words I busied myself among the pile of bones of which I have before spoken. Throwing them aside, I soon uncovered a quantity of building stone and mortar. With these materials and with the aid of my trowel, I began vigorously to wall up the entrance of the niche.

I had scarcely laid the first tier of the masonry when I discovered that the intoxication of Fortunato had in a great measure worn off. The earliest indication I had of this was a low moaning cry from the depth of the recess. It was *not* the cry of a drunken man. There was then a long and obstinate silence. I laid the second tier, and the third, and the fourth; and then I heard the furious vibrations of the chain. The noise lasted for several minutes, during which, that I might hearken to it with the more satisfaction, I ceased my labors and sat down upon the bones. When at last the clanking subsided, I resumed the trowel, and finished without interruption the fifth, the sixth, and the seventh tier. The wall was now nearly upon a level with my breast. I again paused, and holding the flambeaus over the mason work, threw a few feeble rays upon the figure within.

A succession of loud and shrill screams, bursting suddenly from the throat of the chained form, seemed to thrust me violently back. For a brief moment I hesitated—I trembled. Unsheathing my rapier, I began to grope with it about the recess; but the thought of an instant reassured me. I placed my hand upon the solid fabric of the catacombs, and felt satisfied. I reapproached the wall. I replied to the yells of him who clamored. I reëchoed—I aided—I surpassed them in volume and strength. I did this, and the clamorer grew still.

It was now midnight, and my task was drawing to a close. I had completed the eighth, the ninth, and the tenth tier. I had finished a portion of the last and the eleventh; there remained but a single stone to be fitted and plastered in.

I struggled with its weight; I placed it partially in its destined position. But now there came from out the niche a low laugh that erected the hairs upon my head. It was succeeded by a sad voice, which I had difficulty in recognizing as that of the noble Fortunato. The voice said—

"Ha! ha! ha!—he! he! he!—a very good joke indeed—an excellent jest. We will have many a rich laugh about it at the palazzo—he! he! he!—over our wine—he! he! he!"

"The Amontillado!" I said.

"He! he! he!—he! he! he!—yes, the Amontillado. But is it not getting late? Will not they be awaiting us at the palazzo—the Lady Fortunato and the rest? Let us be gone."

"Yes," I said, "let us be gone."

"*For the love of God, Montresor!*"

"Yes," I said, "for the love of God!"

But to these words I hearkened in vain for a reply. I grew impatient. I called aloud—

"Fortunato!"

No answer. I called again—

"Fortunato!"

No answer still. I thrust a torch through the remaining aperture and let it fall within. There came forth in return only a jingling of the bells. My heart grew sick—on account of the dampness of the catacombs. I hastened to make an end of my labor. I forced the last stone into its position; I plastered it up. Against the new masonry I reërected the old rampart of bones. For the half of a century no mortal has disturbed them. *In pace requiescat.*

SILENCE—A FABLE

The mountain pinnacles slumber; valleys, crags, and caves *are silent.*

"LISTEN to *me,*" said the Demon, as he placed his hand upon my head. "The region of which I speak is a dreary region in Libya, by the borders of the river Zäire. And there is no quiet there, nor silence.

"The waters of the river have a saffron and sickly hue; and they flow not onward to the sea, but palpitate forever and forever beneath the red eye of the sun with a tumultuous and convulsive motion. For many miles on either side of the river's oozy bed is a pale desert of gigantic water-lilies. They sigh one unto the other in that solitude, and stretch towards the heaven their long and ghastly necks, and nod to and fro their everlasting heads. And there is an indistinct murmur which cometh out from among them like the rushing of subterrene water. And they sigh one unto the other.

"But there is a boundary to their realm—the boundary of the dark, horrible, lofty forest. There, like the waves about the Hebrides, the low underwood is agitated continually. But there is no wind throughout the heaven. And the tall primeval trees rock eternally hither and thither with a crashing and mighty sound. And from their high summits, one by one, drop everlasting dews. And at the roots strange poisonous flowers lie writhing in perturbed slumber. And overhead, with a rustling and loud noises, the gray clouds rush westwardly forever, until they roll, a cataract, over the fiery wall of the horizon. But there is no wind throughout the heaven. And by the shores of the river Zäire there is neither quiet nor silence.

"It was night, and the rain fell; and, falling, it was rain, but having fallen, it was blood. And I stood in the morass among the tall lilies, and the rain fell upon my head—and the lilies sighed one unto the other in the solemnity of their desolation.

"And, all at once, the moon arose through the thin ghastly mist, and was crimson in color. And mine eyes fell upon a huge gray rock which stood by the shore of the river, and

was lighted by the light of the moon. And the rock was gray, and ghastly, and tall—and the rock was gray. Upon its front were characters engraven in the stone; and I walked through the morass of water-lilies, until I came close unto the shore, that I might read the characters upon the stone. But I could not decipher them. And I was going back into the morass, when the moon shone with a fuller red, and I turned and looked again upon the rock, and upon the characters—and the characters were DESOLATION.

"And I looked upwards, and there stood a man upon the summit of the rock; and I hid myself among the water-lilies that I might discover the actions of the man. And the man was tall and stately in form, and was wrapped up from his shoulders to his feet in the toga of old Rome. And the outlines of his figure were indistinct—but his features were the features of a deity; for the mantle of the night, and of the mist, and of the moon, and of the dew, had left uncovered the features of his face. And his brow was lofty with thought, and his eye wild with care; and in the few furrows upon his cheek I read the fables of sorrow, and weariness, and disgust with mankind, and a longing after solitude.

"And the man sat upon the rock, and leaned his head upon his hand, and looked out upon the desolation. He looked down into the low, unquiet shrubbery, and up into the tall primeval trees, and up higher at the rustling heaven, and into the crimson moon. And I lay close within shelter of the lilies, and observed the actions of the man. And the man trembled in the solitude—but the night waned and he sat upon the rock.

"And the man turned his attention from the heaven, and looked out upon the dreary river Zäire, and upon the yellow ghastly waters, and upon the pale legions of the water-lilies. And the man listened to the sighs of the water-lilies, and to the murmur that came up from among them. And I lay close within my covert and observed the actions of the man. And the man trembled in the solitude—but the night waned, and he sat upon the rock.

"Then I went down into the recesses of the morass, and waded afar in among the wilderness of the lilies and called unto the hippopotami which dwelt among the fens in the recesses of the morass. And the hippopotami heard my call,

and came, with the behemoth, unto the foot of the rock, and roared loudly and fearfully beneath the moon. And I lay close within my covert and observed the actions of the man. And the man trembled in the solitude—but the night waned, and he sat upon the rock.

"Then I cursed the elements with the curse of tumult; and a frightful tempest gathered in the heaven, where before there had been no wind. And the heaven became livid with the violence of the tempest—and the rain beat upon the head of the man—and the floods of the river came down—and the river was tormented into foam—and the water-lilies shrieked within their beds—and the forest crumbled before the wind—and the thunder rolled—and the lightning fell—and the rock rocked to its foundation. And I lay close within my covert and observed the actions of the man. And the man trembled in the solitude—but the night waned and he sat upon the rock.

"Then I grew angry and cursed, with the curse of *silence,* the river, and the lilies, and the wind, and the forest, and the heaven, and the thunder, and the sighs of the water-lilies. And they became accursed, and *were still.* And the moon ceased to totter up its pathway to heaven—and the thunder died away—and the lightning did not flash—and the clouds hung motionless—and the waters sunk to their level and remained—and the trees ceased to rock—and the water-lilies sighed no more—and the murmur was heard no longer from among them, nor any shadow of sound throughout the vast illimitable desert. And I looked upon the characters of the rock, and they were changed—and the characters were SILENCE.

"And mine eyes fell upon the countenance of the man, and his countenance was wan with terror. And, hurriedly, he raised his head from his hand, and stood forth upon the rock and listened. But there was no voice throughout the vast illimitable desert, and the characters upon the rock were SILENCE. And the man shuddered, and turned his face away, and fled afar off, in haste, so that I beheld him no more."

* * * * * *

Now there are fine tales in the volumes of the Magi—in the iron-bound, melancholy volumes of the Magi. Therein, I say, are glorious histories of the Heaven, and of the Earth,

and of the mighty Sea—and of the Genii that overruled the sea, and the earth, and the lofty heaven. There was much lore too in the sayings which were said by the Sibyls; and holy, holy things were heard of old by the dim leaves that trembled around Dodona—but, as Allah liveth, that fable which the Demon told me, as he sat by my side in the shadow of the tomb, I hold to be the most wonderful of all! And as the Demon made an end of his story, he fell back within the cavity of the tomb and laughed. And I could not laugh with the Demon, and he cursed me because I could not laugh. And the lynx, which dwelleth forever in the tomb, came out therefrom, and lay down at the feet of the Demon, and looked at him steadily in the face.

THE MYSTERY EXPLAINED

From "The Murders in Rue Morgue."

THE sailor had recovered his presence of mind, in a great measure, while Dupin uttered these words; but his original boldness of bearing was all gone.

"So help me God," said he, after a brief pause, "I *will* tell you all I know about this affair; but I do not expect you to believe one-half I say—I would be a fool indeed if I did. Still, I *am* innocent, and I will make a clean breast if I die for it."

What he stated was, in substance, this. He had lately made a voyage to the Indian Archipelago. A party, of which he formed one, landed at Borneo, and passed into the interior on an excursion of pleasure. Himself and a companion had captured the Ourang-Outang. This companion dying, the animal fell into his own exclusive possession. After great trouble, occasioned by the intractable ferocity of his captive during the home voyage, he at length succeeded in lodging it safely at his own residence in Paris, where, not to attract toward himself the unpleasant curiosity of his neighbors, he kept it carefully secluded, until such time as it should recover from a wound in the foot, received from a splinter on board ship. His ultimate design was to sell it.

Returning home from some sailors' frolic on the night, or

rather in the morning, of the murder, he found the beast occupying his own bedroom, into which it had broken from a closet adjoining, where it had been, as was thought, securely confined. Razor in hand, and fully lathered, it was sitting before a looking-glass, attempting the operation of shaving, in which it had no doubt previously watched its master through the key-hole of the closet. Terrified at the sight of so dangerous a weapon in the possession of an animal so ferocious, and so well able to use it, the man for some moments was at a loss what to do. He had been accustomed, however, to quiet the creature, even in its fiercest moods, by the use of a whip, and to this he now resorted. Upon sight of it, the Ourang-Outang sprang at once through the door of the chamber, down the stairs, and thence, through a window, unfortunately open, into the street.

The Frenchman followed in despair; the ape, razor still in hand, occasionally stopping to look back and gesticulate at its pursuer, until the latter had nearly come up with it. It then again made off. In this manner the chase continued for a long time. The streets were profoundly quiet, as it was nearly three o'clock in the morning. In passing down an alley in the rear of the Rue Morgue, the fugitive's attention was arrested by a light gleaming from the open window of Madame L'Espanaye's chamber, in the fourth story of her house. Rushing to the building, it perceived the lightning-rod, clambered up with inconceivable agility, grasped the shutter, which was thrown fully back against the wall, and, by its means, swung itself directly upon the headboard of the bed. The whole feat did not occupy a minute. The shutter was kicked open again by the Ourang-Outang as it entered the room.

The sailor, in the meantime, was both rejoiced and perplexed. He had strong hopes of now recapturing the brute, as it could scarcely escape from the trap into which it had ventured, except by the rod, where it might be intercepted as it came down. On the other hand, there was much cause for anxiety as to what it might do in the house. This latter reflection urged the man still to follow the fugitive. A lightning-rod is ascended without difficulty, especially by a sailor; but, when he had arrived as high as the window, which lay far to his left, his career was stopped; the most that he could accom-

plish was to reach over so as to obtain a glimpse of the interior of the room. At this glimpse he nearly fell from his hold through excess of horror. Now it was that those hideous shrieks arose upon the night, which had startled from slumber the inmates of the Rue Morgue. Madame L'Espanaye and her daughter, habited in their night-clothes, had apparently been occupied in arranging some papers in the iron chest already mentioned, which had been wheeled into the middle of the room. It was open, and its contents lay beside it on the floor. The victims must have been sitting with their backs towards the windows; and, from the time elapsing between the ingress of the beast and the screams, it seems probable that it was not immediately perceived. The flapping-to of the shutter would naturally have been attributed to the wind.

As the sailor looked in, the gigantic animal had seized Madame L'Espanaye by the hair (which was loose, as she had been combing it), and was flourishing the razor about her face, in imitations of the motions of a barber. The daughter lay prostrate and motionless; she had swooned. The screams and struggles of the old lady (during which the hair was torn from her head) had the effect of changing the probably pacific purposes of the Ourang-Outang into those of wrath. With one determined sweep of its muscular arm it nearly severed her head from her body. The sight of blood inflamed its anger into frenzy. Gnashing its teeth, and flashing fire from its eyes, it flew upon the body of the girl, and imbedded its fearful talons in her throat, retaining its grasp until she expired. Its wandering and wild glances fell at this moment upon the head of the bed, over which the face of its master, rigid with horror, was just discernible. The fury of the beast, who no doubt bore still in mind the dreaded whip, was instantly converted into fear. Conscious of having deserved punishment, it seemed desirous of concealing its bloody deeds, and skipped about the chamber in an agony of nervous agitation; throwing down and breaking the furniture as it moved, and dragging the bed from the bedstead. In conclusion, it seized first the corpse of the daughter, and thrust it up the chimney, as it was found; then that of the old lady, which it immediately hurled through the window headlong.

As the ape approached the casement with its mutilated

burden, the sailor shrank aghast to the rod, and, rather gliding down than clambering down it, hurried at once home—dreading the consequences of the butchery, and gladly abandoning, in his terror, all solicitude about the fate of the Ourang-Outang. The words heard by the party upon the staircase were the Frenchman's exclamations of horror and affright, commingled with the fiendish jabberings of the brute.

I have scarcely anything to add. The Ourang-Outang must have escaped from the chamber, by the rod, just before the breaking of the door. It must have closed the window as it passed through it. It was subsequently caught by the owner himself, who obtained for it a very large sum at the *Jardin des Plantes*. Le Bon was instantly released, upon our narration of the circumstances (with some comments from Dupin) at the bureau of the Prefect of Police. This functionary, however well disposed to my friend, could not altogether conceal his chagrin at the turn which affairs had taken, and was fain to indulge in a sarcasm or two, about the propriety of every person minding his own business.

"Let him talk," said Dupin, who had not thought it necessary to reply. "Let him discourse; it will ease his conscience. I am satisfied with having defeated him in his own castle. Nevertheless, that he failed in the solution of this mystery is by no means that matter for wonder which he supposes it; for, in truth, our friend the Prefect is somewhat too cunning to be profound. In his wisdom is no *stamen*. It is all head and no body, like the pictures of the Goddess Laverna—or, at best, all head and shoulders, like a codfish. But he is a good creature after all. I like him especially for one master-stroke of cant, by which he has attained his reputation for ingenuity. I mean the way he has *'de nier ce qu'est et d'expliquer ce que n'est pas.'* "

LITERARY ESTIMATE OF HAWTHORNE

A Criticism of "Twice-Told Tales."

But it is of his tales that we desire principally to speak. The tale proper, in our opinion, affords unquestionably the fairest field for the exercise of the loftiest talent, which can be afforded by the wide domains of mere prose. Were we bidden to say how the highest genius could be most advantageously employed for the best display of its own powers, we should answer, without hesitation—in the composition of a rhymed poem, not to exceed in length what might be perused in an hour. Within this limit alone can the highest order of true poetry exist. We need only here say, upon this topic, that, in almost all classes of composition, the unity of effect or impression is a point of the greatest importance. It is clear, moreover, that this unity cannot be thoroughly preserved in productions whose perusal cannot be completed at one sitting. We may continue the reading of a prose composition, from the very nature of prose itself, much longer than we can persevere, to any good purpose, in the perusal of a poem. This latter, if truly fulfilling the demands of the poetic sentiment, induces an exalteration of the soul which cannot be long sustained. All high excitements are necessarily transient. Thus a long poem is a paradox. And, without unity of impression, the deepest effects cannot be brought about. Epics were the offspring of an imperfect sense of Art, and their reign is no more. A poem *too* brief may produce a vivid, but never an intense or enduring impression. Without a certain continuity of effort—without a certain duration or repetition of purpose—the soul is never deeply moved. There must be the dropping of the water upon the rock. De Béranger has wrought brilliant things—pungent and spirit-stirring—but, like all immassive bodies, they lack *momentum*, and thus fail to satisfy the Poetic Sentiment. They sparkle and excite, but, from want of continuity, fail deeply to impress. Extreme brevity will degenerate into epigrammatism; but the sin of extreme length is even more unpardonable. *In medio tutissimus ibis.*

Were we called upon, however, to designate that class of

composition, which, next to such a poem as we have suggested, should best fulfil the demands of high genius—should offer it the most advantageous field of exertion—we should unhesitatingly speak of the prose tale, as Mr. Hawthorne has here exemplified it. We allude to the short prose narrative, requiring from a half-hour to one or two hours in its perusal. The ordinary novel is objectionable, from its length, for reasons already stated in substance. As it cannot be read at one sitting, it deprives itself, of course, of the immense force derivable from *totality*. Worldly interests intervening during the pauses of perusal, notify, annul, or counteract, in a greater or less degree, the impressions of the book. But simple cessation in reading, would, of itself, be sufficient to destroy the true unity. In the brief tale, however, the author is enabled to carry out the fulness of his intention, be it what it may. During the hour of perusal the soul of the reader is at the writer's control. There are no external or extrinsic influences—resulting from weariness or interruption.

A skilful literary artist has constructed a tale. If wise, he has not fashioned his thoughts to accommodate his incidents; but having conceived, with deliberate care, a certain unique or single *effect* to be wrought out, he then invents such incidents—he then combines such events that may best aid him in establishing this preconceived effect. If his very initial sentence tend not to the outbringing of this effect, then he has failed in his first step. In the whole composition there should be no word written, of which the tendency, direct or indirect, is not to the one pre-established design. And by such means, with such care and skill, a picture is at length painted which leaves in the mind of him who contemplates it with a kindred art, a sense of the fullest satisfaction. The idea of the tale has been presented unblemished, because undisturbed, and this is an end unattainable by the novel. Undue brevity is just as exceptionable here as in the poem; but undue length is yet more to be avoided.

We have said that the tale has a point of superiority even over the poem. In fact, while the *rhythm* of this latter is an essential aid in the development of the poet's highest idea—the idea of the Beautiful—the artificialities of this rhythm are an inseparable bar to the development of all points of thought or

expression which have their basis in Truth. But truth is often, and in very great degree, the aim of the tale. Some of the finest tales are tales of ratiocination. Thus the field of this species of composition, if not in so elevated a region on the mountain of Mind, is a table-land of far vaster extent than the domain of the mere poem. Its products are never so rich, but infinitely more numerous, and more appreciable by the mass of mankind. The writer of the prose tale, in short, may bring to his theme a vast variety of modes or inflections of thought and expression—(the ratiocinative, for example, the sarcastic, or the humorous) which are not only antagonistical to the nature of the poem, but absolutely forbidden by one of its most peculiar and indispensable adjuncts; we allude, of course, to rhythm. It may be added here, *par parenthèse*, that the author who aims at the purely beautiful in a prose tale is laboring at great disadvantage. For Beauty can be better treated in the poem. Not so with terror, or passion, or horror, or a multitude of such other points. And here it will be seen how full of prejudice are the usual animadversions against those *tales of effect,* many fine examples of which were found in the earlier numbers of Blackwood. The impressions produced were wrought in legitimate sphere of action, and constituted a legitimate although sometimes exaggerated interest. They were relished by every man of genius; although there were found many men of genius who condemned them without just ground. The true critic will but demand that the design intended be accomplished, to the fullest extent, by the means most advantageously applicable.

We have very few American tales of real merit—we may say, indeed, none, with the exception of "The Tales of a Traveller" of Washington Irving, and these "Twice-Told Tales" of Mr. Hawthorne. Some of the pieces of Mr. John Neal abound in vigor and originality; but in general, his compositions of this class are excessively diffuse, extravagant, and indicative of an imperfect sentiment of Art. Articles at random are, now and then, met with in our periodicals which might be advantageously compared with the best effusions of the British Magazines; but, upon the whole, we are far behind our progenitors in this department of literature.

Of Mr. Hawthorne's Tales we would say, emphatically,

that they belong to the highest region of Art—an Art subservient to genius of a very lofty order. We had supposed, with good reason for so supposing, that he had been thrust into his present position by one of the impudent *cliques* which beset our literature, and whose pretentions it is our full purpose to expose at the earliest opportunity; but we have been most agreeably mistaken. We know of few compositions which the critic can more honestly commend than these "Twice-Told Tales." As Americans we feel proud of the book.

Mr. Hawthorne's distinctive trait is invention, creation, imagination, originality—a trait which, in the literature of fiction, is positively worth all the rest. But the nature of originality, so far as regards its manifestation in letters, is but imperfectly understood. The inventive or original mind as frequently displays itself in novelty of *tone* as in novelty of mind. Mr. Hawthorne is original at *all* points.

LETTER TO F. W. THOMAS

PHILADELPHIA, May 25, 1842.

MY DEAR THOMAS—Through an accident I have only just received yours of the 21st. Believe me, I never dreamed of doubting your friendship, or of reproaching you for your silence. I knew you had good reasons for it; and, in this matter, I feel that you have acted for me more judiciously, by far, than I should have done for myself. You have shown yourself, from the first hour of our acquaintance, that *rara avis in terris*—"a true friend." Nor am I the man to be unmindful of your kindness.

What you say respecting a situation in the Custom House here gives me new life. Nothing could more precisely meet my views. Could I obtain such an appointment, I would be enabled thoroughly to carry out all my ambitious projects. It would relieve me of all care as regards a mere subsistence, and thus allow me time for thought, which, in fact, is action. I repeat that I would ask for nothing farther or better than a situation such as you mention. If the salary will barely enable me to live I shall be content. Will you say as much for me to Mr. Tyler, and express to him my sincere gratitude for the interest he takes in my welfare?

The report of my having parted company with Graham is correct; although in the forthcoming June number there is no announcement to that effect; nor had the papers any authority for the statement made. My duties ceased with the May number. I shall continue to contribute occasionally. Griswold succeeds me. My reason for resigning was disgust with the namby-pamby character of the Magazine—a character which it was impossible to eradicate. I allude to the contemptible pictures, fashion-plates, music, and love-tales. The salary, moreover, did not pay me for the labour which I was forced to bestow. With Graham, who is really a very gentlemanly, although an exceedingly weak man, I had no misunderstanding. I am rejoiced to say that my dear little wife is much better, and I have strong hope of her ultimate recovery. She desires her kindest regards—as also Mrs. Clemm.

I have moved from the old place—but should you pay an unexpected visit to Philadelphia, you will find my address at Graham's. I would give the world to shake you by the hand; and have a thousand things to talk about which would not come within the compass of a letter. Write immediately upon receipt of this, if possible, and do let me know something of yourself, your own doings and prospects; see how excellent an example of egotism I set you. Here is a letter nearly every word of which is about myself or my individual affairs. You saw White—little Tom. I am anxious to know what he said about things in general. He is a *character* if ever one was. God bless you—

EDGAR A. POE.

JAMES KNOX POLK

[1795—1849]

J. M. McCONNELL

SINCE the days of Andrew Jackson, the Presidents of the United States have been, almost without exception, either military heroes swept into high civil office on a passing wave of popularity, or political party leaders who began at the bottom of the ladder in office-holding, and who, by faithfulness to their party and the support of its organization, have been elevated to the chair of Chief Executive. Few of them have been great statesmen. Our eleventh President, though a man of intellectual strength and practical ability, was no exception to the general rule and belongs to the second class.

James Knox Polk was born in Mecklenburg County, North Carolina, November 2, 1795. He was the son of Samuel Polk and Jane Knox, both of Scotch-Irish descent. His paternal grandfather, Ezekiel Polk, and a great-uncle, Colonel Thomas Polk, were signers of the famous Mecklenburg Declaration of May 20, 1775, and the latter was generally recognized as the leading spirit in that daring movement. Following the tide of emigration which set in toward the West in the early part of the Nineteenth Century, Samuel Polk in 1806 moved with his family to the Duck River Valley, Tennessee. Here he engaged in farming and surveying, and was assisted in this work by his son, James Knox Polk. The boy showing himself of studious habits, his father encouraged his tastes in this direction, and after keeping him two years and a half at Murfreesborough Academy for preparation, entered him, in 1815, at the University of North Carolina. The future President's course in college was an entire success—earnestness, diligence, and thoroughness characterizing all his work. Three years after entrance, he was graduated at the head of his class and delivered the Latin salutatory oration. Proud of her distinguished son's achievements in later years, his *alma mater* conferred upon him the degree of LL.D. during his term as President of the United States.

The year following his graduation Mr. Polk began the study of law in the office of Felix Grundy, a prominent Democratic-Republican and a leader of the Tennessee Bar. During his two years' sojourn in Nashville, he made the acquaintance of General Andrew Jackson and was a frequent visitor at "The Hermitage." The two

men became fast personal and political friends and remained so throughout their careers. In the latter part of 1820 Mr. Polk was admitted to the practice of law in his State and, meeting with success from the start, rose rapidly in his profession.

Inclined toward politics, he became a candidate for the State Legislature, and having been elected served one term in this body. Two years later he was chosen to represent his district in the United States Congress, and so acceptable were his services in this capacity that he was "returned by the same constituency, for fourteen years in succession." In 1839 he voluntarily resigned to offer himself for the governorship of Tennessee.

Diligent application to all the business of the House, and a careful study of the subjects of legislation, soon made Mr. Polk a leader in Congress and brought him into numerous positions of influence. In December, 1827, he was appointed a member of the Committee on Foreign Affairs and later, during the same session, was made chairman of a special committee selected to examine into the state of the United States Treasury, with special reference to the surplus accumulating there. He was put on the important Ways and Means Committee in 1832, and, after hearing the examination of the directors of the United States Bank conducted before this Committee, made some reputation for himself with the Jackson party by returning a minority report which strongly condemned the Bank's management. During the next session, as chairman of the committee, it fell to his lot to defend President Jackson and Secretary Taney for removing the Government deposits from the Bank; and on June 20, 1834, he made a speech in their defence which was probably his ablest effort while a member of the House. The speech shows a thorough study of the question discussed and was delivered in a clear, forceful style.

At the organization of the twenty-fourth Congress Mr. Polk was elected to the speakership over his colleague, John Bell, and two years later was again elected to the same position. Though lacking in some of the qualities of an ideal presiding officer, close application to the duties of his office, tact and a spirit of fairness made him in the main acceptable to the members. The excited discussions of the slavery question, and the right of petition occasioned by the presentation of abolition petitions to Congress, made his position an exceedingly difficult one to fill; and the failure of the Whigs to unite in the customary vote of thanks upon his retirement from the speakership was due more to bitter feeling between parties than to any personal fault of the Speaker.

In 1839 Mr. Polk was elected Governor of Tennessee and served one term. He was twice defeated in an effort at reëlection, first in

1841 and again in 1843. His inaugural upon taking the oath of office October 14, 1839, was an excellent statement of the interpretation put upon the National Constitution by the States' Rights Party. The leading policy of his administration as Governor was the matter of internal improvements by the State Government.

When the National Democratic Convention was assembled at Baltimore (May, 1844), the principal candidates for nomination by the party were Mr. Lewis Cass of Michigan and President Van Buren. A two-thirds majority rule was adopted for nomination, and upon the first ballot Mr. Van Buren received over half, but not quite two-thirds of the votes. Mr. Cass was then made the leading candidate, but Van Buren's supporters were unwilling to yield the nomination to him. Mr. Polk's name was proposed as a compromise between the two leaders, and upon the ninth ballot he was nominated. The Whig convention selected the brilliant Henry Clay as their standard-bearer. The Democrats adopted a platform declaring for the "re-occupation of Oregon and the reannexation of Texas," and the "jingo" phrase "fifty-four forty or fight" was the campaign cry. The result of the election gave Polk 170 electoral votes and Clay 105, Tennessee being among the States supporting the Kentuckian. Mr. Polk was inaugurated March 4, 1845.

The historian Bancroft, Secretary of the Navy in President Polk's Cabinet, says of his work as President: "His administration viewed from the standpoint of results was perhaps the greatest in our National history." His Vice-president, Mr. George M. Dallas, says of President Polk: "He left nothing unfinished; what he attempted, he did." A brief survey of our eleventh President's administration will, I think, prove the statement of his associates in office to be true. There were four purposes of his administration: The reëstablishment of the independent Treasury system which was inaugurated by President Van Buren, but had been repealed by the Whigs; a reduction of the high tariff of 1842; the settlement of the dispute between Great Britain and the United States over the Northwest boundary in such a way as to retain Oregon and yet avoid war with England; the defence of the claim of Texas to the territory lying between the Nueces and Rio Grande rivers, even to the point of war with Mexico, and in the latter event to indemnify ourselves with a generous slice of Mexican territory. How well all these plans were brought to a successful accomplishment is familiar to every student of American history. The Sub-Treasury system was quickly put into operation and has continued ever since; the protective tariff was reduced practically to a revenue basis, and the country entered upon a period of prosperity extending to the Civil War; the firm and dignified attitude of the President, who had to strengthen the hands of his timid

Secretary of State, Buchanan, forced Great Britain to a fair and amicable settlement of the Northwest boundary controversy.

The accomplishment of the fourth purpose of his administration was a more difficult task than the other three, and led to war with Mexico. Mr. Polk has been charged by some with forcing and waging a territorial war on a weaker nation. The facts in the case, however, would seem to discredit the charge. The real aggression against Mexico, if there was any at all, was in the annexation of Texas. Annexation having been accomplished, defence of Texan territory against Mexican invasion was an unavoidable National obligation. Burgess in "The Middle Period" says: "The fact is, it was a defensive war at the outset, and if the Mexicans were excited to their move across the Rio Grande by the appearance of United States troops on the northern bank, they had only to thank themselves for bringing them there by previously massing their own troops on the south bank." A cession of territory to indemnify the victorious nation for the expenses of the war, and to cover claims held against the conquered, is customary; and had the acquisition of new territory not added fuel to the burning slavery question the possibility is that no criticism of the terms of the treaty would have occurred.

As an administrator President Polk was firm, independent, and skilful, but he lacked breadth of vision and sympathy. Unquestionably he was influenced by his close friend and political associate, Andrew Jackson, and had imbibed some of his party narrowness. The feeling of personal responsibility for all departments of his administration, and lack of confidence in others, made the duties of Chief Executive unnecessarily burdensome to him. He died June 15, 1849, a few months after leaving office, worn out largely by ceaseless attention to the details of his administration.

Mr. Polk deserves to be classed as a successful rather than as a great man. He possessed an excellent but not a brilliant intellect, trained it thoroughly, was persevering of purpose, and made the very best use of his opportunities. A close student of party politics and measures, and a loyal supporter of Jackson's policies, he reaped the reward of his faithfulness. His career exemplifies the proverb: "Seest thou a man diligent in his business? He shall stand before kings; he shall not stand before mean men." As a speaker he lacked the warmth that stirred; he appealed more to the reason than to the emotions, and convinced rather than enthused. He was wanting in powers of imagination and made little use of figurative language, but was always simple, clear, and forceful. The florid orators of his day would have done well to take lessons from his direct, straightforward method of speech. The title "Napoleon of the

stump," given to him by political admirers in his State, seems at this day to have been extravagant.

J. M. McConnell.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Life of James K. Polk. (Jenkins.)
The Middle Period. (Burgess.)
President Polk's Diary. By James Schouler, *Atlantic Monthly*, Vol. 76, pp. 235-243.
President Polk's Administration. By James Schouler, *Atlantic Monthly*, Vol. 76, pp. 371-380.
Congressional Records, 1824-'39, and 1845-'49.

GOVERNOR'S ADDRESS

From Jenkins's 'Life of James K. Polk.'

DEEPLY impressed with a sense of gratitude to my fellow-citizens for the confidence they have reposed in me by elevating me to the Chief Executive Office in the State, and duly sensible of the weight of responsibility which will devolve upon me, I enter upon the discharge of its duties firmly relying upon the coöperation of the coördinate departments of the State Government, in all such measures of public policy as may be calculated to maintain the high character of the State, and to advance and promote the interests, the happiness and prosperity of the people. A proper respect for public opinion, as well as a compliance with public expectation, seem to require that I should upon this occasion publicly declare the leading principles which I shall deem it proper to be observed in the conduct of the State Administration, so far as the action of the Executive branch may be concerned.

Under our happy system of Government, the ultimate and

supreme sovereignty rests in the people. The powers of government delegated by the people to their public functionaries, are by our constitution divided between the Federal and State authorities. The State Governments are not, as has been erroneously supposed by some, subordinate to the Federal Government. "They are coördinate departments of one simple and integral whole." The States have parted with certain enumerated and specified powers, and, by the Constitution of the United States, these are delegated to the Federal Government, and can only be rightfully exercised by that Government. "The powers not delegated to the United States by the Constitution, nor prohibited by it to the States, are reserved to the States respectively, or to the people." By the partition of powers thus distinctly defined, it is manifest that each government possesses powers which are withheld from the other. And so long as each acts within its legitimate and proper sphere, the system works harmoniously, and affords to the citizen a greater amount of security for life, liberty and property, and in the pursuit of happiness, than is to be found under any other government which has ever existed. When either overleaps the true boundary prescribed for its action, and usurps the exercise of powers properly belonging to the other, the harmony of the system is disturbed, and agitating collisions arise which are calculated to weaken the bonds of union. Whilst, therefore, the States should be jealous of every encroachment of the Federal Government on *their* rights, they should be careful to confine themselves in their own action to the exercise of powers clearly reserved to them.

It will, I do not doubt, be the patriotic desire of my constituents, as I know it will be mine, in the discharge of the functions to which I am called, that "the support of the State Governments in all their rights, as the most competent administrations for our domestic concerns, and the surest bulwark against anti-republican tendencies," and that the "preservation of the General Government, in its whole constitutional vigor, as the sheet-anchor of our peace at home, and safety abroad," shall be scrupulously observed and inviolably maintained.

In ascertaining the true line of separation between the powers of the General Government and of the States, much difficulty has often been experienced in the operations of our

system. The powers delegated to the General Government are either express or implied. The general rule of construction laid down by the General Assembly of Virginia in 1799, may be regarded as a sound one by which to determine whether a given power has been delegated to that Government, or is reserved to the States. That rule is—"Whenever a question arises concerning the constitutionality of a particular power, the first question is, whether the power be *expressed* in the constitution. If it be, the question is decided. If it be not *expressed,* the next question must be, whether it is properly an *incident* to an expressed power, and *necessary* to its execution. If it be, it may be exercised by Congress. If it be not, Congress cannot exercise it." If the power be not *expressed,* it is not enough that it may be *convenient* or *expedient* to exercise it, for such a construction of the Constitution of the United States would refer its exercise to the unlimited and unrestrained discretion of Congress—to determine what would be *convenient* or *expedient;* thereby making the exercise of important powers, by the General Government, to depend upon the varying discretion of successive Congresses. It must be a "*necessary and proper*" power. It must be an *incident* to an *express* power, "*necessary and proper*" to carry that express power into effect, and, without which, it could not be exercised, and would be nugatory.

Mr. Jefferson, whose sound expositions of the relative powers of the Federal and State Governments but few of my constituents will be prepared at this day to question, near the close of a long and eventful life of public usefulness, declared "to be most false and unfounded, the doctrine that the compact, in authorizing its federal branch to lay and collect taxes, duties, imposts, and excises, to pay the debts and provide for the common defence and general welfare of the United States, has given them thereby a power to do whatever *they* may think, or pretend, would promote the general welfare, which construction would make that, of itself, a complete government, without limitation of powers; but, that the plain sense and obvious meaning were, that they might levy the taxes necessary to provide for the general welfare, by the various acts of power therein specified and delegated to them, and by no others."

In all cases of well-founded constitutional doubt, it is safest and wisest for all the functionaries of government, both State and Federal, to abstain from the exercise of the doubtful power. In all such cases, it is both safest and wisest to appeal to the people, the only true source of power in the constitutional forms, by an amendment of the fundamental law, to remove such doubt, either by an enlargement, or a restriction of the doubtful power in question.

The Federal Government has at different times assumed, or attempted to exercise powers, which, in my judgment, have not been conferred upon that government by the compact. Among these, I am free to declare my solemn conviction that the Federal Government possesses no constitutional power to incorporate a National Bank. The advocates of a bank insist that it would be *convenient and expedient,* and that it would promote the "general welfare"; but they have, in my judgment, failed to show that the power to create it is either *expressly* granted, or that it is an *incident* to any *express* power, that is "necessary and proper" to carry that power into effect. The alarming dangers of the power of such a corporation (vast and irresponsible as experience has shown it to be) to the public liberty, it does not fall within the scope of my present purpose fully to examine. We have seen the power of associated wealth in the late Bank of the United States, wrestling with a giant's strength with the Government itself—and although finally overthrown it was not until after a long and doubtful contest. During the struggle, it manifested a power for mischief which it would be dangerous to permit to exist in a free country. The panic and alarm, the distress and extensive suffering, which in its convulsive struggle to perpetuate its power it inflicted on the country, will not soon be forgotten. Its notorious alliance with leading politicians, and its open interference by means of the corrupting power of money in the political contests of the times, has converted it into a political engine, used to control elections and the course of public affairs. No restraints of law could prevent any similar institution from being the willing instrument used for similar purposes. The State of Tennessee, through her Legislature, has repeatedly declared her settled opinions against the existence of such an institution, and at no time in its favor. She has in-

structed her Senators, and requested her Representatives in Congress to vote against the establishment of such an institution. In these opinions, heretofore expressed by the State, I entirely concur.

Of the same character is the power which at some time has been attempted to be exercised by the Federal Government, of first collecting by taxation on the people a surplus revenue beyond the wants of that Government, and then distributing such surplus, in the shape of donations, among the States; a power which has not been conferred on that Government by any express grant, nor is it an incident to any express power, "necessary and proper" for its execution. To concede such a power, would be to make the Federal Government the tax-gatherer of the States, and accustom them to look to that source from which to supply the State Treasuries, and to defray the expenses of the State Governments. It is clear that this constituted no one of the objects of the creation of the Federal Government; and to permit its exercise would be to reduce the States to the degraded condition of subordinate dependencies upon that Government, to destroy their separate and independent sovereignty, and to make the Government of the Union in effect a consolidation. The power to make provision for the support of its own Government, by the levy of the necessary taxes upon its own citizens, and the adoption of such measures of policy for its internal Government not inconsistent with the Federal Constitution, as may be deemed proper and expedient, "remains to each State among its domestic and unalienated powers exercisable within itself and by its domestic authorities alone."

A surplus Federal revenue, raised by means of a tariff of duties, must necessarily be collected in unequal proportions from the people of the respective States. The planting and producing States must bear the larger portion of the burden. It was this inequality which has heretofore given rise to the just complaints of these States, as also of the commercial interests, against the operations of a high and protective tariff. If the proceeds of the sales of the public lands be set apart for distribution among the States, as has been sometimes proposed, the operation and effect would be the same; for, by abstracting from the Federal Treasury the proceeds of the sales of the

public lands, a necessity is thereby created for an increased Tariff to the amount thus abstracted. To collect a surplus revenue by unequal taxation, and then to return to the people, by a distribution among the States, their own money, in sums diminished by the amount of the cost of collection and distribution, aside from its manifest injustice, is a power which it could never have been intended to confer on the Federal Government.

When, from the unforeseen operation of the revenue laws of the United States, a surplus at any time exists or is likely to exist in the Federal Treasury, the true remedy is, to reduce or to repeal the taxes so as to collect no more money than shall be absolutely necessary for the economical wants of that Government, and thus leave what would otherwise be surplus uncollected in the pockets of the people. The act of Congress of 1836, by which a large amount of the surplus on hand was distributed among the States, is upon its face a *deposit* and not a *donation* of the sums distributed. The States have become the debtors to the Federal Government for their respective proportions, and are subject to be called upon to refund it. Had the act provided for an absolute *donation* to the States, so palpable an infraction of the Constitution it is scarcely possible to conceive could have been sanctioned. By making it assume the form of a mere *deposit* of the money of the United States in the State Treasuries for safe-keeping until needed for public purposes, it became the law. Though it may not be probable that the sums distributed on deposit will be called for at an early period, if indeed they will ever be, unless in cases of exigencies growing out of a foreign war, yet the States should be at all times prepared to meet the call when made; and it will be unsafe for them to rely upon the sums they have received as a permanent fund. They should rather look to their own credit and resources in the accomplishment of their purposes.

It becomes the duty of all States, and especially of those whose constitutions recognize the existence of domestic slavery, to look with watchfulness to the attempts which have been recently made to disturb the rights secured to them by the Constitution of the United States. The agitation of the abolitionists can by no possibility produce good to any portion of the Union, and must, if persisted in, lead to incalculable mis-

chief. The institution of domestic slavery, as it existed at the adoption of the Constitution of the United States, and as it still exists in some of the States, formed the subject of one of the compromises of opinion and of interest upon the settlement of which all the old States became parties to the compact and agreed to enter the Union. The new States were admitted into the Union upon an equal footing with the old States, and are equally bound by the terms of the compact. Any attempt on the part of the Federal Government to act upon the subject of slavery, as it exists within the States, would be a clear infraction of the Constitution; and to disturb it within the District of Columbia, would be a palpable violation of the public faith, as well as of the clear meaning and obvious intention of the framers of the Constitution. They intended to leave, and they did in fact leave, the subject to the exclusive regulation and action of the States and Territories within which slavery existed or might exist. They intended to place, and they did in fact place it, beyond the pale of action within the constitutional power of the Federal Government. No power has been conferred upon the Federal Government, either by express grant or necessary implication, to take cognizance of, or in any manner or to any extent to interfere with, or to act upon the subject of domestic slavery, the existence of which in many of the States is expressly recognized by the Constitution of the United States.

Whether the agitation we have recently witnessed upon this delicate and disturbing subject has proceeded from a mistaken philanthropy, as may have been the case with a few misguided persons; or whether there is, I regret to say, but too much reason to fear, from a desire on the part of many persons, who manifest by their conduct a reckless disregard of the harmony of the Union and of the public good, to convert it into a political engine, with a view to control elections, its progress should be firmly resisted by all the constitutional means within the power of the State. The most casual observer of passing events cannot fail to have seen that modern Abolitionism, with rare and few exceptions among its advocates, has become, to a great extent, purely a political question. That many of the leading abolitionists are active political partisans, fully identified with, and constituting no inconsiderable part of, one of the

political parties of the country, can no longer admit of doubt. They address themselves to the prepossessions and prejudices of the community in which they live, against slavery in the abstract, and, availing themselves of these prepossessions and prejudices, are struggling to control political events. All the lovers of the Union of the States, and all patriotic citizens, whether of the slaveholding or non-slaveholding States, who are ardently attached to our free institutions, must view with indignant reprobation the use made of such an unholy agitation with such objects. The attempts made to introduce it for discussion into the Federal Legislature have been met in the proper spirit, not only by Southern Representatives, but by a large portion of the Northern delegation in Congress. It is fortunate for the country, that, in the midst of this agitation, there is at the head of the Federal Government a Chief Magistrate who, in the patriotic discharge of his high duties, has placed the seal of his unqualified condemnation upon any attempted action by Congress upon the subject of slavery in any manner, or to any extent whether existing within the States or within the District of Columbia. That he deserves and will receive the support of the States and of the people, in every portion of the Union, in maintaining his uncompromising and publicly declared determination to preserve inviolate the compromises of the Federal Constitution and the reserved rights of the slaveholding States on this subject, cannot be doubted.

EXTRACTS FROM INAUGURAL ADDRESS

The most admirable and wisest system of well-regulated self-government among men, ever devised by human minds, has been tested by its successful operation for more than half a century; and, if preserved from the usurpations of the federal government on the one hand; and the exercise by the States of power not reserved to them on the other, will, I fervently hope and believe, endure for ages to come, and dispense the blessings of civil and religious liberty to distant generations. To effect objects so dear to every patriot, I shall devote myself with anxious solicitude. It will be my desire to guard against that most fruitful source of danger to the har-

monious action of our system, which consists in substituting the mere discretion and caprice of the executive, or of majorities in the legislative department of the government, for powers which have been withheld from the federal government by the constitution. By the theory of our government, majorities rule; but this right is not an arbitrary or unlimited one. It is a right to be exercised in subordination to the constitution, and in conformity to it. One great object of the constitution was to restrain majorities from oppressing minorities, or encroaching upon their just rights. Minorities have a right to appeal to the constitution, as a shield against such oppression.

That the blessings of liberty which our constitution secures may be enjoyed alike by minorities and majorities, the executive has been wisely invested with a qualified veto upon the acts of the legislature. It is a negative power, and is conservative in its character. It arrests for the time hasty, inconsiderate, or unconstitutional legislation; invites reconsideration, and transfers questions at issue between the legislative and executive departments to the tribunal of the people. Like all other powers, it is subject to be abused. When judiciously and properly exercised, the constitution itself may be saved from infraction, and the rights of all preserved and protected.

The inestimable value of our federal Union is felt and acknowledged by all. By this system of united and confederated States, our people are permitted, collectively and individually, to seek their own happiness in their own way; and the consequences have been most auspicious. Since the Union was formed, the number of States has increased from thirteen to twenty-eight; two of these have taken their position as members of the confederacy within the last week. Our population has increased from three to twenty millions. New communities and States are seeking protection under its aegis, and multitudes from the Old World are flocking to our shores to participate in its blessings. Beneath its benign sway, peace and prosperity prevail. Freed from the burdens and miseries of war, our trade and intercourse have extended throughout the world. Mind, no longer tasked in devising means to accomplish or resist schemes of ambition, usurpation, or conquest, is devoting itself to man's true interests, in developing his fac-

ulties and powers, and the capacity of nature to minister to his enjoyments. Genius is free to announce its inventions and discoveries; and the hand is free to accomplish whatever the head conceives, not incompatible with the rights of a fellow-being. All distinctions of birth or of rank have been abolished. All citizens, whether native or adopted, are placed upon terms of precise equality. All are entitled to equal rights and equal protection. No union exists between Church and State; and perfect freedom of opinion is guaranteed to all sects and creeds.

These are some of the blessings secured to our happy land by our federal Union. To perpetuate them, it is our sacred duty to preserve it. Who shall assign limits to the achievements of free minds and free hands, under the protection of this glorious Union? No treason to mankind, since the organization of society, would be equal in atrocity to that of him who would lift his hand to destroy it. He would overthrow the noblest structure of human wisdom, which protects himself and his fellow-man. He would stop the progress of free government, and involve his country either in anarchy or despotism. He would extinguish the fire of liberty which warms and animates the hearts of happy millions, and invites all the nations of the earth to imitate our example. If he say that error and wrong are committed in the administration of the government, let him remember that nothing human can be perfect; and that under no other system of government revealed by Heaven, or devised by man, has reason been allowed so free and broad a scope to combat error.

Has the sword of despots proved to be a safer or surer instrument of reform in government than enlightened reason? Does he expect to find among the ruins of this Union a happier abode for our swarming millions than they now have under it? Every lover of his country must shudder at the thought of the possibility of its dissolution, and will be ready to adopt the patriotic sentiment: "Our federal Union—it must be preserved." To preserve it, the compromise which alone enabled our fathers to form a common constitution for the government and protection of so many States, and distinct communities, of such diversified habits, interests and domestic institutions, must be sacredly and religiously observed. Any attempt to disturb or destroy these compromises, being terms

of the compact of Union, can lead to none other than the most ruinous and disastrous consequences.

It is a source of deep regret that, in some sections of our country, misguided persons have occasionally indulged in schemes and agitations, whose object is the destruction of domestic institutions existing in other sections—institutions which existed at the adoption of the constitution, and were recognized and protected by it. All must see that if it were possible for them to be successful in attaining their object, the dissolution of the Union, and a consequent destruction of our happy form of government, must speedily follow.

I am happy to believe, that at every period of our existence as a nation, there has existed, and continues to exist, among the great mass of our people, a devotion to the Union of the States, which will shield and protect it against the moral treason of any who would seriously contemplate its destruction. To secure a continuance of that devotion, the compromises of the constitution must not only be preserved, but sectional jealousies and heartburnings must be discountenanced; and all should remember that they are members of the same political family, having a common destiny. To increase the attachment of our people to the Union, our laws should be just. Any policy which shall tend to favor monopolies, or the peculiar interests of sections or classes, must operate to the prejudice of the interests of their fellow-citizens and should be avoided. If the compromises of the constitution be preserved—if sectional jealousies and heartburnings be discountenanced—if our laws be just, and the government be practically administered strictly within the limits of power prescribed to it—we may discard all apprehensions for the safety of the Union.

With these views of the nature, character, and objects of the government, and the value of the Union, I shall steadily oppose the creation of those institutions and systems which, in their nature, tend to pervert it from its legitimate purposes, and make it the instrument of sections, classes, and individuals. We need no National Bank, or other extraneous institutions, planted around the government to control or strengthen it in opposition to the will of its authors. Experience has taught us how unnecessary they are as auxiliaries of the public

authorities, how impotent for good and how powerful for mischief.

Ours was intended to be a plain and frugal government: and I shall regard it to be my duty to recommend to Congress and as far as the Executive is concerned, to enforce by all the means within my power, the strictest economy in the expenditure of the public money, which may be compatible with the public interests.

A national debt has become almost an institution of European monarchies. It is viewed in some of them, as an essential prop to existing governments. Melancholy is the condition of that people whose government can be sustained only by a system which periodically transfers large amounts from the labor of the many to the coffers of the few. Such a system is incompatible with the ends for which our republican government was instituted. Under a wise policy, the debts contracted in our revolution, and during the war of 1812, have been happily extinguished. By a judicious application of the revenues, not required for other necessary purposes, it is not doubted that the debt which has grown out of the circumstances of the last few years may be speedily paid off.

I congratulate my fellow-citizens on the entire restoration of the credit of the general government of the Union, and that of many of the States. Happy would it be for the indebted States if they were freed from their liabilities, many of which were incautiously contracted. Although the government of the Union is neither in a legal nor a moral sense bound for the debts of the States, and it would be a violation of our compact of Union to assume them, yet we can not but feel a deep interest in seeing all the States meet their public liabilities, and pay off their just debts, at the earliest practicable period. That they will do so, as soon as it can be done without imposing too heavy burdens on their citizens, there is no reason to doubt. The sound moral and honorable feeling of the people of the indebted States cannot be questioned; and we are happy to perceive a settled disposition on their part, as their ability returns, after a season of unexampled pecuniary embarrassment, to pay off all just demands, and to acquiesce in any reasonable measure to accomplish that object.

* * * * * *

The republic of Texas has made known her desire to come into our Union, to form a part of our confederacy, and to enjoy with us the blessing of liberty secured and guaranteed by our constitution. Texas was once a part of our country—was unwisely ceded away to a foreign power—is now independent, and possesses an undoubted right to dispose of a part or the whole of her territory, and to merge her sovereignty as a separate and independent State, in ours. I congratulate my country that, by an act of the last Congress of the United States, the assent of this government has been given to the reunion; and it only remains for the two countries to agree upon the terms, to consummate an object so important to both.

I regard the question of annexation as belonging exclusively to the United States and Texas. They are independent powers, competent to contract; and foreign nations have no right to interfere with them, or to take exceptions to their reunion. Foreign powers do not seem to appreciate the true character of our government. Our Union is a confederation of independent States, whose policy is peace with each other and all the world. To enlarge its limits, is to extend the dominion of peace over additional territories and increasing millions. The world has nothing to fear from military ambition in our government. While the chief magistrate and the popular branch of Congress are elected for short terms by the suffrages of those millions who must, in their own persons, bear all the burdens and miseries of war, our government cannot be otherwise than pacific. Foreign powers should, therefore, look on the annexation of Texas to the United States, not as the conquest of a nation seeking to extend her dominions by arms and violence, but as the peaceful acquisition of a territory once her own, by adding another member to our confederation, with the consent of that member—thereby diminishing the chances of war, and opening to them new and ever-increasing markets for their products.

To Texas the reunion is important, because the strong protecting arm of our government would be extended over her, and the vast resources of her fertile soil and genial climate would be speedily developed; while the safety of New Orleans, and of our southwestern frontier, against hostile aggression,

as well as the interest of the whole Union, would be promoted by it.

In the earlier stages of our national existence, the opinion prevailed with some, that our system of confederated States could not operate successfully over an extended territory, and serious objections have, at different times, been made to the enlargement of our boundaries These objections were earnestly urged when we acquired Louisiana. Experience has shown that they were not well founded. The title of numerous Indian tribes to vast tracts of country has been extinguished. New States have been admitted into the Union; new territories have been created, and our jurisdiction and laws extended over them. As our population has expanded, the Union has been cemented and strengthened; as our boundaries have been enlarged, and our agricultural population has been spread over a large surface, our federative system has acquired additional strength and security. It may well be doubted whether it would not be in greater danger of overthrow, if our present population were confined to the comparatively narrow limits of the original thirteen States, than it is now that they are sparsely settled over an expanded territory. It is confidently believed that our system may be safely extended to the utmost bounds of our territorial limits; and that, as it shall be extended, the bonds of our Union, so far from being weakened, will become stronger.

None can fail to see the danger to our safety and future peace, if Texas remains an independent State, or becomes an ally or dependency of some foreign nation more powerful than herself. Is there one among our citizens who would not prefer perpetual peace with Texas, to occasional wars, which so often occur between bordering independent nations? Is there one who would not prefer free intercourse with her, to high duties on all our products and manufactures which enter her ports or cross her frontiers? Is there one who would not prefer an unrestricted communication with her citizens, to the frontier obstructions which must occur if she remains out of the Union? Whatever is good or evil in the local institutions of Texas, will remain her own, whether annexed to the United States or not. None of the present States will be responsible for them, any more than they are for the local

institutions of each other. They have confederated together for certain specified objects.

Upon the same principle that they would refuse to form a perpetual union with Texas, because of her local institutions our forefathers would have been prevented from forming our present Union. Perceiving no valid objection to the measure, and many reasons for its adoption, vitally affecting the peace, the safety, and the prosperity of both countries, I shall, on the broad principle which formed the basis, and produced the adoption of our constitution, and not in any narrow spirit of sectional policy, endeavor, by all constitutional, honorable, and appropriate means, to consummate the express will of the people and government of the United States, by the reannexation of Texas to our Union, at the earliest practicable period.

Nor will it become in a less degree my duty to assert and maintain, by all constitutional means, the right of the United States to that portion of our territory which lies beyond the Rocky Mountains. Our title to the country of the Oregon is "clear and unquestionable"; and already are our people preparing to perfect that title, by occupying it with their wives and children. But eighty years ago, our population was confined on the west by the ridge of the Alleghanies. Within that period—within the lifetime, I might say of some of my hearers —our people, increasing to many millions, have filled the eastern valley of the Mississippi; adventurously ascended the Missouri to its head springs; and are already engaged in establishing the blessings of self-government in valleys, of which the rivers flow to the Pacific. The world beholds the peaceful triumphs of the industry of our emigrants. To us belongs the duty of protecting them adequately, wherever they may be upon our soil. The jurisdiction of our laws, and the benefits of our republican institutions, should be extended over them in the distant regions which they have selected for their homes. The increasing facilities of intercourse will easily bring the States, of which the formation in that part of our territory cannot long be delayed, within the sphere of our federative Union. In the meantime, every obligation imposed by treaty or conventional stipulations, should be sacredly respected.

EDWARD ALFRED POLLARD

[1831–1872]

JAMES S. WILSON

WHEN Richmond was the capital of the Confederacy, there was gathered together on the staff of the *Examiner* a brilliant group of editorial writers, of whom John Daniel and E. A. Pollard plied, perhaps, the most trenchant pens. Bitter opposition to Jefferson Davis and extreme antagonism to the policies of his Cabinet, together with intense admiration for Generals Joseph E. Johnston, P. G. T. Beauregard, and Floyd, marked the editorials of the *Examiner,* and were also characteristic of the later attitude of its editors.

The birthplace of Edward Alfred Pollard was "Alta Vista" in Albemarle County, and the date of his birth February 27, 1831. His father, Major Richard Pollard, U.S.A., who was a Bachelor of Civil Law of the College of William and Mary, and his mother, Pauline Cabell, were the parents of a large family of children and were related to many of the most distinguished families of Virginia. From his ancestral home, young Pollard was sent successively to Hampden-Sidney College, the University of Virginia, and the College of William and Mary. He was at the University from 1847 to 1849, and on the fourteenth of October, 1850, was duly matriculated in the department of mental philosophy and law at the college in Williamsburg. The registration in his own handwriting gives his age as eighteen, a figure which does not accord with any of the years to which his birth has been ascribed. It is probable that in his earlier collegiate career Pollard had formed habits of gay living which were not acceptable to the discipline of a college, which then had for its president Johns, the Episcopal Bishop; for on October thirty-first he was "accused of improper conduct at the City Hotel." A little later, November nineteenth, he was, in the language of the faculty book and of Dogberry, given "leave to withdraw," and all his fees were ordered refunded. In the following January we find recorded in Bishop Johns's own handwriting, "an application was received from Mr. Pollard to be allowed to return to college. The faculty decided unanimously that his return would be inexpedient." Accordingly, he did not return, but his course was carried on in Baltimore.

Soon, however, he ended his chequered college career and engaged in journalistic work in California, in which State he remained

until 1855, when he went to Mexico and later to Nicaragua. After returning to the East for a short while, he sailed for Europe and then visited China and Japan. During the term of President Buchanan he was clerk of the Judiciary Committee of the House of Representatives; but in 1860 he unequivocally avowed himself an ardent advocate of secession.

His work as an author of books was begun in 1859 with the publication of 'Black Diamonds.' These sketches of Virginia life were widely read and warmly praised, even by such men as Horace Greeley, to whom the second edition was dedicated.

Early in his life Pollard lost his young and beautiful wife, and the gloom which this grief brought into his life seems never entirely to have passed. After the war he was, however, married again. His second wife was Marie Antoinette Granier-Dowell, who had been divorced from her husband, James Dowell, soon after the outbreak of the war. During the sad days after his first wife's death, Pollard became deeply interested in religious matters, and was even admitted by Bishop William Meade of the Protestant Episcopal Church as a candidate for holy orders. The feelings of the time, however, became too tense for him to keep out of active participation in political matters, and in 1861 he joined the staff of the Richmond *Examiner,* continuing one of the principal editors until 1867.

He published 'Letters of the Southern Spy in Washington and Elsewhere,' in 1861, and spent much time in writing the 'Southern History of the War,' published in different forms in 1862-'64-'66.

On May 9, 1864, he secured passage on the English vessel *Greyhound,* meaning to run the blockade for England, where he intended to act as a kind of journalistic representative of the South. Unfortunately the *Greyhound* was stopped by the United States steamer *Connecticut* the day after sailing, and Pollard, suspected of being a spy, was sent to Fort Warren at Boston Harbor. From May twenty-ninth to August twelfth he was kept in close and rigorous confinement, in spite of appeals to the United States officials and the British representatives. At length, released on parole, he spent several months in Brooklyn, hoping to be exchanged, and at last was ordered to report to Fortress Monroe in Virginia. He reached there on the first day of December, and received the promise of General Butler that he should be speedily exchanged. Through misunderstanding or ill will at Washington, he was again thrown into prison and kept in solitary confinement until, by the intervention of General Butler, he was allowed to return to Richmond in January, 1865. In the same year he published in Richmond a vivid and caustic account of his

experiences, under the title, 'Observations in the North: Eight Months in Prison and on Parole.'

In 1866 was issued 'The Lost Cause,' a new version of his 'Southern History,' but entirely rewritten. He brought out in the next year a French edition of his 'Lost Cause' for Louisiana; and in the same year appeared 'Lee and his Lieutenants.' 'The Lost Cause Regained' followed in 1868, and in 1869 and 1870 were published the last of his books: 'The Life of Jefferson Davis' and a well written guide book, 'The Virginia Tourist.' In 1867 he also began in Richmond the publication of *Southern Opinion,* a periodical which lived for only two years; and during the presidential canvass of 1868 he established *The Political Pamphlet.*

A dark tragedy saddened his life in 1868; for his brother and co-editor, Henry Rives Pollard, was shot down on the streets of Richmond by James Grant. Soon after this event, E. A. Pollard removed to New York, and in that city and Brooklyn he spent the remainder of his life writing for the current periodicals. On December 12, 1872, at his brother Richard's home in Lynchburg, Edward Alfred Pollard died of Bright's disease after an illness extending over two years.

Few of Pollard's books have a real claim on the future. His 'Observations in the North' presents one or two vivid pictures, for example, the picturesque account of a breakfast with General Ben Butler; and in the 'Black Diamonds' are here and there glimpses of the real Southern negro; yet it is only by those books which were concerned with Southern political affairs that Pollard has left his impress on Southern thought.

The 'Southern History,' 'The Lost Cause,' and the 'Life of Jefferson Davis,' have exerted a considerable influence upon the ideas of men in regard to the Civil War and the causes of the failure of the Confederacy. 'The Lost Cause' is so similar both in treatment and in spirit to the 'Southern History' that they may be considered together. Though less partisan than the 'Life of Jefferson Davis,' both books express clearly enough their author's views on controversial subjects. The political and financial, as well as the martial, events of the war are carefully reviewed, and the writer places the censure for failures where he thinks censure to be due. He admires Lee and Jackson, Johnston and Floyd, but against the "President's Pets" he is merciless and even bitter.

The books are ponderous in size, yet there is the sustained interest throughout them of a well-told narrative. As authoritative, final history, they are too biased to be trusted far, but as contemporary history, full of personal feeling and exciting incident, yet

unburdened by too frequent anecdote, they are of value and importance.

The most vigorous, the most intense book written by Pollard is the 'Life of Jefferson Davis, with a Secret History of the Southern Confederacy.' The author was avowedly no friend of the man whose life he wrote; for in him he thought he saw the destroyer of the Confederacy. He thought that when President Davis was elected "a great cause was committed to an incompetent leader"; and throughout the war he most ill-advisedly, but scathingly and fearlessly, criticized the public actions of the Government and the private actions of Mr. Davis. When he undertook to write his life, though the ex-President was yet living, he did not modify the bitterness of his invective. He represented Mr. Davis as a scholarly student and an eloquent orator; but as a statesman, narrow and shallow, unjust to his enemies; and to his friends disposed to nepotism and partisanship, and inordinately ambitious.

Of the writers in the South during the war, E. A. Pollard was certainly one of the most virile. Though he lacked somewhat the elegant diction and crushing force which characterized the best of the writings of John M. Daniel, his chief on the *Examiner*, yet his style was marked by a directness and a lack of that straining after-effect which marred at times the over-fine expression of Daniel. At its best, his language is marked by a niceness of diction and a harmony of phrasing that prove the genuineness of his taste.

Of the Confederate cause, he said: "It has been called a 'rebellion,' but that is only a name, a vile wind, the hiss of a weak and toothless argument," and he writes with rare descriptive force when he depicts "the decisive moments that make victories."

He was too partisan to be a great historian. Intense in his feeling, ardent in the championship of his friends and heroes, he was frequently partial in his judgments; but, in spite of the errors of expression and statement that crept into his histories, when he gave his full power of expression and finish to his work, he was as an author a virile yet polished master of his style. Yet it is neither as the polished writer nor as the historian that he will most probably be remembered, but as the exponent of a point of view—as the voice of the opposition to the policies of President Davis and his Cabinet.

James Southall Wilson.

JEFFERSON DAVIS AS AN ORATOR

From 'Life of Jefferson Davis.'

Mr. Davis's career in the Senate of the United States was not connected with the origination of any great public measure, and had but little of severely historical distinction. He was a quiet member, illustrating in that august assembly a fine eloquence, a studied and refined manner, and a habit rather scholarly than popular. . . . He had none of the original resources of a great genius, a creator; but he had a characteristically senatorial manner, a mind variously and richly stored from cultivated leisure, and an eloquence which was without parallel in his times, and, in fact, ascends to comparison with the best models in history of public and deliberative discourse. . . . The events of the past few years have not only made the name of Jefferson Davis familiar to the companies of statesmen and politicians; it has been introduced to the world of letters, and discussed there with an interest scarcely second to that it has inspired in the political circle. His exhibitions of scholarship, the fine literary effects of his style, his sonorous State papers, his skilled narration of the origin and conduct of the war, his powerful and sometimes splendid vindication with the pen of the cause of Southern Confederacy have made him, no matter whatever else of reputation he may have lost or diminished in the struggle, one of the first literary names in America. It has been said that his very numerous and full state papers would make a very ingenious history of the war. They might be collected in another interest, as a model of style, containing as they do, some of the best and most vigorous English extant in this corrupt literary period of the country, in which the language of our ancestors suffers so much from the zeal of Yankee reformers. But it is as an orator that we propose to regard Mr. Davis in this chapter—a view in which it is remarkable he has been scarcely considered by his countrymen, although discussed in so many respects, and surrounded and assailed by almost every weapon of criticism. Here his displays during the war were less frequent than with the pen; they were few and but very imperfectly reported; they were almost lost to fame in the dingy

records of the Confederate newspapers; but what of well-preserved record he has left, as an orator, in the Senate of the United States is sufficient, we think, to entitle him to a large measure of admiration, to repair, to some extent, other parts of his reputation, and to leave him with an honorable and not lightly adorned name to survive the misfortunes of his purely political career.

The Senate of the United States is undoubtedly the highest school of eloquence in America. It was in this school, where had reigned the triumvirate of Clay, Webster, and Calhoun, where had been the theatre of the greatest and most dignified contests in American politics, where resided the memories of the country's greatest men, that Mr. Davis formed his style. It was a fit school. Of all the living orators of America, Mr. Davis was best suited to address a small and cultivated assembly. No one abhorred more than he did that vulgar and detestable style of eloquence, which the world is disposed to designate as peculiarly *American*, and of which exaggeration is the prevailing characteristic. His sober and classical speech had nothing in common with that Fourth-of-July oratory which captivates the masses; it rejected all extravagances; it had none of that rhetorical excess which has disfigured so many American statesmen. To those accustomed to the inflated style of the hustings and the extravagances of American oratory, it was indeed refreshing to listen to the polished yet forcible language of the Senator from Mississippi, to mark his apt political words, and to hear the hautboy tones of his rich and manly eloquence.

The qualities of Mr. Davis as an orator were of rare and cultivated type. His person realized all that the popular imagination pictured for an orator. His thin, spare figure, his almost sorrowful cast of countenance, composed, however, in an invariable expression of dignity, gave the idea of a body worn by the action of the mind, an intellect supporting in its prison of flesh the pains of constitutional disease, and triumphing over physical confinement and affliction. His cheek-bones were hollow; the vicinity of his mouth was deeply furrowed with intersecting lines; and the intensity of expression was rendered acute by angular facial outline. "In face and form," said one who frequently saw him in the Senate. "he

represents the Norman type with singular fidelity, if my conception of that type be correct." Observing him in a casual group of three of the then most distinguished public men of the South, sitting in abstracted conversation in the Chamber of the Senate, the same writer thus continues his description: "Davis sat erect and composed; Hunter, listening, rested his head on his hand; and Toombs, inclining forward, was speaking vehemently. Their respective attitudes were no bad illustration of their individuality. Davis impressed the spectator, who observed the easy but authoritative bearing with which he put aside or assented to Toombs' suggestions, with the notion of some slight superiority, some hardly acknowledged leadership; and Hunter's attentiveness and impassibility were characteristic of his nature, for his profundity of intellect wears the guise of stolidity, and his continuous industry that of inertia; while Toombs's quick utterance and restless head bespoke his nervous temperament and activity of mind."

Mr. Davis had a personal figure which was commanding in every attitude. His carriage was erect—there was a soldierly affectation, of which, indeed, the hero of Buena Vista gave evidence through his life, having the singular conceit that his genius was military, and fitter for arms than for the council. He had a precise manner, and an austerity that at first was forbidding; but he had naturally a fondness for society, and often displayed tenderness to those with whom he was intimate. When he spoke he was always self-possessed. His style as a speaker was very deliberate—sometimes with majestic slowness pouring out his wealth of language, and anon with low searching tones penetrating the ear even more distinctly than the strained utterance of other speakers. His voice was always clear and firm, without tremor; his elocution excellent. The matter of his speeches was invariably sound and sensible. A scholar, but not in the pedantic sense of the term; a man remarkable for the range of his learning, though making no pretentions to the doubtful reputation of the sciolist, his reading was classical and varied, his fund of illustration large, and his resources of imagery plentiful and always apposite.

But what was most remarkable in Mr. Davis' style of eloquence was a manner which we believe constitutes the highest

art of the orator—that of apparent *self-continence* in the expression of passion. It is by this peculiar manner, the appearance of suppressing the struggling emotions of the heart and only half speaking what is felt, that the consummate orator often conveys more of passion to his hearers than when his rage "wreaks itself upon expression," and is lost in the storm and multitude of words. It is a nice art—a magnetic power; and Mr. Davis, of all the speakers whom the author has ever heard in America, had it to perfection. He seldom stormed, he seldom spoke loudly or impetuously; but he often filled the hearts of his hearers with unspeakable passion, and captured their entire sympathies by that evidently forced moderation of tone and language which leaves to the power of *suggestion* much that expression declines to attempt, and is incapable of conveying.

There was another remarkable trait of Mr. Davis as an orator. His eloquence was haughty and defiant, and his manners singularly imperious. He spoke as one who would not brook contradiction, who delivered his statements of truth as if without regard to anything said to the contrary, and who disdained the challenges of debate. With an eye sometimes kindling like the light that blazed on "Diomed's crest," with a countenance engraven with passion; with a form erect but elastic, he presented the clear-cut, conspicuous front of a proud and dangerous antagonist. The author recollects him in one of the passages of the debate in the Senate on the famous Kansas bill, when he shone as the impersonation of defiant pride, and threw his haughty challenge in the face of a political enemy. Mr. Douglas, of Illinois, had twitted some of his Democratic friends for what he declared their alleged defection, and had promised certain conditions to them when he was able to dictate their restoration to the party. Mr. Davis rose suddenly to his feet, with erect and dilated figure, and, striking his breast, exclaimed proudly and passionately: "*I scorn your quarter!*"

THE BATTLE OF MANASSAS

From 'The Lost Cause.'

THE sun of the twenty-first of July rose with more than usual splendor. It was a calm Sabbath morning. The measured sounds of artillery told that both armies were on the alert. Smoke curling away from the cannon's mouth rose slowly into the air; glistening masses of troops could be seen on the distant landscape, and far away in the west rose the dark outline of the Blue Ridge, which enclosed, as an amphitheatre, the woods and hollows, the streams and open spaces of Manassas Plain.

The night before the battle Gen. Beauregard had decided to take the offensive. Gen. Johnston had arrived during the day, but only with a portion of the Army of the Shenandoah; five thousand of his men having been detained on the railroad for want of transportation. It was determined that the two forces, less than thirty thousand effective men of all arms, should be united within the lines of Bull Run, and thence advance to the attack of the enemy, before Patterson's junction with McDowell, which was daily expected. But a battle was to ensue, different in place and circumstances from any previous plan on the Confederate side.

The Confederate army was divided into eight brigades, stretching for eight or ten miles along the defensive line of Bull Run. The right of the line was much stronger than the left, in position and numbers; the extreme left at Stone Bridge being held by Colonel Evans with only a regiment and battalion. It had been arranged by McDowell, the Federal commander, that the first division of his army, commanded by Gen. Tyler, should take position at Stone Bridge, and feign an attack upon that point, while the second and third divisions were, by routes unobserved by the Confederates, to cross the run, and thus effect a junction of three formidable divisions of the grand army, to be thrown upon a force scattered along the stream for eight miles, and so situated as to render a concerted movement on their part impracticable.

A little after sunrise the enemy opened a light cannonade upon Col. Evans's position at Stone Bridge. This continued

for an hour, while the main body of the enemy was marching to cross Bull Run, some two miles above the Confederate left. Discovering, to his amazement, that the enemy had crossed the stream above him, Col. Evans fell back. As the masses of the enemy drew near, military science pronounced the day lost for the Confederates. They had been flanked by numbers apparently overwhelming. That usually fatal and terrible word in military parlance—"*flanked*"—may be repeated with emphasis.

It is true that Col. Evans, who had held the position at Stone Bridge, where the enemy's feint was made, had discovered the nature of that demonstration in time to form a new line of battle, as the main body of the enemy emerged from the "Big Forest," where it had worked its way along the tortuous, narrow track of a rarely-used road. But the column that crossed Bull Run numbered over sixteen thousand men of all arms. Col. Evans had eleven companies and two field-pieces. Gen. Bee, with some Georgia, Alabama, and Mississippi troops, moved up to his support. The joint force was now about five regiments and six field-pieces. That thin line was all that stood between sixteen thousand Federals and victory. It is wonderful that this small force of Confederates should have, for the space of an hour, breasted the unremitting battle-storm, and maintained for that time odds almost incredible. But they did it. It was frequently said afterwards by military men, in Richmond that the Confederates had been whipped, but that the men in the novelty of their experience of a battlefield, "did not know it."

But at last the blended commands of Bee and Evans gave way before the surging masses of the enemy. The order for retreat was given by General Bee. The Confederates fell back sullenly. Their ranks were fast losing cohesion; but there was no disorder; and, at every step of their retreat, they stayed, by their hard skirmishing, the flanking columns of the enemy. There were more than five-fold odd against them. The enemy now caught the idea that he had won the day; the news of a victory was carried to the rear; the telegraph flashed it to all the cities in the North, and before noon threw Washington into exultations.

General Bee had a soldier's eye and a recognition of the

situation. The conviction shot through his heart that the day was lost. As he was pressed back in rear of the Robinson House, he found Gen. Jackson's brigade of five regiments ready to support him. It was the timely arrival of a man who, since that day, never failed to be in the front of a battle's crisis, and to seize the decisive moments that make victories. Gen. Bee rushed to the strange figure of the Virginia commander, who sat his horse like marble, only twisting his head in a high black stock, as he gave his orders with stern distinctness. "General," he pathetically exclaimed, "they are beating us." "Then, sir," replied Jackson, "we'll give them the bayonet." The words were as a new inspiration. Gen. Bee turned to his over-tasked troops, exclaiming, "There are Jackson and his Virginians standing like a *stone wall*. Let us determine to die here and we will conquer."

In the meantime, where were the Confederate Generals—Beauregard and Johnston? They were four miles away. Gen. Beauregard had become involved in a series of blunders and mishaps, such as had been seldom crowded into a single battle-field. In ignorance of the enemy's plan of attack, he had kept his army posted along Bull Run for more than eight miles, waiting for his wily adversary to develop his purpose to him. He had, at an early hour of the morning, determined to attack with his right wing and centre on the enemy's flank and rear at Centreville, with precautions against the advance of his reserves from the direction of Washington. Even after his left flank had been so terribly engaged, he supposed that this movement would relieve it; and in his official report of the action, he writes: "By such a movement, I confidently expected to achieve a complete victory for my country by 12 o'clock, M."

It was half-past ten in the morning when Gen. Beauregard learned that his orders for an advance on Centreville had miscarried. He and Gen. Johnston had taken position on a commanding hill, about half a mile in the rear of Mitchell's Ford, to watch the movements of the enemy. While they were anxiously listening there for sounds of conflict from the Confederate front at Centreville, the battle was bursting and expending its fury upon their left flank. From the hill could be witnessed the grand diorama of the conflict. The roar of

artillery reached there like protracted thunder. The whole valley was a boiling crater of dust and smoke. The enemy's design could be no longer in doubt; the violent firing on the left showed, at last, where the crisis of the battle was; and now immense clouds of dust plainly denoted the march of a large body of troops from the Federal centre.

Not a moment was now to be lost. It was instantly necessary to make new combinations, and these the most rapid, to meet the enemy on the field upon which he had chosen to give battle. It was evident that the left flank of the Confederates was being overpowered. Dashing on at a headlong gallop, Gens. Beauregard and Johnston reached the field of action, in the rear of the Robinson House, just as the command of Bee and Evans had taken shelter in a wooded ravine, and Jackson's brigade had moved up their left, to withstand the pressure of the enemy's attack. It was a thrilling moment. Gen. Johnston seized the colours of the 4th Alabama regiment, and offered to lead the attack. Gen. Beauregard leaped from his horse, and turning his face to his troops, exclaimed: "I have come here to die with you."

In the meantime the Confederate reserves were rapidly moving up to support the left flank. The movement of the right and centre, begun by Jones and Longstreet, was countermanded. Holmes's two regiments and a battery of artillery of six guns, Early's brigade and two regiments from Bonham's brigade, with Kemper's four six-pounders were ordered up to support the left flank. The battle was re-established; but the aspect of affairs was yet desperate in the extreme. Confronting the enemy's attack Gen. Beauregard had as yet not more than sixty-five hundred infantry and artillerists, with but thirteen pieces of artillery, and two companies of cavalry. Gens. Ewell, Jones (D. R.), Longstreet and Bonham had been directed to make a demonstration to their several fronts, to retain and engross the enemy's reserves and forces on their flank, and at and around Centreville. Gen. Johnston had left the immediate conduct of the field to Beauregard, and had gone in the direction of the Lewis House, to urge reinforcements forward.

The battle was now to rage long and fiercely on the plateau designated by the two wooden houses—the Henry and Robin-

son House—which stood upon it. Gen. Beauregard determined to repossess himself of the position, and formed his line for an assault; his right rushed to the charge, while his centre, under Jackson, pierced that of the enemy. The plateau was won, together with several guns; but the enemy threw forward a heavy force of infantry, and again dispossessed the Confederates. It was evident that the latter were being slowly overpowered by the weight of numbers. A force, estimated at twenty thousand infantry, seven companies of cavalry, and twenty-four pieces of artillery were bearing hotly and confidently down on their position, while perilous and heavy reserves of infantry and artillery hung in the distance.

It was now about two o'clock in the afternoon. Fortunately the reinforcements pushed forward, and directed by Gen. Johnston to the required quarter, were at hand just as Gen. Beauregard had ordered forward a second effort for the recovery of the disputed plateau. The brigades of Holmes and another were put in a line. Additional pieces of artillery came dashing up, and a new inspiration seemed to be caught by the Confederates. The line swept grandly forward; shouts ran along it; and steadily it penetrated the fire of the enemy's artillery. The whole open ground was again swept clear of the enemy; but it was strewn with the evidences of a terrible carnage. Gen. Bee had fallen near the Henry House, mortally wounded. A little further on, Col. Bartow, of Georgia had fallen, shot through the heart—and one of the bravest and most promising spirits of the South was there quenched in blood. But the tide of fortune had changed; the plateau was now firmly in our possession; and the enemy, driven across the turnpike and into the woods, was visibly disorganized.

But there were to be three stages in the battle of Manassas. We have already described two: the enemy's flank movement and momentary victory, and the contest for the plateau. The third was now to occur; and the enemy was to make his last attempt to retrieve the fortune of the day.

His broken line was rapidly rallied. He had re-formed to renew the battle, extending his right with a still wider sweep to turn the Confederate left. It was a grand spectacle, as this crescent outline of battle developed itself, and threw forward on the broad, gentle slopes of the ridge occupied by its clouds

of skirmishers, while as far as the eye could reach, masses of infantry and carefully-preserved cavalry stretched through the woods and fields.

But while the Federals rallied their broken line, under the shelter of fresh brigades, and prepared for the renewal of the struggle, telegraphed signals from the hills warned Gen. Beauregard to "look out for the enemy's advance on the left." At the distance of more than a mile, a column of men was approaching. At their head was a flag which could not be distinguished; and even with the aid of a strong glass, Gen. Beauregard was unable to determine whether it was the Federal flag or the Confederate flag—that of the Stripes or that of the Bars. "At this moment," said Gen. Beauregard, in speaking afterwards of the occurrence, "I must confess my heart failed me. I came, reluctantly, to the conclusion that, after all our efforts, we should at last be compelled to leave to the enemy the hard-fought and bloody-field. I again took the glass to examine the flag of the approaching column; but my anxious inquiry was unproductive of result—I could not tell to which army the waving banner belonged. At this time all the members of my staff were absent, having been dispatched with orders to various points. The only person with me was the gallant officer who has recently distinguished himself by a brilliant feat of arms—General, then Colonel, Evans. To him I communicated my doubts and my fears. I told him that I feared the approaching force was in reality Patterson's division; that, if such was the case, I would be compelled to fall back upon our reserves, and postpone, until the next day, a continuation of the engagement."

Turning to Col. Evans, the anxious commander directed him to proceed to Gen. Johnston, and request him to have his reserves collected in readiness to support and protect a retreat. Col. Evans had proceeded but a little way. Both officers fixed one final, intense gaze upon the advancing flag. A happy gust of wind shook out its folds, and Gen. Beauregard recognized the Stars and Bars of the Confederate banner! At this moment an orderly came dashing forward. "Col. Evans," exclaimed Beauregard, his face lighting up, "ride forward, and order General Kirby Smith to hurry up his command, and strike them on the flank and rear!"

It was the arrival of Kirby Smith with a portion of Johnston's army left in the Shenandoah Valley, which had been anxiously expected during the day, and now cheer after cheer from regiment to regiment announced his welcome. As the train approached Manassas with some two thousand infantry, mainly of Elzey's brigade, Gen. Smith knew, by the sounds of firing, that a great struggle was in progress, and, having stopped the engine, he had formed his men, and was advancing rapidly through the fields. He was directed to move on the Federal left and centre. At the same time, Early's brigade, which had just come up, was ordered to throw itself upon the right flank of the enemy. The two movements were made almost simultaneously, while Gen. Beauregard himself led the charge in front. The combined attack was too much for the enemy. The fact was that his troops had already been demoralized by the former experiences of the day; and his last grand and formidable array broke and crumbled into pieces under the first pressure of the assault. A momentary resistance was made on a rising ground in the vicinity of what was known as the Chinn House. As the battle surged here, it looked like an island around which flames were gathered in all directions. The enemy was appalled. He had no fresh troops to rely on; his cannon were being taken at every turn; lines were no sooner formed than the Confederates broke them again; they gave way from the long-contested hill; the day was now plainly and irretrievably lost.

As the enemy was forced over the ridge or narrow plateau, his former array scattered into flight, spreading each moment, until the fields were soon covered with the black forms of flying soldiers. But in this general and confused rout a singular panic penetrated, as by a stroke of lightning, and rifted the flying army into masses of mad and screaming fugitives. As the retreat approached Cub Run bridge, a shot from Kemper's battery took effect upon the horses of a team that was crossing; the wagon was overturned in the centre of the bridge, and the passage obstructed; and at once, at this point of confusion, the Confederates commenced to play their artillery upon the train carriages and artillery wagons, reducing them to ruins. Hundreds of flying soldiers were involved in the common heap of destruction; they dashed down

the hill in heedless and headlong confusion; the main passage of retreat was choked; and for miles the panic spread, flying teams and wagons confusing and dismembering every corps, while hosts of troops, all detached from their regiments, were mingled in one disorderly rout. Vehicles tumbled against each other; riderless horses galloped at random; the roar of the flight was heard for miles through clouds of dust; and as the black volume of fugitives became denser, new terrors would seize it, which called for agonizing efforts at extrication, in which horses trampled on men, and great wheels of artillery crushed out the lives of those who fell beneath them.

CHARCOAL SKETCHES

From 'Black Diamonds.'

When I was last through the country here, I made the acquaintance of a very old "Guinea negro," Pompey by name, who had been imported at an early age from the African coast; and a livelier, better dispositioned and happier old boy I have never met with. The only marks of African extraction which Pompey retained in his old age, were that he would talk Guinea "gibberish" when he got greatly excited, and that he used occasionally some curious spells and superstitious appliances, on account of which most of the negroes esteemed him a great "conjurer." Pompey is a very queer old fellow, and his appearance and wonderful stories inspire the young with awe. He looks like a little, withered old boy; and the long fantastic naps of his wool give him a mysterious air. According to his story, he once traveled to Chili through a subterranean passage of thousands of miles. He also is occasionally bribed to exhibit to his young mass'rs the impression of a ring around his body, apparently produced by the hug of a good strong rope, but which he solemnly avers was occasioned by his having stuck midway in a keyhole, when the evil witches were desperately attempting to draw him through that aperture.

Pompey had married a genteel slavewoman, a maid to an old lady of one of the first families of Carolina, and lived very unhappily with his fine mate, because she could not

understand "black folks' ways." It appears that Pompey frequently had recourse to the black art to inspire his wife with more affection for him; and having in his hearing dropped the remark, jokingly, one day, that a good whipping made a mistress love her lord the more, I was surprised to hear Pompey speak up suddenly, and with solemn emphasis, "Mass'r Ed'rd, I b'leve dar *is* sumthin' in dat. When de 'ooman get *ambitious*"—he means high-notioned and passionate—"de debble is sot up against you, and no use to honey dat chile; you jest got to beat him out, and he bound to come out 'fore the breath come out, anyhow." I am inclined to recommend Pompey's treatment for all "ambitious" negroes, male or female.

By way of parenthesis, I must tell you how Pompey's mistress scolds him. He is so much of a boy, that she has imperceptibly adopted a style of quizzing him and holding him up to ridicule, to which he is very sensitive. I will just note the following passage between the two: In the absence of the butler, Pompey is sometimes called to the solemn office of waiting on the table, at which elevation he is greatly pleased. Imagine the scene of a staid and orderly breakfast, attending on which is Pompey, having a waiter tucked with great precision under his arm, and presenting the appearance of a most complacent self-consequence. Unluckily, however, making some arrangement in the pantry, he produces a nervous jostle of china. "Pompey, Pompey," cries his mistress, "what are you doing? Ah, Pompey, you are *playing with the little mice,* ain't you?" Pompey, in a fluster of mortification at this accusation, denies playing with "little mice." "Ah, yes, Pompey, I know you want to have a little play—here, Martha, Sally, take Pompey out into the yard and let him play!" The two maid-servants approach poor old uncle Pompey in a most serious manner, to take him out to play, but he shoves them aside, and crestfallen, and with bashful haste, retreats from the room; while the two women solemnly keep alongside of him, as if really intent upon the fulfilment of the orders of their mistress to put the old fellow through a course of gambolling on the green.

Pompey is greatly cut up by such scoldings; and to be

made a jest of before the genteeler and more precise servants is his especial punishment and pain in this world.

I must confess for myself a strong participation in Pompey's contempt for "town negroes." Whenever he espies a sable aristocrat, he uses the strongest expression of disgust, "dam jumpy fish," etc.; and then he will discourse of how a good negro should do his work soberly and faithfully, illustrating the lesson always by indicating what he does, while Henry a more favored slave, has nothing, according to Pompey's account, to do, but to recline in an easy chair and eat "cake." I agree with Pompey, as to what constitutes a useful and respectable negro, and tell him that we shall have some such from the country from which he came, at which prospect he is greatly pleased. "Ah, Mass'r," says he, "dat is de nigger dat can do your work; he de chile dat can follow arter de beast, like dis here," tugging away and gee-hawing while he speaks, at the hard mouth of a stupid mule, with which he is plowing in the garden. "But I tells you what, Mass'r Ed'rd," continues Pompey, impressively, "no matter how de dam proud black folks hold der head up, and don't love de mule, and don't love de work, and don't love nothing but de ownselves, I tells you what, I ain't but nigger nohow; and I tells you, and I tells 'em all, *de nigger and de mule am de axle-tree* of de world."

* * * * * *

The religious element is very strong in Aunt Debby's character, and her *repertoire* of pious minstrelsy is quite extensive. Her favorite hymn is in the following words, which are repeated over and over again:

> Oh run, brother, run! Judgment day is comin'!
> Oh run, brother, run! Why don't you come along?
> The road so rugged, and the hill so high—
> And my Lord call me home,
> To walk the golden streets of my New Jerusalem.

Aunt Debby's religion is of that sort—always begging the Lord to take her up to glory, and professing the greatest anxiety to go *right now!* This religious enthusiasm, however, is not to be taken at its word.

You have doubtless heard the anecdote of Cæsar, which

is too good not to have been told more than once; though even if you have heard the story before, it will bear repetition for its moral. Now, Cæsar one day had caught it, not from Brutus, but from Betty—an allegorical coquette in the shape of a red cowhide. On retiring to the silence of his cabin at night, Cæsar commenced to soliloquize, rubbing the part of his body where the castigation had been chiefly administered, and bewailing his fate with tragic desperation, in the third person. "Cæsar," said he, "most done gone—don't want to live no longer! Jist come, good Lord, swing low the chariot, and take dis chile away! Cæsar ready to go—he *wants* to go!" An irreverent darkey outside, hearing these protestations, tapped at the door. "Who dar?" replied Cæsar, in a low voice of suppressed alarm. "De angel of de Lord come for Cæsar, 'cordin' to request." The dread summons had indeed come, thought Cæsar; but blowing out the light with a sudden whiff, he replied in an unconcerned tone, "*De nigger don't live here.*"

There is one other trait wanting to complete Aunt Debby's character. Though at an advanced age, she is very coquettish; and keeps up a regular assault on a big lout of the name of Sam, whom she affects to despise as "jist de meanest nigger de Lord ever put breath in." I overheard some words between them last holiday. "I'se a white man to-day," says Sam, "and I'se not gwine to take any of your imperence, old 'ooman;" at the same time, taking the familiar liberty of poking his finger into her side like a brad-awl. "Get 'long, Sa—tan!" replied Aunt Debby, with a shove, but a smile at the same time, to his infernal majesty. And then they both fell to laughing for the space of half a minute, although I must confess, that I could not understand what they were laughing at.

Aunt Debby may serve you, my dear C., as a picture of the happy, contented, Southern slave. Some of your Northern politicians would represent the slaves of the South as sullen, gloomy, isolated from life—in fact, pictures of a living death. Believe me, nothing could be further from the truth. Like Aunt Debby, they have their little prides and passions, their amusements, their pleasantries, which constitute the same sum of happiness as in the lives of their masters.

MELVILLE DAVISSON POST

[1871—]

JOHN A. HOWARD

MELVILLE DAVISSON POST was born in the County of Harrison, in the State of West Virginia, April 19, 1871. He spent his youth on the cattle ranges of his father, the Honorable Ira Carper Post. Here he had the big, open, virile life, upon which he drew for so much rich incident in his later romance of this country. He was educated at the University of West Virginia, taking there both the academic and law degrees, and winning successively the annual honors for declamation, oration, and debate.

His taste for creative fiction was then to be observed. Like Guy de Maupassant, he wrote stories and tales, and like Guy de Maupassant, he destroyed them. Of all these earlier efforts no one of them was ever offered to a printer, and no one of them remains.

Immediately after his graduation he was selected to present the name of a prominent gubernatorial candidate to the Democratic State Convention at Parkersburg. This speech so impressed the Convention that he was placed on the National ticket as a Presidential elector. He was elected and sat in the Electoral College as its secretary—the youngest member ever chosen to that body.

After the Presidential campaign he formed a partnership with the prosecuting attorney of Ohio County at Wheeling, and for several years assisted at the trial of every sort of criminal case. He made a profound study of crimes. The result of this study was the conception of that strange, original, fascinating character, Randolph Mason, and the volume of stories involving him as a central figure, a great legal misanthrope without moral sense, who believed that all wrongs, even murder, could be committed in such a manner that before the law they were not crimes.

In the clean-cut introduction to this book, 'The Strange Schemes of Randolph Mason,' Mr. Post tells us how he came to discover this new, wholly virgin, literary field and how he came to create Randolph Mason. "The high ground of the field of crime has not been explored; it has not even been entered. The book-stalls have been filled to weariness with tales based upon plans whereby the *detective* or *ferreting* power of the State might be baffled. But, prodigious marvel! no writer has attempted to construct tales based upon plans whereby the *punishing* power of the State might be baffled.

"All wrongs are not crimes. Indeed only those wrongs are crimes in which certain technical elements are present. The law provides a Procrustean standard for all crimes. Thus a wrong, to become criminal, must fit exactly into the measure laid down by the law, else it is no crime; if it varies never so little from the legal measure, the law must, and will, refuse to regard it as criminal, no matter how injurious a wrong it may be. There is no measure of morality, or equity, or common right that can be applied to the individual case. The gauge of the law is iron bound. The wrong measured by this gauge is either a crime or it is not. There is no middle ground.

"Hence it is, that if one knows well the technicalities of the law, one may commit horrible wrongs that will yield all the gain and all the resulting effect of the highest crimes, and yet the wrongs perpetrated will constitute no one of the crimes described by the law. Thus the highest crimes, even murder, may be committed in such manner that although the criminal is known and the law holds him in custody, yet it cannot punish him."

The author tells us that in order properly to develop these legal problems he required a central figure, and that in the construction of this central figure he had the greatest difficulty. The figure must of necessity be a lawyer of shrewdness and ability. And he says: "Here a grave difficulty presented itself. No attorney, unless he were a superlative knave, could be presumed to suggest the committing of wrongs entailing grievous injury upon innocent man. Hence the necessity for a character who should be without moral sense and yet should possess all the requisite legal acumen. Such a character is Randolph Mason."

The book has gone through thirteen editions. Two or three great criminal cases, like that of Leutgert in Chicago and Thorne's case in New York, brought the book into wide discussion and startlingly verified one of the stories in the volume, "The Corpus Delicti." The book at once gave Mr. Post a position among American writers. To discover in an imitative age a new character and a new untrodden field was no little achievement.

Aside from its literary value, the book has found its way into almost every Eastern law school as a parallel reading. It has continued since its publication to receive always a higher estimate. Its proper place in literature has been finally indicated by the *Review of Reviews*. When the board of editors of that discriminating periodical undertook to collect from the literature of every country the mystery stories of that language which by the consensus of opinion were considered to be masterpieces, they included Mr. Post's story, "The Corpus Delicti," in the American volume, along with Poe's "The Gold Bug" and Washington Irving's "Wolfert Webber."

The first book was followed a year or two later by a second, 'The Man of Last Resort.' In these volumes the author dealt principally with crimes. He showed how all crimes, including forgery, robbery, false pretence, embezzlement, and even murder, were technical conceptions of the law, which Randolph Mason could so handle that although the criminal was known and the law held him in custody, yet it could not punish him.

The author's third book, 'Dwellers in the Hills,' is a romance of the old West Virginia cattle country, in which his youth was passed. Mr. Post felt that the curious, distinctive life of this Southern border ought somehow to be preserved. It was the oldest cattle land in America, and differed wholly from the Western life so common in fiction. It was full of ancient customs and incrusted with a folk-lore and traditions all its own. It was in fact a civilization apart. His great-grandfather had crossed the Alleghanies into these beautiful hills from an Eastern State that did not please him. He came like some feudal baron, with retainers, armed with the heavy hunting-rifle and carrying silver loaded on a pack-horse. With this silver he bought from the pioneer great tracts of the fertile grass land lying along the Buckhannon River, and established a cattle business. The herds were driven across the mountains to Baltimore, and from this beginning a big, robust, richly colored civilization grew that has no counterpart anywhere in America.

Here again Mr. Post entered an undiscovered literary field. The West had been tramped and re-tramped by the "copy" hunters, but here was an ancient civilization of which no writer had ever heard. The story moves swiftly. It covers merely three days of stress. But in spite of this movement the style of the story is a perpetual pleasure. There is caught in this style, as by some witchery, the dreamy, alluring atmosphere of the green sod, the bright rivers, and the haze of the hills. There is in it, too, the big, virile emotions of that land, the old weird tales, the fairy things that inhabit and the dread things that haunt. The style is pictorial, the visualization striking. It is a piece of sound artistic work.

The book had its greatest success in England, where vigorous, moving, out-of-door life is more appreciated than with us. The most pertinent criticism of the book is from an English critic: "Like Stevenson, Mr. Post has written a note above the subject." But when one appreciates the fact that outside the material aspect of a land there is always lying an immaterial aspect, and that this immaterial aspect may be weird, poetic, sterile, or rich with dreams, one sees how a style, woven to catch this illusive atmosphere may seem a garment too rich or too delicate for the natural incidents which is must necessarily cover.

The characters of this book are living people from a living land. They have the primitive strength and the charm of an old, isolated civilization. The dialogue gives admirably the quaint, unforgettable humor of the hills. The speech, the songs, the quaint, big people, the horses and the men, the vast yellow river, the fighting cattle, the loves, the hates, the fears, the brutal swing and drive of primitive emotions, and the vague illusive charm of the Hills—all this vanished civilization is preserved to us like some butterfly in amber.

Mr. Post soon became related to corporate interests in the practice of the law and wholly abandoned criminal cases. The best business of this character was in the Federal Courts; and looking to this practice he formed a law partnership and settled in a more central part of West Virginia. This firm was one of the strongest in the State, and for five years it was on one side or the other of almost every important suit instituted in the Northern District of West Virginia. As a result of the labor incident to this partnership, Mr. Post's health was broken down, and he was sent by his physicians to Brides le Bains in the south of France for the cure; but the recuperation has been slow and he has not been able to return to the practice of the law.

Mr. Post gave to the practice of corporate law the same searching inquiry that he gave to the study of crimes, and the result has been that he has prepared a series of stories turning on curious phases of our commercial and corporate law, with the same central character of Randolph Mason, entitled 'The Corrector of Destinies.' These latter Randolph Mason stories show an advance over the earlier ones in technique. They are more subtle, more human, more artistic in structure, the dramatic interest is more sustained, and the reader's sense of justice is more fully satisfied. The most notable stories of this collection are "The Virgin of the Mountain," "The Danseuse," "My Friend at Bridge," and "Madame Versäy." These stories have a wealth of incident and setting that show a photographic observation and a wide knowledge of books and men. The change in Randolph Mason is a thing of subtle art. That his mania should grow upon him until finally, believing himself to be the equal of Destiny, he should undertake to adjust those desperate cases so hopeless as to be called fated or inevitable, is but a progress that any alienist might foresee; and that he should now undertake only such problems as required the return directly of an injury, in an exact measure, to the author of a wrong, because such a problem was more difficult than any other rather than because it was moral, meets our conception of the character.

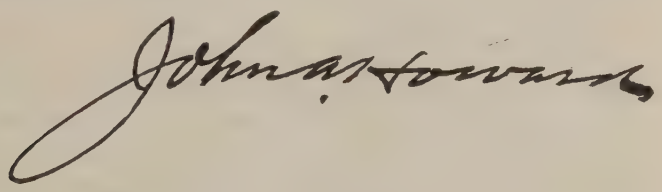
One of the chief charms of this central figure is that one cannot

say whether or not he is mad—this austere conception of an incarnate essence of justice untinctured with sympathy. But there is no madness in his sound, practical plans, nor in his words, hard, biting, acrid, as witnesses that vitriolic epigram: "All things are possible to the law—even justice."

It would seem that in the creation of that literary product requiring the nicest art, the mystery story, the South has led all literature. Poe created Monsieur Dupin and Post created Randolph Mason, the one demonstrating how by acute deduction the criminal and his methods could be determined, the other demonstrating how the very wrong itself may be so committed that it will yield all the resulting effect of a crime and yet constitute no one of the crimes described by the law. Monsieur Dupin is a pioneer in the one field as Randolph Mason is a pioneer in the other.

In addition to these three books the author has written various short stories published in American magazines. The most notable of these, and the latest, is "The Trivial Incident," based upon that scheme of things so often to be observed in life, how a complete disaster may follow in fatal sequence upon some slight, unimportant event. It is inevitable that such a story should be compared with Guy de Maupassant's "The String," and I ask the reader to make that comparison for himself.

It is too early to indicate Mr. Post's place in American literature. But he has created a wholly new and original character in fiction; he has opened the store-house of legal reports to creative romance; and he has produced a novel that preserves to us the life of a big, virile fragment of our civilization.



BIBLIOGRAPHY

The Strange Schemes of Randolph Mason. New York, Putnam's, 1896.

The Man of Last Resort. New York, Putnam's, 1897.

Dwellers in the Hills. New York, Putnam's, 1901.

The Corrector of Destinies. New York, E. J. Clode, 1907.

MADAME VERSAY

From 'The Corrector of Destinies.' Copyright, 1907, The Pearson Publishing Company and Copyright, 1908, by Edward J. Clode, publisher, New York, and used here by permission of the author and the publisher.

I WAS surprised on a morning in early February to find Bishop Simonton's carriage before Randolph Mason's house. I have known churchmen to appeal to Mason in desperate straits, perhaps upon a theory that one should try all temporal doors before knocking on the gates of alabaster. But that the esthetic and venerable Bishop of New York should require profane assistance was quite beyond belief. I pulled up short by my ancient friend, the crossing policeman.

"Scally," I said, "I believe the ravages of age are beginning to mark me. Can it be Bishop Simonton's carriage I see yonder?"

The great Celt rapped himself gently on the belt plate with his club. "Sure," he said, "it's not the ravages of age that's doin' ye any harm this mornin', Misther Parks. 'Tis his nib's wagon, all right."

"Some alderman must be squatting on the Church lands," I said, "to bring this good man out at a quarter before ten on a winter morning."

"Wist!" replied the Irish king, half covering his mouth with his gloved hand; " 'tis a woman." Then he crossed the street to stop a line of drays.

The mystery was now beyond conjecture. I walked on slowly to the gate and up the flag-path to the house. Certain airy, nebulous conceptions had, from the pleasantries of early Italian letters and recent scandalous posters along the book stalls, presented themselves with piquant explanations. Within the house a second and greater surprise awaited me. Pietro met me at the door saying that Randolph Mason wished instantly to see me. I gave Pietro my coat and hat and went at once to the private office. My state of mental flippancy had little prepared me for the type of woman who arose as I entered. I have not seen her like in New York. If the word elegant were not so thumbed, I should write it here as descriptive of her—not in a tinseled or bedizened sense, but as the panther is elegant, as the red silken horses of a rajah are

elegant. High breeding, down an immemorial line, produces such animals, time, through a hundred generations, carving carefully, like a gem engraver. Tall, supple and straight; the eye steady, calm, reserved, fearless; the nose straight and thin; the lips fine, delicate and resolute; the chin up; the black, glossy hair parted in the middle and brushed back. She was gowned in well-fitting black. This woman was perhaps fifty years old. I instantly fitted her into the frame of a casement window along the Battery in Charleston, or the white columns of an estate on the James. I bowed as she turned toward me. I think the statue of Nathan Hale, outside in the flurry of snow, would also have bowed had it been standing in my shoes. She did not speak to me at all, but waited in dignified silence for Mason to say what was necessary to be said.

Mason was standing by his table, tapping it impatiently with the tips of his long, sensitive fingers. I thought the lines along his mouth were broken a bit, his eyes a trifle warmer. But this was certainly a fancy, for when he spoke it was in his usual cold, even voice.

"Parks," he said, "you must find a certain variety actress, calling herself Madame Versäy. She has in her possession a case of pearls belonging to Miss Caroline Pickney. She will demand ten thousand dollars in cash for the return of these jewels. You will say to her that Miss Pickney has finally arranged to pay her this money. That on the tenth day of February at ten o'clock, the vault officer of the Jefferson Trust Company, in the city of Richmond, in the presence of Miss Pickney here and you, will deliver to her ten thousand dollars in currency. She must bring with her the case of jewels and hand it over to the vault officer, who, upon the payment of the money, will give it to Miss Pickney. This Madame Versäy is said to be under the protection of one Robert Henderson, a police detective of New York. This person may also be present, if Madame Versäy wishes him to be. You will arrange for this purchase with Madame Versäy. You will then accompany Miss Pickney to Richmond and be present with her at the transfer of the money. Miss Pickney will personally attend to the other details of the matter."

When Randolph Mason had finished speaking, the woman

picked up a long coat from her chair and began to put it on. I helped her with the collar of it. She thrust her black-gloved hands in the deep pockets, then she turned to Mason.

"These jewels were brought from India by my great-grandfather," she said; "they were worn by my great-grandmother at her wedding; by my grandmother; by my mother. Their value to me is beyond estimate. Still I do not wish to violate either the laws of Virginia or those of the United States in order to recover them. I do not greatly fear the laws of Virginia. It cannot be that my fathers have made laws that would permit a creature like this actress to retain my inheritance. But the laws of the United States are of the North; they may permit such things. I do not know. Federal judges in the South, it is said, are king's governors, often contravening, I am told, our wisest laws, our oldest customs, our most cherished ideas of justice. I do not wish to come into the presence of these overlords, nor to be subject to the impertinence of their attachés. I wish to be assured, Mr Mason, of the entire safety of this plan."

Mason's face showed annoyance. "Madame," he said, "rubber of whist could not be safer."

"Then," said the woman, "I bid you good-morning."

A little snow was falling, and I accompanied Miss Caroline Pickney to Bishop Simonton's carriage, tucked in the skirts of her great coat and closed the door. I think she must have taken me for a sort of upper servant, since she gave no evidence of my presence, except a stately nod at the carriage window.

Here was a fine bundle of mysteries, coupled with the direction of Mason to go out and find Madame Versäy. Find an unknown variety actress, only the devil's imps knew where. Such birds had no marked tree to roost in; besides, this person was probably Madame Gladys by now, or Estelle something or other. I could not go back to Mason for further light. He would stare at me and walk away. My directions were accurate: find Madame Versäy first and then go to Richmond.

I turned up the collar of my greatcoat, and went down for a conference with the omniscient Scally. I found him directing commerce with the gestures of a Roman prætor. I darted past the row of cabs to his island of safety and seized

his hand. A moment later, when the tide had passed, he took my bill from between the fingers of his glove and held it under his broad thumb; then he smiled benignly.

"Misther Parks," he said, " 'tis the speed limit you are after wishin' to exceed?"

"No," I said; "I am the King of the Golden Mountain on the quest of a fairy."

"Go along; you're foolin'," he said.

"By no means," I answered; "I want to find Madame Versäy." He whistled softly. "Madame Versäy, is it! 'Tis only the devil that knows where she is now, but where she'll be at one to-night, 'tis Scally that knows as well as the devil. In a dago café on the Bowery, which is next door to Paddy Moran's dance hall, she will be atin' and drinkin' and carryin' on. She's a bad one, this Madame Versäy. 'Tis back to the tall weeds your friend Scally would advise you to be goin'."

At half-past twelve that night, I found Madame Versäy, and the café called "dago" by my friend Scally. It was a fragment of Paris, transplanted to the Bowery by Monsieur Popinot, an oily, obsequious little creature from the Montmartre. He came running out to the curb to bow me in—the coming of a hansom was an event. He enumerated his wares with true Latin enthusiasm. His caviare had arrived that very day. It was "magnifique," and his wines! ah, monsieur, he alone in all this raw land had wines! His brother Anselm hunted France, nosed it, fingered it, tasted it, that he, Popinot might have champagne, fragrant like those little meadows nestling at the foothills of the Pyrenees. Burgundy, red like the poppies in the wheat fields of the Oise; and absinthe—here language failed him. He clasped his hands, "Ravissante, monsieur!"

Madame Popinot, who presided over the cash drawer by the door, beamed upon me as I entered. She was a daughter of the little shops along the Seine, fat and vigilant, knowing instantly if the new-comer had the price of a glass of wine in his pocket. A virtue of the highest order to her; doubtless the only one remaining.

I selected a little table by the wall, and, not wishing to be poisoned, ordered a bottle of Bass Ale and a plate of dry biscuits, wiping out Popinot's disgust with a generous tip. The

place was evidently a Bohemian rendezvous of a low order. The atmosphere was a stench of tobacco and sour wine, the floor was freshly sprinkled with new sawdust. The chairs and tables were of metal. Iron alone could resist large primitive emotions when they got in action. The crash of an elbow, the heave of a heavy boot-toe, did not wreck a wire chair. It could be straightened presently in the crack of a door. The place was filling up with jetsam from the undercurrents of New York. Gentlemen going swiftly down to the sill of the world, beasts coming up from it, got somehow into evening clothes, sat well together under Monsieur Popinot's many-colored lights. It was the depravity of Paris without a touch of its seductive ésprit. The naïve, mischievous greeting of the Moulin Rouge and the Folie Bergère, "*Je vous aime, donnez-moi cinq francs,*" was not here. This place was an oak for crows. I wondered on what limb of it perched Madame Versäy.

I was about to summon the good Popinot to my assistance, when a young man, very drunk, came in, accompanied by a woman in a superb opera coat. They took the table opposite to mine. The young man wore a soft slouch hat, which he promptly threw on the floor. Then he began to hammer on the table with the ferrule of his walking stick and shout, "Heah, heah, Popinot, you old dog, a bottle of Burgundy for Madame Versäy. It's the wine of love and laughter."

My eyes went instantly to the woman. She was a medium-size, conspicuous blonde, with a rather trim figure, excellent arms and throat, made the most of by a low gown of black velvet. Her complexion was the usual sort to be had from boxes and paint pots. Her mouth was a perfect Cupid's bow, and exquisite. Her nose was bourgeois, but not obtrusive and not bad. Her eyes, however, were utterly bad. They reminded me of cold tallow. Her bright yellow hair was coiled on the top of her head to give an effect of height and to lengthen her face. While her companion was unspeakably drunk, this woman was coldly sober. She constantly refilled the man's glass, but scarcely tasted her own. I was evidently spectator at the epilogue of a quarrel which Madame Versäy was striving to drown in the mixture of alcohol and claret that Popinot sold for Burgundy. She spoke almost in whis-

pers, but now and then the man broke out in a voice that I could hear. "No, I won't wait no moah. I want them back. You said you only wanted them to star in. That's what you said; to star in."

Madame Versäy patted him on the arm and cooed over him, but her face was as cold as a wedge. The man harped on the one idea. "No; I was drunk. Didn't I tell you I was drunk when I did it? and they've got to go back to her."

Madame Versäy suddenly changed her tactics. She leaned over, seized the young man by the collar and shook him. What she said I could not hear, but the effect on the drunken youth was marked. He pleaded in blabbering slobbers: "That's all right, you keep them; they're yours. You dissolve them in vin'ger and drink 'em like Cle-patra. You're good lil' thing, you're a good, lil', sweet thing."

The man's drooling grew gradually inarticulate, his head wobbled. Presently he made an ineffectual effort to pat Madame Versäy's porcelain cheek, and fell forward with his arms outstretched on the table. Popinot's Burgundy was indeed distilled from the poppies of the Oise!

The woman ordered a tumbler of whisky and drank it like water. My hour had arrived. I arose and threaded a way to her table.

"Have I the honor," I said, "to address Madame Versäy?"

A furtive light came into the cold, tallow eyes. "Not so loud," she said. "Are you a plain-clothes Johnnie?"

I assured her that I had attained to no such dignity as that. I was merely one coming under a flag of truce with a message from Miss Caroline Pickney.

I said this over several times and in a variety of ways before Madame's suspicions were soothed down. Then I laid before her the offer to pay ten thousand dollars cash for the jewels. A clean-cut trade and no questions. The money in her hands for the jewels in ours. I did not go further into the place or details of payment; that would better follow a little later on.

"I'll stand for that," said Madame Versäy, "if it's straight goods; but you will have to show it to Henderson. If he don't flag it, the old hen can have her shiners."

I wondered mildly if we might find Henderson somewhere.

"Sure," said Madame Versäy. Then she summoned Popinot. "Call up Henderson's Detective Agency," she directed, "and tell Bobbie to chase in here."

While we awaited the chasing-in of Bobbie, I drew the celebrity out a little on the subject of the slumbering youth. He was an only nephew of Miss Caroline Pickney and her half-brother, Bishop Simonton of New York. He was an orphan and a very ebon sheep. Having fallen a victim to Madame Versäy's charms, he had shouldered the onerous duties of an "angel," "burned his money," and finally "swiped" the jewels from his relative and bestowed them on this Dulcinea. These jewels Madame Versäy thought it advisable to retain, since the law could not "take a fall out of her" without "jugging" the youth. She appealed to me to affirm the moral soundness of her attitude in this. A poor girl must look out for herself. I was spared the embarrassment of a decision on so vexed a question by the arrival of Bobbie Henderson. I was also glad of all the people in the Café la Lune d'Or when he came bursting in it. He was a person with a variegated waistcoat, many seals and yellow diamonds, and a face that would have convicted him before any jury in America without a word of evidence for the State. He sailed down upon me with the bluster of the east wind.

"Flash your star," he said, "or jar loose from the lady."

His language was beyond me, but his manner admitted of no doubt.

Madame Versäy sprang up and thrust her elbow vigorously into the region of his diaphragm. "Cut it out, Bobbie," she said, "you ain't wise to the gent. He's no plain-clothes Johnnie. This thing's business."

Mr. Robert Henderson was illumined. He drew up a chair and expressed his desolation at the error. Then the three of us got down to the details of Madame Versäy's "business." The offer to pay cash was pleasing to Mr. Henderson. It "sounded good;" but he would take no chance on a "double cross" being "handed out." The money must be paid in his presence at a bank. No "meet me under the oak tree" for him. He was "onto" the iniquities of the human family.

By gradual, indirect suggestions, I uncovered the plan to pay at the Jefferson Trust Company in Richmond under his

eye. He took to that. It was "the old hen's nest," to be sure, but doubtless the only place where she could gather up so large a "wad of dough." And thus, after many glasses of vile brandy, which, on my part, I managed to tip out deftly into the sawdust, we got the "business" closed. Mr. Robert Henderson nearly crushed my hand at parting. It was so rare a thing, he said, to meet one of his "kind of gentlemen" nowadays. Madame Versäy beamed, and we parted in genial fashion.

I had a word with Popinot at the door, after oiling the itching in his palm with a silver dollar. "Poof!" he said, Madame Versäy was less French than his café cat. She was born in Harlem under a shamrock. She had heard him, Popinot, name the divine Versailles in a flood of longing for his native country. The name pleased her; she implored him to say it again and yet again, until she got it and so became "Madame Versäy." "Mon Dieu! one's sides split themselves with laughter. A grisette named for a palace. Monsieur Villon never did so excellent a naming. *La demi-monde, l'édifice publique,* one saw instantly the fitness of it." He, Popinot, was a genius of the first order.

And so I left him, shaking in the door, and calling upon Olympus to send down his meed of bay-leaves.

Incomparable Popinot of the Golden Moon!

Shortly before ten o'clock on the tenth day of February, I walked from my hotel over to the Jefferson Trust Company in the city of Richmond. I was taken at once into the vault of the safety deposit boxes, where I found Miss Caroline Pickney and the vault officer, Mr. Montague Thomas. This young man greeted me courteously, but I had only another stately nod from Miss Pickney. She would never come to understand the social order of a commercial civilization. One who took directions from another, no matter in how exalted a sphere that other sat, was a variety of servant. It was the theory of the slave master bred in deep, and persisting after the decadence of the civilization that produced it.

Promptly at ten, Mr. Robert Henderson arrived. He wore a large checked ulster, a top hat and astonishingly yellow gloves. He greeted me as a lost neighbor discovered in a distant country, shook vigorously the rather limp hand of Mr.

Montague Thomas, but went back on his heels before Miss Caroline Pickney. She did not see him, she never saw him. I appreciated the need to get the matter speedily over, and requested Mr. Henderson to allow Miss Pickney to examine the jewels. He threw open his ulster, revealing a small leather handbag, secured to his waist by a chain, such as is used by bank messengers. He opened the bag and took out an ancient black leather case, which he also opened and held in his hand. In it, lying coiled up against the lining of old purple velvet, was a pyramid pin, two drop earrings and a strand of oriental pearls. Miss Pickney expressed satisfaction to Mr. Montague Thomas and directed him to open the safety deposit box. The young man fitted the key into the lock of box number 320, and drew down the door, showing the little steel vault packed with banknotes. He took out the money in packages each enclosed by a printed slip, such as are commonly used by banks, and marked "Two thousand dollars."

Mr. Robert Henderson handed me one end of the jewel-case to hold, and, with his free hand, he stowed these five packs of bills into the little handbag. When he had the last one safely in, he relaxed his grip on the jewel-case, locked his handbag and hurried out of the bank. I handed the case to Miss Caroline Pickney. She opened it and caressed the jewels lovingly. But she said no word, and gave no evidence of the great emotion tugging at her except the trembling of her hands. Then she put the case in her bosom and went down to her carriage in the company of Mr. Montague Thomas.

I went out behind the pair of them. Not in all my life had I been so thoroughly puzzled. What did this woman need with Randolph Mason if she intended to pay a painted actress the full value of the jewels. Any police-sergeant could have done as well as he. What need was there to send me scouting into the Tenderloin and then here? The thing was idiotic. I had been waiting to see the iron lid of some hidden trap fall swiftly and crush Madame Versäy. Instead, I had carried out Mason's directions to the final letter, only to see the money paid, the incident closed, the thing ended. For Randolph Mason it was not a defeat only, it was a capitulation, a rout. His standard had been dragged off the field by a

variety actress and a red-light detective. I was unspeakably bitter and depressed.

My train to New York left over the Southern at twelve o'clock. I would go to the post-office for some letters sent after me, get a little lunch and hurry out of this unfortunate city. This capital of a phantom empire was historic of disaster. Reputations were always laid by the heels here. I went into the post-office, got my letters, and was coming out when a deputy marshal touched me on the elbow and asked me to come up to the district-attorney's office. I knew then that Mason's trap had sprung, and I hurried with the little man up the iron stairway.

Mr. Robert Henderson was boiling in picturesque expletives when I entered the ante-room of the prosecutor for the Government. His collar was wilted down, his wonderful waistcoat crumpled, tiny threads of perspiration lay along the fat folds of his chin. He broke out louder when he saw me. "That's him. That's one of the gang," he shouted. "Now get the other one. Get this Caroline Pickney woman, and we'll land them in the penitentiary."

At this moment, a tall, gracious man with a soft, drawling accent that purred dangerously like a cat's, appeared in the doorway of the district-attorney's office. "May I inquire," he said, "who it is that is about to send Miss Caroline Pickney to the penitentiary?"

"It's me," said Henderson. "Her and this yegger have been shovin' the queer."

"Your language is unintelligible," said the man.

"Why, green goods," growled Henderson. "Passin' counterfeit money, that's what I mean."

It was my turn to be astonished. So the packs were counterfeit! Surely Mason could not have made so dangerous a blunder. He knew the laws of the United States. He could not have opened the doors of the penitentiary wider to us. The mere possession of counterfeit money was a crime. Perhaps he did not believe that Madame Versäy would dare come to the officers of the law with it. Perhaps some other arm of his plan had broken down. I was amazed and alarmed. The man in the door looked inquiringly at me. I took out my card and handed it to him. He bowed. "I am the district-

attorney," he said. Then he spoke to the deputy marshal. "Go outside, close the door and see that I am not interrupted." He turned then to the detective. "Now, my man," he continued, "what is all this furore about?"

Henderson gave the matter swiftly in detail, translating his Tenderloin terms as he proceeded. When he had concluded the narrative, the district-attorney asked to see the money. Henderson unlocked his satchel, took out a pack, stripped off the gum band at either end of it, and, holding the end of the pack in his fingers, shook out the bills before the district-attorney.

The lawyer had been listening with the closest attention, his face clouded and distressed. Now, it cleared like a summer morning. "Are the others like this?" he said.

"The same," replied Henderson, "a good tenner on the top and bottom and the rest queer."

"Then," said the district-attorney, "the laws of the United States have not been violated. These bills are not counterfeit."

Mr. Henderson mopped his wet face. "What!" he ejaculated. "It ain't good money; is it?"

"No," replied the lawyer; "it is not money at all."

Astonishment drove Mr. Henderson to his primal tongue. "Hell, man!" he said. " 'Taint good! 'Taint bad! You're stringin' me."

The district-attorney was amused. He took the pack of money and spread it out on the table. "These," he said, "are bills of the Confederate States of America. They are in no sense counterfeit. The passing of these bills for money of the United States is no crime against its laws. The Federal Courts have time and again so decided, although these bills closely resemble certain bank-note issues of the Federal Government and have been more than once complained of by the Treasury Department."* Then he added, with a courtly bow to Henderson, "My dear sir, you have in your hands the promise of a vanished republic to pay you some ten thousand dollars. Once upon a time, these bills might have purchased you an excellent lunch and perhaps a cigar with it. I doubt it a

*For the legal principle involved in this story, see United States v. Barrett, III Fed., 369.

little, now. You might try Mosby Taylor on the corner below. Mention Jubal Early."

Then he turned to me. "Mr. Parks," he said, "as you have not these potent tokens of a great sentiment to assist you, I must beg the honor of your presence at luncheon with me. I have heard of Randolph Mason."

THROUGH THE BIG WATER

From 'Dwellers in the Hills.' Copyright, 1901, Melville D. Post, and used here by permission of the author and the publishers, G. P. Putnam's Sons.

Crowds of cattle, like mobs, are strangely subject to some sudden impulse. Any seamy-faced old drover will illustrate this fact with stories till midnight, telling how Alkire's cattle resting one morning on Bald Knob suddenly threw up their heads and went crashing for a mile through the underbrush; and how a line of Queen's steers charged on a summer evening and swept out every fence in the Tygart's valley, without a cause so far as the human eye could see and without a warning.

Three hundred cattle had crossed, swimming the track of the loop as though they were fenced into it, and I judge there were a hundred in the water, when the remainder of the drove on the south shore made a sudden bolt for the river. The move was so swift and uniform, and the distance to the water so short, that Ump and the ferryman had barely time to escape being swept in with the steers. The whole drove piled up in the river and began to swim in a black mass toward the north shore. I saw the Bay Eagle sweep down the bank and plunge into the river below the cattle. I could hear Ump shouting, and could see the bay mare crowding the lower line of the swimming cattle.

The very light went out of the sky. We forced our horses into the river up to their shoulders, and waited. The cattle half-way across came out all right, but when the mass of more than two hundred reached the loop of the curve, they seemed to waver and crowd up in a bunch. I lost my head and plunged El Mahdi into the river. "Come on," I shouted, and Jud followed me.

If Satan had sent some guardian devil to choose for us an act of folly, he could not have chosen better than I. It is possible that the cattle would have taken the line of the leaders against the current if we had kept out of the river, but when they saw our horses they became bewildered, lost their sense of direction and drifted down into the eddy—a great angle of fighting cattle.

We swung down-stream, and taking a long circle came in below the drove as it drifted around in the outer orbit of the eddy. The crowd of cattle swam past, butting each other, and churning the water under their bellies, led by a half-blood Aberdeen-Angus steer with a ring in his nose. Half-way around we met Ump. He was a terrible creature. His shirt was in ribbons, and his hair was matted to his head. He was trying to force the Bay Eagle into the mass of cattle, and he was cursing like a fiend.

I have already said that his mare knew more than any other animal in the Hills. She dodged here and there like a water rat, slipped in among the cattle and shot out when they swung together. On any other horse the hunchback would have been crushed to pulp.

We joined him and tried to drive a wedge through the great tangle to split it in half, Jud and the huge Cardinal for a centre. We got half-way in and were flung off like a plank. We floated down into the rim of the eddy below the cattle, spread out, and endeavoured to force the drove up stream. We might as well have ridden against a floating log-jam. The mad, bellowing steers swam after their leader, moving in toward the vortex of the eddy. The half-blood Aberdeen-Angus, whom the cattle seemed to follow, was now on the inner border of the drove, the tangle of steers stretched in a circle around him. It was clear that in a very few minutes he would reach the centre, the mass of cattle would crowd down on him and the whole bunch would go to the bottom. We determined to make another effort to break through this circle, and if possible capture the half-blood and force him out toward the shore. A more dangerous undertaking could not be easily imagined.

The chances of driving this steer out were slight if we should ever reach him. The possibility of forcing a way in

was remote, and if we succeeded in penetrating to the centre of the jam and failed to break it, we should certainly be wedged in and crushed. If Ump's head had been cool, I do not think he would ever have permitted me to join in such madness. We were to select a loose place in the circle, the Cardinal and El Mahdi to force an opening, and the Bay Eagle to go through if she could.

We waited while the cattle passed, bellowing and thrashing the water—an awful mob of steers in panic. Presently in this circle there was a rift where a bull infuriated by the crowding, swam by, fighting to clear a place around him. He was a tremendous creature, glistening black, active and dangerous as a wild beast. He charged the cattle around him, driving them back like a battering ram. He dived and butted and roared like some sea monster gone mad. Ump shouted, and we swam into the open rift against this bull, Jud leading and El Mahdi at his shoulder.

The bull fighting the cattle behind him did not see us until the big sorrel was against him. Then he swung half around and tried to butt. This was the danger which we feared most. The ram of a muley steer is one of the most powerful blows delivered by any animal. For this reason, no bull with horns is a match for a muley. The driving power of sixteen hundred pounds of bone and muscle is like the ram of a ship. Striking a horse fair, it would stave him in as one breaks an egg-shell. Jud leaned down from his horse and struck the bull on the nose with his fist, beating him in the nostrils. The bull turned and charged the cattle behind him. We crowded against him, using the mad bull for a great driving wedge.

I have never seen anything in the world to approach the strength or fury of this muley. With him we broke through the circle of steers forcing into the centre of the eddy. We had barely room for the horses by crowding shoulder to shoulder to the bull, the cattle in behind us like bees swarming in a hive.

I was accustomed to cattle all my life. I had been among them when they fought each other, bellowing and tearing up the sod; among them when they charged; among them when they stampeded; and I was not afraid. But this caldron of boiling yellow water filled with cattle was a hell-pot. In it

every steer, gone mad, seemed to be fighting for dear life. I caught something of the terror of the cattle, and on the instant the delusion of the cone rising on all sides returned. The cattle seemed to be swarming down upon us from the sides of this yellow pit. I looked around. The Bay Eagle was squeezing against El Mahdi. Jud was pressing close to the nose of the bull, keeping him turned against the cattle by great blows rained on his muzzle, and we were driving slowly in like a glut.

My mouth became suddenly dry to the root of my tongue. I dropped the reins and whirled around in the saddle. Ump, whose knee was against El Mahdi's flank, reached over and caught me by the shoulder. The grip of his hand was firm and steady, and it brought me back to my senses, but his face will not be whiter when they lay him finally in the little chapel at Mount Horeb.

As I turned and gathered up the reins, the water was boiling over the horses. Sometimes we went down to the chin, the horses entirely under; at other times we were flung up almost out of the water by the surging of the cattle. The Cardinal was beginning to grow tired. He had just swam across the river and half-way back, and been then forced into this tremendous struggle without time to gather his breath. He was a horse of gigantic stature and great endurance, but his rider was heavy. He had been long in the water, and the jamming of the cattle was enough to wear out a horse built of ship timber.

His whole body was sunk to the nose and he went entirely under with every surge of the bull. The naked back of Jud reeked with sweat, washed off every minute with a flood of muddy water, and the muscles on his huge shoulders looked like folds of brass.

He held the bridle-rein in his teeth and bent down over the saddle so as to strike the bull when it tried to turn back. At times the man, horse, and bull were carried down out of sight.

Suddenly I realized that we were on the inside. The river was a bedlam of roars and bellows. We had broken through the circle of cattle, and it drifted now in two segments, crowding in to follow the half-blood Aberdeen-Angus. This steer

passed a few yards below us, making for the centre of the eddy. As he went by, Ump shot out on the Bay Eagle, dodged through the cattle, and coming up with the steer, reached down and hooked his finger in the ring which the half-blood wore in his nose. Then, holding the steer's muzzle against the shoulder of the mare, he struck out straight through the vortex of the eddy, making for the widest opening in the broken circle.

I watched the hunchback breathless. It was not difficult to lead the steer. An urchin could have done it with a rope in the nose-ring, but the two segments of the circle might swing together at any moment, and if they did Ump would be penned in and lost and we would be lost also, locked up in this jam of steers.

For a moment the hunchback and the steer passed out of sight in the boiling eddy, then they reached the open, went through it, and struck up-stream for the ferry landing.

The cattle on the inner side of the circle followed the Aberdeen-Angus, streaming through the opening in a great wedge that split the jam into the two wings of an enormous V. The whole drove swung out and followed in two lines, as one has seen the wild geese follow their pilot to the south. Jud and I, wedged in, were tossed about by the surging of the cattle, as the jam broke. We were protected a little by the bull, whose strength seemed inexhaustible. Every moment I looked to see some black head rise under the fore quarters of El Mahdi, throw him over, and force him down beneath the bellies of the cattle, or some muley charge the fighting bull and crush Jud and his horse. But the very closeness of the jamming saved us from these dangers.

It was almost impossible for a bullock to turn. We were carried forward by the press as a child is carried with a crowd. When the cattle split into the wings of the V, we were flung off and found ourselves swimming in open water between the two great lines.

I felt like a man lifted suddenly from a dungeon into the sunlit world. I was weak. I caught hold of the horn, settled down nerveless in the saddle, and looked around me. The cattle were streaming past in two long lines for the shore, led

by Ump and the Aberdeen-Angus, now half-way up the north arm of the loop.

The river was still roaring with the bellowings of the cattle, as though all the devils of the water howled with fury at this losing of their prey.

The steers had now room to swim in, and they would reach the shore. I looked down at El Mahdi. He floated easily, pumping the air far back into his big lungs. He had been roundly jammed, but he was not exhausted, and I knew he would be all right when he got his breath.

Then I looked for Jud. He was a few yards below me, staring at the swimming cattle. The water was rising to his arm-pits. It poured over the Cardinal, and over the saddle horn. It was plain that the horse was going down. Only his muzzle hung above the water, with the nostrils distended.

I shouted to Jud. He kicked his feet out of the stirrups, dropped into the water and caught his horse by the shank of the bit. He went down until the water bubbled against his chin. But he held the horse's head above the river, treading water and striking out with his free arm. I turned El Mahdi and swam to the Cardinal. When I reached him I caught the bit on my side, and together Jud and El Mahdi held the exhausted horse until he gathered his breath and began to swim. Presently, when he had gotten the air back in his chest, I took the bridle-rein, and Jud, loosing his hold on the bit, floated down behind the cattle, and struck out for the shore. I saw him climb the bank among the water beeches when El Mahdi and the Cardinal came up out of the river at the ferry landing behind the last bullock.

GEORGE DENNISON PRENTICE

[1802—1870]

HENRY WATTERSON

GEORGE DENNISON PRENTICE was born in a little, old-fashioned New England cottage on the outskirts of the village of Preston, in Connecticut, December 18, 1802, which came that year, as I find by reference to a chronological table, on a Saturday, and was attended by a coast gale that swept over the country fiercely, far and near. He died in a Kentucky farm-house, on the banks of the Ohio River, ten miles below the city of Louisville, just before the break of Saturday, January 22, 1870, and in the midst of an untoward winter flood that roared and swelled about the lonely spot. Between the tempest of his coming and the tempest of his going flowed a life-current, many-toned and strong; often illuminated by splendid and varied achievements, and sometimes overcast by shadowy passions, struggles, and sorrows; but never pausing upon its journey during sixty-seven years, nor turning out of its course; a long life and a busy one, joining in uncommon measure and degree Thought to Action, and devoting both to the practice of government, the conduct of parties, and the cultivation of belles-lettres. For this man was a daring partisan and a delightful poet; a distinguished advocate of a powerful political organization; a generous patron of arts; a constant friend to genius. In violent and lawless times he used a pistol with hardly less danger and effect than a pen, being regarded at one time as the best pistol-shot in Kentucky. By turns a statesman, a wit, a poet, a man of the world, and always a journalist, he gave to the press of his country its most brilliant illustrations.

That he was born, as I have stated, in 1802; that he was taught by his mother to read the Bible with ease when a little over three years of age; that he studied under Horace Mann and Tristam Burges at Brown University, where he was a famous Latin and English scholar, reciting the whole of the twelfth book of the 'Æneid' from memory for a single lesson, and committing to memory in like manner such books as Kames's 'Elements of Criticism' and Dugald Stuart's 'Philosophy'; that he began as an editor in Hartford, coming hence to write a life of Henry Clay, and remaining here to establish the *Louisville Journal,* in 1830; and that he made that the most celebrated and popular newspaper in America, and

himself the most conspicuous journalist of his time—are matters of fact which need not be elaborated in this brief sketch. Of his marriage, after his wife had been taken from him, he was himself not averse to speaking, and dwelt upon her memory with touching fondness. I had never the happiness of knowing her, but from his own ideal, and from the representation of those who had most reason to remember her hospitality or to bless her bounty, there can be no doubt that she was a most charming woman. He loved to refer to her as a girl, and it is curious that she is the only woman I ever heard him speak of with genuine warmth and tenderness, although there were many good and gentle women who had been his lifelong friends. "I have not had credit," he said, on one occasion, "for being a devoted husband; but if I had my life to go over, that is the only relation I would not alter; she was the wisest, the purest, the best and the most thoroughly enchanting woman I ever knew." Most persons will call to mind the verses which he addressed to her. Verses, you are possibly aware, are not always truth-tellers; but in this instance they expressed the impulses of a nature which, readily impressed by all things agreeable, could not be drawn out to the full by one of less grace of mind and heart. His affection for his children was likewise intense, and the loss of his elder son was a terrible blow. I know of nothing more affecting than his fondness for a little, fair-haired, bright-eyed boy, a grandson, who bears his name, and who used often to come and visit him and spend whole afternoons in his room; for you will understand that he lived in the office—slept and ate and worked there—seldom quitting it. Strangers supposed that he was decrepit, and there existed an impression that he had resigned his old place to a younger and more active spirit. He resigned nothing. I doubt whether he ever did more work, or better work, during any single year of his life than during this last year. He said, on the first of January, 1869, "I will make the last years of my life the best years of my life, and I shall work like a tiger"; and he did work like a machine which seemed to have no stop to it.

Prentice was twenty-seven years old when he came to Kentucky. He was obscure and poor. The people of the West were rough. The times were violent. Parties were dividing upon measures of government which could not, in their nature, fail to arouse and anger popular feeling, and to the bitterness of conflicting interests was added the enthusiasm which the rival claims of two great party chieftains everywhere excited. In those days there was no such thing as journalism as we now understand it. The newspaper was but a poor affair, owned by a clique or politician. The editor of a newspaper was nothing if not personal. Moreover, the editors who

had appeared above the surface had been men of second-rate abilities, and had served merely as squires to their liege lords, the politicians. This much Prentice reformed at once and altogether. He established the *Louisville Journal;* he threw himself into the spirit of the times as the professed friend of Mr. Clay and the champion of his principles; but he invented a warfare hitherto unknown, and illustrated it by a personal identity which very soon elevated him into the rank of a party leader as well as a partisan editor.

From 1830 to 1861 the influence of Prentice was perhaps greater than the influence of any political writer who ever lived; it was an influence directly positive and personal. It owed its origin to the union in his person of gifts which no one had combined before him. He had, to build upon, an intellect naturally strong and practical, and this was trained by rigid, scholarly culture. He possessed a keen wit and a poetical temperament. He was brave and aggressive; and though by no means quarrelsome, he was as ready to fight as to write, and his lot was cast in a region where he had to do a good deal of both. Thus, the business of an editor requiring him to do the writing and fighting for his party, he did not lack opportunities for personal display; and you may be sure he made every opportunity tell for even more than its value. It is now generally admitted that he never came off worsted in any encounter, physical or intellectual. In all his combats he displayed parts which were signal and showy; overwhelming invective, varied by a careless, off-hand satire, which hit home; or strong, logical, plausible, pleasing Anglo-Saxon argument, that brought out the strong points of his subject and obscured the weak ones; or nipping, paragraphic frost that sparkled and blighted; or quiet daring that was ever reckless of consequences. Who can wonder that he was the idol of his party? Who can wonder that he was the darling of the mob? But, with these great popular gifts, he was a gentleman of graceful and easy address, kind and genial among men, gallant among ladies, a sweet poet, a cultivated man of the world. I am not making a fancy sketch, although it looks like one; because where will you go to find the like? It is easy enough to describe the second or third-rate abilities. They belong to a class, and may be arrayed under a standard. But it is impossible to compare Prentice with any man. He was as great a partisan as Cobbett; but Cobbett was only a partisan. He was as able and as consistent a political leader as Greeley; but Greeley never had Prentice's wit, courage, or accomplishments. I found in London that his fame is exceeded by that of no American newspaper writer; but the journalists of Paris, where there is still nothing but personal journalism, considered him a few years ago as the solitary journalist of genius among us. His sar-

casms have often got into *Charivari,* and several of his poems have been translated. The French adore that which is witty, abusive, and brave. How could they fail to put a great estimate upon Prentice, who might have ranked with Sainte-Beuve as a critic, and certainly surpassed Rochefort as a popular chief?

For five and thirty years his life realized an uninterrupted success. He cared little for money, but what he needed he had, and there was no end to the evidence of his fame and power which constantly reached him. His imagination, however, took a habitually melancholy turn, and threw out, in the midst of wild and witty partisan bursts, flashes of a somewhat morbid description. It is not strange, that, as he grew aged, he withdrew himself from very close and active intercourse with men. The little ambition he ever had deserted him. His domesticity, to which he was attached, was gone. Society bored him. All his faculties remained clear and full; but the motive for personal effort was wanting, and he worked because it was his nature to work. He would have died else. He quoted on three occasions a verse of a fine poem of Mangan's, which seemed to represent his condition:

"Homeless, wifeless, flagonless, alone;
Not quite bookless, though, unless I choose,
With nothing left to do except to groan,
Not a soul to woo except the muse.
Oh, this is hard for me to bear,
Me, that whilom lived so much *en haut,*
Me, that broke all hearts, like chinaware,
Twenty golden years ago."

He let his hair and beard grow long, and was careless in his attire. People thought him thoroughly broken down as they saw him on the street heedless, as he always was, of passers-by, or in his room wearing his old brown and tattered robe. They should have seen him enlivened by a glow of work or feeling, and in his shirt-sleeves, as lithe of limb and jaunty of carriage as a boy; no man of his age was ever more active. He once assured me that he had never had a headache in his life. It was not the infirmity of age which carried him off, but a disorder which a younger man might have resisted as feebly as he did.

Prentice appeared as an author but three times. His biography of Henry Clay is a masterpiece of political special pleading. The narrative, however, is meager and rather turgid. It was not the story, but the argument, which he had at heart; for the book was written to serve a party purpose. His little volume of witticisms from the *Louisville Journal* is more representative. In his preface

he expressed a doubt whether such a republication would bear the test of time. "I know," he said, "that such things do not *keep* well." But they have kept pretty well so far. I can recall no book of wit and humor, not even the collection of Hook and Jerrold, in which the salt is fresher or more savory; and the student of that brevity which is the soul of wit can hardly find a better model of all that is neat, racy, and concise.

On his poems Prentice himself put no great account. They were thrown off idly. He wrote verses, he said, as a discipline, or for reaction. He did not stand "up to the chin in the Rubicon flood." The best thing he did is undoubtedly "The Closing Year," which has many good lines and bold images, and will always be a favorite recitative. The poem "At My Mother's Grave" and the "Lines to My Son" are also pathetic. I once heard Albert Pike recite the poem "At My Mother's Grave" at a club party in Washington, in a way that left not a dry eye in the room. But, after all, the fame of Prentice must stand, not upon any one piece of work which he did, but upon the purpose and influence of his whole life; its realization of every public demand; its adaptation to every party need; its current readiness and force; its thorough consistency from first to last. He did more for others and asked less for himself than any public man of his day. He put hundreds of men into office, but he was never a candidate for office himself. He relied exclusively upon his newspaper, and by this agency alone rose to eminence.

He lived out nearly the allotted span. He had well-nigh reached the age of three-score years and ten. The joy of life was gone. He grew old of heart. Few of the dear ones remained to him, and those who did remain were hardly of his generation.

"The mossy marbles rest
On the lips that he had prest
In their bloom;
And the names he loved to hear
Have been carved for many a year
On the tomb."

He was exasperated by the Byron scandal, and wrote all the editorials that appeared in the *Courier-Journal* on that subject. Most of them he read to me, as was his habit when anything seriously interested him; and I shall never forget how, reading one of them, he broke down twice, and finally altogether; his voice grew hoarse; his utterance failed him; the tears came raining down his cheek, and he arose silently and glided out of the room. It was not decrepitude. It was feeling; for, excepting a few trifling exag-

gerations which marked his style of writing when he was deeply moved, the article was clear, vigorous, and compact.

Born in winter, he died in winter. He came in a gale which blew across the Eastern sea, and his life was borne out on the ebb of a mighty flood in the West. It was stormy, as we know, from the beginning to the end. I have described the place where he died as lonely. It was the home of his son, a farm-house just upon the water's edge. Mr. Prentice quitted the office on Christmas Eve to go to the country and spend the holidays. He was unusually well and cheerful. A few days before he confided to my keeping a lengthy manuscript which he had written with his own hand. It had an autobiographic note of the leading dates and events of his life, and, though the writing must have been painful, it is neat and clear. He said gloomily on one occasion, "I hope you won't let me snuff out like a tallow candle," but he had no thought of "snuffing out" when he bought the Christmas present for little George. The rest, however, is told in a line. A cold ride of ten miles, an influenza, pneumonia, weeks of prostration. The flood came during his illness. The river swelled out of its banks. The waters gathered around about, reaching the very door-sill. Prentice lay in an upper chamber and, while hearing their noisy surges moaning like the echoes of his own regrets, he passed beyond the fever and the worry and the fret and the tumult of this world.

He sleeps now in Cave Hill Cemetery, the Louisville place of burial, whither on the Monday after he died his remains were conducted with all the honoring circumstance and ceremony which the living can pay to the dead; and he lies by the side of the little family group that went before him. Happy reunion! How peaceful, tranquil, satisfying! How gently it seems to round and smooth the vexed turmoil of a life which, brilliant as it was, had its sorrows and cares.

Perhaps no man was ever followed to the grave by a more touching demonstration of public interest. Few men ever lived who inspired so much personal interest. There was in his very faults something that took hold of the popular fancy; and he united in himself three elements at least that never fail to exert powerful influence among the people. He was brilliant, brave, and generous. He was an intellectual match for any man. He was physically and mentally afraid of no man. He gave bountifully to all men. There was buried within him a superb nature, and his death for a moment lights up the vestibule in which he is placed by the side of three famous friends of his, making a group which will always be the pride and glory of this country.

Prentice rests in a quiet spot, where the violets which he loved to

sing, and the meadow grass that grew greener in his song, will come and grow above him, and the stars which he made into a thousand images shine there by night, and the quiet skies that gave the kindliest joy to his old age bend over his grave. He is dead to a world of love and pity and admiration. But so long as there is a gravestone upon that hillside, so long as there is a newspaper printed in the beautiful Anglo-Saxon tongue, which he understood so well and wrote so forcibly and so gracefully, the descendants of this generation and the stranger who comes from afar will seek out curiously and lovingly the place where they laid him.

Henry Watterson

THE CLOSING YEAR

From 'Poems of George D. Prentice.' Copyright, 1875, Robert Clarke and Company Cincinnati.

'Tis midnight's holy hour—and silence now
Is brooding, like a gentle spirit, o'er
The still and pulseless world. Hark! on the winds
The bell's deep notes are swelling. 'Tis the knell
Of the departed Year.

No funeral train
Is sweeping past; yet on the stream and wood,
With melancholy light, the moonbeams rest,
Like a pale, spotless shroud; the air is stirred,
As by a mourner's sigh; and on yon cloud,
That floats so still and placidly through heaven,
The spirits of the seasons seem to stand—
Young Spring, bright Summer, Autumn's solemn form,
And Winter with his aged locks—and breathe
In mournful cadences, that come abroad
Like the far wind-harp's wild and touching wail,
A melancholy dirge o'er the dead Year,
Gone from the earth forever.

'Tis a time
For memory and for tears. Within the deep,
Still chambers of the heart, a spectre dim,

Whose tones are like the wizard voice of Time,
Heard from the tomb of ages, points its cold
And solemn finger to the beautiful
And holy visions that have passed away
And left no shadow of their loveliness
On the dead waste of life. That spectre lifts
The coffin-lid of hope, and joy, and love,
And, bending mournfully above the pale
Sweet forms that slumber there, scatters dead flowers
O'er what has passed to nothingness.
The Year
Has gone, and with it, many a glorious throng
Of happy dreams. Its mark is on each brow,
Its shadow in each heart. In its swift course,
It waved its scepter o'er the beautiful,
And they are not. It laid its pallid hand
Upon the strong man, and the haughty form
Is fallen, and the flashing eye is dim.
It trod the hall of revelry, where thronged
The bright and joyous, and the tearful wail
Of stricken ones is heard, where erst the song
And reckless shout resounded. It passed o'er
The battle plain, where sword and spear and shield
Flashed in the light of midday—and the strength
Of serried hosts is shivered, and the grass,
Green from the soil of carnage, waves above
The crushed and mouldering skeleton. It came
And faded like a wreath of mist at eve;
Yet, ere it melted in the viewless air,
It heralded its millions to their home
In the dim land of dreams.
Remorseless Time!—
Fierce spirit of the glass and scythe!—what power
Can stay him in his silent course, or melt
His iron heart to pity? On, still on
He presses, and forever. The proud bird,
The condor of the Andes, that can soar
Through heaven's unfathomable depths, or brave
The fury of the northern hurricane
And bathe his plumage in the thunder's home,

Furls his broad wings at nightfall, and sinks down
To rest upon his mountain-crag—but Time
Knows not the weight of sleep or weariness,
And night's deep darkness has no chain to bind
His rushing pinion. Revolutions sweep
O'er earth, like troubled visions o'er the breast
Of dreaming sorrow; cities rise and sink,
Like bubbles on the water; fiery isles
Spring, blazing, from the ocean, and go back
To their mysterious caverns; mountains rear
To heaven their bald and blackened cliffs, and bow
Their tall heads to the plain; new empires rise,
Gathering the strength of hoary centuries,
And rush down like the Alpine avalanche,
Startling the nations; and the very stars,
Yon bright and burning blazonry of God,
Glitter awhile in their eternal depths,
And, like the Pleiad, loveliest of their train,
Shoot from their glorious spheres, and pass away,
To darkle in the trackless void: yet Time,
Time the tomb-builder, holds his fierce career,
Dark, stern, all-pitiless, and pauses not
Amid the mighty wrecks that strew his path,
To sit and muse, like other conquerors,
Upon the fearful ruin he has wrought.

A RIVER IN THE MAMMOTH CAVE

Oh, dark, mysterious stream, I sit by thee
In awe profound, as myriad wanderers
Have sat before. I see thy waters move
From out the ghostly glimmerings of my lamp
Into the dark beyond, as noiselessly
As if thou wert a somber river drawn
Upon a spectral canvas, or the stream
Of dim Oblivion flowing through the lone
And shadowy vale of death. There is no wave
To whisper on thy shore, or breathe a wail,
Wounding its tender bosom on thy sharp

And jagged rocks. In numerous mingled tones,
The voices of the day and of the night,
Are ever heard through all our outer world,
For Nature there is never dumb; but here
I turn and turn my listening ear, and catch
No mortal sound, save that of my own heart,
That 'mid the awful stillness throbs aloud,
Like the far sea-surf's low and measured beat
Upon its rocky shore. But when a cry,
Or shout, or song is raised, how wildly back
Come the weird echoes from a thousand rocks,
As if unnumbered airy sentinels,
The genii of the spot, caught up the voice,
Repeating it in wonder—a wild maze
Of spirit-tones, a wilderness of sounds,
Earth-born but all unearthly.
Thou dost seem,
O wizard stream, a river of the dead—
A river of some blasted, perished world,
Wandering forever in the mystic void.
No breeze e'er strays across thy solemn tide;
No bird e'er breaks thy surface with his wing;
No star, or sky, or bow, is ever glassed
Within thy depths; no flower or blade e'er breathes
Its fragrance from thy bleak banks on the air.
True, here are flowers, or semblances of flowers,
Carved by the magic fingers of the drops
That fall upon thy rocky battlements—
Fair roses, tulips, pinks, and violets—
All white as cerements of the coffined dead;
But they are flowers of stone, and never drank
The sunshine of the dew. O somber stream,
Whence comest thou, and whither goest? Far
Above, upon the surface of old Earth,
A hundred rivers o'er thee pass and sweep,
In music and in sunshine, to the sea;—
Thou art not born of them. Whence comest thou,
And whither goest? None of earth can know.
No mortal e'er has gazed upon thy source—
No mortal seen where thy dark waters blend

With the abyss of Ocean. None may guess
The mysteries of thy course. Perchance thou hast
A hundred mighty cataracts, thundering down
Toward Earth's eternal center; but their sound
Is not for ear of man. All we can know
Is that thy tide rolls out, a spectre stream,
From yon stupendous, frowning wall of rock,
And, moving on a little way, sinks down
Beneath another mass of rock as dark
And frowning, even as life—our little life—
Born of one fathomless eternity,
Steals on a moment and then disappears
In an eternity as fathomless.

AT MY MOTHER'S GRAVE

The trembling dew-drops fall
  Upon the shutting flowers; like souls at rest,
The stars shine gloriously: and all,
  Save me, are blest.

Mother, I love thy grave!
  The violet, with its blossoms blue and mild,
Waves o'er thy head; when shall it wave
  Above thy child?

'Tis a sweet flower, yet must
  Its bright leaves to the coming tempest bow;
Dear mother, 'tis thine emblem—dust
  Is on thy brow.

And I could love to die:
  To leave untasted life's dark, bitter streams—
By thee, as erst in childhood, lie,
  And share thy dreams.

And must I linger here,
  To stain the plumage of my sinless years,
And mourn the hopes to childhood dear
  With bitter tears?

Aye, must I linger here,
A lonely branch upon a withered tree,
Whose last frail leaf, untimely sere,
Went down with thee?

Oft from life's withered bower,
In still communion with the Past, I turn,
And muse on thee, the only flower
In Memory's urn.

And, when the evening pale
Bows, like a mourner, on the dim blue wave,
I stray to hear the night-winds wail
Around thy grave.

Where is thy spirit flown?
I gaze above—thy look is imaged there;
I listen—and thy gentle tone
Is on the air.

Oh, come, while here I press
My brow upon thy grave; and, in those mild
And thrilling tones of tenderness,
Bless, bless thy child!

Yes, bless thy weeping child;
And o'er thine urn—Religion's holiest shrine—
Oh, give his spirit, undefiled,
To blend with thine.

MEMORIES

Once more, once more, my Mary dear,
I sit by that lone stream,
Where first within thy timid ear
I breathed love's burning dream.
The birds we loved still tell their tale
Of music on each spray,
And still the wild-rose decks the vale—
But thou art far away.

In vain thy vanished form I seek,
By wood, and stream, and dell,
And tears of anguish bathe my cheek
Where tears of rapture fell;
And yet beneath those wild-wood bowers
Dear thoughts my soul employ,
For in the memories of past hours
There is a mournful joy.

Upon the air thy gentle words
Around me seem to thrill,
Like sounds upon the wind harp's chords
When all the winds are still,
Or like the low and soul-like swell
Of that wild spirit-tone,
Which haunts the hollow of the bell
When its sad chime is done.

I seem to hear thee speak my name
In sweet, low murmurs now;
I seem to feel thy breath of flame
Upon my cheek and brow;
On my cold lips I feel thy kiss,
Thy heart to mine is laid—
Alas, that such a dream of bliss
Like other dreams must fade!

TO AN ABSENT WIFE

'Tis Morn:—the sea-breeze seems to bring
Joy, health, and freshness on its wing;
Bright flowers, to me all strange and new,
Are glittering in the early dew,
And perfumes rise from every grove,
As incense to the clouds that move
Like spirits o'er yon welkin clear:
But I am sad; thou art not here!

'Tis Noon:—a calm, unbroken sleep
Is on the blue waves of the deep;
A soft haze, like a fairy dream,
Is floating over wood and stream;
And many a broad magnolia flower,
Within its shadowy woodland bower,
Is gleaming like a lovely star:
But I am sad—thou art afar!

'Tis Eve:—on earth the sunset skies
Are painting their own Eden dyes;
The stars come down, and trembling glow
Like blossoms on the waves below;
And, like an unseen spirit, the breeze
Seems lingering 'midst these orange trees,
Breathing its music round the spot:
But I am sad—I see thee not!

'Tis Midnight:—with a soothing spell,
The far tones of the ocean swell,
Soft as a mother's cadence mild,
Low bending o'er her sleeping child;
And on each wandering breeze are heard
The rich notes of the mocking bird,
In many a wild and wondrous lay:
But I am sad—thou art away!

I sink in dreams:—low, sweet, and clear,
Thy own dear voice is in my ear;
Around my neck thy tresses twine—
Thy own loved hand is clasped in mine—

Thy own soft lip to mine is pressed—
Thy head is pillowed on my breast:—
Oh! I have all my heart holds dear,
And I am happy—thou art here!

TO A BUNCH OF ROSES

Sweet flowers, whilst ye impart
The fragrance of the spring-time, rich and rare,
Go bear that errand to young Julia's heart,
Which only roses bear.

Go, tell her, lovely flowers,
That in my soul her own dear image gleams,
A light, a radiance in my waking hours,
A glory in my dreams.

Say, though my love is hers,
To her alone I can that love reveal;
Among her many burning worshipers
I would, but may not kneel.

Tell her it were your bliss
Upon her gentle bosom to repose,
And she, perhaps, may give you one sweet kiss—
Oh, that I were a rose!

MY OLD HOME

And I have come yet once again to stray
Where erst I strayed in childhood. Oh, 'tis sweet
To gaze upon the dear old landscape! Here
My thoughts first reveled in the wild delight
Of new existence! Here my infant eye
First dwelt on Nature in her loveliness:
The golden flash of waters, the bright flowers
That seemed to spring in very wantonness
From every hill and stream; the earth's green leaves,
The moonlight mountains, the bright crimson gush,

That deepening streamed along the skies of morn,
And the rich heavens of sunset! Here I loved
To gaze upon the holy arch of eve
In breathless longing, till I almost dreamed
That I was mingling with its glorious depths,
A portion of their purity; to muse
Upon the stars through many a lonely night,
Till their deep tones of mystic minstrelsy
Were borne into my heart; to list at morn
The gentle voice of song-birds in their joy
Lifting on high their matins, till my soul,
Like theirs gushed forth in music; and to look
Upon the clouds in beauty wandering up
The deep blue zenith, till my heart, like them,
Went far away through yon high paths to seek
The home of thought and spirit in the heavens.

* * * * * *

Years have passed by upon their shadowy wings,
Yet o'er this spot no change has come to tell
The noiseless flight of Time. The far-off hills
Are still as blue, the wave as musical,
The wild rose blooms as fresh and fair, the winds
Breathe yet as freshly on my brow, the trees
Still cast as soft a shadow, and as sweet
The violet springs to woo the breath of heaven,
As in my years of infancy. I range
Where erst I sported by the leaping stream,
And the glad birds, as they remembered yet
And loved the stranger, chant the same sweet songs
I strayed to hear ere childhood's silken locks
Had darkened on my temples. Can it be
That the dark seal of Time and Change is set
Upon my brow? Each spot I loved still blooms
In beauty undecayed; I hear no sound
That tells the tale of years; and can it be
That I alone am faded? Were it not
That many a fearful tale of sin and woe,
And strife and desolation, has been graved
On Memory's darkened scroll—oh, were it not
That passion's burning pathway has been traced

So deep, so fiercely vivid, that my heart
Is withering yet beneath it, I could deem
That I were still a pure and sinless child
Just 'wakened from a long, long dream of tears,
To gaze again in infant recklessness
On earth, and heaven, and ocean, and again
To paint the future as a lovely throng
Of bright and glorious visions beckoning on
To the blue beauty of life's Eden-isles.

POINTED PARAGRAPHS

From 'Prenticeana.'

Mr. Clay is, no doubt, a great man, but he is too ambitious.—*Eastern Mercury.*

"*Ambitious.*" True, he is ambitious—but of what? Ambitious of the discharge of his sublime duties—ambitious of rendering his country the most glorious on earth—ambitious of making human freedom co-extensive with the human race—ambitious of placing his own great name, by his lofty deeds of moral daring, the first among the sons of light. Talk of ambition—what is it?—

> In God 'tis glory—and when men aspire,
> 'Tis but a spark too much of heavenly fire.

The "Pioneer" wants to know whether, if the devil were to die, the newspapers would not eulogize his character. If they didn't, the editors would be very likely to get unceremonious orders from some of the relations of the deceased—"stop my paper."

A man recently got married in Kentucky one day and hung himself the next. No doubt he wanted to try all varieties of nooses to see which he liked best.

The editor of ——— calls himself a lion. If not the king of beasts, he is certainly a very great one.

The Cincinnati representative in Congress boasts that he can "bring an argument to a p'int as quick as any other man." He can bring a quart to a pint a good deal quicker.

It has been suggested that the culture of hemp be tried

in the South. A southern editor, remarking upon the subject, says that he knows all about cotton and rice, but doesn't understand hemp at all. Perhaps he may yet get the *hang* of it.

A Democratic editor in Indiana says that he should hazard very little in contradicting our assertions. Very true; he would be hazarding the merest trifle in the world—*nothing but his character for veracity.*

The editor of the "Eastern Argus" is melancholy in his reflections upon the close of the year. He says he shall soon be lying in his grave. When he gets there, it will be time for him to stop lying. The ruling passion is often strong *in* death, but seldom after it.

Every day our neighbor repeats against us the charge of lying. If we ever set up a lie-factory, we shall hang him out for a sign. He gets four thousand dollars a year for lying, and this, according to the nicest estimate we can make, is about half a dime for every ten lies.

There are four or five Democratic editors in this vicinity whose abuse amuses us not a little. If one assails us, all the rest stand ready to sustain him by furnishing him with the necessary falsehoods and copying his Billingsgate. They remind us of the habit of *rats.* It is said that a string of some half dozen of these vermin will hold each other up by the tail to enable the lowermost to steal an egg from the bottom of a barrel.

We take no account of Mr. W.'s threats against us. He will never have the courage to make a bodily assault even upon a cripple, unless he first takes a brick and beats his own skull to raise a bump of combativeness. He is a bladder of wind —puffed, swollen, and portly; but give him a single prick and he lies lank and shrivelled before you.

A contemporary of ours says that "Some editors are always trying to be witty and often fail." His readers might add that others seem always trying to be stupid and never fail.

A Kentucky editor thinks he is to be pitied because he has been a "whole week without mail intelligence." Perhaps he is still more to be pitied for having been all his life without intelligence of any sort.

Mr. William Hood was robbed near Corinth, Ala., on the 13th inst. The Corinth paper says that the name of the highwayman is unknown, but there is no doubt that he was Robbin' Hood.

The editor of the "Green River Union" intimates that we take "a drop too much." When the hangman gives him his due, nobody will think *he* had "a drop" too much.

The editor of the "Globe" says that he "hopes to reach the truth." He is laying out for himself a long journey. He had better make his will before he starts.

A testy editor wonders if we are not often frightened by the ghost of murdered truth. We do not think he is in any danger of such a fright. As he was never able to see the truth itself, he will hardly be able to discern its ghost.

The editor of a Pennsylvania paper says that he once *saw* stripes publicly inflicted upon a man in Rhode Island for petty larceny. We wonder if he didn't *feel* them too?

A contemporary exclaims in an exceedingly eloquent piece of writing, "If the dead could speak to us from their graves, what would they say?" We guess they would say, "*Let us out.*"

The editor of the "Plaindealer" abuses the President. He calls him "a man with a single principle." No wonder the two cannot agree—the one being a man *with* a single principle, and the other *without.*

The editor of the "Gallatin Union" calls our Journal "wrapping-paper." He himself knows, from the sores on his head, that it is the best *rapping*-paper in the country.

A Democratic editor in Indiana threatens to handle us "without gloves." We would certainly never think of handling *him* without at least three pairs, and thick ones at that.

The editor of a paper now before us says that he meets a certain statement squarely. Men sometimes meet true statements squarely by lying roundly.

The editor of the "Truth Teller" says that he is "a candidate for *nothing.* We think he will be *elected.*

ABRAM J. RYAN

LIBRARY OF SOUTHERN LITERATURE

VOLUME X

PRENTISS—SASS

Copyright, 1907, by
The Martin and Hoyt Company, Atlanta, Georgia.

Copyright, 1909, by
The Martin and Hoyt Company, Atlanta, Georgia

COPYRIGHT ACKNOWLEDGMENT

In addition to special credit given elsewhere, grateful acknowledgment is made to the following owners and publishers for permission to reprint the selections used in this volume:

The Century Company; The Congregationalist; Harper and Brothers; Houghton, Mifflin and Company; P. J. Kennedy and Son; The J. B. Lippincott Company; Little, Brown and Company; The Macmillan Company; The McClure Company; John Murphy Company; North American Review; Presbyterian Board of Publication; G. P. Putnam's Sons; Rand, McNally and Company; Scribner's Magazine; The Smart Set; Frederick A. Stokes Company.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

VOLUME X

PAGE

PRENTISS, SERGEANT SMITH (1808-1850) - - 4209

BY DUNBAR ROWLAND

Eulogy on Lafayette
Sanctity of Elective Franchise, and Preservation of the Union
On the Mississippi Contested Election
The Law of Self-Defence
Famine in Ireland

PRESTON, MARGARET JUNKIN (1820-1897) - - 4235

BY ELIZABETH PRESTON ALLAN

Only a Private
A Bit of Autumn Color
Lady Yeardley's Guest
At Last
Gone Forward
The Shade of the Trees
The Hero of the Commune
Through the Pass
A Lesson From the Street
To the Uttermost
A Grave in Hollywood Cemetery, Richmond
There'll Come a Day

PRESTON, WILLIAM CAMPBELL (1794-1860) - 4255

BY FRANCIS PRESTON VENABLE

The Council of Pacification at St. Louis
The Meeting With Washington Irving
Visit to Madison

PAGE

PRYOR, SARA AGNES (1830-1912) - - - - 4273

BY MARIE GORDON PRYOR RICE

The Seven Days' Battles
A Modern Courtship
My Day

RAMSAY, DAVID (1749-1815) - - - - - 4295

BY CHARLES W. KENT

The First Effect of the Declaration of Independence
The Immediate Effects of the Revolution
Dr. Waddel's School

RANDALL, JAMES RYDER (1839-1908) - - - 4309

BY MATTHEW PAGE ANDREWS

An Incident in the Senate
Maryland, My Maryland
Pelham
Why the Robin's Breast is Red
Far Out at Sea
Flourine
Resurgam
Peace to the Dead
Eidolon

RANDOLPH, JOHN (1773-1833) - - - - - 4329

BY PHILIP ALEXANDER BRUCE

Reply to Mr. Everett
On the Greek Cause
A Prediction as to Slavery
Our American Experiment
Retort on McLane
Labor is Necessary to Excellence
The Cultivation of Correct Principles

READ, OPIE (1852—) - - - - - - 4357

BY W. L. VISSCHER

Getting Acquainted
The Greatest Soldier
The Last of Them

PAGE

REESE, LIZETTE WOODWORTH (1856—) - - 4379

BY LETITIA H. WRENSHALL

Anne
Inspiration
Tell Me Some Way
An Old Belle
A Holiday
Trust
In Time of Grief
To a Town Poet
An English Missal
Fra Gregory's Word to the Lord
A Celtic Maying Song
April Weather
The Mystery
The Young Mother
At Cockcrow

REQUIER, AUGUSTUS JULIAN (1825-1887) - - 4395

BY GEORGE A. WAUCHOPE

Ashes of Glory
Only a Dream
Who Was It?
Ode to Shakespeare
The Image

RICE, ALICE HEGAN (1870—) - - - - - 4403

BY GEORGE MADDEN MARTIN

The Annexation of Cuby
The Soul of O Sana San
The Editor Entertains

RICE, CALE YOUNG (1872—) - - - - - 4427

BY MARGARET STEELE ANDERSON

Jael
Transcended
Adelil
On the Moor

PAGE

RICE, CALE YOUNG—*Continued.*

A Japanese Mother
The Day-Moon
The Winds
To the Sea
A Sea-Ghost
Invocation
The Song of the Old Venetians
The Great Buddha of Kamakura to the Sphinx
David's Lament for Jonathan
The Young to the Old
Yolanda's Sacrifice
The Tryst Beneath the Moon
Petrarca's Despair

RIVES, AMÉLIE (PRINCESS TROUBETZKOY) (1863—) 4453

BY R. T. W. DUKE, JR.

The April Ride, and the Conflict of Love
The Violence of Love
Imprecations
Love Song
A Hymn to the Sea
Faith

RIVES, WILLIAM CABELL (1793-1868) - - 4477

BY JOSEPH W. EVERETT

Structure of the Government
The Distinguishing Glory of Christianity
Memorable Competition
Essays of the Federalists

ROACH, ABBY MEGUIRE (1876—) - - - 4497

BY MARILLA WAITE FREEMAN

His Claim

ROBERTSON, HARRISON (1856—) - - - 4517

BY E. POLK JOHNSON

Yaboo Wins the Race
Two Triolets

PAGE

ROBERTSON, HARRISON—*Continued.*

Coquette
Aprille
Kentucky Philosophy

ROBINS, ELIZABETH (1862—) - - - - 4541

BY ABBY MEGUIRE ROACH

The Great White Silence
A Trafalgar Square Meeting

ROSE, GEORGE B. (1860—) - - - - 4567

BY WALTER MALONE

The Renaissance of Italian Art
Burne-Jones
Ye Gods of Greece
On the Bay of Naples
Phryne
The Pine Tree and the Vine

ROUQUETTE, DOMINIQUE (1810-1890) AND ADRIEN ROUQUETTE (1813-1887) - - - 4589

BY ALCÉE FORTIER

Les Savanes
La Nouvelle Atala: Ou La Fille De L'Esprit
Meschacébéennes
À. M. Anatole C. . .
A M. Jules M. . .
La Jeune Fille Des Bois
A M. . .

RUSSELL, IRWIN (1853-1879) - - - - 4601

BY A. A. KERN

Christmas-night in the Quarters
Nebuchadnezzah
Mahsr John
Lines to a Young Lady Friend
A Symbol
Selling a Dog

PAGE

RYAN, ABRAM J. (1836-1886) - - - - 4623

BY HANNIS TAYLOR

Song of the Mystic
Erin's Flag
March of the Deathless Dead
The Sword of Robert Lee
Reunited
The Land We Love
A Land Without Ruins
In Memoriam
The Conquered Banner
My Beads
A Legend
Better Than Gold

SALYARDS, JOSEPH (1808-1885) - - - - 4645

BY JOHN W. WAYLAND

Moonlight
Sunrise
The Rainbow
Harvest Home
A Song
More Light!
More Love!
Kagey—"The Good Man"
England and America

SASS, GEORGE HERBERT ("BARTON GREY") (1845-1908) - - - - - - - - 4661

BY JOHN BENNETT

The Quest of Father Boniface
First and Last
Heart's Content
A Face
Joan Mellish
In a King-Cambyses Vein
The New Song of Charleston
Robert Edward Lee
The Confederate Dead
The Spirit of Geometry in Daily Life
Wisdom and the Fear of Death
The Freedom of the Human Mind

SERGEANT SMITH PRENTISS

[1808—1850]

DUNBAR ROWLAND

SERGEANT SMITH PRENTISS was of that generation of American statesmen producing from 1830 to 1850 great advocates and orators who attained widespread fame. He lived in the time of Clay, Calhoun, Choate, and Webster, when American oratory had attained its highest development; but he is worthy of a place as an orator of the first rank among the greatest of his time. Born in Maine, of unbroken Puritan ancestry, he was totally unlike the New England type of his generation.

The founder of the family in America was Henry Prentice, a grave and devout Puritan, who, some time before 1640, settled in Massachusetts and became the pioneer ancestor of a family which, during the succeeding century, produced men noted for their energy, intelligence, and love of adventure. Samuel Prentiss, the grandfather of Sergeant, was a graduate of Harvard. William Prentiss, the son of Samuel, was a hardy, prosperous, shipmaster who met with equal fearlessness the perils of the sea and the dangers of pirates and British men-of-war. This bold sea-captain was the father of Sergeant Smith Prentiss, who was born in Portland, Maine, September 30, 1808. When the commerce of New England was ruined by Jefferson's embargo and the War of 1812-'15, Captain Prentiss was deprived of his occupation as a shipmaster, and, removing his family to Gorham, a town about nine miles from Portland, became a farmer.

During his infancy Sergeant was stricken by an almost fatal illness, from the effects of which he never entirely recovered. His life was saved by the loving care of a devoted mother, but paralysis withered one of his limbs and he was made a cripple for life. His delicate health, bright mind, and the beauty of his face, put all the members of a devoted family at his service. Drawn in a little cart or sled, he attended the village school with an elder brother. His infirmity deprived him of the activities of childhood and compelled him to spend his time about the house. He soon showed a great passion for books, and his attention was directed by a devout mother to the Bible and 'Pilgrim's Progress.' From these great books he acquired, during his childhood, a wonderful command of the purest English. Even at this early age, he expressed a determination to

go to college; and when there appeared to be some doubt of the ability of the family to send him, he told his mother that he would become a shoemaker and acquire the necessary means by his own labor. When about twelve years old, he began his preparation for college at Gorham Academy. At this time, strange to say, he had an aversion for the weekly declamation, which was one of the requirements of his training for college; but he gave evidence in early boyhood of a highly poetic, sensitive, impulsive, and fearless temperament. In the fall of 1824, when he was fifteen years old, he entered Bowdoin College, of which the Rev. William Allen, D.D., was then president, and passed his examination for the junior class.

Professor Packard, of the Bowdoin faculty, in writing of Prentiss at this interesting period, says: "I remember with perfect distinctness the examination of your brother for the junior standing. He was very youthful in his appearance, and feeling much sympathy with him on account of his physical infirmity, as also on account of his youth and the severe examination required of one to enter two years in advance, I was disposed to be very gentle with him in my opening, lest he might become embarrassed. But I found at the outset that he did not need any forbearance at the hands of his examiners. . . . Your brother's collegiate course was a brilliant one, and I have often said that it was one of the few instances, in college life, of decided indications of future success and eminence." As a student, he was faithful and brilliant; he read omnivorously, and in addition to his early favorites was fond of the classics and of Walter Scott, Byron, and Shakespeare. A year before he completed his course his father died. Soon after his graduation, in 1827, he began the study of law in the office of Josiah Pierce of Gorham.

The New England of 1827 afforded few opportunities for brilliant young men with fortunes to make; the professions were crowded, incomes were small, and a young lawyer was compelled to spend the first years of his career in poverty. Conditions in the lower South were different; the country was new, and the young men were the leaders in both professional and business circles. At this time the new State of Mississippi was attracting many ambitious young men from the older States, and among them was Prentiss. Leaving his home in 1827, he spent a short time in Cincinnati, where he sought to open a school that he might continue his law studies. He was advised that he would find a more desirable situation as tutor in the family of some wealthy planter in Natchez, and decided to go to Mississippi. Providing himself with letters of introduction to families of wealth and influence near Natchez, he arrived there November 2, 1827, and in the course of a few weeks was installed as tutor in the family of the widow of William B. Shields, who had a dis-

tinguished career as Attorney-general of Mississippi Territory, one of the first judges of the Supreme Court of the State, and the first Federal Judge for the district of Mississippi. Judge Shields had died in 1823, and his children were placed under the instruction of Prentiss four years later. He gave up school-teaching in 1829; entered the law office of Robert J. Walker; was admitted to the Bar at Monticello, Mississippi, in June, 1829, and became the law partner of General Felix Huston of Natchez. Entering at once into active practice, he astonished the older members of the Bar with his vigor of argument, brilliancy of expression, and unbounded humor, and at the end of two years it was generally conceded that he was the most resourceful advocate of the Natchez Bar. During his stay in Natchez, he was undecided as to a permanent location; the love of home prompted him to return to Maine, the opportunities in New Orleans attracted his attention; but in January, 1832, he decided to remove to Vicksburg, where he formed a partnership with John I. Guion.

Prentiss was a New England Federalist by inheritance, and when the Whig party was organized, in opposition to Andrew Jackson, he joined it. Before 1832 he had taken no public part in politics; but in the year that General Jackson was a candidate for reëlection he made a campaign against him and delighted the people with his oratory. In 1833 he made a visit to Washington to argue a case before the Supreme Court and met President Jackson; he wrote to his sister from Washington, in referring to his meeting with the President: "I think him about as fit to be President of the United States as I am."

Within four years of his admission to the Bar, Mr. Prentiss was in the full tide of success as an advocate, and his high repute was earned in competition with such lawyers as Robert J. Walker, Henry S. Foote, John A. Quitman, and William L. Shirley. He was already the idol of Mississippi Whigs, and had been offered the nomination of his party for Congress. In August, 1834, he delivered at the State capital the oration in honor of General Lafayette, which is yet a favorite declamation with Mississippi college boys. He soon won a place in the front rank of popular orators, and was in special demand in the political campaign in which George Poindexter was seeking reëlection to the United States Senate as an anti-Jackson Democrat. Poindexter had the support of the Whigs, and Prentiss was elected to the Legislature from Warren County and led the Whig members in opposition to Robert J. Walker, the Jackson candidate. In the House of Representatives he attracted the attention of the entire State by his speech in opposition to the seating of the Representatives from new counties. For three hours he held the Assembly

at his command, and established an undisputed leadership of the Whigs of Mississippi.

In the summer of 1837, while absent from the State on a visit to Maine, he was nominated by his party for Congress. A special election was called by Governor Lynch to fill what he termed a constitutional vacancy. The regular time for the election was in November, but the Governor decided that it was necessary to hold a special election in July in order that the State might be represented at a special session of Congress called by the President. At the special July election Mr. Prentiss was defeated. He was again made the candidate of the Whigs, with Thomas J. Word as his running mate, and both were elected in November. J. F. H. Claiborne and S. J. Gholson represented the State in the special session, and by a resolution of the House were declared to be duly elected members of the Twenty-fifth Congress. When Prentiss and Word presented their credentials, they found their seats filled by Claiborne and Gholson, and it became necessary to institute a contest to settle the questions involved. It was in this contest that Mr. Prentiss, in presenting his claims before the House of Representatives, established his reputation as one of the country's greatest orators. In defence of his claim, he spoke for two days and part of a third in the presence of an audience which contained Henry Clay, Daniel Webster, John Quincy Adams, and Hugh Lawson White. Mr. Webster said of this speech: "Nobody could equal it." Only a skeleton of this great speech has been preserved, but even that justifies the opinion of Daniel Webster. This speech was one of the greatest Mr. Prentiss ever made.

The first vote of the House on this contest was a tie, and Speaker Polk cast his vote for Claiborne and Gholson. Before returning to Mississippi, Prentiss was entertained at dinner by Clay, Webster, and other leaders of the Whigs. When he returned to his State, he was received at Vicksburg with repeated sounds of cannon. The House of Representatives had decided that both the July and November elections were void. The claims of the contestants were submitted to the people of Mississippi at a special election held the fourth Monday in April, 1838, and Prentiss and Word were triumphantly elected. It was in this remarkable campaign, under the forest trees of Mississippi, that Mr. Prentiss made his noblest speeches. His canvass was the most dramatic in the political annals of Mississippi. Old, tried, and true Democrats enthusiastically supported him.

After the adjournment of Congress in 1838, he went to Portland, Maine, on a visit, and while there was invited to speak at Faneuil Hall, in Boston, at a reception in honor of Daniel Webster. In referring to Mr. Prentiss's speech, Edward Everett wrote: "He took possession of the audience from the first sentence and carried them

along with unabated interest. . . . Sitting by Mr. Webster, I asked him if he ever heard anything like it; he answered, 'Never, except from Mr. Prentiss himself.' "

After one term in Congress, Prentiss wrote his sister that he was "disgusted with politics and annoyed by notoriety." He wished to confine his work to his profession, but in 1839 the Whigs prevailed upon him to become their candidate for United States Senator. He made a canvass of the State, but his party failed to control the Legislature. In the Presidential campaign of 1840, Mr. Prentiss was in great demand as a campaign orator; he made speeches in all the chief cities of the country, and wherever he appeared he entranced the multitude. Mississippi for the first time in its history was carried by the Whigs, and gave its electoral vote for William Henry Harrison. In 1840-'43 he made a gallant fight against repudiation. In 1845 he removed from Vicksburg to New Orleans, and soon attained the same position at the Louisiana Bar that he had held in Mississippi. In 1848 his health began to fail, but in spite of his weakness he actively joined in the campaign for electing General Taylor to the Presidency. His exertions were so great that he could not recover his strength. In June, 1850, he appeared in court for the last time, in the defence of Lopez, the revolutionist, and at the conclusion of his argument he fell exhausted in the court room. He was taken to Natchez, where he died, July 1, 1850.

Mr. Prentiss had all the essential elements of the orator; he was gifted to an uncommon degree; he was magnetic, original, imaginative, and poetic; he had the learning of the schools as well as the wisdom gained by contact with men; and behind it all was knowledge. His speeches cover a remarkable range of subjects—legal, political, educational, parliamentary, and constitutional. Every subject of human interest seemed to come within the scope of his genius. The impression he made on the most gifted men of his day was phenomenal, and his influence over the multitude was unusual.

Henry S. Foote considered that his great masterpieces at the Bar were his speeches in the prosecution of Alonzo Phelps, the outlaw, and Mercer Byrd, accused of complicity in the murder of Cameron; his greatest political efforts, the speeches at Nashville in 1840, and before Congress in defence of his claim to a seat.

Henry A. Wise, of Virginia, a contemporary of Mr. Prentiss, who was peculiarly capable of appreciating him, wrote an estimate which, in a perspective of half a century, is still true. Mr. Wise says: "His eyes were deep in his head—large, clear, full of animation and hidden fires. It had a look deeper than its set; when looked into, it returned a glance which, like that of Lara, 'dared you to forget.' But there was a buoyancy in his presence which seemed as if it would leap

from battle to play, from play to battle; and a goodness which said, to me at least, 'Let's you and I be friends.' Spirit responded to spirit at the first sight without a word. . . . His head, I saw, was two stories high, with a large attick on top, above which was his bump of comparison and veneration. Of the latter he had a vast deal. He actually admired and reverenced often, gifts and genius far inferior to his own. . . . He was at that time (1840) excessively convivial. The moment he arrived (in Congress) a set of roisterers challenged him at once to a continued round of revelry, and I said to myself and others: 'This Mississippi wonder will cease if he does not look ahead.'

"Every trait of his noble nature was in excess; his very virtues leaned to faults, and his faults themselves to virtues. The like of him I shall never see again, so compounded was he of all sorts of contradictions, without a single element in him to disgust, without one characteristic which did not attract and charm. . . . He was a natural spendthrift, and yet despised debt and dependence. He was heedless of all consequences, yet of the soundest judgment in council and discretion in movement. He was almost the only man I ever saw whom I never heard utter a scandal, and he had the least charity of any man I ever saw for all kinds of baseness and meanness. He was continually, without ceasing, quoting classical lore and not the least of a pedant. He was brave to foolhardiness, and wouldn't hurt Uncle Toby's fly."

The present generation, far removed from the magnetic influence of the personality of Mr. Prentiss, still recognizes the supremacy of his master mind.

Dunbar Rowland

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Bench and Bar of the South and Southwest. By Henry Stuart Foote. 1876.

Life and Times of S. S. Prentiss. By Joseph D. Shields. 1883.

Recollections. Fulkerson. 1885.

Recollections. By Reuben Davis. 1891.

Memoir of S. S. Prentiss. Edited by his brother, George L. Prentiss. 2 vols. Last edition, 1899.

Encyclopædia of Mississippi History. Rowland. 1907.

EULOGY ON LAFAYETTE

Extract from an Address delivered at Jackson, Mississippi, August, 1834. All selections from 'Memoir of S. S. Prentiss.'

And here we cannot but pause for a moment to compare these two wonderful men, belonging to the same age and to the same nation—Napoleon and Lafayette. Their names excite no kindred emotions; their fates no kindred sympathies. Napoleon—the child of destiny—the thunderbolt of war—the victor in a hundred battles—the dispenser of thrones and dominions—he who scaled the Alps, and reclined beneath the pyramids; whose word was fate, and whose wish was law. Lafayette—the volunteer of Freedom—the advocate of human rights—the defender of civil liberty—the patriot, the philanthropist—the beloved of the good and the free. Napoleon—the vanquished warrior, ignobly flying from the field of Waterloo; the wild beast, ravaging all Europe in his wrath, hunted down by the banded and affrighted nations, and caged far away upon an ocean-girded rock; Lafayette—a watchword by which men excite each other to deeds of worth and noble daring; whose home has become the Mecca of freedom, towards which the pilgrims of Liberty turn their eyes from every quarter of the globe. Napoleon was the red and fiery comet, shooting wildly through the realms of space, and scattering terror and pestilence among the nations: Lafayette was the pure and brilliant planet, beneath whose grateful beams the mariner directs his barque, and the shepherd tends his flocks. Napoleon died and a few old warriors—the scattered relics of Marengo and of Austerlitz—bewailed their chief: Lafayette is dead—and the tears of a civilized world attest how deep is the mourning for his loss. Such is, and always will be, the difference of feeling towards a *benefactor* and a *conqueror* of the human race.

In 1824, on Sunday, a single ship furled her snowy sails in the harbor of New York. Scarcely had her prow touched the shore, when a murmur was heard among the multitude, which gradually deepened into a mighty shout; and that shout was a shout of joy. Again and again were the heavens rent with the inspiring sound. Nor did it cease; for the loud strain

was carried from city to city, and from State to State, till not a tongue was silent throughout this wide Republic, from the lisping infant to the tremulous old man. All were united in one wild shout of gratulation. The voices of more than ten millions of freemen gushed up towards the sky, and broke the stillness of its silent depths. But one note, and but one tone, went to form this acclamation. Up in those pure regions, clearly and sweetly did it sound—"Honor to Lafayette!" "Welcome to the Nation's Guest!" It was Lafayette, the war-worn veteran, whose arrival upon our shores had caused this wide-spread, this universal joy. He came among us to behold the independence and the freedom which his young arm had so well assisted in achieving; and never before did eye behold, or heart of man conceive, such homage paid to virtue. His whole stay amongst us, was a continued triumph. Every day's march was an ovation. The United States became for months one great festive hall. People forgot the usual occupations of life, and crowded to behold the Benefactor of mankind. The iron-hearted, grey-haired veterans of the Revolution thronged around him, to touch his hand, to behold his face, and to call down Heaven's benison upon their old companion-in-arms. Lisping infancy and garrulous age, beauty, talents, wealth and power—all, for a while, forsook their usual pursuits, and united to pay a willing tribute of gratitude and welcome to the Nation's Guest. The name of Lafayette was upon every lip, and wherever was his name, there too was an invocation for blessings on his head. What were the triumphs of the classic ages, compared with this unbought love and homage of a mighty people? Take them in Rome's best days—when the invincible generals of the Eternal City returned from their foreign conquests, with captive kings bound to their chariot wheels, and the spoils of nations in their train; followed by their stern and bearded warriors, and surrounded by the interminable multitudes of the seven-hilled city, shouting a fierce welcome home—what was such a triumph, compared with that of Lafayette? Not a single city, but a whole nation, rising as one man, and greeting him with an affectionate embrace! One single day of such spontaneous homage, were worth whole years of courtly adulation; one hour might well reward a man for a whole life of danger and

of toil. Then, too, the joy with which he must have viewed the prosperity of the people for whom he had so heroically struggled! To behold the nation which he had left a little child now grown up in the full proportions of lusty manhood! To see the tender sapling, which he had left with hardly shade enough to cover its own roots, now waxing into the sturdy and unwedgeable oak, beneath whose grateful umbrage the oppressed of all nations find shelter and protection! That oak still grows on in its majestic strength, and wider and wider still extends its mighty branches. But the hand that watered and nourished it, while yet a tender plant, is now cold: the heart that watched, with strong affection, its early growth, has ceased to beat.

Virtue forms no shield to ward off the arrows of death. Could it have availed, even when joined with the prayers of a whole civilized world, then indeed, this mournful occasion would never have occurred; and the life of Lafayette would have been as eternal as his fame. Yet though he has passed from among us—though that countenance will no more be seen, that used to lighten up the van of Freedom's battles, as he led her eaglets to their feast—still has he left behind his better part—the legacy of his bright example—the memory of his deeds. The lisping infant will learn to speak his venerated name. The youth of every country will be taught to look upon his career, and follow in his footsteps. When, hereafter, a gallant people are fighting for Freedom against the oppressor, and their cause begins to wane before the mercenary bands of tyranny—then will the name of Lafayette become a watch-word, that will strike with terror on the tyrant's ear, and nerve with redoubled vigor the freeman's arm. At that name many a heart, before unmoved, will wake in the glorious cause; many a sword, rusting ingloriously in its scabbard, will leap forth to battle. And even amid the mourning with which our souls are shrouded, is there not some room for gratulation? Our departed friend and benefactor has gone down to the grave, peacefully and quietly, at a good old age. He had performed his appointed work. His virtues were ripe. He had done nothing to sully his fair fame. No blot or soil of envy or calumny can now affect him. His character will stand upon the pages of history, pure and unsullied as the

lilied emblem on his country's banner. He has departed from among us; but he has become again the companion of Washington. He has but left the friends of his old age, to associate with the friends of his youth. Peace be to his ashes! Calm and quiet may they rest upon some vine-clad hill of his own beloved land! And it shall be called the Mount Vernon of France. And let no cunning sculpture, no monumental marble, deface, with its mock dignity, the patriot's grave; but rather let the unpruned vine, the wild flower, and the free song of the uncaged bird—all that speaks of freedom and of peace, be gathered round it. Lafayette needs no mausoleum. His fame is mingled with a Nation's History. His epitaph is engraved upon the hearts of men.

SANCTITY OF ELECTIVE FRANCHISE, AND PRESERVATION OF THE UNION

Extract from Speech delivered at Faneuil Hall, Boston, Massachusetts, July, 1838.

I DO sincerely believe, that never since men have dwelt on the face of this green earth, and had rulers over them, was there ever an administration seen in any country of the globe, or in any age of time, more utterly callous to the sufferings or the wishes of the people. And I will say further, that I do not believe that in any country of the world would such a destruction of public property, without the presence of an invading enemy, and proceeding from the acts of the government alone, have been endured without a national convulsion. No other people on the face of the earth but the free citizens of this Republic, would ever have submitted to it. No, sir, not in Turkey itself. Had the Sultan, by his despotic edict, suddenly thrown the subjects of his throne as far back from their previous condition, bad as it might before have been, as this country has been thrown back by the mad experiments on its currency, he would the next night have slept in the Bosphorus. And why has it not been so here? I will tell you why: the American people well know that they have the remedy in their own hands; they know that they still hold the reins of power; and if their steeds prove restive and dispute their pleasure,

they know another thing, that they hold the *whip* as well as the reins.

We have had to fight a hard battle; and though, through the aid and blessing of Heaven, we have been able to save the citadel of the Constitution, rely upon it, the worst part of the contest yet remains. We contend with a veteran foe; though worsted, they are not vanquished—they have lost a battle, but, like the squadrons of the desert, they will sweep round and re-appear with a new front, but under the old flag. Sir, is it not so? Even since the adjournment, I hear they have put forth a new bulletin, evincing a determination still to hold on to the same policy. Had I been consulted, I should have counselled that very course. They seem to be demented. They have been steeped so long in wickedness, that they are under a judicial blindness. They remind me of the simpleton who in a great storm at sea, being in mortal fear, went and *lashed himself to the anchor,* so that if the ship did go down, he at least might be safe. So has this Administration tied itself fast to the Sub-Treasury policy; and may the Genius of Gravitation carry them so straight and so profoundly to the bottom, that not a bubble shall rise to mark the spot where they went down! I may as well utter the honest truth; for even a short experience in public life, has convinced me that plain, open speech is the best policy. I believe that a part of the mischief which this Administration has effected, may be traced to its very weakness. We have not dreaded it as we ought to have done; it has been suffered to gnaw as a worm, where it should have been crushed as a serpent.

One of the gentlemen who have addressed you, has been pleased to say that I have fought a good fight; and recreant indeed should I have been, could I have turned my back in such a contest. The reference, I presume, was to the late struggle in my State; for though thousands of miles removed, your intelligence has fully apprised you that an inroad was made on your own rights, and on the Constitution, by the foul and nefarious decision of the House of Representatives in regard to a late Mississippi election.

I fear, fellow-citizens, that the great fundamental principles of our institutions have not enough been looked at. We glory in the institutions themselves, and consider them as the

strong bulwarks of our freedom; while we too much forget the vital principles upon which they rest. These broad and general principles are like the roots of the everlasting mountains; they lie deep—are out of sight and forgotten—but they are nevertheless the pillars of the earth. We are too apt to think of them as abstractions—as barren generalities—not coming immediately home to our business and bosoms we cannot conceive it possible that any man should dare to attack them; but our security is our danger. They may be attacked. They have been assailed. One of these great principles of our freedom is the Elective Franchise, and this has been attacked in the persons of the Representatives of Mississippi. We thought this was a thing so settled, that no one would dream of attempting to disturb it; but we contend with a foe that knows nothing of civilized warfare. They assailed this citadel of our Freedom; and had the people of Mississippi submitted to it—had they yielded the key of this their last refuge —their liberties would have been gone; nor would they have deserved any longer to be free. But they were not thus stolid, thus base and craven-hearted; they manfully resisted the assault; they were true to themselves, and true to you; for this was *your* question as much as it was theirs. Your rights, our rights, the rights of every State, and of every man, woman and child in every State, were all in danger; they stood on the steep precipice of imminent and present destruction; but they were rescued. Yet, when I think how close was the contest, how narrow the escape I tremble for the future; and I now repeat the warning so often uttered—the price of Liberty is unsleeping vigilance in guarding it. You must be like your patriot fathers. You must be the *minute-men* of the Constitution.

Another great principle is attacked with equal desperation. It is the right of Property. Tenets are advanced here, in this free Republic, which would not be tolerated under the worst government of Europe, nay, of the world. It is openly asserted, that the rich are "*the natural enemies of the poor*" and the practical corollary from that position is that, therefore, the poor must wage perpetual war against the rich. Nor is this an idle theory; it is attempted to be made a practical question. It is advanced, not as in some obscure debating club,

by a set of raw and green lads, just escaped from the trammels of their minority, but in the halls of Congress, and by men of experience, standing, and character. It would be an insult to ask you whether such a doctrine is to prevail among American citizens. And if it did, how is this imaginary line between rich and poor ever to be drawn? Fix it where you will, there are tens of thousand of the rich who would consider themselves as among the poor, and as many thousand of the poor who would find themselves among the rich. Nor could it remain fixed for a day or an hour; for he who is rich to-day, to-morrow may be a beggar; while on the other hand, thousands born to poverty, are continually enrolling themselves among the opulent of the land. I have observed, especially in the West and Southwest, that the most prosperous, honored and wealthy, are apt to be the men who commenced their course in life with no fortune but their hands, their industry, and their energy of spirit. The truth is, all classes in this country are mutually dependent upon each other, as in the busy hive, where those who return laden impart their stores, and those who are empty, need only go forth in order to return laden. There is no natural hostility between the different classes of society. Such a doctrine should be trampled under the foot of every American freeman—it is a viper, and should not be suffered to show its head. Let us put it to death by common consent.

There is another precious vital interest of the Republic, which is assailed with no less desperate rashness—it is our Union itself. This is attempted to be destroyed by arraying local prejudices in mutual hostility—by stirring up a sectional warfare between the North and the South, the West and the East; as though the common glory and the common interest of the whole Country was not more than sufficient to outweigh a thousand times the local and minor matters in which we differ. But though politicians, actuated solely by a selfish and parricidal ambition, seek to rend asunder what God has himself joined in everlasting bonds, there is a hand that will arrest the impious design: a hand they despise, but which they will find too strong for them; I mean the hard hand of *Mechanical Labor*. Yes, sir, that mighty hand—and long may it be mighty in this free and equal land—that mighty hand will

link these States together with hooks of steel. The laborin population of this Country mean to live together as one people, and who shall disannul their purpose? See how they are conquering both time and space! See the thousand steamboats that traverse our lakes and rivers; aye, and that, Leviathan-like, begin to make the ocean itself *to boil like a pot!* Look at their railroad cars glancing like fiery meteors from one end of the land to the other; blazing Centaurs with untiring nerves, with unwasting strength, and who seem to go, too, on the grand temperance principle, laboring all day on water only. Think you the American people will suffer their cars to stop, their railroads to be broken in twain, and their majestic rivers severed or changed in their courses, because politicians choose to draw a dividing line between a Northern and a Southern empire? Never, sir, never. Proceeding on those great national principles of Union, which have been so luminously expounded and so nobly vindicated by your illustrious Guest, they will teach these politicians who is *Master.* Let us but hang together for fifty years longer, and we may defy the world even to separate us. Let us but safely get through the crisis, and our Institutions will stand on a firmer basis than ever.

And let it never be forgotten, fellow-citizens, that these Institutions are ours in trust; we hold them for a thousand generations yet to emerge from the stream of time. They are sacred heir-looms, confided to our keeping for those who are to come after us—and if we allow them to be impaired or sullied, while passing through our hands, we are guilty of a double crime; we are traitors alike to our fathers and to our posterity.

True, we are threatened from without as well as within. When I left my distant home, I left not far distant from it thousands of warlike Indians—congregated and armed by the policy of this Administration—consulting, plotting, meditating vengeance. They number, it is said, sixty thousand fighting men. You have given them rifles, and Nature has given them, in the vast prairies in their rear, tens of thousand of wild horses which they well know how to break in and to ride. Their hearts burn with wounded pride, and boil with meditated revenge; and who knows how soon they may return

on us, Mazeppa-like, to pay us home for all their injuries? I know, that in stating the dangers of the Far West, I shall not be heard with indifference, though I speak in the Far East. No—we are one body; and where one member suffers, all the rest suffer with it; or one member prospers, all the rest rejoice with it; and I hold it a high duty of those citizens who come from distant parts of our wide Union, to assure their fellow-citizens of the perfect sympathy and unanimity of feeling which pervades the entire people of this Confederacy. Yes—we are one people, for weal or for woe. When I cannot come from Mississippi, and call the men of Boston my fellow-citizens, my kindred, my brethren, I desire no longer to be myself a citizen of the Republic. Yes—we are all embarked on one bottom; and whether we sink or swim, we will swim or we will sink *Together!*

ON THE MISSISSIPPI CONTESTED ELECTION

Closing Paragraphs of a Speech delivered before the House of Representatives, January, 1838.

If the July election was void, or extended only to the November election, then the latter election must inevitably be sustained, unless there is something averred and proven to vitiate it. It stands, otherwise, upon the same footing with the general elections of the other States which have occurred since the 4th. of March. There can be no sort of a doubt that one of the said elections in Mississippi was constitutional and valid; and I presume no one will advance the absurdity, that an unconstitutional and void election can vitiate a constitutional and valid election.

I have now done with the argument of this matter. It is for the grave judges around me to say whether I have established any of my propositions. I have detained the House, in this opening of the cause, longer, perhaps than its patience would warrant. But ample excuse, I trust, may be found in the magnitude of the principles involved, and the inexperience of the humble individual to whom their illustration has been committed. I have performed my duty; it now devolves upon you to perform yours. In the performance of that duty, let

me tell you, sir, no ordinary responsibility rests upon you. The eyes of the nation are directed to your action, with an anxiety commensurate with the importance of the subject to be affected by your decision. That subject is no less than the right of representation, the elective franchise, the Promethean spark which imparts life and soul to our whole political system; without which, all our institutions are but inanimate things; dull, cold, and senseless statutes. In your situation, even good intention will not justify error. At your hands the American people will require a strict account of that Constitution of which you are appointed guardians, and over whose most vital part a fatal stab is now impending. You cannot respond, as did the first fratricide, "*Who made me the keeper of my brother Abel?*" To you is entrusted the keeping of the Constitution; see that you rob it not of its richest treasure.

I advance here no personal claim; it is the claim of one of the sovereign States of this Confederacy which I advocate; her claim to the right of choosing her own Representatives according to her own constitutional laws. Will you deny her this right? Will you rend the brightest and the strongest link in the golden chain of Union?

Sir, if you persist in denying to Mississippi that right to which she is entitled in common with every other State, you inflict upon her a wound which no medicine can heal. If you are determined to impose upon her a representation not of her choice, and against her will, go on, and complete the work of degradation; send her a proconsul for a Governor, and make taskmasters to rule over her.

Let her no longer sit with you, a young and fair member of this proud sisterhood; but strip off the robes of equality, and make of her a handmaid and a servant.

Better, far better, had she never emerged from the chrysalis condition of a Territory, to wear the gaudy honors and butterfly wings of a State, if you can thus, with your mere touch, brush her brightest tints away.

Sir, you may think it an easy and trifling matter to deprive Mississippi of her elective franchise; for she is young, and may not, perchance, have the power to resist; but I am much mistaken in the character of her chivalrous citizens, if you do not find that she not only understands her rights, but has both the

will and power to vindicate them. You may yet find, to your sorrow, that you have grasped a scorpion, where you thought you were only crushing a worm. This House would as soon put its head in a lion's mouth, as take the course which is threatened, towards the elder and more powerful states. And how happens it, that Representatives of the State which have always been the readiest in the assertion of their own rights, should now be most zealous in trampling upon the rights of Mississippi? What has she done that she should be selected as a victim? No State is or has ever been more ardently attached to the Union; and if she is placed beyond its pale, it will be your fault, and not her own. Sir, if you consummate this usurpation, you degrade the State of Mississippi; and if she submits, never again can she wear the lofty look of conscious independence. Burning shame will set its seal upon her brow; and when her proud sons travel in other lands, they will blush at the history of her dishonor, as it falls from the sneering lip of the stranger. Sir, place her not in that terrible and trying position, in which her love for this glorious Union will be found at war with her own honor, and the paramount obligation which binds her to transmit to the next generation, untarnished and undiminished, her portion of that rich legacy of the Revolution, which was bought with blood, and which should never be parted with for a price less than what it cost. Is there a State in this Union that would part with it; that would submit to have her Representatives chosen by this House, and forced upon her against her will? Come! what says the Bay State—time-honored *Massachusetts?* From the cradle in which young Liberty was first rocked, even from old Faneuil Hall, comes forth her ready answer, and, before it dies away, again it is repeated from Bunker Hill: "It was for this very right of representation our fathers fought the battles of the Revolution, and ere we will surrender this dear-bought right, those battles shall again become dread realities." Would *Kentucky* submit? Ask her, Mr. Speaker, and her *Mammoth cavern* will find a voice to thunder in your ear her stern response: "No: sooner than submit to such an outrage, our soil shall be re-baptised with a new claim to the proud but melancholy title of *the dark and bloody ground.*" And what says Virginia, with her high device—her "*sic semper tyrannis,*"

the loftiest motto that ever blazed upon a warrior's shield or a nation's arms? How would she brook such usurpation? What says the mother of States and State Right doctrines; she who has placed *instruction* as a guardian over *representation;* what says she to the proposition that this House can make Representatives, and force them upon a State in violation of its choice and will? And where is South Carolina, the Harry Percy of the Union? On which side in this great controversy does she couch her lance and draw her blade? I trust, upon the side of her sister State; upon the side, too, of the constitutional rights of all the States; and let her lend the full strength of her good right arm to the blow, when she strikes in so righteous a quarrel.

Upon all the States I do most solemnly call, for that justice to another, which they would expect for themselves. Let this cup pass from Mississippi. Compel her not to drink its bitter ingredients, lest, some day, even-handed justice should "commend the poisoned chalice" to your own lips. Rescind that resolution, which presses like a foul incubus upon the Constitution. You sit here, twenty-five sovereign States, in judgment upon the most sacred right of a sister State; that which is to a State what chastity is to a woman, or honor to a man. Should you decide against her, you tear from her brow the richest jewel which sparkles there, and forever bow her head in shame and dishonor. But, if your determination is taken; if the blow must fall; if the violated Constitution must bleed; I have but one request on her behalf to make. When you decide that she cannot choose her own representation, at that self-same moment blot from the spangled banner of this *Union* the bright *star* that glitters to the name of *Mississippi,* but leave the *stripe* behind, a fit emblem of her degradation.

THE LAW OF SELF-DEFENCE

Extracts from a Speech in defence of his Friend Judge Wilkinson, who had been indicted for murder, Louisville, Kentucky, 1839.

I CAME before you an utter stranger, and yet I feel not as a stranger towards you; I have watched during the course of the examination the various emotions which the evidence was so well calculated to arouse in your bosoms, both as men and as Kentuckians; and when I beheld the flush of honorable shame upon your cheeks, the sparkle of indignation in your eyes, or the curl of scorn upon your lips, as the foul conspiracy was developed, I felt that years could not make us better acquainted. I saw upon your faces the mystic sign which constitutes the bond of union among honest and honorable men; and I knew that I was about to address those whose feelings would respond to my own. I rejoiced that my clients were, in the fullest sense of the term, to be tried by *a jury of their peers.*

* * * * * *

I am not aware that the Commonwealth of Kentucky is incapable of vindicating her violated laws or unwilling to prosecute and punish the perpetrators of crime. The district-attorney has given ample proof that she is provided with officers fully capable of asserting her rights and protecting her citizens; and with the exception of one or two remarks, which fell from him inadvertently, I accord to his observations my most unqualified approbation: he has done equal justice to the State and the defendants; he has acquitted himself ably, honorably, and impartially. But, gentlemen, though the State is satisfied, the prosecutor is not. Your laws have spoken through their constituted agent; now private vengeance and vindictive malice will claim to be heard. One of the ablest lawyers of your country, or of any country, has been employed to conduct the *private part* of this prosecution; employed, not by the Commonwealth, but by the real murderer; him whose forehead I intend, before I am done, to brand with the mark of Cain—that in after life all may know and all may shun him: The money of the prosecutor has purchased the talent of the advocate; and the contract is, that *blood* shall be exchanged

for *gold*. The learned and distinguished gentleman to whom I allude, and who sits before me, may well excite the apprehension of the most innocent. If rumor speak truth, he has character sufficient, even though without ability, and ability sufficient, even without character, to crush the victims of his purchased wrath.

I said that, with the exception of one or two remarks, I was pleased with the manly and honorable course of the Commonwealth's attorney. Those remarks seemed to be more in the spirit of his colleague than in accordance with his own feelings. I was sorry to hear him mention so pointedly, and dwell so long upon the fact, that the defendants were *Mississippians*, as if that constituted an ingredient in their crime or furnished a proof of their guilt. If to be a Mississippian is an offence in my clients, I cannot defend them; I am myself *particeps criminis*. We are all guilty. With malice aforethought, we have left our own beautiful homes, and sought that land, the name of which seems to arouse in the minds of the opposing counsel only images of horror. Truly the learned gentlemen are mistaken in us; we are no cannibals, nor savages. I would that they would visit us, and disabuse their minds of these unkind prejudices. They would find in that far country thousands of their own Kentuckians, who have cast their lot by the monarch stream, in the enjoyment of whose rich gifts, though they forget not, they hardly regret the bright river upon whose banks they strayed in childhood. No State has contributed more of her sons to Mississippi than Kentucky; nor do they suffer by being transplanted to that genial soil. Their native State may well be proud of them, as they ever are of her.

But I do injustice to you and to myself by dwelling upon this matter. Here in the heart of Kentucky my clients have sought and obtained an unprejudiced, impartial jury. You hold in your hands the balance of justice; and I ask and expect that you will not permit the prosecution to cast extraneous and improper weights into the scale, against the lives of the defendants. You constitute the mirror, whose office it is to reflect, in your verdict, the law and the evidence which have been submitted to you. Let no foul breath dim its pure surface, and cause it to render back a broken and distorted image.

Through you now flows the stream of public justice; let it not become turbid by the trampling of unholy feet. Let not the learned counsel, who conducts the private part of this prosecution, act the necromancer with you, as he did with the populace in the city of Louisville when he raised a tempest which even his own wizard hand could not have controlled.

Well may he exclaim, in reference to that act, like the foul spirit in "Manfred":

> I am the rider of the wind,
> The stirrer of the storm;
> The hurricane I left behind
> Is yet with lightning warm.

Aye, so it is still "with lightning warm." But you, gentlemen, will perform the humane office of a conductor, and convey this electric fluid safely to the earth. . . . .

The law of self-defence has always had and ought to have a more liberal construction in this country than in England. Men claim more of personal independence here; of course they have more to defend. They claim more freedom and license in their action towards each other, consequently there is greater reason for apprehending personal attack from an enemy. In this country men retain in their own hands a larger portion of their personal rights than in any other; and one will be authorized to presume an intention to exercise and enforce them, upon grounds that, in other countries, would not excite the slightest suspicion. It is the apprehension of impending harm, and not its actual existence, which constitutes the justification for defensive action. If mine enemy point at me an unloaded pistol or a wooden gun in a manner calculated to excite in my mind apprehensions of immediate, great bodily harm, I am justifiable in taking his life, though it turn out afterwards that I was in no actual danger.

So, on the other hand, if I take the life of another, without being aware of any intended violence on his part, it will constitute no excuse for me to prove that he intended an attack upon me.

The apprehension must be reasonable, and its reasonableness may depend upon a variety of circumstances—of time, place and manner, as well as of character. The same appear-

ance of danger would authorize greater apprehension, and of course readier defensive action, at night than in the day-time. An attack upon one in his own house would indicate greater violence, and excuse stronger opposing action, than an attack in the street.

Indications of violence from an individual of known desperate and dangerous character will justify defensive and preventive action, which would be inexcusable towards a notorious coward. A stranger may reasonably indulge from the appearance or threats of a mob, apprehensions that would be unpardonable in a citizen surrounded by his friends and neighbors. . . .

The principles of self-defence, which pervade all animated nature, and act towards life the same part that is performed by the external mechanism of the eye toward the delicate sense of vision—affording it, on the approach of danger, at the same time, warning and protection—do not require that action shall be withheld till it can be of no avail. When the rattlesnake gives warning of its fatal purpose, the wary traveller waits not for the poisonous blow, but plants upon his head his armed heel, and crushes out, at once, "his venom and his strength." When the hunter hears the rustling in the jungle, and beholds the large green eyes of the spotted tiger glaring upon him, he waits not for the deadly spring, but sends at once through the brain of his crouching enemy the swift and leaden death.

If war was declared against your country by an insulting foe, would you wait till your sleeping cities were wakened by the terrible music of the bursting bomb? till your green fields were trampled by the hoofs of the invader, and made red with the blood of your brethren? No! you would send forth fleets and armies—you would unloose upon the broad ocean your keen falcons—and the thunder of your guns would arouse stern echoes along the hostile coast. Yet this would be but national defence, and authorized by the same great principle of self-protection, which applies no less to individuals than to nations.

But Judge Wilkinson had no right to interfere in defence of his brother; so says the Commonwealth's attorney. Go, gentlemen, and ask your mothers and sisters whether that be

law. I refer you to no musty tomes, but to the living volumes of Nature. What! A man not permitted to defend his brother against conspirators? against assassins, who are crushing out the very life of their bruised and powerless victim? Why he who would shape his conduct by such a principle does not deserve to have a brother or a friend. To fight for self is but the result of an honest instinct, which we have in common with the brutes. To defend those who are dear to us, is the highest exercise of the principle of self-defence. It nourishes all the noblest social qualities, and constitutes the germ of patriotism itself.

Why is the step of the Kentuckian free as that of the bounding deer; firm, manly, and confident, as that of the McGregor when his foot was on the heather of his native hills, and his eye on the peak of Ben Lomond? It is because he feels independent and proud; independent in the knowledge of his rights, and proud in the generous consciousness of ability and courage to defend them, not only in his own person, but in the persons of those who are dear to him.

It was not the blood that would desert a brother or a friend which swelled the hearts of your fathers in the "olden time," when in defence of those they loved, they sought the red savage through all the fastnesses of his native forest. It was not such blood that was poured out, free as a gushing torrent, upon the dark banks of the melancholy Raisin, when all Kentucky manned her warrior sires. They were as bold and true as ever fought beneath a plume. The Roncesvalles Pass, when fell before the opposing lance the harnessed chivalry of Spain, looked not upon a braver or a better band.

Kentucky has no law which precludes a man from defending himself, his brother, or his friend. Better for Judge Wilkinson had he never been born, than that he should have failed in his duty on this occasion. Had he acted otherwise than he did, he would have been ruined in his own estimation, and blasted in the opinions of the world. And young Murdaugh, too, he has a mother, who is looking even now from her window, anxiously watching for her son's return—but better both for her and him, that he should have been borne a bloody corpse to her arms, than that he should have carried to her, unavenged, the degrading marks of the accursed whip.

FAMINE IN IRELAND

Address at New Orleans, Louisiana, 1847, in behalf of the Irish, who were in great distress on account of a famine.

FELLOW-CITIZENS:—

IT is no ordinary cause which has brought together this vast assemblage on the present occasion. We have met, not to prepare ourselves for political contests, nor to celebrate the achievements of those gallant men who have planted our victorious standards in the heart of an enemy's country. We have assembled, not to respond to shouts of triumph from the West, but to answer the cry of want and suffering which comes from the East. The Old World stretches out her arms to the New. The starving parent supplicates the young and vigorous child for bread. There lies upon the other side of the wide Atlantic a beautiful island, famous in story and in song. Its area is not so great as that of the State of Louisiana, while its population is almost half that of the Union. It has given to the world more than its share of genius and of greatness. It has been prolific in statesmen, warriors, and poets. Its brave and generous sons have fought successfully all battles but their own. In wit and humor it has no equal; while its harp like its history, moves to tears by its sweet but melancholy pathos. Into this fair region, God has seen fit to send the most terrible of all those fearful ministers who fulfill His inscrutable decrees. The earth has failed to yield her increase; the common mother has forgotten her offspring, and her breast no longer affords them their accustomed nourishment. Famine, gaunt and ghastly famine, has seized a nation with its strangling grasp; and unhappy Ireland, in the sad woes of the present, forgets for a moment the gloomy history of the past. We have assembled, fellow-citizens, to express our sincere sympathy for the sufferings of our brethren, and to unite in efforts for their alleviation. This is one of those cases in which we may, without impiety, assume, as it were, the function of Providence. Who knows but what one of the very objects of this great calamity is to test the benevolence and worthiness of us upon whom unlimited abundance has been showered. In the name, then, of common humanity, I invoke your aid in behalf of starving Ireland. He who is able, and will not give

for such a sacred purpose, is not a man, and has no right to wear the form. He should be sent back to nature's mint, and re-issued as a counterfeit on humanity of nature's baser metal.

Oh! it is terrible, that in this beautiful world, which the good God has given us, and in which there is plenty for us all, men should die of starvation! In these days, when improvements in agriculture and the mechanical arts have quadrupled the productiveness of labor; when it is manifest that the earth produces every year more than sufficient to clothe and feed all her thronging millions; it is a shame and a disgrace, that the word starvation has not long since become obsolete, or only retained to explain the dim legends of a barbarous age. You who have never been beyond the precincts of our own favored country; you, more especially, who have always lived in this great valley of the Mississippi—the cornucopia of the world—who see each day poured into the lap of your city, food sufficient to assuage the hunger of a nation, can form but an imperfect idea of the horrors of famine, of the terror which strikes men's souls when they cry in vain for bread. When a man dies of disease, he alone endures the pain. Around his pillow are gathered sympathizing friends, who, if they cannot keep back the deadly messenger, cover his face and conceal the horrors of his visage, as he delivers his stern mandate.

In battle, in the fullness of his pride and strength, little recks the soldier whether the hissing bullet sing his sudden requiem, or the cords of life are severed by the sharp steel. But he who dies of hunger wrestles alone, day after day, with his grim and unrelenting enemy. He has no friends to cheer him in the terrible conflict; for if he had friends, how could he die of hunger? He has not the hot blood of the soldier to maintain him; for his foe, vampire-like, has exhausted his veins. Famine comes not up like a brave enemy, storming by a sudden onset, the fortress that resists. Famine besieges. He draws his lines around the doomed garrison; he cuts off all supplies; he never summons to surrender, for he gives no quarter. Alas! for poor human nature, how can it sustain this fearful warfare? Day by day the blood recedes; the flesh deserts; the muscles relax, and the sinews grow powerless. At last the mind, which at first had bravely nerved itself for the contest, gives way under the mysterious influences that govern

its union with the body. Then he begins to doubt the existence of an overruling Providence; he hates his fellow men, and glares upon them with the longings of a cannibal, and, it may be, dies blaspheming!

Who will hesitate to give his mite to avert such awful results? Surely not you, citizens of New Orleans, ever famed for your deeds of benevolence and charity. Freely have your hearts and your purses opened, heretofore, to the call of suffering humanity. Nobly did you respond to oppressed Greece and struggling Poland. Within Erin's borders is an enemy more cruel than the Turk; more tyrannical than the Russian. Bread is the only weapon that can conquer him. Let us, then, load ships with this glorious munition, and, in the name of our common humanity, wage war against this despot Famine. Let us, in God's name, "cast our bread upon the waters," and if we are selfish enough to desire it, we may recollect the promise, that it shall be returned to us after many days.

If benevolence be not a sufficient incentive to action, we should be generous from common decency; for out of this famine we are adding millions to our fortunes. Every article of food, of which we have a superabundance, has been doubled in value, by the very distress we are now called upon to alleviate.

We cannot do less, in common honesty, than to divide among the starving poor of Ireland a portion of the gains we are making out of their misfortunes. Give, then, generously and freely. Recollect that, in so doing, you are exercising one of the most god-like qualities of your nature, and, at the same time, enjoying one of the greatest luxuries of life. We ought to thank our Maker that He has permitted us to exercise, equally with Himself, that noblest of even the Divine attributes, benevolence. Go home and look at your family, smiling in rosy health, and then think of the pale, famine-pinched cheeks of the poor children of Ireland; and I know you will give according to your store, even as a bountiful Providence has given to you—not grudgingly, but with an open hand; for the quality of benevolence, like that of mercy,

> Is not strained,
> It droppeth as the gentle rain from Heaven,
> Upon the place beneath: it is twice blessed,
> It blesseth him that gives and him that takes.

MARGARET JUNKIN PRESTON

[1820—1897]

ELIZABETH PRESTON ALLAN

MARGARET JUNKIN PRESTON did not claim to be a poet. Her standard of what a true poet should measure up to was so high that she repudiated, almost indignantly, that claim as made in her behalf by the lovers and admirers of her writings. She called herself "a singer with a slender trill," and declared that there were those for whom the lark and nightingale soared with a song too distant, who yet listened with pleasure to her "quiet cooings in the leafy dark"; for them, she said, she sang; but let no one think she aspired to be called lark or nightingale.

Nevertheless, the claim was made for her during her lifetime, and steadily persists, now that her voice has been hushed by the Great Silence, that she was a true poet, and one of no mean rank. There is, indeed, much of her verse which fits her own modest description of her writings; and, were she judged by this "quiet cooing," the name "poet" might be found too large for her; but she could leave these level fields, when she so willed, and rise to heights of imagination, passion, and poetic feeling; nor did she lack the words that "breathe and burn" in which to give utterance to her inspiration.

Her friends sometimes complained that she wasted the sacred fire; they would have had her save herself for rarer and loftier efforts, rather than put forth the melodious and continued stream of verse which delighted her readers. But Mrs. Preston deliberately made her choice; she put aside the ambition which in her youth had filled her heart; she was not writing for "posterity"; she used laughingly to declare that she cared nothing for posterity; but the impulse was strong within her to speak some word of comfort, cheer, or hope to her own generation.

She was, first of all, after her marriage, a wife, and undoubtedly her husband's approval and appreciation gave the primary impetus to her work; there was also a deep and serious sense of responsibility for the talent committed to her; she was absolutely without vanity or conceit concerning her poetic gift; no poet ever had less of the Wordsworthian self-appreciation than Mrs. Preston; but she recognized the fact that a gift of song had been entrusted to her by her Creator, and all her days were filled with the deep and earnest pur-

pose to consecrate it to His glory and to the uplift and comfort of her fellow men.

Did she accomplish this high endeavor? Whatever place it may be hers to keep in Fame's memorial hall, without doubt she reached and influenced a large circle of readers in her own day; this is proved by the praise and affection lavished upon her during her lifetime, not only by those who came into the circle of her acquaintance, but by hundreds of readers who never saw her face, and who reached her only through the mail, or by public tributes.

We may say, then, of this poet, that even if her verse passes out of sight like the bright leaves of autumn that fall into some swift stream, she did not live and work in vain; she accomplished her life purpose.

But it has been found since her death that there is a quality in her poetry which the present-day reader would not willingly let die; and our volume seeks to set forth and illustrate this by giving selections of her varying styles.

Our poet's life was happily an uneventful one, not furnishing any dramatic incidents to narrate. Except for the tragedy of war, which thrust itself into her peaceful existence from 1861 to 1865, Mrs. Preston's was the common lot of her kind; she was born, she developed into maturity; she loved and married; she bore children; she descended life's slope into the infirmities of old age; she died, after overpassing by several years "the birthday of the limitation," three-score years and ten.

But if there are those among the latter-day readers of Mrs. Preston's poetry who press for a more intimate acquaintance, and who wish to know, not only what she has revealed of her deepest self in her writings, but also how she appeared to those about her, how she went in and out among us, along the level stretches of life, when she was not climbing poetic heights—such inquirers may be interested in the brief and simple annals of her life.

Margaret Junkin was born on the nineteenth of May, 1820, in Milton, Pennsylvania, where her father, the Rev. George Junkin, was serving the village Presbyterian church. She was the eldest of a family of eight sons and daughters, born to Dr. Junkin and his wife during his career as preacher and teacher in Milton, Germantown, Miami (Ohio), and Easton; and Margaret's position as the eldest child, where the family circle was large and the income small, brought many limitations, self-denials, and even hardships into her early life.

For, although Mrs. Junkin, who was Julia Rush Miller of Philadelphia, had brought her husband what was then counted a comfortable fortune, she seemed to sympathize fully with Dr. Junkin's

desire to spend that fortune on others, which he did, educating enough young men for the ministry to have formed a whole synod, while he brought up his family in the plainest and most economical way possible.

What a splendid education this must have been to the children of that manse, this intense and absorbing purpose to live for others, which was the atmosphere of their home! What were Greek and Latin and French and history compared to this school of life, in which the father and no less the high-souled, unselfish mother were the lesson-books?

And yet Margaret's education did not suffer; from the time that she stood at her father's knee, a tiny six-year-old tot, learning the Greek alphabet, until her twenty-first year, when a temporary, partial blindness "slammed the door of knowledge in her face," the father's relentless ambition was matched by her own, to make her a great scholar.

A great scholar she never became, for at twenty-one years of age her eyes failed, and she spent most of the next seven years in a darkened room. But the intense application of those earlier years was followed by a lifetime of thirst for knowledge, particularly knowledge of what we call in a wide sense "literature"; and few women of her time came into a richer mental culture, or gathered a more profitable store of knowledge from classic as well as from modern fields.

Her marriage with Colonel J. T. L. Preston did much to foster this liberal education. Colonel Preston spent his life as professor of Latin and belles-lettres at the Virginia Military Institute, and was a man of wide culture, a writer, a lecturer, and a fine critic. In many respects he became her teacher and guide, walking certain paths of literature with a firmer tread than her own; and, as has been said, his never-failing interest and delight in her poetry were throughout life her strongest incentives.

No record is found of how early her verses began to appear in newspapers and magazines, though there is evidence that it was in her earliest 'teens. But it was not until a year before her marriage that she published anything in book form. This first volume was 'Silverwood, a Book of Memories.' It was a story of life in old Virginia, and was written in a pleasant, fluent style, but had no dramatic force. Mrs. Preston had no gift as a story-writer; the tools of her craft were not fitted for such architecture, and she was always ready to acknowledge that 'Silverwood' had no special merit as a novel.

During the ever darkening days of the winter of 1864-'65, Mrs. Preston wrote 'Beechenbrook—A Rhyme of the War,' and sent it

to her husband, who was then in Richmond, with the cadets of the Virginia Military Institute. It was written in pencil, on the rough paper made in the Confederacy, and throbs with the pain and patriotism which then filled every Southern woman's heart.

Colonel Preston received the manuscript with delightful praise, and read it to the bronzed and bearded officers around him, every one of whom paid it the tribute of tears—rare tribute from those stalwarts! It was immediately published in Richmond, on dark paper, in dim type, costing $2,600 for the two thousand copies. Alas! all but twenty or thirty copies perished in the flames that lit the evacuation of Richmond! The poem was republished by Kelly and Piet, Baltimore, in 1866, and ran through many editions; but it is now out of print.

Four years later, Lippincott, of Philadelphia, published Mrs. Preston's first collection of poems, 'Old Songs and New'; this, too, is out of print.

In 1875, Roberts Brothers, of Boston, brought out 'Cartoons,' which, one of her best critics says, contains her ripest thought and imagery. This, and 'For Love's Sake,' from the press of A. D. F. Randolph, and 'Colonial Ballads,' published in 1887, by Houghton, Mifflin and Company, are still in the book market; as are also a volume of travel-experience called 'Monographs,' a little dialect story; "Aunt Dorothy," and a tiny volume of child hymns, 'Chimes for Church Children.' Her family hope soon to gather the best from these volumes into one final and complete collection.

No study of Mrs. Preston would be complete without having as a background the setting of her Lexington home. She loved her village home, beautified it, kept it exquisitely clean and sweet, and flung wide its doors to the streams of guests that constantly passed through them.

The Christian faith that had been her strength and hope for a long lifetime was her anchor at its end; in the last letter sent out from her sick-chamber she says: "Pray for me, that if this is to be my last illness I may go to that home from whence there is no more going out." And on March 29, 1897, after days of unconsciousness, she awoke to find herself—at Home!

Professor James A. Harrison thus sums up his "Appreciation" of his friend and fellow-craftsman in literature:

"Mrs. Preston was a true poet, whose spontaneous gift of poesy grew out of an ardent imaginative and devotional nature, cultivated to the highest degree by reading and study. Her masters in the art were first religion and enthusiasm for the beautiful; then Longfellow, Tennyson, Elizabeth Barrett and Robert Browning. From all these sources the stream of poesy that naturally ran through her

nature was enriched and spiritualized. To a natural gift for rhythm and cadence beyond the usual, she added an exquisite ear for spiritual music, ever on the alert for the impalpable melodies that haunt the slopes of Parnassus, and float ethereally about its laureled clefts. Her glowing Celtic nature was all Southern in its passion and love of harmony; and though all American poets must stand behind the sovereign Poe in his supreme distinction, Mrs. Preston takes her place beside Lanier and Hayne and Timrod in fertility, wealth of fancy, culture, and rhythmical melodiousness of expression and feeling."

Elizabeth Preston Allan.

ONLY A PRIVATE

From 'Beechenbrook; A Rhyme of the War.'

"Only a private;—and who will care
When I may pass away,—
Or how, or why I perish, or where
I mix with the common clay?
They will fill my empty place again
With another as bold and brave;
And they'll blot me out ere the Autumn rain
Has freshened my nameless grave.

"Only a private;—it matters not
That I did my duty well,
That all through a score of battles I fought,
And then, like a soldier, fell:
The country I died for—never will heed
My unrequited claim;
And history cannot record the deed,
For she never has heard my name.

"Only a private;—and yet I know,
When I heard the rallying call,
I was one of the very first to go,
And . . . . I'm one of the many who fall:

But, as here I lie, it is sweet to feel,
That my honor's without a stain—
That I only fought for my Country's weal,
And not for glory or gain.

"Only a private;—yet He who reads
Through the guises of the heart,
Looks not at the splendor of the deeds,
But the way we do our part;
And when He shall take us by the hand,
And our small service own,
There'll a glorious band of privates stand
As victors around the throne!"

The breath of the morning is heavy and chill,
And gloomily lower the mists on the hill;
The winds through the beeches are shivering low,
With a plaintive and sad *miserere* of woe:
A quiet is over the Cottage—a dread
Clouds the children's sweet faces—Macpherson is dead!

A BIT OF AUTUMN COLOR

From 'Colonial Ballads, Sonnets, and Other Verse.' Copyright, 1887, Houghton, Mifflin and Company, and used here by permission of the publishers.

Centred upon a sloping crest, I gazed
As one enchanted. The horizon's ring
Of billowy mountains, flushed with sunsetting,
Islanded me about, and held me mazed,
With beauty saturate. Never color blazed
On any mortal palette that could fling
Such golden glamour over everything
As flashed from autumn's prism, till all was hazed
With opal, amber, sapphire, amethyst,
That shimmered, mingled, dusked to steely blue.
Raptured I mused: Salvator never drew
Its faintest semblance; Turner's pencil missed
Such culmination: yet we count them true
Masters. Behold what God's one touch can do!

LADY YEARDLEY'S GUEST

From 'Colonial Ballads, Sonnets, and Other Verse.'

'T'was a Saturday night, mid-winter,
And the snow with its sheeted pall
Had covered the stubbled clearings
That girdled the rude-built "Hall."
But high in the deep-mouthed chimney,
'Mid laughter and shout and din,
The children were piling yule-logs
To welcome the Christmas in.

"Ah, so! We'll be glad to-morrow,"
The mother half-musing said,
As she looked at the eager workers,
And laid on a sunny head
A touch as of benediction—
"For Heaven is just as near
The father at far Patuxent
As if he were with us here.

"So choose ye the pine and holly,
And shake from their boughs the snow;
We'll garland the rough-hewn rafters
As they garlanded long ago—
Or ever Sir George went sailing
Away o'er the wild sea-foam—
In my beautiful English Sussex,
The happy old walls at home."

She sighed. As she paused, a whisper
Set quickly all eyes astrain:
"*See! See!*"—and the boy's hand pointed—
"*There's a face at the window pane!*"
One instant a ghastly terror
Shot sudden her features o'er;
The next, and she rose unblenching,
And opened the fast-barred door.

"Who be ye that seek admission?
Who cometh for food and rest?
This night is a night above others
To shelter a straying guest."
Deep out of the snowy silence
A guttural answer broke:
"I come from the great Three Rivers,
I am chief of the Roanoke."

Straight in through the frightened children
Unshrinking, the red man strode,
And loosed on the blazing hearth-stone,
From his shoulder, a light-borne load;
And out of the pile of deer-skins,
With look as serene and mild
As if it had been in his cradle,
Stepped softly a four-year child.

As he chafed at the fire his fingers,
Close pressed to the brawny knee,
The gaze that the silent savage
Bent on him was strange to see;
And then, with a voice whose yearning
The father could scarcely stem,
He said, to the children pointing,
"I want him to be like *them!*

"They weep for the boy in the wigwam:
I bring him, a moon of days,
To learn of the speaking paper;
To hear of the wiser ways
Of the people beyond the water;
To break with the plough the sod;
To be kind to papoose and woman;
To pray to the white man's God."

"I give thee my hand!" And the lady
Pressed forward with sudden cheer;
"Thou shalt eat of my English pudding,
And drink of my Christmas beer.

My darlings, this night, remember
All strangers are kith and kin—
This night when the dear Lord's Mother
Could find no room at the inn!"

* * * * * *

Next morn from the colony belfry
Pealed gayly the Sunday chime,
And merrily forth the people
Flocked, keeping the Christmas time;
And the lady, with bright-eyed children
Behind her, their lips a-smile,
And the chief in his skins and wampum,
Came walking the narrow aisle.

Forthwith from the congregation
Broke fiercely a sullen cry;
"Out! Out! with the crafty red-skin!
Have at him! A spy! A spy!"
And quickly from belts leaped daggers,
And swords from their sheaths flashed bare,
And men from their seats defiant
Sprang, ready to slay him there.

But facing the crowd with courage
As calm as a knight of yore,
Stepped bravely the fair-browed woman
The thrust of the steel before;
And spake with a queenly gesture,
Her hand on the chief's brown breast:
"Ye dare not impeach my honor!
Ye dare not insult my guest!"

They dropped, at her word, their weapons,
Half-shamed as the lady smiled,
And told them the red man's story,
And showed them the red man's child;
And pledged them her broad plantations,
That never would such betray
The trust that a Christian woman
Had shown on a Christmas-Day!

AT LAST

From 'Colonial Ballads, Sonnets, and Other Verse.' Written by request for the Ovation held in honor of Edgar Allan Poe, in the New York Academy of Music.

If he were here to-night—the strange rare poet,
Whose sphinx-like face no jestings could beguile—
To meet the award at last, and feel and know it
Securely his—how grand would be his smile!

How would the waves of wordless grief, that over
His haughty soul had swept through surging years,
Sink to a mystic calm, till he would cover
His proud pale face to hide the happy tears!

Who knows the secret of that strange existence—
That world within a world—how far, how near;
Like thought for closeness, like a star for distance—
Who knows?— The conscious essence may be here.

If from its viewless bounds the soul has power
To free itself for some ethereal flight,
How strange to think the compensating hour
For all the tragic past, may be to-night!

To feel that, where the galling scoffs and curses
Of Fate fell heaviest on his blasted track,
There, Fame herself the spite of Fate reverses—
Might almost win the restless spirit back.

Though the stern Tuscan, exiled, desolated,
Lies mid Ravenna's marshes far away,
At Santa Croce, still his stone is fêted,
And Florence piles her violets there to-day!

Though broken-hearted the sad singer perished,
With woe outworn, amid the convent's gloom,
Yet how pathetic are the memories cherished,
When Rome keeps Tasso's birthday at his tomb!

So, though our poet sank beneath life's burden,
Benumbed and reckless through the crush of fate;
And though, as comes so oft, the yearned-for guerdon,
No longer yearned for, since it comes too late:

He is avenged to-night! No blur is shrouding
The flame his genius feeds: the wise, and brave,
And good, and young, and beautiful are crowding
Around, to scatter heart's-ease o'er his grave!

And his Virginia, like a tender mother
Who breathes above her errant boy no blame,
Stoops now to kiss his pallid lips, and smother
In pride her sorrow, as she names his name.

—Could he have only seen in vatic vision
The gorgeous pageant present to our eyes,
His soul had known one glimpse of joy elysian!
—Can we call no man happy till he dies?

GONE FORWARD*

From 'Cartoons,' 1875. Copyright, Little, Brown and Company, and used here by permission of the publishers.

I

Yes, "Let the tent be struck:" Victorious morning
Through every crevice flashes in a day
Magnificent beyond all earth's adorning:
The night is over; wherefore should he stay?
And wherefore should our voices choke to say,
"The General has gone forward"?

II

Life's foughten field not once beheld surrender;
But with superb endurance, present, past,
Our pure Commander, lofty, simple, tender,
Through good, through ill, held his high purpose fast,
Wearing his armor spotless,—till at last,
Death gave the final, "*Forward.*"

*The poem is founded on one of the last sentences spoken by General Lee.

III

All hearts grew sudden palsied: Yet what said he
Thus summoned?—"*Let the tent be struck!*"—For when
Did call of duty fail to find him ready
Nobly to do his work in sight of men,
For God's and for his country's sake—and then,
To watch, wait, or go forward?

IV

We will not weep—we dare not! Such a story
As his large life writes on the century's years,
Should crowd our bosoms with a flush of glory,
That manhood's type, supremest that appears
To-day, *he* shows the ages. Nay, no tears
Because he has gone forward!

V

Gone forward?—Whither?—Where the marshall'd legions,
Christ's well-worn soldiers, from their conflicts cease;—
Where Faith's true Red-Cross knights repose in regions
Thick-studded with the calm, white tents of peace—
Thither, right joyful to accept release,
The General has gone forward!

THE SHADE OF THE TREES*

From 'Cartoons.'

What are the thoughts that are stirring his breast?
What is the mystical vision he sees?
"*Let us pass over the river and rest*
Under the shade of the trees."

Has he grown sick of his toils and his tasks?
Sighs the worn spirit for respite or ease?
Is it a moment's cool halt that he asks
Under the shade of the trees?

*The poem is founded on the last words of "Stonewall" Jackson.

Is it the gurgle of waters whose flow
  Oft-time has come to him, borne on the breeze,
Memory listens to, lapsing so low,
  Under the shade of the trees?

Nay—though the rasp of the flesh was so sore,
  Faith, that had yearnings far keener than these,
Saw the soft sheen of the Thitherward Shore,
  Under the shade of the trees;—

Caught the high psalms of ecstatic delight—
  Heard the harps harping, like soundings of seas—
Watched earth's assoiled ones walking in white
  Under the shade of the trees.

O, was it strange he should pine for release,
  Touched to the soul with such transports as these—
He who so needed the balsam of peace,
  Under the shade of the trees?

Yea, it was noblest for *him*—it was best,
  (Questioning naught of our Father's decrees),
There to pass over the river and rest
  Under the shade of the trees!*

THE HERO OF THE COMMUNE

From 'Cartoons.'

"Garçon! You—*you*
    Snared along with this cursèd crew?
(Only a child, and yet so bold,
Scarcely as much as ten years old!)
    Do you hear? Do you know?
Why the gendarmes put you there, in the row,
You, with those Commune wretches tall,
    With your face to the wall?"

*Mrs. Preston wrote a poem entitled "Jackson's Grave," and it is needless to say that probably no other event of the war inspired so many poets as the death of this great soldier.

"*Know?* To be sure I know! why not?
We're here to be shot;
And there, by the pillar, 's the very spot,
Fighting for France, my father fell:
Ah, well!
That's just the way *I* would choose to fall,
With my back to the wall!"

("Sacré! Fair, open fight, I say,
Is something right gallant in its way,
And fine for warming the blood; but who
Wants wolfish work like this to do?
Bah! 'tis a butcher's business!) *How?*
(The boy is beckoning to me now:
I knew that his poor child's heart would fail,
. . . . . Yet his cheek's not pale:)
Quick! say your say, for don't you see,
When the Church-clock yonder tolls out *Three,*
You're all to be shot?
. . . *What?*
'Excuse you one moment'? O, ho, ho!
Do you think to fool a gendarme so?"

"But, sir, here's a watch that a friend, one day
(My father's friend), just over the way,
Lent me; and if you'll let me free,
—It still lacks seven minutes of *Three*—
I'll come, on the word of a soldier's son,
Straight back into line, when my errand's done."

"Ha, ha! No doubt of it! Off! Begone!
(Now, good Saint Denis, speed him on!
The work will be easier since *he's* saved;
For I hardly see how I could have braved
The ardor of that innocent eye,
As he stood and heard,
While I gave the word,
Dooming him like a dog to die.")

"In time! Well, thanks, that my desire
Was granted; and now, I am ready:—Fire!
One word!—that's all!
—You'll let me turn my *back* to the wall?"
"Parbleu! Come out of the line, I say,
Come out! (who said that his name was *Ney?*)
Ha! France will hear of him yet one day!"

THROUGH THE PASS

Matthew F. Maury's Last Wish. From 'Cartoons.'

I

"Home—bear me home, at last," he said,
"And lay me where my dead are lying,
But not while skies are overspread,
And mournful wintry winds are sighing.

II

"Wait till the royal march of Spring
Carpets your mountain fastness over—
Till chattering birds are on the wing,
And buzzing bees are in the clover.

III

"Wait till the laurel bursts its buds,
And creeping ivy flings its graces
About the lichen'd rocks, and floods
Of sunshine fill the shady places.

IV

"Then, when the sky, the air, the grass,
Sweet Nature all, is glad and tender,
Then bear me through 'The Goshen Pass'
Amid its flush of May-day splendor."

V

—So *will* we bear him! Human heart
To the warm Earth's drew never nearer,
And never stooped she to impart
Lessons to one who held them dearer.

VI

Stars lit new pages for him: seas
  Revealed the depths their waves were screening;
The ebbs gave up their masteries,
  The tidal flows confessed their meaning.

VII

Of ocean-paths, the tangled clew
  He taught the nations to unravel;
And mapped the track where safely through
  The lightning-footed thought might travel.

VIII

And yet, unflattered by the store
  Of these supremer revelations,
Who bowed more reverently before
  The lowliest of earth's fair creations?

IX

What sage of all the sages past
  Ambered in Plutarch's limpid story,
Upon the age he served, has cast
  A radiance touched with worthier glory?

X

His noble living for the ends
  God set him—(duty underlying
Each thought, word, action)—naught transcends
  In lustre, save his nobler dying.

XI

—Do homage, sky, and air, and grass,
  All things he cherished, sweet and tender,
As through our gorgeous mountain-pass
  We bear him in the May-day splendor!

A LESSON FROM THE STREET

From 'Chimes for Church-Children.' Copyright, Presbyterian Board of Publication, and used here by permission of the publishers.

I pressed along the crowded street
  One winter day,
Scarce conscious of the hurrying feet
  That thronged the way,
When through the jarring, jangling noise,
  And rush and glare,
Fell silvery soft a child's sweet voice:
  "Why need I care?"

I turned to see whence came the words:
  There met my eyes
A glance as clear as any bird's
  That skims the skies.
"Ah, ruby lips," I questioned, "may
  A stranger dare
Ask wherefore to yourself you say,
  'Why need I care'?"

A little hand in mine she slid
  With trustful gaze,
Threading as slowly as I did
  The peopled ways:
"See! in the street my roses lie
  All scattered there;
No wonder you should ask me why
  I need not care.

"A jostling street-boy rudely shook
  Them far and wide;
And when with angry word and look
  I turned to chide,
I thought, 'Why, we have flowers and flowers
  At home as rare,'
For father says all his are ours;
  So, *need* I care?"

"Ah, child," I mused as I caressed
Her hand in mine,
"To one through wrack and loss oppressed,
Without design
You teach a lesson: from my grasp
Hard fortunes tear
Life's roses held with careless clasp,
But need I care?

"The rush of circumstance sweeps by,
And wrenches so
My treasures from my hand, and I
Will let them go,
Remembering that a home above
Awaits me, where
I'll find a Father's boundless love;
So, need *I care?*"

TO THE UTTERMOST

(A Sonnet)

From 'Cartoons.'

Of his high attributes, beyond the most,
I thank my God for that Omniscient Eye
Beneath whose blaze no secret thing can lie,
In His infinitude of being, lost.
I bless my God, I am not wrecked and tossed
Upon a sea of doubt, with power to fly
And hide, somewhither in immensity,
One single sin, out of His reckoning crossed.
For even there—self-conscious of its thrall,
Might spring the terror;—"If He knew the whole,
And tracked this skulking guilt out to its goal,
He could not pardon!"—But, or great, or small,
He knows the inmost foldings of my soul,
And, knowing utterly, forgives me all!

A GRAVE IN HOLLYWOOD CEMETERY, RICHMOND

(J. R. T.)

I read the marble-lettered name,
And half in bitterness I said:
"As Dante from Ravenna came,
Our poet came from exile—dead."
And yet, had it been asked of him
Where he would rather lay his head,
This spot he would have chosen. Dim
The city's hum drifts o'er his grave,
And green above the hollies wave
Their jagged leaves, as when a boy,
On blissful summer afternoons,
He came to sing the birds his runes,
And tell the river of his joy.

Who dreams that in his wanderings wide,
By stern misfortune tossed and driven,
His soul's electric strands were riven
From home and country? Let betide
What might, what would, his boast his pride,
Was in his stricken mother-land,
That could but bless and bid him go,
Because no crust was in her hand
To stay her children's need. We know
The mystic cable sank too deep
For surface storm or stress to strain,
Or from his answering heart to keep
The spark from flashing back again!
Think of the thousand mellow rhymes
The pure idyllic passion-flowers,
Wherewith, in far gone, happier times,
He garlanded this South of ours.
Provençal-like, he wandered long,
And sang at many a stranger's board
Yet 'twas Virginia's name that poured
The tenderest pathos through his song.

We owe the poet praise and tears,
  Whose ringing ballad sends the brave,
Bold Stuart riding down the years—
  What have we given him? Just a grave!

THERE'LL COME A DAY

There'll come a day when the supremest splendor
  Of earth, or sky, or sea,
Whate'er their miracles, sublime or tender,
  Will wake no joy in me.

There'll come a day when all the aspiration,
  Now with such fervor fraught
As lifts to heights of breathless exaltation,
  Will seem a thing of naught.

There'll come a day when riches, honor, glory,
  Music and song and art,
Will look like puppets in a worn-out story,
  Where each has played his part.

There'll come a day when human love, the sweetest
  Gift that includes the whole
Of God's grand giving—sovereignest, completest—
  Shall fail to fill my soul.

There'll come a day—I shall not care how passes
  The cloud across my sight,
If only lark-like, from earth's nested grasses,
  I spring to meet its light.

WILLIAM CAMPBELL PRESTON

[1794—1860]

FRANCIS PRESTON VENABLE

WILLIAM CAMPBELL PRESTON was born in Philadelphia, December 27, 1794. His father was at that time a member of Congress from Virginia. His paternal grandfather was Lieutenant-commandant of Augusta County, Virginia, during the Revolution, and of the militia of western Virginia from the Blue Ridge to the Ohio. His mother was Sarah Buchanan Campbell, daughter of General William Campbell, of King's Mountain fame, and a niece of Patrick Henry. His father, General Francis Preston, was in command of a regiment of Virginia troops during the War of 1812, and after that war was for several years in command of the Virginia militia. General Preston was regarded as one of the ablest speakers of the Virginia delegation and was one of its leaders during his two terms in Congress. His ability and attractive qualities won for him the lasting friendship of such men as Jefferson, Madison, Monroe, and others. He possessed large estates in Botetourt and Washington counties, Virginia, his wife also inheriting large properties.

The Prestons were all large men, over six feet in height, of fine presence, great courtesy, and pleasing address. They had many connections and friends, so that young William grew up in the midst of refined surroundings, tenderly reared by his gracious and beautiful mother. His early education was at the hands of tutors who lived with the family. His first teacher was an Irishman named Byrnes, who for forty-four years taught successive generations of the children of the family the rudiments of reading and ciphering. He was followed by a strange genius, of whose past little was known except that he had been educated for the ministry, but had become an actor, and later a soldier in the army of General Wayne.

The association with this teacher was close and intimate and must have had great influence in molding the tastes and developing the mind of young Preston, of whose training he took entire charge. They rode, walked, and sat together, and slept in the same room. They read together most of the Latin classics and many of the English, his father having a fine library. And so, at fourteen years of age, he was prepared to enter college. He first entered Washington College, but remained there only a few months, as, on account of some slight hemorrhage, his parents decided to send him for a while

to the far South. Mounted on horseback, and with a negro servant to wait on and care for him, this mere boy began his long and lonely ride. In passing through Columbia, South Carolina, he met several young men who had come up from Charleston to enter South Carolina College, and was persuaded to end his journey and enter college with them. This he did, entering as a sophomore in December, 1809, a few days under fifteen years of age. He was graduated with distinction in 1812. While in college he won much reputation as a speaker, the college life and training of the day offering little other opportunity for attaining distinction. His graduating speech on "The Life and Character of Jefferson" made a fine impression and promised much for the future.

After leaving college, he visited Richmond, making the acquaintance of some of the leading public men of the day. Going then to Washington, he became for a time an inmate of the home of President Madison. Becoming wearied of the social life of the capital, he withdrew after the winter to his home in Virginia, entering the law office of William Wirt in Richmond the following winter. The time seems to have been spent to little profit. The young set with which Preston was thrown was fast and not much to his liking, and his mere presence in a famous and busy lawyer's office did not mean much systematic study.

According to the educational system of the day for those who could afford it, the next step was travel, and for Preston this meant first a trip which would give him a better knowledge of his own country, and then travel in Europe. The mode of travel in those days afforded an excellent opportunity for becoming well acquainted with the country. Provided with a couple of horses and a servant, he rode some four thousand miles through Tennessee, Kentucky, Indiana, Illinois, and Missouri. As he writes of it himself: "The ride was solitary, through forests and prairies. It gave occasion for much musing and reveries—not unimportant circumstances in the education of a youth—while the body was hardened by the exercise and exposure, and the mind habituated to self-dependence." This was the West of that time (1816), thinly settled and with much of the social characteristics of pioneer days. St. Louis he found overflowing with the emigrants then flocking toward the ever-receding frontier.

As a guest of Governor Clark at St. Louis, he had ample opportunity not only to study the local conditions, but to observe the Indians who came to consult with the Governor, whose jurisdiction covered many tribes and extended to the Rocky Mountains. The Indians were encamped about the town in every direction, but were well-behaved, as they held the "White Chief" in great awe. During

Preston's stay a council of pacification was held, which impressed the traveler so greatly that his account of it written some forty years afterward was full to the minutest details. After a stay of several weeks in St. Louis, he began his return journey, passing through Vincennes, Cincinnati, and Chillicothe, and reached home after an absence of five months.

When the spring of 1817 came, letters of introduction were secured from Jefferson, Monroe, and others, and after a short stay in New York young Preston sailed for England. In Liverpool he made the acquaintance of Washington Irving, who had met with serious financial reverses and now found it necessary to turn to literature for a profession and means of support. With Irving he journed through Wales and Scotland and they formed a strong and lasting friendship. Irving gave him a note of introduction to Thomas Campbell, whom he visited in London, and with whom he had a most pleasant intercourse. Through Campbell, he made the acquaintance of Sir Walter Scott—an acquaintance which he regarded as constituting an era in his life.

In France he spent much time in a close study of Talma, the most noted actor then upon the French stage. This was a part of his preparation in voice and action for his purposed career as a lawyer. His study of the languages, countries, and peoples, in France, Switzerland, and Italy, was also a part of this training. After a number of months spent upon the Continent, he returned to Edinburgh and attended in the University there courses of lectures upon law. In 1819 he came back to the United States, and was admitted to the Bar in Virginia in 1820. But as both he and his wife, formerly Miss Maria Coalter, preferred living in Columbia, South Carolina, where they had first met, he moved there in 1822 for the practice of his profession. In the fall of that year he was appointed a trustee of the college from which he had been graduated only ten years before, and for many years he served as president of this board. He formed a partnership with David J. McCord, and was at once introduced into a large practice, in which he bore himself with great distinction. He was employed in several cases of contested elections before the State Legislature. He made an able plea, which won many encomiums, in the case of Asa Deloisier, and in the case of Geddes and Crafts before the Senate, he bore himself with spirit and ability. In 1828 he defended Judge James in his impeachment trial before the Senate with touching appeal and rare eloquence. One of the judges of the Court of Appeals declared his plea to be "unrivaled in argument and eloquence." As a criminal lawyer his pleadings and defences were spoken of as unsurpassed for tact and eloquence.

In 1828 he was elected to the State Legislature, and in the summer of that year, as one of the political leaders of the State, he induced John C. Calhoun to prepare for the meeting of the Legislature in the autumn the paper known as the South Carolina Exposition of 1828. This, a part of the great Nullification struggle, in which Preston was prominent, did much to shape the policy of the State.

In the following year he lost his wife. His second wife, Miss Penelope Davis of Columbia, he married in 1832, three years later.

He was returned to the Legislature in 1830 and again in 1832. Sagacious in counsel, popular and eloquent as a speaker, he took the highest rank in this body. He was ready in debate, acute, quick, adaptable, with a wonderful command of language, wielding a great power and attracting a large measure of admiration.

In 1836 he was elected to the Senate of the United States. There, too, his talents were recognized and he established an enviable reputation as an orator and statesman. John C. Calhoun was his fellow-Senator from South Carolina. The cordial relations at first existing between the two became strained because of Senator Preston's opposition to the policies of the Van Buren Administration. Furthermore, this opposition was not approved by the majority of his constituents; but their efforts at controlling his action failed. When the end of his term was reached, in 1842, he felt that the best and most honorable course would be for him to withdraw. Resigning any further political aspirations, he returned to his law practice. On November 28, 1845, he was elected* president of South Carolina College.

Mr. Preston's health was not strong, but he entered upon the discharge of his duties with zeal. In addition to administrative duties, he gave instruction in literature. One of his colleagues writes: "As with glowing enthusiasm and in clear, perspicuous, and picturesque language he called the attention of the students to the mighty men who by their works have ennobled literature, there were few, if any, whose admiration was not enkindled, and whose souls did not catch a portion of his inspiration." As to his administration, the same writer says: "His administration will be regarded as one of the most brilliant in the history of the college. He has added new luster to the bright roll of its presidents, and enjoying a National reputation before his elevation, none have contributed more to spread the fame of the institution. . . . Rarely has there been in the college as elevated a tone as existed at this period."

In 1846 Harvard conferred upon him the honorary degree of Doctor of Laws.

*See his "Inaugural Address."

Repeated attacks of sickness interfered with and interrupted Mr Preston's administration. The labors connected with the office were arduous, the anxieties incessant, and the responsibility too great for one in feeble health; so that he felt it unwise for him to carry the burden longer, and in the fall of 1851 resigned the presidency.

So far as health and strength permitted, he resumed the practice of his profession. Beyond serving as trustee of the college for several years (from 1851 to 1857), he could take but little part in public affairs. His memory remained clear and strong to the end, and he began to write an autobiography, giving a graphic account of the stirring times in which he had lived and the scenes through which he had passed. Unfortunately, his strength did not hold out to the completion of this task. The unfinished manuscript is held by the friends for whose interest the account was begun. He died May 22, 1860.

He was a man of brilliant gifts and showed marked ability in whatever capacity he was called upon for service. A finished speaker, his addresses were marked by more than mere grace of oratory or rhetorical charm. There was a nice perception of the strong points of the question, subtle distinction, fertility of invention and illustration, and a mind enriched by an intimate knowledge of the world's best literature.

His conversational powers, charm of anecdote, variety, grace, vivacity, elegance, and felicity of expression were famed, and gave rise to the expression *Prestonian* throughout South Carolina. As a writer he was clear and interesting, though somewhat given to the stately phrasing and the classic allusions of the old school.

Francis P. Venable

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Literary Society in Columbia. 1825

Eulogy on Hugh Swinton Legaré.

Inaugural Address as President of South Carolina College. 1846.

Collection and Safekeeping of the Public Revenue.

Autobiography. (In manuscript. Broken off by ill health and death in 1860.)

Congressional Globe for 1836-1842.

History of South Carolina College. Second edition. M. La Borde. Chapters XI and XII.

Cyclopædia of Eminent and Representative Men of the Carolinas. Vol. I, p. 249.

Appleton's Cyclopædia of American Biography. Vol. V, p. 114.

Southern Literature. By Louise Manly. P. 199.

Celebrities I Have Seen. By Mrs. Martin. *New Monthly Magazine,* September, 1871.

Life and Letters of F. Lieber. Edited by T. S. Perry. Pp. 108, 237, 267, 282.

The Green Bag. 1899. Pp. 11, 393, with photographic reproductions.

Life of James Henry Thornwell, D.D. By B. M. Palmer. 1875. Pp. 270, 271, 280, 282, 294, 333, 353, 359, 364, 367, 391.

THE COUNCIL OF PACIFICATION AT ST. LOUIS

From 'Autobiography.'

Opposite St. Louis I crossed the river, standing on the platform erected across two huge canoes of black walnut, which were impelled by paddles like those on a steamboat and were worked by hand. Steam was not then (1816) on the Mississippi. St. Louis was literally overflowing with emigrants, a portion of the flood that rolled to the west in 1816. The small tavern was stuffed so full that the nominal guests slept in the piazzas and in hay lofts. Many went out of an evening to camp in the neighboring prairie. Meeting a gentleman in the door of the tavern, he was kind enough to say to me "I can give you a corner in the room of my printing press, until you can look about for better accommodation." From this hospitable though not comfortable re-

treat, I was next day extricated by Governor Clark (Lewis and Clark) an old friend of my family. The kind gentleman who had given me a roof to sleep under was Mr. Charless, the publisher of a newspaper.

In the elegant quarters of Governor Clark I was domesticated during my sojourn and found myself most delightfully situated. Besides all the appliances of comfort and elegance I enjoyed the society of that most benevolent and intelligent gentleman, a man of primitive and heroic character, made up of firmness and tenderness, perfectly familiar with everything belonging to the Western country, having been for years an Indian fighter, then associated in the expedition to the mouth of the Columbia, and now for some time governor of the territory of Missouri. His military and civil functions were well and wisely administered. His wide jurisdiction over the Indians, extending to the Rocky Mountains over a vast and numerous population, was efficiently and graciously exercised.

While I was of his household I associated daily with Indian chiefs and others who came on business and, besides, had the opportunity of being present at a grand Indian council held to establish a pacification and make a treaty with a vast congregation of Indian tribes—Mandoes, Miamis, Osage, Sacs, and Foxes, with fragmentary delegations from all quarters. They were encamped round about town in every direction—occasionally, though rarely, drunk in the streets—for they held Governor Clark, whom they called the Old White Chief, in great awe. The Governor was of remarkably fair complexion, with grey locks and light blue eyes—hence the epithet White Chief. On the day of the solemn diplomatic session, the Governor's huge council chamber was adorned with a profuse and almost gorgeous display of ornamented and painted buffalo robes, numerous strings of wampum, every variety of work of porcupine quills, skins, horns, claws and bird skins, numerous and large calumets, arms of all sorts, saddles, bridles, spears, powder horns, plumes, red blankets and flags. In the centre of the hall was a large, long table, at one end of which sat the Governor with a sword lying before him and a large pipe in his hand. He wore the military hat and regimentals of the army. Occasionally a chief came

in and had a little conversation through the interpreter, with the Governor and then retired with a slow and solemn step. By and by came in a somewhat miscellaneous troop, a sort of rabble, who formed around the table. The Governor lit a large pipe and taking a puff or two handed it to some of the older men. Pipes were lighted for the rest and they were invited to smoke. This was a short ceremony and they were dismissed with a few kind words and although mixed with warnings, seemed to be satisfactory. At length there was a loud, long roll of the drum and an agent marshalled in the delegation of the Sacs and Foxes. This consisted of eight chiefs at the head of which was a chief leading the son of the late king, a youth sixteen years old. His uncle was regent and guardian to the boy. He and the boy took their places at the end of the table, opposite the Governor, and the other chiefs seated themselves quietly on either side of the table according to no rule of precedence that I could perceive. As they came in the Governor uttered no word nor did he make any salutation. Regarding them with a fixed and stern countenance, he half unsheathed the sword and said, "Well, what have you to say?" There was a sort of gruff groan from each and the regent rising from his seat with his left hand on the shoulder of the prince, said, "I am not the king. He is dead. I have brought the boy here to our great father to show you our confidence. The boy is too young to speak in council. These braves and I will speak for him."

There was a general grunt of approbation and he sat down. There was a long pause, the interpreter whispered that they expected a pipe to be lit, but the Governor was imperturbable.

At length a chief past middle life, rolled up in a buffalo robe, with a long feather in his hair and his face very much painted, arose and said, "White Chief, we have come down to have a friendly talk with you. There is no more war in our hearts (a general grunt). We are poor and needy, cold and hungry. We want something to eat and ammunition to hunt game or we shall starve next winter. We will behave like dutiful children and never again molest our white brethren."

"Who are you, you rascal," exclaimed the Governor, interrupting him. "I think I know you." (a general groan).

"I am," said the speaker, "the first man who broke into the

settlement on the breaking out of the last war. I killed and scalped two women and a child. Here are the scalps," (taking them out of his pouch), "and then I came on down to Pond Fort where I burnt the store. Here is my warpath," said he, unfolding his robe, upon the interior of which was rudely painted in red a long road with bloody hands splotched along and at the end a picture of a conflagration. "I began the war," said he, "I fought through it and was the last to consent to peace, but I have consented and shall be the last to violate it. Small as I seem to you to be, I am a great warrior —a very great man—most as great as you are. I have taken a great many scalps, stolen a great many horses and bridles and saddles, but now we are beaten and I give up. I have come down to beg peace and flints and powder that I may hunt deer and buffalo. I have come down as softly as the dew falls at night, but if you refuse these presents, the next time I will come down like the Missouri in flood. Our horses have trod so gently that not a spark has been struck. If you refuse these presents, I will come down like a prairie on fire. I have ridden along barebacked on a little skew-bald pony with a hickory withe bridle, but the next time we will come like a herd of buffalo when they rush."

All this was delivered in an even tone of voice, pausing at each sentence for the interpreter and using much gesticulation. The chieftains from time to time had uttered their grunts of approbation. Several of the braves spoke in succession with much less animation, with simple professions of penitence for the past and deprecation of further resentment, but all urgently begging for presents of ammunition, food, and clothing. When they had finished they asked that a pipe might pass around.

The Governor said, "No, you shall not have a whiff. You are rogues, liars, and murderers (there was a general groan). Go home as you came. I have made a straight path for you and swept it clean," representing it on the table with the end of his sword. "Don't turn on either side to the right or to the left. If you do, my children shall whip you back. So, go!"

They returned with a sorrowful aspect. The Governor sent the interpreter to recall the vice-king and the boy prince.

They came in and the Governor handing them pipes, said to them, "You have done very wrong to bring that rascal with you on a peace visit. Take this rope to him and tell him that if I ever catch him in my country, I will hang him with such an one. Take these flints and this powder. Take your people home and when they get there I will have some things given to them. Instruct this youth to be well behaved and to keep friends with the white men and I will see that he is cared for."

The chief, who was closely enveloped up to the chin in a buffalo robe and wore no paint (being in mourning) or other ornaments except a peacock's feather in his hat, rose to deliver a farewell address to the Governor. I have rarely beheld a more graceful or elegant speaker. He acknowledged the misconduct of his tribe, but extenuated their conduct by setting forth the grievances and oppressions to which the white men had subjected it, and especially he complained that the whites had associated themselves with the rascally and cowardly Osages, "each one of which big Indians is such a coward that though he is as big as two men, one of my braves can whip three of them."

Growing excited in the progress of his speech, he threw the robe from his shoulders and it hung upon the leathern belt around his waist, leaving his whole bust naked except broad silver bands on each wrist and above each elbow making a fine contrast with his rich bronze skin. His gesture was free and graceful, dignified and deliberate, and when he spoke of the recent death of his brother and of the orphanage of the boy upon whose head he tenderly laid his hand, there was a pathos in the tone of his voice and his manner which one could have understood even without the very appropriate and pregnant words which the interpreter rendered at the end of each sentence. I remembered these speeches for many years and often repeated them to my friends.

In general, the gestures and personal carriage, especially the walk or running of the Indian is very ungraceful, but the whole bearing of this vice-king was beautiful and majestic.

There were several thousand Indians in and about St. Louis with great feasting and frolicking and such was the influence had by Governor Clark that there was no instance of violence, though a good deal of drunkenness.

THE MEETING WITH WASHINGTON IRVING

From 'Autobiography.'

When I got to the wharf to take the packet for Holyhead a piteous spectacle was presented. It was a jam of poor and sturdy peasants trying to get on board so as to go over to England to get work in the harvest. The owners of the packet had put the passage at half price and, at the instant that the bar was removed, enough to cover the whole deck rushed over. Many were not able to pay and when notice was given that such should not be landed at Holyhead many struggled back. As it was, the crowd aboard was prodigious and squalid. The pay passengers bought all the bread in the vessel for their use, and I was drained of my money so as to leave barely enough for me to get to Liverpool on the outside of the coach. When I got there I had but two and sixpence in my pocket. It rained heavily and incessantly the whole way and before we got to the city I was seized with a chill which shook me with great violence. The coachie perceiving it, proposed at one of his drinking places that I should have a glass of hot negus, which may have been a wrong prescription but it gave me presence of mind to tell him that when we got to the city I desired to be driven to the King's Arms and that I was an American. This was a lucky communication for me, for a fever coming on, I was somewhat delirious when we got to the King's Arms and lost all consciousness when I was carried into the house nor had I the slightest recollections for some days.

When my delirium passed off at length it was suddenly, and rising on my elbow in bed, I saw standing near me a rosy-cheeked, tidy looking girl. Looking at her a moment and endeavoring to recall my consciousness, I said, "Rosebud, who are you?"

She dropped a little curtsey and said in a startled voice, "I am not Rosebud, your honor. My name is Betty," and she left the room.

While I was trying to find out if I were not dreaming, the girl returned with a small gentleman in black who said to me in a kind tone, "The doctor said if the anodyne had its

expected effect, you would probably awake relieved, and I hope it is so."

"I do not know," said I. "I know nothing about it. Where am I?"

He said, "I am your countryman, Washington Irving," and gave me to understand that being ill and delirious at the King's Arms, they had sent for the United States Consul, who opening my trunk found my letters, one of which was an introduction to him from Mr. Jefferson. He took possession of me and my effects, employed a doctor and had me transferred to private lodgings where he with Mr. Irving and Mr. Brown, the banker, had been in attendance on me.

While we yet talked, Mr. Maury, the venerable old gentleman came in, having been sent for. He extended his arms over me and said, "Thank God, young man, I hear you are recovered, but I must continue to have jurisdiction over you until you grow strong. For the present you must lie still until the doctor gives permission."

A day or two brought the permission. The excellent old gentleman took me to his own home where I was under the care of his family and had daily visits from Mr. Irving and other countrymen. . . .

The tenderness and attention I received from Mr. Irving were consistent with his kind and generous nature. I found him a man of grave, indeed, melancholy aspect, of very staid manners, his kindness the offspring of principle and cultivated taste rather than emotion. There was an unfailing air of moderation about him, his dress was punctilious, his tone of talking soft and firm and, in general, over-subdued until a natural turn would occasionally run into humor and laughable delineation of character or events. During my convalescence, which was somewhat tedious, our acquaintance ripened into some degree of intimacy, and I freely disclosed to him my condition, my plans, and my purposes. He was eight years my senior, and had seen a good deal of society and had made for himself an honorable name. He was then eminently fit to exercise a large influence over me, especially in restraining the exuberance of my national and natural temper. Of that characteristic of our country he had a great dread and distaste. It was very foreign to his peculiar idiosyncrasy. He

called it whether, in conduct or conversation or in writing, "Americanizing," and in himself pushed his opposition to this tendency to the extent almost of affectation. He had a great deal of English reticence. With them it is as it was not with him—a surly and ill-mannered and unsympathizing manner. . . .

He was a good deal preoccupied, in the first instance, by the disastrous condition of his pecuniary circumstances. In regard to this I learned from him that he had set out from America with ample means to meet the expense of his European travel, which was projected for three years and as far as Italy and Greece. Upon getting to Liverpool, his brother and brother-in-law thought that the provision which he had made was hardly ample enough and to make it so, recommended that he should place his capital with them and become a partner in the then very prosperous firm, so that he would be entitled to draw for whatever he might desire. His name was therefore entered in the books as a partner and at the end of a few months the flourishing business was suddenly struck by a disastrous revolution which, amidst a general desolation, swept the Irvings into utter bankruptcy.

"I found myself," said Irving, "worth much less than nothing and it was a relief to me to hear that my mother had died just before the crash. It involved the destruction of some other arrangements that my heart had been set upon."

Another subject somewhat connected with this was how he should turn his literary efforts into some profitable direction. Hitherto, literature had been an amusement. He had written Salmagundi, Knickerbocker, and the sketch of the life of Thomas Campbell prefixed to an American collection of his works. The sketch of Campbell had brought him in communication with the poet and led to a pleasant correspondence in the course of which Campbell had intimated an opinion of Irving's success before the British public, if he would attempt some suitable work. Irving decided that literature was to be his profession and means of support. He had taken lessons in drawing and had a decided turn for the art. He sketched very well even in the estimation of Washington Allston, Leslie, and Stewart Newton, and it was perhaps some feeling of this kind that suggested to him the notion

of his Sketch Book. He turned it in his mind, spoke a good deal to me about it, and occasionally asked me when he gave an account of anything that touched him, how that would do in print. We went to the Atheneum together and on our return he jotted down what he saw or what had struck him.

He advised me not to go up to London to deliver my letters of introduction to the notables there until my European tour was in some measure finished and proposed that he, his brother Peter, and I should make a pedestrian excursion to Wales.

We made frequent visits to Halcon Castle at the village of Runcorn on the Mersey, some miles above Liverpool. It was the ruin of a grand old castle frowning over a large extent of green pasture through which the Duke of Bridgewater's canal could be seen for miles like a silver thread. Round the base of the rock clustered the little village of Runcorn. At a short distance was seen the residence of Sir James Brooke, I think his name was. Amidst the broken wall and on the rocks was constructed a nice little English Inn kept with most exquisite neatness. Adjoining was the parish church and close by, was an old library, founded some centuries ago by some member of the Cholmondely family. The librarian was the parish priest. The books were antiquated and not often disturbed. They were mostly in Latin in a small quarto shape, strongly bound; some of them had a small chain so that one had to stand or sit on a high stool to consult them. (I think in some of his works Irving has drawn a picture of the library.)

There was a bowling green in the front court of the castle and in a corner, the residence of the keeper, who held the house and a rood or two of land by the tenure of holding the stirrup of Sir Charles' saddle when he rode up to church. The occupant at that time was a tall, soldierly, grey-haired man with his sword, stirrups, and spear over his mantelpiece. He had been an English trooper in America in the War of the Revolution. His recollection of the country or of the events of the war were very vague, but when he had drunk a stoup of ale he would vaunt somewhat how he had chased the rebels and he himself got caught.

The massive ruins of the old castle reposing amidst ivy

upon the summit of a perpendicular rock with the wide prospect of champaign country around was as picturesque as could be conceived.

Of a Sunday the peasantry assembled at church to drink ale and to play at bowls. We could see from the battlement when Sir Charles with his groom mounted to ride to church, the castle bell sounding its loud tones down to the stately mansion. The old soldier would take his station near the stone clock, watching the approach of the lord of the manor and taking the bridle in one hand, held the stirrup with the other, at which moment the bell tolled. The whole scene was entirely feudal. Sometimes of a Sunday evening when the game of bowls became interesting the parson would join in it, and occasionally, it must be admitted he took more ale than became his cloth. But that liquor rarely prompted to those indecent exposures produced by our more alcoholic drinks. On the contrary, it increased the gravity of his demeanor and the effect of the liquor was perceptible only in his wide bowling. On such occasions the humor of Peter Irving became exquisite.

He, an older brother of Washington, was an old bachelor and an excentric humorist, of a very grave aspect and full of fun. In the composition of Salmagundi he had the poetical department, under the sobriquet of Peter Cockloft and he, at the time I spoke of, continued to write poetry. When the fortunes of the family, by the success of Washington, grew better, he was finally settled in a nice suite of rooms in Paris on the Rue Tivoli within an easy walk of the Tuileries garden, where he spent the residue of his days, living, as I have heard, to a good old age.

VISIT TO MADISON

From 'Autobiography.'

From Richmond my father sent me over to Washington City where were assembled the members of the war congress, Clay, Chives, Calhoun, Lowndes, Bibb and the rest. I was thrown a great deal amongst these men. Being a kinsman of Mrs. Madison and my father having been a colleague and intimate friend of Mr. Madison, I was domesticated by them in the President's house and there met with whatever was curious or conspicuous in the city. I forbear to note my impression of men and things as I saw them in the Madison household and at his table. I, of course, saw and heard a great deal. Mr. Madison treated me with kindness beyond his usual wont and Mrs. Madison with cordiality and even affection. She called me her own boy. She had been present at my birth and had nursed me in my cradle. The most affectionate relations existed between us all her life. I had in after life an opportunity to show my good will in some business she had before Congress when I was a member, and for some sessions I occupied her house on President Square after she had retired to the country.

The most brilliant man of society whom I met with during that first visit to Washington was General Wilkinson, a man of very elegant conversation and of manners tending to display and ostentation.

Mr. Madison's manners were somewhat cold and stiff, taciturn in general society and preoccupied. After dinner, however, at which he took a liberal portion of wine, he became free and even facetious, telling with great archness many anecdotes, sometimes of a character not infrequent in the conversation of those days, but now, in the improvement of manners, happily excluded from good society.

While the bottle circulated freely at Mr. Madison's table, susceptible to its influence, he talked a good deal. He inquired of his brother-in-law, Mr. Cutts, always a guest, the news of the day, the proceedings of Congress, the *on dits,* and seemed especially interested to know what Chief Justice Marshall said and did. When Coles, Cutts, Payne, Wood and

myself left the table Mr. Madison generally took a long nap in his chair, for I frequently found him there upon my return from an evening party whither it was my practice to go with Miss Mayo, afterwards Mrs. General Scott, and Miss Sallie Coles, afterwards Mrs. Stevenson, young ladies, like myself, members of the household. On our return Mr. Madison would rouse himself and go up into his study for many hours, and besides would be at his desk by candle light in the morning. Mrs. Madison would frequently remonstrate against these consuming labors but he declared that the pressure of the war business allowed him no alternative.

As to Mrs. Madison, the lofty and noble courtesy of her social life was not less inborn and engrafted in her nature than the undeviating good temper and amenity of her private life, admirable and exquisite in both departments, a fit wife for a President, adorning the high circle over which it was her lot to preside and sweetening and soothing his private hours. It would be ungrateful for me to mention her name without an expression of the love and admiration I have for her memory.

Mr. Madison's toils and vexations even at that early period of my life struck me as being hardly repaid by the dignity of his high office. He was exceedingly harassed and manifestly defective in that vigor of character demanded by the very embarrassing circumstances in which he was placed. He wanted a talent for affairs, was deficient in tact and persistence of purpose. The opposition he was experiencing from the Federalists was a source of daily annoyance and vexation to him, exciting him to petulance and querulousness. When his secretary, Coles, or Mr. Cutts would repeat to him a violent speech of some northern man, or a short sarcasm of Randolph, he would say pettishly, "The damned rascal, I wonder how he would conduct the government. It is easy for them to make speeches." Amidst the perplexity of public affairs he did not see clearly and therefore did not step firmly nor did he seem to have any fixed purpose nor have a line of thought to which he could not rally. His judgment was not clear about the war or the mode of conducting it, nor had he about him friends whose pertinacity and firmness might supply his own deficiencies in these qualities.

SARA AGNES PRYOR

[1830—1912]

MARIE GORDON PRYOR RICE

SARA AGNES, daughter of the Rev. Samuel Blair Rice and Lucinda Leftwich, was born in Halifax County, Virginia, on the nineteenth of February, 1830.

One of a numerous family, she was early adopted by a childless aunt, a woman of strong mind and devoted piety, and of an independence of thought and a large tolerance far in advance of her time. Mrs. Hargrave possessed also a discriminating love of literature, unto which it was her joy to lead her adopted daughter, and, in after years, that daughter's children. She was noted, moreover, for a mingled tenderness and firmness, for unfailing tact and sympathy, and for an almost passionate devotion to the children of her care. These traits gave her a rare skill in the management of youth. None who came under her influence fail to "rise up and call her blessed."

By her, Sara Rice was reared with all the advantages that such a woman would bestow upon an only daughter. Her rich natural gifts were early recognized and carefully developed. The sensitive child, suffering cruelly from the injustice of a teacher, was withdrawn from school after an experience of a few weeks, and was thereafter educated at home, reading with her aunt history, essays, poetry, the best fiction of the time, and having masters in French, philosophy, and music.

In these masters she was fortunate, for her home was in Charlottesville, where the University of Virginia set high standards. She was taught, not colloquial French, but the literature of the language, reading critically its classic writers.

Nor was she less fortunate in her musical training. The early forties were much given to "ineffectual tinklings" of "airs with variations," but Mrs. Hargrave, perceiving her child's musical aptitude, employed as her instructor a pupil of Liszt, who had been brought over by the Honorable William C. Rives to teach his own daughter, Amélie. The old German was in a chronic state of fleeing his creditors, and often arrived in Charlottesville toward midnight, having his pupils aroused from sleep to take their lessons. His eccentricities were patiently endured because of his ability. Under his teaching Sara Rice was early able to give "a large rendering of noble music." Her books show that between the ages of

twelve and sixteen she was playing the most difficult compositions of Henri Herz, Thalberg, Rossini, Henselt, Meyerbeer, Von Weber, Chopin, Beethoven, and Léopold de Meyer.

She naïvely writes at fourteen years of age that the young Professor Schele de Vere, who had heard all the best musicians of Europe, "applauded me with the clapping of hands, and Aunt Mary told him that was not the custom in this country"—"Aunt Mary" evidently fearful lest a little vanity should creep into her child's carefully guarded unconsciousness.

It is to be doubted whether the neighborhood of a college is nowadays an educational asset to the college belles; but when the students of the University of Virginia began to discover the beauty and fascination of the demure little girl still in brief skirts, learning was regarded the vocation of a student, games only his avocation. Hence an aspirant for a fair lady's favor discoursed poetry rather than athletics, and the shyly proffered gift to the girl of his heart—shyly, because girls were more withdrawn and boys less cocksure in those days—was more often a stodgy volume of some "British Poet" than a box of bonbons.

It will be seen, therefore, that Mrs. Pryor's writing is the fruition of a culture not unlike that received by the wonderful women of the French salons. She was never stretched upon the Procrustean bed of "Modern Methods"; she never "analyzed" great literature—she was simply steeped in it; her critical faculty was not so developed as to frighten away her originality; and she was educated quite as much by her environment as by her books. She never "came out," for she was never "in." Always she was one of her aunt's thoughtful circle, who held taboo "the four d's—dress, domestics, diseases, and disasters," their conversation electing to dwell upon the things of character and mind; and she never wanted the companionship of ambitious boys and girls, light-hearted and romantic, but with serious purpose underlying the buoyant spirit of youth.

At the age of eighteen she was married to Roger Atkinson Pryor, not two years her senior. Although she became the mother of seven children, and although her cares and vicissitudes have far exceeded those of the common lot of woman, her marriage to a man of distinguished ability and of exquisite literary taste has been the dominating factor of her education. Sharing all his interests, at every step encouraging and aiding his career, she was lifted by him and through him to a higher intellectual plane, with wider horizons than would otherwise have been possible to her.

When her marriage took her from the home of her girlhood, she began—again like the famous women of France—to lay, in a series of letters, the foundation of her future authorship. Wishing to

annihilate the separation between her and her mother of adoption, she took Mrs. Hargrave into every detail of her life whenever they were away from each other. Thus her pen acquired the ease and grace which have since characterized it.

In the 'Reminiscences of Peace and War' Mrs. Pryor has told the story of a stirring period of her life; but its most heroic chapter has not yet been written—perhaps it cannot be. It would cover the years following the great cataclysm, when she and General Pryor began the world again in a city of strangers, of whom so many had been enemies. There, although kindness incredible often met them, each hour was a silent hand-to-hand fight against hostile circumstance; yet neither soul bated "a jot of heart or hope," nor swerved from the high resolve held by both—of giving their children the education and the place in the world which they esteemed those children's birthright.

Hardly were the skies becoming brighter when the supreme tragedy of their lives befell them in the accidental drowning, in 1871, of their eldest son, Theodorick Bland, who was graduated from Princeton in 1870 with the first honors of his class, and the highest average since Aaron Burr. He had also won a mathematical scholarship, entitling him to a year of study at Cambridge, England, whence he had just returned, having also gained prizes there. His brilliant mind and beautiful character were the pride and delight of his parents. A glimpse of his rare promise is given in Mrs. Pryor's 'Reminiscences.' His Memoir was written at the request of his class by a Princeton classmate; and Mr. Robert Speer includes a sympathetic sketch of him in 'Young Men Who Overcame.' What the blow meant to his parents, and what the world lost in the blighting of such noble promise can never be known.

Despite the stress and storm of these Brooklyn years, Mrs. Pryor at once became active in the charities of the city. As early as 1869 she became one of the founders of the Home for Friendless Women and Children. Unable to equal her associates in financial aid to the Home, she gave a concert which earned for it four hundred dollars. A slender volume, dated 1883, gives a sketch of this charity from its inception, and is Mrs. Pryor's first book.

She is a charter member and founder of the Association for the Preservation of Virginia Antiquities, and of the Mary Washington Memorial Association. For the monument to Mary Washington she earned by her pen and other efforts three thousand dollars. For the relief of Jacksonville, at the time of the yellow fever, she raised, by individual effort, seven thousand dollars. For the Galveston orphans, after the flood, she managed the bazaar given by the New York *Journal*. It yielded fifty-one thousand dollars. At its close

Mrs. Pryor received an unprecedented ovation. The owner and managers of the *Journal* declared that to her was due the success of the undertaking.

She was the fifth woman to form the Society of the Daughters of the American Revolution, and she is a charter memebr of the Colonial Dames of America. Not many years ago she accumulated a large quantity of Southern needlework, with the expectation of a great Southern Exposition in New York. The scheme failing, she moved all the furniture from her lower floor, had a carpenter put up counters, and kept open store until she sold the work.

While her health permitted her to attend social functions she contributed to *The Home Journal* of New York a series of sparkling letters, with the events of society as a text, over the signature of "Alpha." For that paper, for *The Century, The Cosmopolitan,* and other magazines, she wrote occasional poems, essays, and stories. An attack of heart failure in 1893 made a cessation of physical activity imperative, although at such calls as that of the Galveston sufferers the mandate of the specialist was unhesitatingly set aside.

Always fascinated by Colonial history, her interest was accentuated by her work for the Mary Washington Monument, and since she has been compelled to spend her morning hours upon her couch, they have been largely devoted to a study of this period, resulting in her book, 'The Mother of Washington, and Her Times,' published in 1903, with this dedication:

"To the Hon. Roger A. Pryor, LL.D.
In whom lives all that was best in Old Virginia."

The accuracy and value of this book, as well as its interest, were at once recognized on both sides of the Atlantic, as attested by the almost unanimous voice of the critics, one of whom writes: "It is by far the most accurate and lifelike portrait of this noble Colonial Dame ever published." The Boston *Transcript* says of it: "Although written along strictly historical lines, it is more fascinating than any novel."

The year 1904 saw the publication of Mrs. Pryor's most popular book, the 'Reminiscences of Peace and War.' It was received with a pæan of praise. Miss Ellen Glasgow wrote to a friend: "Last night I sat up spellbound until I finished it, beginning with laughter and ending in real tears. . . . The tragedy of it I can understand, for it is not difficult to be tragic—but the delicious, piquant, never-failing humor—the humor that brightens tears, this, I confess, has taken me completely captive."

Dr. A. Becket writes in the *Literary Digest* a representative estimate of the book. He says:

"Whatever the feeling with which one takes up Mrs. Pryor's record of the Civil War, critical, aggressive or curious, he does not get very deep into it before he gratefully realizes that he is the sympathetic and delighted confidant of a charming woman. The personal note, so happily pervasive, is not detrimental to the historical value of the work. The author is adorably Southern and ever exquisitely feminine; but she ranges her facts and sets forth her views no less logically than fairly. It is her most distinguished merit that suffering has not made her bitter, nor misfortune crippled a beautiful nature. The gift of humor is resiliently hers, and the ready play of her blithe fancy, so far from impairing the dignity or impressiveness of her chronicle, lends to it a most gracious pathetic enforcement. Her style is limpid, sprightly and artistic. Mrs. Pryor was in touch with the prominent shapers of events."

While this book was going through the press the author's youngest son, Dr. William Rice Pryor, an eminent surgeon and writer, died in consequence of his unceasing and self-neglecting toil. In a few touching words his mother dedicates to him her 'Reminiscences.' In 1907 she published her thrilling narrative on the establishment of the Jamestown colony—a volume happily entitled 'The Birth of the Nation.' It met the same enthusiastic commendation for accuracy and interest with which 'The Mother of Washington' was received. And upon her seventy-ninth birthday she began a fourth book, of which the subject is yet unannounced.

The chief characteristics of her books are her vitalizing historic touch, and the grace and translucence of her style. Never requiring that facts shall become flexible, she knows better than most writers of historical fiction how to make "the dry bones live"; in truth, she is so penetrated with the spirit *temporis acti* that the actors have become her contemporaries. She goes below the ruff, the doublet, the quaint custom, the archaic speech, into the ageless modernness of the human soul; and she never fails to take her readers with her.

Her limpid, melodious style, with its note of distinction, its unerring instinct for *le mot juste*, its unstudied grace, seems to have written itself. It has charm, quality; and yet it is simply the atmosphere through which the thoughts shine.

Keen as is her interest in her writing, it is not of that Mrs. Pryor speaks when she talks of her life. She says: "The greatest work I ever did was for Jacksonville and Galveston—for fever and for flood." So saying she interprets her life, which has ever placed above even the golden word, the Golden Deed.

Marie Gordon Pryor Rice.

THE SEVEN DAYS' BATTLES

From 'Reminiscences of Peace and War.'

THE intense heat of July 26th has been noted in many of the diaries and records of the day. I remember it because I had feared its unfavorable effect upon my husband, not yet discharged by his physicians, and now lying weak and listless upon his bed at the Spotswood Hotel in Richmond.

I was reading aloud to him the news in the morning papers, fanning him the while, when a peremptory knock at the door sent me to my feet. An ominous-looking note was handed in to "Brigadier-General Pryor." Upon reading it, my husband slipped to the side of the bed, and reached out for his cavalry boots. The note ran: "Dear General, put yourself *at once* at the head of your brigade. In thirty-six hours it will all be over. Longstreet." Before I realized the tremendous import of the order, he was gone.

McClellan was almost at the gates of the city. The famous "seven days' fight" was about to begin.

Several of the officers of our brigade were in the hotel, and I ran out to find their wives and learn more news from them. On the stair I met Colonel Scott, and as he passed me, he exclaimed, "No time until I come back, Madam!" Turning, he paused, raised his hand, and said solemnly, "If I ever come back." The wife of Captain Poindexter came up at the moment. She was weeping, and wringing her hands. "Do you think," she said, "that we could drive out to camp and see them once more before they march?"

We hurried into the street, found a carriage, and urging our driver to his utmost speed, were soon in sight of the camp. All was hurry and confusion there. Ambulances were hitching up, troops forming in line, servants running hither and thither, horses standing to be saddled, light army wagons loading with various camp utensils.

Captain Whitner of the General's staff met me, and said, as he conducted me to my husband's tent: "The General will be so glad to see you, Madam! He is lying down to rest a few minutes before we move."

He opened his arms to me as I went in, but there were

no sad words. We spoke cheerily to each other, but, unable to control myself, I soon ran out to find John and see that he had provided brandy and cold tea, the latter a necessity lest good water should be unprocurable. Never have I seen such a number of flies! They blackened the land, corrupted the food, and tormented the nervous horses. When I returned, Mrs. Poindexter was standing outside the tent waiting for me. "I can see my husband only at the head of his company," she said. "Look! they are forming the line."

We stood aside as the brigade formed in marching order. The stern command, "Fall in! Fall in!" reached us from company after company stretching far down the road. My husband mounted his horse, and, drawing his sword, gave the order to advance. "Head of column to the right!" and with steady tramp they filed past us—past the only two women, of the many who loved them, who had known of their going and had come out to cheer and bless them.

We could not bear to remain a moment after they left. Finding our carriage, we were about to enter, when the driver pointed back with his whip. There, sure enough, rose the puffs of blue smoke from McClellan's guns—so near, so near!

We set our faces homeward, two stunned, tearless women, neither yet able to comfort the other. Presently the carriage stopped, and the driver, dismounting, came to the door.

"Lady," said he, "there's a man lying on the roadside. We just passed him. Maybe he's drunk, but he 'pears to me to look mighty sick."

Fanny Poindexter and I were out of the carriage in less than a minute, eagerly embracing an opportunity for action—the relief for tense feelings.

The man wore the uniform of a Confederate soldier. His eyes were closed. Was he asleep? We feared the worst when we perceived a thin thread of blood trickling slowly from a wound in his throat, and staining his shirt.

We knelt beside him, and Fanny gently pressed her handkerchief upon the wound, whereupon he opened his eyes, but was unable to speak. "What in the world are we to do?" said my friend. "We can't possibly leave him here!"

"I can tote him to the carriage," said the kind-hearted driver. "He ain' no heavy-weight, an' we can car' 'im to dat

hospital jus' at de aidge of town. Come now, sir! Don't you be feared. I'll tote you like a baby."

We were terrified lest he should die before we reached the hospital. To avoid jolting, we crawled at a snail's pace, and great was our relief when we drew up at the open door of the hospital and summoned a surgeon. He ordered out a stretcher and took our patient in, and we waited in a little reception room until we could learn the verdict after an examination of his injuries.

"It is well for him, poor fellow," said the surgeon upon returning to report to us, "that you found him when you did. His wound is not serious, but he was slowly bleeding to death! Which of you pressed that handkerchief to it?" I had to acknowledge that my friend had rendered this service. She was one of those nervous, teary little women who could rise to an occasion.

"He had probably been sent to the rear after he was wounded, and had tried to find General Pryor's camp," said the doctor. "He missed his way, and went farther than necessary. It has all turned out right. He is able now to write his name—'Ernstorff'—so you see he is doing well. When you pass this way, you must call and see him."

We never went that way again. Two years afterward I was accosted at a railway station by a handsome young officer who said he "had never forgotten, never would forget" me. He was Lieutenant Ernstorff!

All the afternoon the dreadful guns shook the earth and thrilled our souls with horror. I shut myself in my darkened room. At twilight I had a note from Governor Letcher, telling me a fierce battle was raging, and inviting me to come to the Governor's mansion. From the roof one might see the flash of musket and artillery.

No! I did not wish to see the infernal fires. I preferred to watch and wait alone in my room.

The city was strangely quiet. Everybody had gone out to the hills to witness the aurora of death to which we were later to become so accustomed. As it grew dark a servant entered to light my candles, but I forbade her. Did I not mean to go to supper? I would have coffee brought to me.

God only knew what news I might hear before morning. I must keep up my strength.

The night was hot and close. I sat at an open window, watching for couriers on the street. The firing ceased about nine o'clock. Surely now somebody would remember us and come to us.

As I leaned on the window-sill with my head on my arms, I saw two young men walking slowly down the deserted street. They paused at a closed door opposite me and sat down upon the low step. Presently they chanted a mournful strain in a minor key—like one of the occasional interludes of Chopin which reveal so much of dignity in sorrow. I was powerfully affected—as I always am by such music—and found myself weeping, not for my own changed life, not for my own sorrows, but for the dear city; the dear, doomed city, so loved, so loved!

A full moon was rising behind the trees in the Capitol Square. Soon the city would be flooded with light, and then! —would the invading host come in to desecrate and destroy? How dear the city had been to me always! I could remember when I was a very little child one just such night as this. The splendor, the immensity of the city had so oppressed me, coming, as I had come, from the quiet country, that I could not sleep. Hot and fevered and afraid, I had risen from my little bed beside my sleeping mother, and had stolen to the window to look out. Like to-night there was a solemn moon in the sky, like to-night an awful stillness in the city. Just below me a watchman had called out, "*All's well!*" Presently the cry was repeated at a distance—"All's well!" Fainter and fainter grew the echo until it became a whisper, far away in the distant streets. The watchmen were telling me, I thought, telling all the helpless little babies and children, all the sick people and old people, that God was taking care of them; that "All's well, All's well."

Ah! forever gone was the watchman, forever silent the cry. Never, never again could all be well with us in old Virginia. Never could we stifle the memories of this bitter hour. The watchman on the nation's tower might, some day, mark the triumphant return of this invading host, and declare,

"All's well,"—*our* hearts would never hear. Too much blood, too much death, too much anguish! Our tears would never be able to wash away the memory of it all.

And so the night wore on, and I waited and watched. Before dawn a hurried footstep brought a message from the battle-field to my door.

"The General, Madam, is safe and well. Colonel Scott has been killed. The General has placed a guard around his body, and he will be sent here early to-morrow. The General bids me say he will not return. The fight will be renewed, and will continue until the enemy is driven away."

My resolution was taken. My children were safe with their grandmother. I would write. I would ask that every particle of my household linen, except a change, should be rolled into bandages, all my fine linen be sent to me for compresses, and all forwarded as soon as possible.

I would enter the new hospital which had been improvised in Kent & Paine's warehouse, and would remain there as a nurse as long as the armies were fighting around Richmond.

But the courier was passing on his rounds with news for others. Presently Fanny Poindexter, in tears, knocked at my door.

"She is bearing it like a brave, Christian woman."

"She! Who? Tell me quick."

"Mrs. Scott. I had to tell her. She simply said, 'I shall see him once more.' The General wrote to her from the battle-field and told her how nobly her husband died—leading his men in the thick of the fight—and how he had helped to save the city."

Alas, that the city should have needed saving! What had Mrs. Scott and her children done? Why should they suffer? Who was to blame for it all?

Kent & Paine's warehouse was a large, airy building, which had, I understood, been offered by the proprietors for a hospital immediately after the battle of Seven Pines. McClellan's advance upon Richmond had heavily taxed the capacity of the hospitals already established.

When I reached the warehouse, early on the morning after the fight at Mechanicsville, I found cots in process of preparation. An aisle between the rows of narrow beds stretched to

the rear of the building. Broad stairs led to a story above, where other cots were being laid.

The volunteer matron was a beautiful Baltimore woman, Mrs. Wilson. When I was presented to her as a candidate for admission, her serene eyes rested doubtfully upon me for a moment. She hesitated. Finally she said: "The work is very exacting. There are so few of us that our nurses must do anything and everything—make beds, wait upon anybody, and often a half dozen at a time."

"I will engage to do all that," I declared, and she permitted me to go to a desk at the farther end of the room and enter my name.

As I passed by the rows of occupied cots, I saw a nurse kneeling beside one of them, holding a pan for a surgeon. The red stump of an amputated arm was held over it. The next thing I knew I was myself lying on a cot, and a spray of cold water was falling over my face. I had fainted. Opening my eyes, I found the matron standing beside me.

"You see it is as I thought. You are unfit for this work. One of the nurses will conduct you home."

The nurse's assistance was declined, however. I had given trouble enough for one day, and had only interrupted those who were really worth something.

A night's vigil had been poor preparation for hospital work. I resolved I would conquer my culpable weakness. It was all very well—these heroics in which I indulged, these paroxysms of patriotism, this adoration of the defenders of my fireside. The defender in the field had naught to hope from me in case he should be wounded in my defence.

I took myself well in hand. Why had I fainted? I thought it was because of the sickening, dead odor in the hospital, mingled with that of acids and disinfectants. Of course this would always be there—and worse, as wounded men filled the rooms. I provided myself with sal volatile and spirits of camphor—we wore pockets in our gowns in those days—and thus armed I presented myself again to Mrs. Wilson.

She was as kind as she was refined and intelligent. "I will give you a place near the door," she said, "and you must run out into the air at the first hint of faintness. You will get over it, see if you don't."

Ambulances began to come in and unload at the door. I soon had occupation enough, and a few drops of camphor on my handkerchief tided me over the worst. The wounded men crowded in and sat patiently waiting their turn. One fine little fellow of fifteen unrolled a handkerchief from his wrist to show me his wound. "There's a bullet in there," he said proudly. "I'm going to have it cut out, and then go right back to the fight. Isn't it lucky it's my left hand?"

As the day wore on I became more and more absorbed in my work. I had, too, the stimulus of a reproof from Miss Deborah Couch, a brisk, efficient middle-aged lady, who asked no quarter and gave none. She was standing beside me a moment, with a bright tin pan filled with pure water, into which I foolishly dipped a finger to see if it were warm; to learn if I would be expected to provide warm water when I should be called upon to assist the surgeon.

"This water, Madam, was prepared for a raw wound," said Miss Deborah, sternly. "I must now make the surgeon wait until I get more."

Miss Deborah, in advance of her time, was a germ theorist. *My* touch evidently was contaminating.

As she charged down the aisle with a pan of water in her hand, everybody made way. She had known of my "fine-lady faintness," as she termed it, and I could see she despised me for it. She had volunteered, as all the nurses had, and she meant business. She had no patience with nonsense, and truly she was worth more than all the rest of us.

"Where can I get a little ice?" I one day ventured of Miss Deborah.

"Find it," she rejoined, as she rapidly passed on; but find it I never did. Ice was an unknown luxury until brought to us later from private houses.

But I found myself thoroughly reinstated—with surgeons, matron, and Miss Deborah—when I appeared a few days later, accompanied by a man bearing a basket of clean, well-rolled bandages, with promise of more to come. The Petersburg women had gone to work with a will upon my table-cloths, sheets, and dimity counterpanes—and even the chintz furniture covers. My spring-like green and white chintz bandages appeared on many a manly arm and leg. My fine linen

underwear and napkins were cut, by the sewing circle at the Spotswood, according to the surgeon's directions, into lengths two inches wide, then folded two inches, doubling back and forth in a smaller fold each time, until they formed pointed wedges for compresses.

Such was the sudden and overwhelming demand for such things, that but for my own and similar donations of household linen, the wounded men would have suffered. The war had come upon us suddenly. Many of our ports were already closed, and we had no stores laid up for such an emergency.

The bloody battle of Gaines's Mill soon followed—then Frazier's Farm, within the week, and at once the hospital was filled to overflowing. Every night a courier brought me tidings of my husband. When I saw him at the door my heart would die within me! One morning John came in for certain supplies. After being reassured as to his master's safety, I asked, "Did he have a comfortable night, John?"

"He sholy did! Marse Roger cert'nly was comfortable las' night. He slep' on de field 'twixt two daid horses!"

The women who worked in Kent & Paine's hospital never seemed to weary. After a while the wise matron assigned us hours, and we went on duty with the regularity of trained nurses. My hours were from seven to seven during the day, with the promise of night service should I be needed. Efficient, kindly colored women assisted us. Their motherly manner soothed the prostrate soldier, whom they alway addressed as "son."

Many fine young fellows lost their lives for want of prompt attention. They never murmured. They would give way to those who seemed to be more seriously wounded than themselves, and the latter would recover, while from the slighter wounds gangrene would supervene from delay. Very few men ever walked away from that hospital. They died, or friends found quarters for them in the homes in Richmond. None complained! Unless a poor man grew delirious, he never groaned. There was an atmosphere of gentle kindness, a suppression of emotion for the sake of others.

Every morning the Richmond ladies brought for our patients such luxuries as could be procured in that scarce time. The city was in peril, and distant farmers feared to bring in

their fruits and vegetables. One day a patient-looking middle-aged man said to me, "What would I not give for a bowl of chicken broth like that my mother used to give me when I was a sick boy!" I perceived one of the angelic matrons of Richmond at a distance, stooping over the cots, and found my way to her and said: "Dear Mrs. Maben, have you a chicken? And could you send some broth to No. 39?" She promised, and I returned with her promise to the poor wounded fellow. He shook his head "To-morrow will be too late," he said.

I had forgotten the circumstance next day, but at noon I happened to look toward cot No. 39, and there was Mrs. Maben herself. She had brought the chicken broth in a pretty china bowl, with napkin and silver spoon, and was feeding my doubting Thomas, to his great satisfaction.

It was at this hospital, I have reason to believe, that the little story originated, which was deemed good enough to be claimed by other hospitals, of the young girl who approached a sick man with a pan of water in her hand and a towel over her arm.

"Mayn't I wash your face?" said the girl timidly.

"Well, lady, you may if you want to," said the man, wearily. "It has been washed fourteen times this morning! It can stand another time, I reckon."

I discovered that I had not succeeded, despite many efforts, in winning Miss Deborah. I learned that she was affronted because I had not shared my offerings of jelly and fruit with her, for her special patients. Whenever I ventured to ask a loan from her, of a pan or a glass for water or the little things of which we never had enough, she would reply, "I must keep them for the nurses who understand reciprocity. Reciprocity is a rule *some* persons never seem to comprehend." When this was hammered into my slow perception, I rose to the occasion. I turned over the entire contents of a basket the landlord of the Spotswood had given me to Miss Deborah, and she made my path straight before me ever afterward.

At the end of a week the matron had promoted me! Instead of carving the fat bacon, to be dispensed with corn bread, for the hospital dinner, or standing between two rough men to keep away the flies, or fetching water, or spreading sheets on cots, I was assigned to regular duty with one patient.

The first of these proved to be young Colonel Coppens, of my husband's brigade. I could comfort him very little, for he was wounded past recovery. I spoke little French, and could only try to keep him, as far as possible, from annoyance. To my great relief, place was found for him in a private family. There he soon died—the gallant fellow I had admired on his horse a few months before.

Then I was placed beside the cot of Mr. (or Captain) Boyd of Mecklenburg, and was admonished by the matron not to leave him alone. He was the most patient sufferer in the world, gentle, courteous, always considerate, never complaining. I observed he often closed his eyes and sighed. "Are you in pain, Captain?" "No, no," he would say gently. One day, when I returned from my "rest" I found the matron sitting beside him. Tears were running down her cheeks. She motioned me to take her place, and then added, "No, no, I will not leave him."

The Captain's eyes were closed, and he sighed wearily at intervals. Presently he whispered slowly:—

"There everlasting spring abides,"

then sighed, and seemed to sleep for a moment.

The matron felt his pulse and raised a warning hand. The sick man's whisper went on:—

"Bright fields beyond the swelling flood
Stand—dressed—in living green."

The surgeon stood at the foot of the cot and shook his head. The nurses gathered around with tearful eyes. Presently in clear tones:—

"Not Jordan's stream—nor death's cold flood
Shall fright us—from—the shore,"

and in a moment more the Christian soldier had crossed the river and lain down to rest under the trees.

Each of the battles of those seven days brought a harvest of wounded to our hospital. I used to veil myself closely as I walked to and from my hotel, that I might shut out the dreadful sights in the street—the squads of prisoners, and,

worst of all, the open wagons in which the dead were piled. Once I *did* see one of these dreadful wagons! In it a stiff arm was raised, and shook as it was driven down the street, as though the dead owner appealed to Heaven for vengeance; a horrible sight never to be forgotten.

After one of the bloody battles—I know not if it was Gaines's Mill or Frazier's Farm or Malvern Hill—a splendid young officer, Colonel Brokenborough, was taken to our hospital, shot almost to pieces. He was borne up the stairs and placed in a cot—his broken limbs in supports swinging from the ceiling. The wife of General Mahone and I were permitted to assist in nursing him. A young soldier from the camp was detailed to help us, and a clergyman was in constant attendance, coming at night that we might rest. Our patient held a court in his corner of the hospital. Such a dear, gallant, cheery fellow, handsome, and with a grand air even as he lay prostrate! Nobody ever heard him complain. He would welcome us in the morning with the brightest smile. His aide said, "He watches the head of the stairs and calls up that look for your benefit." "Oh," he said one day, "you can't guess what's going to happen! Some ladies have been here and left all these roses, and cologne, and such; and somebody has sent—champagne! We are going to have a party!"

Ah, but we knew he was very ill! We were bidden to watch him every minute and not be deceived by his own spirits. Mrs. Mahone spent her life hunting for ice. My constant care was to keep his canteen—to which he clung with affection—filled with fresh water from a spring not far away, and I learned to give it to him so well that I allowed no one to lift his head for his drink during my hours.

One day, when we were alone, I was fanning him, and thought he was asleep. He said gravely, "Mrs. Pryor, beyond that curtain they hung up yesterday poor young Mitchell is lying! They think I don't know! But I heard when they brought him in—as I lie here, I listen to his breathing. I haven't heard it now for some time. Would you mind seeing if he is all right?"

I passed behind the curtain. The young soldier was dead. His wide-open eyes seemed to meet mine in mute appeal. I had never seen or touched a dead man, but I laid my hands

upon his eyelids and closed them. I was standing thus when his nurse, a young volunteer like myself, came to me.

"I couldn't do that," she said; "I went for the doctor. I'm so glad you could do it."

When I returned Colonel Brokenborough asked no questions and I knew that his keen senses had already instructed him.

To be cheerful and uncomplaining was the unwritten law of our hospital. No bad news was ever mentioned, no foreboding or anxiety. Mrs. Mahone was one day standing beside Colonel Brokenborough when a messenger from the front suddenly announced that General Mahone had received a flesh-wound. Commanding herself instantly, she exclaimed merrily: "*Flesh*-wound! Now you all know that is *just impossible*." The General had no flesh! He was as thin and attenuated as he was brave.

As Colonel Brokenborough grew weaker I felt self-reproach that no one had offered to write letters for him. His friend the clergyman had said to me: "That poor boy is engaged to a lovely young girl. I wonder what is best? Would it grieve him to speak of her! You ladies have so much tact; you might bear it in mind. An opportunity might offer for you to discover how he feels about it." The next time I was alone with him I ventured: "Now, Colonel one mustn't forget absent friends, you know, even if fair ladies do bring perfumes and roses and what not. I have some ink and paper here. Shall I write a letter for you? Tell me what to say." He turned his head and with a half-amused smile of perfect intelligence looked at me for a long time. Then an upward look of infinite tenderness; but the message was never sent—never needed from a true heart like his. One night I was awakened from my first sleep by a knock at my door, and a summons to "come to Colonel Brokenborough." When I reached his bedside I found the surgeon, the clergyman, and the Colonel's aide. The patient was unconscious; the end was near. We sat in silence. Once, when he stirred, I slipped my hand under his head, and put his canteen once more to his lips. After a long time his breathing simply ceased, with no evidence of pain. We waited awhile, and then the young soldier who had been detailed to nurse him rose, crossed the

room, and, stooping over, kissed me on my forehead, and went out to his duty in the ranks.

Two weeks later I was in my room, resting after a hard day, when a haggard officer, covered with mud and dust, entered. It was my husband.

"My men are all dead," he said, with anguish, and, falling across the bed, he gave vent to the passionate griet of his heart.

Thousands of Confederate soldiers were killed, thousands wounded.

Richmond was saved!

General McClellan and General Lee both realized that their men needed rest. My husband was allowed a few days' respite from duty. Almost without pause he had fought the battles of Williamsburg, Seven Pines, Mechanicsville, Gaines's Mill, and Frazier's Farm. He had won his promotion early, but he had lost the loved commander who appreciated him, had seen old schoolmates and friends fall by his side—the dear fellow, George Loyal Gordon, who had been his best man at our wedding—old college comrades, valued old neighbors.

Opposed to him in battle, then and after, were men who in after years avowed themselves his warm friends—General Hancock, General Slocum, General Butterfield, General Sickles, General Fitz-John Porter, General McClellan, and General Grant. They had fought loyally under opposing banners, and from time to time, as the war went on, one and another had been defeated; but over all, and through all, their allegiance had been given to a banner that has never surrendered—the standard of the universal brotherhood of all true men.

A MODERN COURTSHIP

I shall not ask Jean Jacques Rousseau
If birds confabulate or no.
'Tis clear that they were always able
To hold discourse—at least in fable.
—COWPER.

A mocking-bird sang in a tulip tree
To a bird in a rose-bush near.
He was telling once more the story old,
In the blossoming time of the year.

He was "neat as an epigram"—this bird—
In his new summer-suit of gray,
And she was "smart," like the maidens we meet
On the Avenue every day.

He tunefully trilled of "a lonely life
And a desolate spirit's need."
His taste and *technique* were perfect—his voice
A very fine tenor indeed.

He said he had nothing to give but Love
And a little good minstrelsy.
He fluttered and fidgeted so, I thought
He would surely drop from the tree!

But the little brown bird examined a rose,
And I never have been quite sure
That she heard him at all—or cared to hear—
Her manner was so demure.

Then he puffed out his breast with a pompous air,
And told of his fine pedigree—
How his ancestors sang in Virginia woods
Ere the British had crossed the sea!

For musty old fellows of a far-off time
She cared not a fig—not she!
She spied a young worm on an under leaf,
And quietly picked him—for tea!

She was calm as the sea—when we cross in June—
As calm as the stars above her!
As calm as a Vassar or Barnard girl—
Only Star-eyed Science her lover!

But my wise little bird knew a loftier strain
That has never been known to fail,
Since Robin Red-breast courted sweet Jenny Wren
In the old-fashioned nursery tale.

He sang a brave song about "sugar and cream—
And berries—and currant wine"—
And a "cushion soft"—and a ladylike "seam"—
And ended: "*Now* will you be mine?"

I leaned from my window to warn the young thing—
To say: "Don't believe him, my dear!
You'll spend all your days in quite different ways
From those he has mentioned, I fear.

"You'll sit, till you ache, on your obstinate eggs,
And a tyrant, I give you my word,
With an appetite perfectly shocking to see,
Is your just-newly-hatched young bird.

"His stomach is simply a bottomless pit!
His mouth is a cavernous door!
And *one* little mother to satisfy *three*
Little Olivers—'asking for more!'

"And he—that fine promiser—where will *he* be?
At his numerous clubs, to be sure!
They are waiting for him in every tree,
With a welcome at every door."

I could have said more; but I learned long ago
To trim my sails to the weather,
Besides—before I could fairly begin,
They were flying off together!

MY DAY

I stood at dawn by a limitless sea
And watched the rose creep over the grey;
Till the heavens were a glowing canopy!
This was my day!

The pale stars stole away, one by one—
Like sensitive souls from the presence of Pride.
The moon hung low, looking back, as the sun
Rose over the tide.

And he, like a King, came up from the sea!
He opened my rose—unfettered my song—
And quickened a heart to be true to me
All the day long.

The soul that was born of a song and flower
Of tender dawn-flush, and shadowy grey,
Was strengthened by Love for a bitter hour
That chilled my day.

I had dwelt in the garden of the Lord!
I had gathered the sweets of a summer day:
I was called to stand where a flaming sword
Turned every way.

It spared not the weak—nor the strong—nor the dear.
And following fast, like a phantom band,
Famine and Fever and shuddering Fear
Swept o'er the land.

They whispered that Hope, the angel of light,
Would spread her white wings and speed her away.
But she folded me close in my longest night
And darkest day.

As of old, when the fire and tempest had passed,
And an earthquake had riven the rocks, the Word
In a still small voice rose over the blast—
The Voice of the Lord.

And the Voice said: "Take up your lives again!
Quit yourselves manfully! Stand in your lot!
Let the Famine, the Fever, the Peril, the Pain
Be all forgot!

"Weep no more for the lovely, the brave,
The young head pillowed on a blood-stained sod;
The daisy that grows on the soldier's grave
Looks up to God!

"The soul of the patriot-soldier stands
With a mighty host in eternal calm
And He who pressed the sword to his hands
Has given the Palm."

* * * * * *

And now I stand with my face to the west,
Shading mine eyes, for my glorious sun
Is splendid again as he sinks to his rest—
His day is done.

I have lost my rose, forgotten my song,
But the true heart that loved me is mine alway.
The stars are alight—the way not long—
I had my day!

DAVID RAMSAY

[1749—1815]

CHARLES W. KENT

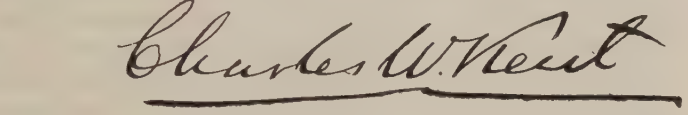
AMONG the distinguished literary men the North has lent or given to the South, no one became more closely identified with his adopted community or served it with more singleness of purpose than David Ramsay first in time and first in importance of the South Carolina historians. He was born in Lancaster County, Pennsylvania, April 2, 1749. The county has been known for many decades by its thrift, due in no small degree to the sturdy German stock that sought in this country, and partly in that county, immunity from persecutions at home because of their simple and independent religious faith. Ramsay, however, was not of this sturdy stock, but of that quick-witted and volatile race, the Irish, which had sent over among its adventurers the father of David Ramsay. Little or nothing is known of David's early schooling, but by means of it, whatever it was, he was prepared at the immature age of thirteen to enter the College of New Jersey (Princeton). He interrupted his college course by one year of tutoring in an academy at Carlisle, a town to which a peculiar interest attaches because the barracks built by the mercenary Hessians in the Revolutionary War are now occupied by the red wards of the Nation. After graduating from Princeton in 1765 he became a tutor for a while in Maryland, a State with whose fortunes his brother Nathaniel was closely identified during the Revolutionary War. He then entered upon the study of medicine in the College of Pennsylvania and fell under the wholesome influence of Dr. Benjamin Rush. This celebrated physician seems to have been the scientist of his profession in his day, and by his learning and progressive spirit he commended himself to the leaders of thought. He was Franklin's friend, and of him Jefferson wrote to Adams (in 1813): "Another of our friends of 'seventy-six is gone, my dear sir, another of the co-signers of the Independence of our country; and a better man than Rush could not have left us, more benevolent, more learned, of finer genius, or more honest." To have enjoyed the friendship of such a man was a benediction, and to have deserved it by possessing the very qualities Jefferson ascribes to Rush was a peculiar honor; no wonder that Ramsay's tribute to his old preceptor and philosophic friend was reckoned among the best studies of this great physician.

During his college days at Princeton young David had fallen in love with Frances Witherspoon, the fair daughter of Princeton's eminent president. In winning her in marriage he won also the close friendship of her honored father, with whom afterward he conferred freely about State affairs of serious import. With his young wife Dr. Ramsay moved to Charleston, South Carolina, to practise his profession and began promptly a successful career. But he had studied under a great master, who counted his profession not the end of all living but a mere means to loftier citizenship. Ramsay had learned his lesson well, and soon became a recognized leader in social and philanthropic movements and an active participant in public affairs. His modern sense of civic responsibility saved him from any narrowing and absorbing specialization and gave him the deserved reputation of a man of great force and excellent equipment. These powers he used with no reserve in the American cause. Two years after his old friend, Dr. Rush, had signed the Declaration of Independence, the young Charleston doctor made it the topic of a patriotic address. His patriotism had perhaps been sensibly fired by his second marriage, his first wife having died early. In 1775 Martha Laurens, the daughter of the South Carolina patriot, Henry Laurens, returned from a ten-year stay abroad, and within two years had married the brilliant young widower. Her education and culture made her at once the critic and coadjutor of his literary labors.

Ramsay's service in the State Legislature was an apprenticeship for larger legislative services, to which he was called as a Member of the Continental Congress from 1782 to 1785. In the meantime he had varied his era of peace by enlisting as an Army surgeon and spending eleven months as a prisoner in St. Augustine. He used the opportunities offered him as Congressman to procure material for his books. In 1785 he published his 'History of the Revolution in South Carolina,' and in 1790 the 'History of the American Revolution.' His 'Life of Washington' appeared in 1801, and his fuller 'History of South Carolina' in 1808. His next work was occasioned by the death of his accomplished wife in 1811, for he at once published a 'Memoir, with Extracts from her Diary.' From 1802 until 1813 he was engaged in publishing certain important medical books; and in this latter year appeared his biographical sketch of Dr. Rush, who had just died. In 1815 he published his 'History of the Congregational Church in Charleston.' It was when he was zealously engaged upon other work, and in the very full tide of his activity, that he was shot down in front of his own house by an irresponsible lunatic. He died May 2, 1815.

When to the works already mentioned are added the orations unmentioned and the books that were published after his death, an

explanation is needed of his surprising powers of productivity. The explanation is at hand, and is not genius, but a proverbial industry. He slept but four hours and worked well nigh all the hours that he did not sleep. His productions are valuable not merely because of his power of keen observation, his wide interests, and his literary activity, but because of his direct, straightforward, and unaffected style. There is never the blemish of stale stupidity, and there is frequently the charm of a simple and unassuming readiness raised by his own conviction and ardor into a close approximation to eloquence.



THE FIRST EFFECT OF THE DECLARATION OF INDEPENDENCE

From 'History of the American Revolution.'

From the promulgation of this declaration, everything assumed a new form. The Americans no longer appeared in the character of subjects in arms against their sovereign, but as an independent people, repelling the attacks of an invading foe. The propositions and supplications for reconciliation were done away. The dispute was brought to a single point, whether the late British colonies should be conquered provinces, or free and independent states.

The declaration of independence was read publicly in all the states, and was welcomed with many demonstrations of joy. The people were encouraged by it to bear up under the calamities of war, and viewed the evils they suffered, only as the thorn that ever accompanies the rose. The army received it with particular satisfaction. As far as it had validity, so far it secured them from suffering as rebels, and held out to their view an object, the attainment of which would be an adequate recompense for the toils and dangers of war. They were animated by the consideration that they were no longer to risque their lives for the trifling purpose of procuring a repeal of a few oppressive acts of parliament, but for a new organization

of government, that would forever put it out of the power of Great-Britain to oppress them. The flattering prospects of an extensive commerce, freed from British restrictions, and the honours and emoluments of office in independent states now began to glitter before the eyes of the colonists, and reconciled them to the difficulties of their situation. What was supposed in Great-Britain to be their primary object, had only a secondary influence. While they were charged with aiming at independence from the impulse of avarice and ambition, they were ardently wishing for a reconciliation. But, after they had been compelled to adopt that measure, these powerful principles of human actions opposed its retraction, and stimulated to its support. That separation which the colonists at first dreaded as an evil, they soon gloried in as a national blessing. While the rulers of Great-Britain urged their people to a vigorous prosecution of the American war, on the idea that the colonists were aiming at independence, they imposed on them a necessity of adopting that very measure, and actually effected its accomplishment. By repeatedly charging the Americans with aiming at the erection of a new government, and by proceeding on that idea to subdue them, predictions which were originally false, eventually became true. When the declaration of independence reached Great-Britain the partisans of the ministry triumphed in their sagacity. "The measure," said they, "we have long foreseen, is now come to pass." They inverted the natural order of things. Without reflecting that their own policy had forced a revolution contrary to the original design of the colonists, the declaration of independence was held out to the people of Great-Britain as a justification of those previous violences, which were its efficient cause.

The act of Congress for dissevering the colonies from their Parent State, was the subject of many animadversions.

The colonists were said to have been precipitate in adopting a measure, from which there was no honourable ground of retreating. They replied that for eleven years they had been incessantly petitioning the throne for a redress of their grievances. Since the year 1765, a continental Congress had at three sundry times stated their claims, and prayed for their constitutional rights. That each assembly of the thirteen colo-

nies had also, in its separate capacity, concurred in the same measure. . . . That from the perseverance of Great-Britain in her schemes for their coercion, they had no alternative, but a mean submission, or a vigorous resistance; and that as she was about to invade their coasts with a large body of mercenaries, they were compelled to declare themselves independent, that they might be put into an immediate capacity for soliciting foreign aid.

The virulence of those who had been in opposition to the claims of the colonists, was increased by their bold act in breaking off all subordination to the Parent State. "Great-Britain," said they, "has founded colonies at great expence . . . has incurred a load of debt by wars on their account . . . has protected their commerce, and raised them to all the consequence they possess, and now in the insolence of adult years, rather than pay their proportion of the common expences of government, they ungratefully renounce all connexion with the nurse of their youth, and the protectress of their riper years." The Americans acknowledged that much was due to Great-Britain, for the protection which her navy procured to the coasts, and the commerce of the colonies, but contended that much was paid by the latter, in consequence of the restrictions imposed on their commerce by the former. "The charge of ingratitude would have been just," said they, "had allegiance been renounced while protection was given, but when the navy, which formerly secured the commerce and seaport towns of America, began to distress the former, and to burn the latter, the previous obligations to obey or be grateful, were no longer in force."

That the colonists paid nothing, and would not pay to the support of government, was confidently asserted, and no credit was given for the sums indirectly levied upon them, in consequence of their being confined to the consumption of British manufactures. By such ill-founded observations were the people of Great-Britain inflamed against their fellow subjects in America. The latter were represented as an ungrateful people, refusing to bear any part of the expences of a protecting government, or to pay their proportion of a heavy debt, said to be incurred on their account. Many of the inhabitants of Great-Britain deceived in matters of fact, considered their American

brethren as deserving the severity of military coercion. So strongly were the two countries rivetted together, that if the whole truth had been known to the people of both, their separation would have been scarcely possible. Any feasible plan by which subjection to Great-Britain could have been reconciled with American safety, would at any time, previous to 1776, have met the approbation of the colonists. But while the lust of power and of gain, blinded the rulers of Great-Britain, misstated facts and uncandid representations brought over their people to second the infatuation. A few honest men properly authorized, might have devised measures of compromise, which under the influence of truth, humility and moderation, would have prevented a dismemberment of the empire; but these virtues ceased to influence, and falsehood, haughtiness and blind zeal usurped their places. Had Great-Britain, even after the declaration of independence, adopted the magnanimous resolution of declaring her colonies free and independent states, interest would have prompted them to form such a connexion as would have secured to the Mother Country the advantages of their commerce, without the expence of trouble of their governments. But misguided politics continued the fatal system of coercion and conquest. Several on both sides of the Atlantic, have called the declaration of independence, "a bold, and accidentally, a lucky speculation," but subsequent events proved, that it was a wise measure. It is acknowledged that it detached some timid friends from supporting the Americans in their opposition to Great-Britain, but it increased the vigour and union of those who possessed more fortitude and perseverance. Without it, the colonists would have had no object adequate to the dangers to which they exposed themselves, in continuing to contend with Great-Britain. If the interference of France was necessary to give success to the resistance of the Americans, the declaration of independence was also necessary, for the French expressly founded the propriety of their treaty with Congress on the circumstance, "that they found the United States in possession of independence."

THE IMMEDIATE EFFECTS OF THE REVOLUTION

From 'History of the American Revolution.'

The American revolution, on the one hand, brought forth great vices; but on the other hand, it called forth many virtues, and gave occasion for the display of abilities which, but for that event, would have been lost to the world. When the war began, the Americans were a mass of husbandmen, merchants, mechanics and fishermen; but the necessities of the country gave a spring to the active powers of the inhabitants, and set them on thinking, speaking and acting, in a line far beyond that to which they had been accustomed. The difference between nations is not so much owing to nature, as to education and circumstances. While the Americans were guided by the leading strings of the mother country, they had no scope nor encouragement for exertion. All the departments of government were established and executed for them, but not by them. In the years 1775 and 1776 the country, being suddenly thrown into a situation that needed the abilities of all its sons, these generally took their places, each according to the bent of his inclination. As they severally pursued their objects with ardor, a vast expansion of the human mind speedily followed. This displayed itself in a variety of ways. It was found that the talents for great stations did not differ in kind, but only in degree, from those which were necessary for the proper discharge of the ordinary business of civil society. In the bustle that was occasioned by the war, few instances could be produced of any persons who made a figure, or who rendered essential services, but from among those who had given specimens of similar talents in their respective professions. Those who from indolence or dissipation, had been of little service to the community in time of peace, were found equally unserviceable in war. A few young men were exceptions to this general rule. Some of these, who had indulged in youthful follies, broke off from their vicious courses, and on the pressing call of their country became useful servants of the public: but the great bulk of those, who were the active instruments of carrying on the revolution, were self-made, industrious men. These who by their own exertions, had es-

tablished or laid a foundation for establishing personal independence, were most generally trusted, and most successfully employed in establishing that of their country. In these times of action, classical education was found of less service than good natural parts, guided by common sense and sound judgment.

Several names could be mentioned of individuals who, without the knowledge of any other language than their mother tongue, wrote not only accurately, but elegantly, on public business. It seemed as if the war not only required, but created talents. Men whose minds were warmed with the love of liberty, and whose abilities were improved by daily exercise, and sharpened with a laudable ambition to serve their distressed country, spoke, wrote, and acted, with an energy far surpassing all expectations which could be reasonably founded on their previous acquirements.

The Americans knew but little of one another, previous to the revolution. Trade and business had brought the inhabitants of their seaports acquainted with each other, but the bulk of the people in the interior country were unacquainted with their fellow citizens. A continental army, and Congress composed of men from all the States, by freely mixing together, were assimilated into one mass. Individuals of both, mingling with the citizens, disseminated principles of union among them. Local prejudices abated. By frequent collision asperities were worn off, and a foundation was laid for the establishment of a nation, out of discordant materials. Intermarriages between men and women of different States were much more common than before the war, and became an additional cement to the union. Unreasonable jealousies had existed between the inhabitants of the eastern and of the southern states; but on becoming better acquainted with each other, these in a great measure subsided. A wiser policy prevailed. Men of liberal minds led the way in discouraging local distinctions, and the great body of the people, as soon as reason got the better of prejudice, found that their best interests would be most effectually promoted by such practices and sentiments as were favourable to union. Religious bigotry had broken in upon the peace of various sects, before the American war. This was kept up by partial estab-

lishments, and by a dread that the church of England through the power of the mother country, would be made to triumph over all other denominations. These apprehensions were done away by the revolution. The different sects, having nothing to fear from each other, dismissed all religious controversy. A proposal for introducing bishops into America before the war, had kindled a flame among the dissenters; but the revolution was no sooner accomplished, than a scheme for that purpose was perfected, with the consent and approbation of all those sects who had previously opposed it. Pulpits which had formerly been shut to worthy men, because their heads had not been consecrated by the imposition of the hands of a Bishop or of a Presbytery, have since the establishment of independence, been reciprocally opened to each other, whensoever the public convenience required it. The world will soon see the result of an experiment in politics, and be able to determine whether the happiness of society is increased by religious establishments, or diminished by the want of them.

Though schools and colleges were generally shut up during the war, yet many of the arts and sciences were promoted by it. The geography of the United States before the revolution was but little known; but the marches of armies, and the operations of war, gave birth to many geographical enquiries and discoveries, which otherwise would not have been made. A passionate fondness for studies of this kind, and the growing importance of the country, excited one of its sons, the Rev. Mr. Morse, to travel through every State of the Union, and amass a fund of topographical knowledge, far exceeding any thing heretofore communicated to the public. The necessities of the States led to the study of Tactics, Fortification, Gunnery, and a variety of other arts connected with war, and diffused a knowledge of them among a peaceable people, who would otherwise have had no inducement to study them.

The abilities of ingenious men were directed to make farther improvements in the art of destroying an enemy. Among these, David Bushnell of Connecticut invented a machine for submarine navigation, which was found to answer the purpose of rowing horizontally, at any given depth under water, and of rising or sinking at pleasure. To this was attached a magazine of powder, and the whole was contrived in

such a manner, as to make it practicable to blow up vessels by machinery under them. Mr. Bushnell also contrived sundry other curious machines for the annoyance of British shipping; but from accident they only succeeded in part. He destroyed one vessel in charge of Commodore Symonds, and a second one near the shore of Long Island.

Surgery was one of the arts which was promoted by the war. From the want of hospitals and other aids, the medical men of America, had few opportunities of perfecting themselves in this art, the thorough knowledge of which can only be acquired by practice and observation. The melancholy events of battles, gave the American students an opportunity of seeing, and learning more in one day, than they could have acquired in years of peace. It was in the hospitals of the United States, that Dr. Rush first discovered the method of curing the lockjaw by bark and wine, added to other invigorating remedies, which has since been adopted with success in Europe, as well as in the United States. . . .

The early attention which had been paid to literature in New-England, was also eminently conducive to the success of the Americans in resisting Great-Britain. The university of Cambridge was founded as early as 1636, and Yale college in 1700. It has been computed, that in the year the Boston port act was passed, there were in the four eastern colonies, upwards of two thousand graduates of their colleges dispersed through their several towns, who by their knowledge and abilities, were able to influence and direct the great body of the people to a proper line of conduct, for opposing the encroachments of Great-Britain on their liberties. The colleges to the southward of New-England, except that of William and Mary in Virginia, were but of modern date; but they had been of a standing sufficiently long, to have trained for public service, a considerable number of the youth of the country. The college of New-Jersey, which was incorporated about 28 years before the revolution, had in that time educated upwards of 300 persons, who, with a few exceptions, were active and useful friends of independence. From the influence which knowledge had in securing and preserving the liberties of America, the present generation may trace the wise policy of their fathers, in erecting schools and colleges.

They may also learn that it is their duty to found more, and support all such institutions. Without the advantages derived from these lights of this new world, the United States would probably have fallen in their unequal contest with Great-Britain. Union, which was essential to the success of their resistance, could scarcely have taken place, in the measures adopted by an ignorant multitude. Much less could wisdom in council, unity in system, or perseverance in the prosecution of a long and self denying war, be expected from an uninformed people. It is a well known fact that persons unfriendly to the revolution, were always most numerous in those parts of the United States which had either never been illuminated, or but faintly warmed by the rays of science. The uninformed and the misinformed constituted a great proportion of those Americans who preferred the leading strings of the Parent State, though encroaching on their liberties, to a government of their own countrymen and fellow citizens.

As literature had in the first instance favoured the revolution, so in its turn, the revolution promoted literature. The study of eloquence and of the *belles lettres,* was more successfully prosecuted in America, after the disputes between Great-Britain and her colonies began to be serious, than it ever had been before. The various orations, addresses, letters, dissertations and other literary performances which the war made necessary, called forth abilities where they were, and excited the rising generation to study arts, which brought with them their own reward. . . .

On the whole, the literary, political, and military talents of the citizens of the United States have been improved by the revolution, but their moral character is inferior to what it formerly was. So great is the change for the worse, that the friends of public order are loudly called upon to exert their utmost abilities, in extirpating the vicious principles and habits, which have taken deep root during the late convulsions.

DR. WADDEL'S SCHOOL

From 'History of South Carolina.'

Besides what has been done by the state, and by religious sects and private societies for the advancement of learning and the diffusion of religious knowledge among the inhabitants, there are several private schools, both in Charlestown and the country for teaching classical and mathematical learning. Among these one under the care of the reverend Dr. Waddel of Abbeville district deserves particular notice. In it from seventy to eighty students are instructed in the Latin, Greek, and French languages, and such of the arts and sciences as are necessary to prepare a candidate for admission into the higher classes at the northern colleges. The school-house is a plain log building in the midst of the woods in a hilly and healthy country, and too small to accommodate all the scholars in the hours of study. To obviate this inconvenience they are permitted and encouraged to build huts in the vicinity. These are the rough carpentry of the pupils, or constructed by workmen for about four dollars. In these, when the weather is cold, and under the trees when it is warm, the different classes study. To the common school or recitation room they instantly repair when called for by the name of the Homer, the Xenophon, the Cicero, the Horace, or Virgil class, or by the name of the author whose writings they are reading. In a moment they appear before their preceptor and with order and decorum recite their lessons—are critically examined in grammar, and syntax—the construction of sentences—the formation of verbs —the antiquities of Greece and Rome—the history and geography of the ancients, illustrative of the author whose works they recite; and are taught to relish his beauties, and enter into his spirit. Thus class succeeds to class without the formality of definite hours for study or recreation till all have recited. In the presence of the students assembled a solemn and appropriate prayer, imploring the Eternal in their behalf, begins and ends the exercises of each day. In this manner the classics are taught 190 miles from the sea-coast. The glowing periods of Cicero are read and admired. The melody and majesty of Homer delight the ear and charm the understanding in the

very spot, and under the identical trees, which sixty years ago resounded with the war-whoop and horrid yellings of savage Indians. Of the large number that attend this school, nine in ten are as studious as their health will permit, and as orderly in their conduct as their friends could wish. Far removed from the dissipation of cities, and among sober, industrious, and religious people, they must be studious or lose all character and be pointed at by the finger of scorn. If disposed to be idle or vicious, they cannot be so otherwise than by themselves; for the place will not furnish them with associates. Monitors are appointed to superintend each subdivision of the students; and such as transgress the rules of the school are reported once in every week. Over them a court is held. They are allowed to justify or extenuate. A summary decision is made. Though corporal punishment is not wholly excluded it is rarely inflicted. The discipline of the institution respects the pride of youth, and is chiefly calculated to repress irregular conduct by attaching to it shame and dishonour. The sagacious preceptor quickly finds out the temper and disposition of each student, and is the first to discover aberrations from the straight line of propriety. By nipping mischief in the bud, he prevents its coming to any serious height. By patience in teaching, and minutely explaining what is difficult, he secures the affections of his pupils and smooths their labors; while at the same time judicious praise rouses ambition and kindles in their breasts an ardent love for improvement, and an eagerness to deserve and gain applause.

JAMES RYDER RANDALL

[1839—1908]

MATTHEW PAGE ANDREWS

THE world-wide fame of "Maryland, My Maryland" tended in the lifetime of the author to create the impression that he must be classed with the writers of a single song. This belief became so early and so firmly fixed in the public mind that, by the author's own confession, it served to discourage his too sensitive spirit from giving forth to the world the further products of his poetic genius. Rarely were his poems written to fit any special occasion; they were rather the result of the inspiration of the moment and the reflection of his spirit at the time of their creation. Of an author whose earliest work had won so wide a fame, it is a unique tribute to say that he did not write one line of his poetry for material compensation. His verses were habitually given away to friends who might ask for them; they might then be printed in some purely local publication or kept indefinitely in manuscript form. He did not live to see his poems collected for publication; and it was not known until after his death that the author of the most spirited appeal to arms and to love of country in the English tongue was also master of a wide range in metrical composition, throughout which he shows varied charm in thought and rhythm. In fact, the very excellence of his most popular song so obscured the unassuming singer that, in collections of Civil War verse published as late as the Twentieth Century, its authorship was attributed to another; while some of his poems, in the same or in similar collections, were published anonymously. This instance of injustice done to a reputable author cannot be paralleled in modern literature. The editors presumably had no intention to defraud; but the erroneously credited author of "Maryland, My Maryland" is the man whom Randall once exposed as a false claimant to a song of the war composed by a Northern woman.

Subjectively and objectively, Randall himself is to blame for any failure to secure during his lifetime eminently merited recognition as a poet capable of the highest achievement. Owing to his temperamental modesty, he shrank from general recognition and deprecated praise, where another would have perceived opportunities of securing proper remuneration for the fruits of his genius that he so improvidently gave away. He was almost devoid of business

acumen and of the self-advertising sense in a self-advertising age. From the fearful era of "Reconstruction" to the time of his last longings for his native Maryland, he was called upon to support a growing family in an impoverished land. He might have turned his name and ability to good account in the great publishing center of the Nation; but, like Lee at Washington College, and Maury at the Virginia Military Institute—who for war-stricken Lexington refused, the one opulence and honor in New York, the other distinctions and competence in Paris—Randall was unwilling to leave the cherished land of his earliest song. Although by nature a dreamer, his dreams were cut short in the drudgery of clerical labor or mechanical journalism; yet his newspaper work was often illuminated by such clearness, force, and beauty as to be widely quoted before lost in journalistic oblivion. Throughout his life the poet was repeatedly and earnestly urged to gather in some accessible form his "spirit offspring" that it might receive general appreciation; but, while diligent and conscientious in his work for others, he would not take the pains to collect his own poems for publication.

The poems of James Ryder Randall may be thus classified: War poems of the Southern Confederacy; poems of patriotism and love of country; poems of love and sentiment; poems of religious thought and expression; miscellaneous poems of humor, and juvenilia.

In his war poems of the Southern Confederacy, Randall is always emotional and often passionate. When his collected poems first appeared, several of the greater critics, of other sympathies, deemed him "narrow" or "spiteful"; but calmer views have, in the main, prevailed. Years before this, Oliver Wendell Holmes wrote to Charles Strahan (January 26, 1886): "I always *felt* rather than thought that there was a genuine ring and life-like spirit in that lyric, 'Maryland, My Maryland,'" closing his letter with the statement that he regretted that he could not have written a song devoted to his own State that "would be as musical and as effective on what was for me the right side in the armed controversy." Holmes showed no evidence of injured feelings in his generous praise of the Southern song; and it has been prominently published by J. C. Derby that Randall once "admitted that his 'scum' rhymed with the anticipated 'come.'" On the other hand, Randall made poetical allowance for Holmes's "rag of treason" carried into battle by Southern "sons of Belial."

Randall early felt a passionate love of the heroic. Among the first lines he ever penned were those inspired by a lecture on Greece, which he heard when but a youth of sixteen. So averse in his later life was the poet to self-discussion that it will never be known how much of the art in poetry young Randall had then learned or in-

stinctively grasped. The innate talent, or "the art that plays its part," showed itself in his boyhood in "Marathon." Byron would not have been ashamed of some of these early lines; and very like the skill of Tennyson in bold Sir Bedivere's descent from the clanging cliffs and sharp-smitten crags to the level lake and the long glories of the winter moon is the youthful Randall's onomatopoetic art in the poem from which the following lines are taken:

"The dark Platean in the tide of war,
The comely Median in his battered car,
The bright Athenian dealing death and fear,
The Persian tottering on his shivered spear—
The cloven helmet, and the ghastly blow
The crimson scimitar, the stringless bow—
They smite their shields, they form, prepare, advance;
Sword splinters sword, lance crashes against lance—
Away! the golden lamp swings forth once more
And all is mute upon that dreamy shore."

About a year before his death, Randall wrote: "The influence of good women, young and old, has always been very profound in forming my character and bringing forth the poetic faculty or inspiration." Then follows a beautiful tribute to his mother as the first and best of them all. Frequently, in his poems of love and sentiment, his devotion to the inspiring subject of his passion was idealized and identified with the most exalted religious contemplation. Especially is this seen in the poems "Eidoion" and "Anima."

In his poems of a religious nature, Randall strikes all the keys of human faith from earth to heaven. While in Poe's "Israfel" we have a song of immortality that is gifted with supernal beauty attuned to heavenly contemplation, except through the person of the singer, it is almost apart from the thought of fellow mortals in their earthly pilgrimage. With something less of lyric beauty, but more of love of man, Randall's fugitive and uncollected verses carried into the home thoughts that made the mother clip them for her scrap-book from whatever source they chanced to come. Children and their elders heard them in hundreds of Southern homes, but rarely knew who wrote them; for in the numerous copies found thus preserved a simple "R."—sometimes not even that—was the only indication of their authorship.

James Ryder Randall was born in Baltimore, January 1, 1839. He was a direct descendant of the René Leblanc immortalized in "Evangeline." René's daughter Marguerite married, in Maryland, Cyprian Dupuis, a fellow-Acadian exile, and their daughter married

William Hooper, who was descended from the Massachusetts family represented in the signing of the Declaration of Independence—an unusual union of Catholic Acadian and New England Puritan. This William Hooper and his wife were the grandparents of the poet, who was also descended on the paternal side from the family of Lord Archbishop Killen of Dublin, and Christopher Randall, founder of Randallstown, Maryland, again a union of Catholic and Protestant in an age observing strict religious affiliations.*

The early training of James Ryder Randall was entrusted to Professor Joseph H. Clarke, in Baltimore, who had previously taught the youthful Edgar Allan Poe in Richmond. From Baltimore young Randall went to Georgetown College, and as a student there attracted considerable attention by some remarkably mature lines which were published in the *Evening Star* of Washington, District of Columbia. From Georgetown College, Randall traveled through Florida, the West Indies, and South America. Thence he went to New Orleans, and shortly afterward was persuaded to take the chair of English in the once flourishing Poydras College at Pointe Coupée, Louisiana. Here, after reading the news of the clash between citizens of Baltimore and Massachusetts troops on their way to invade Virginia, "Maryland's sister State," he was inspired to write his most famous battle-hymn; while adding a personal touch to the intensity of his feelings was the fact that the first citizen to fall in the fight was an intimate friend and college mate. "My Maryland" was written in an inspired hour of the sleepless night that followed, and the spirited verses of the youth of twenty-two became not only the war-song of the Confederacy, but were destined to outlive the cause evoking them and become the world-known march of a reunited nation. The author sprang into fame as the hero of the hour in the South, and abroad he was welcomed into the world of poets. He received a letter from a member of the family of Lord Byron, urging him to visit London and begging for a manuscript copy of the poem. A beautiful Russian girl of high rank deemed it an honor to have met a friend of the poet, and after singing the hymn she gave him this message: "When you see your friend who wrote that, tell him you heard it sung by a Russian girl who lives in Archangel, north of Siberia, and learned to sing it there."

Distances were great and the mails uncertain in the South at that time, and although Randall's verses traveled rapidly, his name did not at once go northward with them. "Maryland, My Maryland" was published anonymously in Baltimore and a copy was read to the poet's mother, who, dwelling in her heart upon her son's achieve-

*Genealogy given by Mrs. Hester Dorsey Richardson of Baltimore.

ments in verse, said immediately of the lines: "Oh! that they had been my boy's!" In Baltimore, they were soon set to music by Mr. H. C. Wagner to the tune of "Ma Normandie"; then by the Misses Cary to "Lauriger Horatius," which air was changed to its original "Tannenbaum, O Tannenbaum" by Charles Ellerbrock, a young German music teacher. The music of "Lauriger Horatius" and the words of "My Maryland" were taken to the publisher by Miss Rebecca Lloyd Nicholson (a grand-niece of Francis Scott Key), who, because her father was "a Union man," dared to do it when others feared confinement in Fort McHenry or in Federal prisons. Miss Nicholson was a granddaughter of Judge Joseph Hopper Nicholson, who first published "The Star-Spangled Banner" and who was a brother-in-law of its author. The original manuscript of Key's poem was owned by Miss Nicholson's father at the time she procured the publication in musical form of Maryland's second notable contribution to the world's famous battle-hymns.

Not long after writing "Maryland, My Maryland"—which was almost immediately followed by another war-poem, "There's Life in the Old Land Yet"—Randall arrived in New Orleans. As the war had begun, he applied for enlistment in the Confederate service; but, after medical examination, the role of a Tyrtæus was all that was permitted him; he had eleven hemorrhages of the lungs, was found to be unable to endure the hardships of campaigning, and was mustered out.

He was a romantic youth and was possibly over-idolized by the fair sex.* When he was not writing battle-hymns he was inditing softer strains, now to "Ma Belle Créole," now to a "Damsel of Mobile" or other gentle fancies of the passing hour. It is just possible that "Margherita," one of the most remarkable musical fantasies in English poetry, was his only sentimental ballad that was wholly the result of fancy without a mortal form as the exciting cause. One of his love-lyrics, however, which the reader is left to discover among the others in his volume of poems, subtly strikes a note of finality. In a railway coach, near the close of the war, he borrowed a newspaper from a young lady. It is not recorded whether he really wanted the paper or that he ever read it; but it is on record that the young lady, the daughter of General Marcus C. M. Hammond of South Carolina and a stranger to him then, subsequently became his wife; while the newspaper was the Augusta *Chronicle*, with

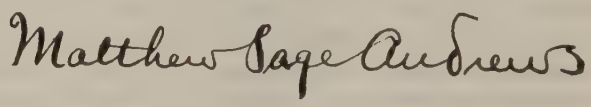
*Forty-seven years later, Randall's aged but practical friend, Senator William Pinkney Whyte, expressed to the writer of the foregoing, when Randall last visited Baltimore, his impatience at the poet's "persistence in accepting thank-you invitations to lecture to women's clubs when he could have put his talks on a financial basis for his material support."

which Randall was so long connected as Washington correspondent and as editor.

For many years Mr. Randall was secretary to Congressman William H. Fleming of Georgia, and then to Senator Joseph E. Brown. During this time he was brought into close contact with prominent men. His letters to the *Chronicle* make interesting reading to-day, and were widely quoted at the time. Occasionally his true poetic nature would, in some chance time taken from his conscientious application to clerical duties, break forth into verse, as in "Arlington" or "Resurgam." In these later years he met General Anson McCook, of distinguished services on the Union side, who advised him never to publish a volume of his verse, saying: "If I could go down to posterity with 'My Maryland' in one hand and 'Arlington' in the other, I would let everything else go."

Besides the Augusta *Chronicle,* Mr. Randall was connected with other papers from time to time; and, absurd as it may seem, this true poetic genius assumed the editorship of a paper entitled *The Anniston Hot Blast.* This was a journal begun in a new mining and manufacturing town in Alabama. To this place Randall, weary with the struggle for existence in Augusta, was allured by the seductive representations that a few more years of drudgery in a veritable El Dorado would pave the way to competence and comfort for the rest of his days. He was soon undeceived.

In 1907 he was invited by his native State and city to re-visit the home of his childhood. Upon his accepting the invitation, he was made the central figure of a home-coming week of festivities; and it was on this visit that he met a friend, Miss Lilian McGregor Shepherd, who was at last able to induce, or well-nigh compel, the recalcitrant bard seriously to begin to collect his poems for publication. To her were penned his last words of longing for his beloved State of Maryland, written from Augusta and received by her the day of his death, January 14, 1908.



AN INCIDENT IN THE SENATE

From a letter to the Augusta *Chronicle*, Washington, June 19, 1881.

The Weather Bureau prophet never knows when a cyclone is at hand and never has had the luck or skill to fling out a storm signal in advance of the wrath to come. It is the same thing here at the Capitol. The man does not live, from Sam Ward to the youngest page, who can forecast when a row is to spring up, cyclone like, in the Senate or the House. It is true that Senators Vance and Blaine contrived yesterday to illuminate some lively talk on school books, but this was not convulsive beyond the ordinary. It is true that this primer palaver touched Voorhees to the quick and gave him an opportunity to make a really eloquent, if somewhat volcanic, speech, in which he poured the fires of Etna and the lava of Vesuvius upon Brother Blaine and his fellow Radicals. This was exciting and sprightly, for the Senate, but not without precedents of frequency. None of these things superadded to Beck's heavy blows upon Morrill, an old-womanly man who takes punishment with sanctimonious self-sufficiency, petticoated with cant—none of these, I say, prepared the most experienced observer for the grand explosion that was to follow between Conkling and Lamar. The New York Senator, politically, is the most offensive of the human race. He is, either by nature or acquirement, or both, a bully and a phrase-maker. His manner to Democratic Senators is haughty beyond the power of language to express. It must, in the language of the side-show, "be seen to be appreciated." He has a cold, contemptuous glare of the cruel grey eyes, a gesture that suggests the ring-master, a wrinkle of the nose that intimates the indecency of any fellow creature remaining erect in his imperial presence, the general attitude of a person who fancies himself the Supreme Being, and a comprehensive air of pride incarnate inspired by the divinity of hate. His language is the most stately, the most elaborate, and the most cynical that flows from mortal lips by improvisation. You may well understand the power of these marvelously developed gifts, when they are backed by a capacious and thoroughly equipped intellect—an intellect massive and

alert, practical and cultivated, expert by long training, and morbidly imperative by reason of many successes. When the Democrats were in the minority, he had them somewhat at his mercy, until General Gordon brought him to the *ultima ratio* of many gentlemen and some Senators. Since that time, the New Yorker has been icily polite to the Georgian and reasonably courteous, for him, to everybody else in the Senate. Now and then, he would wanton on the perilous verge of mortal insult, but extricate himself by an ingenuity of statement that never failed, while it left a sting behind, to save the epidermis of the assailing gladiator. The fact of a Democratic majority in the Senate has been gall and wormwood to Mr. Conkling, and, in his lordly, opera-bouffe manner, he evidently resents it as a personal indignity. Brooding over this intolerable grievance, which so often galled his self-conceit, he had accumulated an amount of explosive material that only needed an accidental opportunity to precipitate a disturbance. About half past one o'clock this morning, suddenly, unexpectedly, like magic, the emergent chance was created out of the simplest materials, and the catastrophe, in the fiercest dramatic form, culminated. If, a few days ago, anybody had predicted that Mr. Lamar would forge the thunderbolt that dissolved in Mr. Conkling's hand and may politically destroy him, such a person would have been laughed at. Mr. Lamar has sat here for many days, in quiet retirement, taking no part in the debate. He is a man of genius, who has inspirations and listens to supernatural voices. He is as much a master of language as Mr. Conkling, but possesses a trait or virtue totally lacking in the New Yorker—modesty. He never mouths, or rants, or poses for the admiration of the ladies' gallery. He is serious, learned, eloquent, honest, eccentric sometimes, the soul of honor, intrepidity personified—a public man who, moulded like Phocian, believes with Shakespeare that

> A jewel in a ten-times barred-up chest
> Is a bold spirit in a loyal breast.
> My honor is my life, both grow in one,
> Take honor from me and my life is done.
> Then, good my lord, this honor let me try—
> In it I live and for it will I die!

A man so constituted is plainly the last person for a braggart to attack in the Senate or out of it. That Mr. Conkling should have exercised his worst form of insult upon Mr. Lamar was the sublimity of madness or of audacity. That the insult should have taken the shape of compelling retort that leaves one man prostrate and the other immeasurably triumphant above him was either heroic or insane. I think Mr. Conkling had a touch of lunacy which, at midnight, he miserably mistook for valor. You have already, on the wings of the lightning, been made acquainted with the main incidents and exact words that, over the English-speaking world at least, have "made history" for two extraordinary men. I need not repeat the scene. The charge of bad faith; its indignant repulse; the lying brand; the bucket-shop retort through all the gamut of the subjunctive mood—these things I need not reproduce. But it must be recorded that when Lamar, with absolute calm and awful deliberation, said: "I have only to say to the Senator from New York that he understood me correctly. I said precisely the words he understood me to say. My language was harsh and unparliamentary, and I beg pardon of the Senate for it; but my language was *such as no good man would deserve and no brave man would bear.*" Mr. Conkling lay like Goliath in the dust, with a great gash upon his brazen front, while over him the Mississippian stood in very majesty, the avenger of innocence upon mammoth brutality.

What will come of it I know not. In spite of Mr. Conkling's supra-mortal insolence, there abides in him a streak of well-developed Pickwickianism. The ingenious use of that salutary trait may pave the way for a quasi reconcilement. Lamar will not budge an inch toward compromise of any kind. He simply awaits Mr. Conkling's pleasure, when that gentleman gathers his fragments together and has restored his mental faculties to coherence or something akin to it. Before this reaches you, some conclusion may be arrived at that is not now apparent.

MARYLAND MY MARYLAND

All Poems are from 'Maryland, My Maryland, and other Poems.' Copyright, 1908, John Murphy Company, Baltimore, and used here by permission of the publishers.

The despot's heel is on thy shore,
Maryland!
His torch is at thy temple door,
Maryland!
Avenge the patriotic gore
That flecked the streets of Baltimore,
And be the battle queen of yore,
Maryland! My Maryland!

Hark to a wand'ring son's appeal,
Maryland!
My mother State! to thee I kneel,
Maryland!
For life and death, for woe and weal,
Thy peerless chivalry reveal,
And gird thy beauteous limbs with steel,
Maryland! My Maryland!

Thou wilt not cower in the dust,
Maryland!
Thy beaming sword shall never rust,
Maryland!
Remember Carroll's sacred trust,
Remember Howard's warlike thrust—
And all thy slumberers with the just,
Maryland! My Maryland!

Come! 'tis the red dawn of the day,
Maryland!
Come with thy panoplied array,
Maryland!
With Ringgold's spirit for the fray,
With Watson's blood at Monterey,
With fearless Lowe and dashing May,
Maryland! My Maryland!

Come! for thy shield is bright and strong,
Maryland!
Come! for thy dalliance does thee wrong,
Maryland!
Come to thine own heroic throng,
That stalks with liberty along,
And chant the dauntless slogan-song
Maryland! My Maryland!

Dear Mother! burst the tyrant's chain,
Maryland!
Virginia should not call in vain,
Maryland!
She meets her sisters on the plain—
"*Sic semper!*" 'tis the proud refrain
That baffles minions back again,
Maryland! My Maryland!

I see the blush upon thy cheek,
Maryland!
But thou wast ever bravely meek,
Maryland!
But lo! there surges forth a shriek
From hill to hill, from creek to creek—
Potomac calls to Chesapeake,
Maryland! My Maryland!

Thou wilt not yield the Vandal toll,
Maryland!
Thou wilt not crook to his control,
Maryland!
Better the fire upon thee roll,
Better the blade, the shot, the bowl,
Than crucifixion of the soul,
Maryland! My Maryland!

I hear the distant thunder hum,
Maryland!
The Old Line's bugle, fife, and drum,
Maryland!

She is not dead, nor deaf, nor dumb—
Huzza! she spurns the Northern scum!
She breathes! she burns, she'll come! she'll come!
Maryland! My Maryland!

PELHAM

Just as the Spring came laughing through the strife
With all its gorgeous cheer;
In the bright April of historic life
Fell the great cannoneer.

A wondrous lulling of a hero's breath
His bleeding country weeps;
Hushed in the alabaster arms of Death,
Our young Marcellus sleeps.

Nobler and grander than the child of Rome
Curbing his chariot steeds,
The knightly scion of a Southern home
Dazzled the land with deeds.

Gentlest and bravest in the battle's brunt,
The champion of the Truth
He won his banner in the very front
Of our immortal youth.

A clang of sabres 'mid Virginian snow,
The fiery pang of shells—
And there's a wail of immemorial woe
In Alabama dells.

The pennon droops that led the sacred band
Along the crimson field;
The meteor blade sinks from the nerveless hand
Over the spotless shield.

We gazed and gazed upon that beauteous face,
While 'round the lips and eyes,
Couched in their marble slumber, flashed the grace
Of a divine surprise.

O mother of a blessed soul on high!
Thy tears may soon be shed—
Think of thy boy with princes of the sky,
Among the Southern dead.

How must he smile on this dull world beneath,
Favored with swift renown;
He with the martyr's amaranthine wreath
Twining the victor's crown!

WHY THE ROBIN'S BREAST IS RED

The Saviour, bowed beneath his cross,
Clomb up the dreary hill,
While from the agonizing wreath
Ran many a crimson rill.
The brawny Roman thrust him on
With unrelenting hand—
Till, staggering slowly 'mid the crowd,
He fell upon the sand.

A little bird that warbled near,
That memorable day,
Flitted around and strove to wrench
One single thorn away;
The cruel spike impaled his breast,
And thus, 'tis sweetly said,
The Robin wears his silver vest
Incarnadined with red.

Ah Jesu! Jesu! Son of Man!
My dolour and my sighs
Reveal the lesson taught by this
Winged Ishmael of the skies.
I, in the palace of delight,
Or caverns of despair,
Have plucked no thorns from Thy dear brow,
But planted thousands there!

FAR OUT AT SEA

Far out at sea! far out at sea!
The winged wind warbles melody;
The billows fringe their curls of foam,
And tremble back with thoughts of home;
I stream my soul on every crest
That gambols onward to the west—
'Tis freighted, love, with hope and thee.

Far out at sea! far out at sea!
The petrels soar the surge with glee;
The livelong day they skim the air,
The livelong night they slumber there—
Wild, wand'ring souls of those who sleep
Beneath the coral-citied deep,
And from the shades heart-break to be
Far out at sea! far out at sea!

Far out at sea! far out at sea!
The bird-like bark flew merrily!
The day-god slept—his bride on high
Wove isles of light o'er wave and sky;
On, on we flew, and from the wake
What moon-enameled beauties break!
A vapory veil of silver bars
Entangled in a sky of stars—
Supernal visions came to me
Far out at sea! far out at sea!

Far out at sea! far out at sea!
The raven screams upon the lee;
The storm-king rides the lightning now,
And wreck and ruin bare his brow—
A gallant ship, descending fast,
Is whirled beneath the waters vast,
And with her in the whelming tide,
The loveliest child that ever died
In faith, in purity and pride!

One fair white arm upon her breast,
One sunny curl lost from the rest,
And there she lies—sweet Melanie!
Far out at sea! far out at sea!

Far out at sea! far out at sea!
And art thou happy, Melanie?
Oh! in thy grand and mystic grave
Beneath the blue, blue tropic wave,
Dost see, sweet child, the diamond blaze
Upon the Nereid of old days—
Dost hear the choral song of shells,
More musical than golden bells—
And in thy ocean jubilee
Dost think of him who loveth thee?
Far out at sea! far out at sea!

FLOURINE

Little Flourine, with golden hair,
And rose-red cheeks and features fair,
You shall be the New Year's Queen,
Little Flourine!

Pretty Flourine, with the bright-blue eyes,
Whose tints are caught from the azure skies;
Airy, fairy, with heavenly mien,
Pretty Flourine!

Dainty Flourine, with your dazzling grace,
And the beautiful wonders of your face;
May you have nothing but roses to glean,
Dainty Flourine!

Darling Flourine, may Time bring to you
Days full of music and skies full of blue—
Bliss that the saints and the angels have seen,
Darling Flourine!

RESURGAM

Teach me, my God, to bear my cross
  As Thine was borne;
Teach me to make of every loss
  A crown of thorn.
Give me Thy patience and Thy strength
  With every breath,
Until my lingering days at length
  Shall welcome death.

Dear Jesus, I believe that Thou
  Did'st rise again,
Instil the spirit in me now
  That conquers pain.
Give me the grace to cast aside
  All vain desire,
All the fierce throbbing of a pride
  That flames like fire.

Give me the calm that Dante wrought
  From sensual din;
The peace that errant Wolsey sought
  From stalwart sin.
I seek repose upon Thy breast
  With child-like prayer;
Oh let me find the heavenly rest
  And mercy there!

If I have, in rebellious ways,
  Profaned my life;
If I have filled my daring days
  With worldly strife;
If I have shunned the narrow path
  In crime to fall—
Lead me from th' abode of wrath
  And pardon all!

Banished from Thee! where shall I find
For my poor soul
A safe retreat from storms that blind,
Or seas that roll?
Come to me, Christ, ere I, forlorn,
Sink 'neath the wave,
And on this blessed Easter morn
A lost one save!

PEACE TO THE DEAD

Peace to the dead; though the skies are chill,
And the Norse wind waileth coarse and shrill.
Peace to the dead! though the living shake
The globe, with their brawling battle-quake.
Peace to the dead! though peace is not
In the regal dome or the pauper cot.
Peace to the dead; there's peace, we trust,
With the pale dreamers in the dust.

Roses and pansies guard them well,
Tinging triumphant immortelle;
Minions of Doubt, we bend the knee
To the kings and queens of mystery.
Storm and sunshine, mist and rain,
Do ye mock at their marble doors in vain?
And ye, sepulchral cliffs of night,
Do ye rise to appeal their shadowed sight?
O Darkness! thy mission is not just
To the pale dreamers in the dust.

Peace to the dead! afar and near,
In folds of satin or beggar's bier;
Whether they sleep in the kirk-yard ground,
Or bleach in the gullied seas profound;
Garnered by Time's dull scimitar,
Or cleft in the scarlet fields of war;
Godless is he who breaketh the crust
O'er the pale dreamers in the dust.

EIDOLON

Ah, sweet-eyed Christ! Thy image smiles
  In its Cathedral cell,
Shrined in the heaven-enamored arms
  Of her who never fell;
And if my phantom eyes implore
  A more benignant beam,
'Tis a nepenthe I would crave
  For a memorial dream!

Dear Leonie! here did'st thou kneel
  That musky summer noon,
As the zephyrs kissed in ecstasy
  The dimpled cheeks of June—
As the sunlight drifted o'er thy brow
  A golden wave of grace,
Bright blending with the miracles
  Of that angelic face.

Adorably Madonna-like,
  By this communion rail,
Thy raptured face, though rich with youth,
  Was spirit-lit and pale;
And oh, those opulent blue eyes,
  Those Meccas of despair—
They, they were glorious Eden-isles
  Lost in a lake of prayer!

Saint Leonie! I saw thee flit
  Gazelle-like to the street,
And pure, melodious angels led
  Thy dainty, tinkling feet;
My rebel thoughts were petrel-winged,
  Attendant upon thee,
Chasing thy loved and lissome shape
  As Arabs of the sea.

Long did I love thee, *belle Créole,*
As Gebirs love the sun,
And in the temple of my soul
Thou wast the eidolon;
Long did I love thee, *belle Créole,*
Where corsair billows rise,
And where the silver planets soar
In unfamiliar skies!

Dark Corcovado! did I not,
With heart and soul aflame,
Carve on thy broad, monarchal brow
Her wildly-worshipped name—
Watching the homeward ships scud by
Before the nimble breeze,
Till memory with them wept away
Beyond the tropic seas!

Years, years had died, and once again
I saw the spires of home;
Then, armed with an undying hope,
I stood beneath this dome.
But not within the pillared aisle,
Nor by the sacred sign,
Could my bewildered eyes behold
The loveliness of thine.

The sad November days had come,
And eagerly I fled
To find thee where the maidens deck
The kingdoms of the dead;
I found thee—yes, I found thee, love,
Beneath the willow tree—
With marble cross and immortelle
And one word—"Leonie!"

JOHN RANDOLPH

[1773—1833]

PHILIP ALEXANDER BRUCE

JOHN RANDOLPH of Roanoke was born in King George County, Virginia, June 2, 1773. He was fourth in descent from William Randolph, who, emigrating to the colony in the previous century, accumulated a handsome fortune and founded a family of extraordinary distinction. John Randolph traced straight back to Pocahontas, a fact of which he never ceased to boast. "I am sprung from a race," he once exclaimed in Congress, "who were never known to forget a friend or forgive a foe." His early years were passed at two of the most interesting mansions then standing in Virginia, namely, Cawsons and Matoax. When Randolph was only two and a half years old, his father died, but his place was supplied by the accomplished St. George Tucker, a native of Bermuda, whom Mrs. Randolph married early in her widowhood. Mrs. Tucker, who died in 1788, lived long enough to impress herself deeply on the heart of her celebrated son. She was a woman of great personal beauty and charm, of vigorous intellect and sprightly wit. "She alone knew me," he often exclaimed in after life; and with deep feeling he would add, "The lessons taught me by my dear and revered mother at her knee have been of more value to me than all I have learned from my preceptors and compeers."

There was something in the spirit of Randolph's early years that recalls Byron's vehement youth; for instance, he is known to have swooned away in a passion before he was four years of age. Like Byron, too, he evinced, in his boyhood, no desire to take part in athletic sports, or strenuous open-air diversions. Almost from the time he first learned to read, he was in the daily habit of passing many hours in the closet at Matoax where the books were kept. Here, like Dickens at the same age, he devoured every English classic intelligible to a precocious boy. The Matoax library contained a full collection of the English novelists and essayists, and also translations of numerous French and Spanish histories and romances. Before he had reached his twelfth year he had read, until he knew by heart, 'Robinson Crusoe,' 'Gulliver,' 'Tom Jones,' 'The Vicar of Wakefield,' Thomson's 'Seasons,' Shakespeare, 'The Arabian Nights,' Voltaire's 'Charles the Twelfth,' 'Don Quixote,' 'Gil Blas,' 'Orlando

Furioso,' and Plutarch. So lasting was their impression on his memory that his aptest illustrations for his great speeches were invariably drawn from these classical works.

When Arnold invaded Virginia, Mrs. Tucker retired, with her children, to Bizarre, the family estate, situated near Farmville. It was while there, on this occasion, that Randolph for the first time visited the plantation at Roanoke which he had inherited from his father, and which was always to be associated with his name. As he and his mother rode over the property, she gave him advice which he never forgot. "When you get to be a man," said she, "you must not sell your land; keep your land, and your land will keep you." Throughout his long life he never ceased to commend the law of primogeniture, or to admire aristocracy resting upon landed possessions.

Coming of age in 1794, Randolph assumed charge of his extensive landed estate; but it required many years of economical management to clear it of its share of the heavy debt left by his father. Matoax having been sold to reduce this debt, he took up his residence at Bizarre, the home of his brother Richard. Richard was reputed to be the most promising young man in Virginia, but his brilliant prospects were soon blasted by his involvement in a strange and obscure scandal, which proved fatal to his sensitive spirit. When he died, Randolph bravely took on himself all the responsibilities of the family head, but how deeply he was affected at the time was revealed in his conduct. A visitor at Bizarre who occupied the room below his testified that she never waked in the night that she did not hear him moving about, sometimes striding across the floor, and exclaiming "Macbeth hath murdered sleep"; and she also stated that at midnight, ordering his horse to be saddled, he would career over the plantation with a loaded pistol in his hand—an incident that again reminds us of Byron's passionate and ungovernable youth.

It was in full harmony with the custom of that day that a young man like Randolph, of conspicuous talents, and possessing a large fortune and a powerful family connection, should, soon after his majority, offer himself for public office. But the ordinary course was first to become a candidate for the State Legislature. With characteristic audacity and self-confidence, Randolph announced his candidacy for Congress, a step all the bolder because he would have to ascend the hustings as the opponent of Patrick Henry, the most renowned of orators.

It was only recently that the famous Resolutions of 1798 had been passed by the Virginia Legislature as a protest against the Alien and Sedition Acts. These Resolutions had the emphatic approval of Randolph, as a follower of Jefferson and Madison. Henry,

whose speech came first, declared that the General Assembly, in adopting the Resolutions, had gone beyond its powers. What right had a State Legislature to pass on a national statute? Randolph sarcastically twitted his great antagonist with inconsistency. Were not these very Acts that "squinting towards monarchy" which the old orator had denounced in the Constitutional Convention? Was he not the last man who should come forward to apologize for courses which he had so loudly prophesied and had so vehemently sought to render impossible?

Randolph was elected. True to his political faith, his first act in Congress was to oppose a bill authorizing the increase of the standing army. Having, during the debate, stigmatized the regulars as "ragamuffins," he was jostled in the theater by a party of officers to show their resentment of the opprobrious epithet. He promptly complained to the President of the insult. The slighting notice which Adams took of the crimination only served to inflame further the anger aroused by the incident among Randolph's party associates, and to confirm their belief that the Federalist Administration was using every opportunity, great or small, to strengthen the power of the Central Government at the expense of the power of the States.

But the hour of Federalism had struck. When Jefferson was chosen President, Randolph's reputation was so high that he was appointed chairman of the Ways and Means Committee, the most important in the House, which made him the spokesman of the new Administration and also of the Republican party in that body, and one of the most influential public men of the country. All the measures touching the acquisition of Louisiana, or its government after its purchase, were matured in this committee; and to Randolph is largely due the success marking the history of that great transaction from its beginning to its conclusion.

It was during this Administration that he was appointed manager of the proceedings in impeachment of Judge Chase, of the Supreme Court, who had been guilty of misconduct in his office. But Chase was acquitted, a fact which shook Randolph's influence with Jefferson and his Cabinet. That influence was further diminished by his bold opposition to the New England Company's assertion of ownership in an enormous tract of the Yazoo region, on the ground that they had purchased, without notice, the titles of the original fraudulent grantees. Madison and Gallatin had reported favorably to the company's claim; and it was also pressed by the company's chairman, Gideon Granger, the Postmaster-general. In the teeth of this powerful combination, Randolph denounced the Yazoo fraud in terms such as he alone could frame.

Nor was he fully in sympathy with some of the other measures

which the President, or members of his Cabinet, approved. Jefferson, for instance, suggested the use of force in retaliation for British impressment of American sailors; Randolph urged negotiation first; and should that fail, an embargo. Finally, largely through his advocacy, a limited non-importation bill, directed against British manufacturers, was passed. When, the following year, the embargo was proposed, he objected to it because he considered some of its provisions unwise; but it became a law, with all the consequences he had foreseen and deprecated.

Randolph disapproved of the War of 1812-'15. Before hostilities broke out, he opposed every step tending to widen the breach between England and America; and he always held that with a little forbearance peace might have been maintained. How disinterested he was in thus firmly breasting the wave of popular passion was shown by his defeat for Congress in 1815. The war had hardly ended, however, when he was urged to again become a candidate for Congress. His canvass resulted in his opponent's defeat, but his own triumph aroused in him no emotion of exultation. "I am a stricken deer," he wrote despondently, "and feel disposed to leave the herd."

The Republican party, founded by Jefferson, was still in office, but the purity of the original States' Rights doctrines had been profoundly modified by the demoralization of power through the defection of the Northern Democrats and the assaults of the Supreme Court. Randolph remained stanchly loyal to the party's original principles because he saw that in those principles, as they were enunciated at first, rested the only hope of safety for the South and its institutions within the Union. Not only did he oppose the reëstablishment of the United States Bank and the increase in the tariff rates as confirming dangerous precedents, and imposing hardships on the Southern States, but he threw himself with all the vehemence of his ardent spirit into the sectional conflict raised by the debates over the proposed Missouri Compromise. Had his advice been followed, the South would have been saved from the unspeakable calamities which overwhelmed her forty-five years later, for she would either have seceded in 1820, when secession was practicable, or she would then have secured a hold on the territories which could never have been loosened by the South or the North.

In 1822, Randolph spent the summer in England, a country which he knew in every aspect through books. All the local allusions by the great English writers—Shakespeare, Milton, Pope, Thomson, Byron and their compeers—were at his tongue's end. His sympathy with English life had from the start been assured by the similarity of that life in essential with life in Virginia, by the identity of spirit of English and Virginia family traditions, and by the substantial ho-

mogeneity of the two peoples. In London he met all who were most distinguished—dined with Miss Edgeworth, whom he flattered by his minute knowledge of her works, joked with Thomas Moore under the gallery of the House of Commons, and received extraordinary courtesies from prominent members of the nobility.

His antagonism to Clay on all the burning questions of that time—the war with Great Britain, the tariff laws, the Act for Internal Improvements—aroused in him a keen antipathy toward that statesman, which culminated in the most celebrated philippic in American history. Clay, as soon as Adams appointed him Secretary of State, had been charged with corruption. Randolph seized upon this groundless assertion to vent his spleen against both men, whom he greatly detested. "I was defeated horse, foot and dragoon," he exclaimed in the House in his most sarcastic tones, "cut up and clean broke down by the coalition of Blifil and Black George—by the combination unheard of till then, of the Puritan and the blackleg."

Clay promptly challenged him. The night before the duel came off the seconds found Randolph absorbed in Milton, and before he would permit them to speak of their errand he read aloud some of the noblest passages of that poet. On the field next day he fired his pistol into the air, after receiving his antagonist's bullet in his coat.

In 1826 Randolph occupied a seat in the Senate, but was defeated for reëlection by John Tyler. The following year his faithful district again returned him to Congress, where he became, as before, the leader of the opposition. But his health was now shattered, and at the end of his term, March, 1829, he decided to withdraw from public life. Without his knowledge and against his real wishes, he was soon chosen to be a member of the Convention of 1829-'30, of which he proved to be the most conspicuous personality, whether for brilliancy or eccentricity. Only a short time before he took his seat in the Convention, he had been appointed by Jackson to be Minister to Russia, a position which he held only for a year.

In the spring of 1832 his mind gave way, but after a few weeks his faculties suddenly recovered their strength. His interest in politics at once returned. He deeply resented Jackson's threat at this time to send ships and troops to Charleston to suppress the nullifiers. Expecting war, he publicly declared his determination to have his frail body buckled on his favorite horse, and to fight for the South to the last ditch. Lifted into his carriage, he traveled from county to county, everywhere calling on the people to support their brethren in Carolina.

Randolph now decided to visit England as the last hope of alleviating his maladies. On arriving in Philadelphia, he was too ill to embark. A physician was summoned. "How long have you been

sick, Mr. Randolph?" "I have been sick all my life," was the answer. For many hours before he died (June 24, 1833), he lay perfectly quiet; then, suddenly rousing up, exclaimed with great agitation, "Remorse! Remorse!"

Thus was quenched the most brilliant intellect which Virginia has produced; the greatest and most unhappy genius, excepting Poe, ever associated with her soil. Strangest of facts, the man who was looked upon as the quintessence of eccentricity was the only really consistent statesman of his age. The other representatives of the Virginia school, under the influence of practical expediency, or the relaxations of power, drifted away from the original principles of the States' Rights party. Randolph alone remained faithful to the end, sacrificing to his loyalty all hope of official promotion. He was the forerunner of Calhoun, and as such the first who, recognizing the antagonistic interest of the two sections, sought from the beginning to the end of his political life to erect a barrier for the South's protection by emphasizing the rights of the States.

Unlike Wirt, his only Southern contemporary in political life approaching him in literary power, Randolph left behind no single piece of work of a purely literary character. His productions were confined to speeches and letters. His speeches, too often discoursive and incohesive, have a literary flavor, reflecting a degree of classical culture that is without a parallel in American parliamentary history. Passages can be selected from them that for scintillating wit, corrosive invective, and overwhelming scorn, are unexcelled in the parliamentary history of any country. Admirable even when he addressed his first audience, his power of speech seemed to grow only more tense, simple, direct, and epigrammatic. Although necessarily lacking in some of the pungent qualities of his speeches, his letters show in almost equal degree that copiousness, choiceness, and aptness of language which is only to be obtained by a critical study of the great English classics from youth upward. Randolph was perhaps the most brilliant letter-writer of whom the old civilization of the South could boast.

Philip Alexander Bruce

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Life of John Randolph. By Henry Adams. Houghton, Mifflin and Company, 1882-1900.

Home Reminiscences of John Randolph of Roanoke. By Powhatan Bouldin. Richmond, Virginia, 1878.

Life of John Randolph. By Hugh A. Garland. D. Appleton and Company, 1851. 2 vols.

Letters of John Randolph to a Young Relative. Philadelphia, Carey, Lea and Blanchard, 1834.

Records of House of Representatives. 1799-1825, and 1827-1829.

Records of United States Senate for 1826.

REPLY TO MR. EVERETT

Extract from a Speech in the House of Representatives, February 1, 1828.

It is a great mistake to suppose that he [Randolph] had no method in his discourse. His was not a succession of loose thoughts and observations strung together by the commonplace rules of association, but the profound method of a mind of genius, that looked into the very heart of a subject, and drew forth the *law* of association by which its *ideas* are bound together in an adamantine chain of cause and effect. Like the musician who draws from a simple ballad an infinite variety of harmonies, in all of which may be traced the elements of the original song—so, Randolph, in his speeches, expanded the original thought into a rich and copious variety; but every illustration was suggested by the subject; each episode tended to accomplish the purpose he had in view. Let the following extract from the speech now under consideration, suffice as a specimen of his large acquaintance with history, profound knowledge of human character, his copiousness of illustration and the rapidity, beauty, strength, and purity of his style. After reviewing the observations of other speakers that had gone before him, suggested by a former speech of his, he comes directly to the subject in hand—the unfitness of the present rulers: we wanted statesmen who could wisely direct the helm of State, and not orators to make speeches, or logicians to write books.—Garland's 'Life of John Randolph.'

Sir, I deny that there is any instance on record, in history, of a man not having military capacity being at the head of any Government with advantage to that Government, and with

credit to himself. There is a great mistake on this subject. It is not those talents which enable a man to write books and make speeches, that qualify him to preside over a Government. The wittiest of poets has told us that

> All a rhetorician's rules
> Teach only how to name his tools.

We have seen professors of rhetoric, who could no doubt, descant fluently upon the use of these said tools, yet sharpen them to so wiry an edge as to cut their own fingers with these implements of their trade. Thomas à Becket was as brave a man as Henry the Second, and, indeed, a braver man —less infirm of purpose. And who were the Hildebrands, and the rest of the papal freebooters, who achieved victory after victory over the proudest monarchs and States of Christendom? These men were brought up in a cloister, perhaps, but they were endowed with that highest of all gifts of Heaven, the capacity to lead men, whether in the Senate or in the field. Sir, it is one and the same faculty, and its successful display has always received, and always will receive, the highest honors that man can bestow: and this will be the case, do what you will, cant what you may about military chieftains and military domination. So long as man is man, the victorious defender of his country will, and ought to receive, that country's suffrage for all that the forms of her government allow her to give.

A friend said to me not long since: "Why, General Jackson can't write." "Admitted." (Pray, Sir, can you tell me of any one that can write? for, I protest, I know nobody that can.) Then turning to my friend, I said: "It is most true that General Jackson cannot write," (not that he can't write his name or a letter, &c.) "because he has never been taught; but his competitor cannot write, because he was not teachable:" for he has had every advantage of education and study. Sir, the Duke of Marlborough, the greatest captain and negotiator of his age, which was the age of Louis the Fourteenth, and who may rank with the greatest men of any age, whose irresistible manners and address triumphed over every obstacle in council, as his military prowess and conduct did in the field—this great man could not spell, and was notoriously ignorant

of all that an under-graduate must know, but which it is not necessary for a man at the head of affairs to know at all. Would you have superseded him by some Scotch schoolmaster? Gentlemen forget that it is an able helmsmen we want for the ship of state, and not a professor of navigation or astronomy.

Sir, among the vulgar errors that ought to go into Sir Thomas Browne's book, this ought not to be omitted: that learning and wisdom are not synonymous, or at all equivalent. Knowledge and wisdom, as one of our most delightful poets sings—

> Knowledge and wisdom, far from being one,
> Have ofttimes no connection: Knowledge dwells
> In hearts replete with thoughts of other men;
> Wisdom in minds attentive to their own.
> Knowledge is proud that he has learned so much;
> Wisdom is humble that he knows no more.
> Books are not seldom talismans and spells,
> By which the magic art of shrewder wits
> Holds the unthinking multitude enchained.

And not books only, Sir. Speeches are not less deceptive. I not only consider the want of what is called learning, not to be a disqualification for the commander-in-chief in civil or military life; but I do consider the possession of too much learning to be of most mischievous consequence to such a character, who is to draw from the cabinet of his own sagacious mind, and to make the learning of others, or whatever other qualities they may possess, subservient to his more enlarged and vigorous views. Such a man was Cromwell; such a man was Washington: not learned, but wise. Their understandings were not clouded or cramped, but had fair play. Their errors were the errors of men, not of schoolboys and pedants. So far from the want of what is called education being a very strong objection to a man at the head of affairs, over-education constitutes a still stronger objection. (In the case of a lady it is fatal. Heaven defend me from an over-educated, accomplished lady! Yes, accomplished indeed; for she is *finished* for all the duties of a wife, or mother, or mistress of a family.) We hear much of military usurpation,

of military despotism, of the sword of a conqueror, of Cæsar, and Cromwell, and Bonaparte. What little I know of Roman history has been gathered chiefly from the surviving letters of the great men of that day, and of Cicero, especially; and I freely confess that if I had then lived, and had been compelled to take sides, I must, though very reluctantly, have sided with Cæsar, rather than have taken Pompey for my master. It was the interest of the House of Stuart—and they were long enough in power to do it—to blacken the character of Cromwell, that great, and, I must add, bad man. But, Sir, the devil himself is not so black as he is sometimes painted. And who would not rather have obeyed Cromwell than that self-styled Parliament, which obtained a title too indecent for me to name, but by which it is familiarly known and mentioned by all the historians from that day to this. Cromwell fell under a temptation, perhaps too strong for the nature of man to resist; but he was an angel of light, to either of the Stuarts, the one whom he brought to the block, or his son, a yet worse man, the blackest and foulest of miscreants that ever polluted a throne. It has been the policy of the House of Stuart and their successors—it is the policy of kings—to villify and blacken the memory and character of Cromwell. But the cloud is rolling away. We no longer consider Hume as deserving of the slightest credit. Cromwell "was guiltless of his country's blood;" his was a bloodless usurpation. To doubt his sincerity at the outset from his subsequent fall would be madness. Religious fervor was the prevailing temper and fashion of the times. Cromwell was no more of a fanatic than Charles the First, and not so much of a hypocrite. It was not in his nature to have signed the attainder of such a friend as Lord Strafford, whom Charles meanly, and selfishly, and basely, and cruelly, and cowardly repaid for his loyalty to him by an ignominious death—a death deserved indeed by Strafford for his treason to his country, but not at the hands of his faithless, perfidious master. Cromwell was an usurper —'tis granted; but he had scarcely any choice left him. His sway was every way preferable to that miserable corpse of a Parliament that he turned out, as a gentleman would turn off a drunken butler and his fellows; or the pensioned tyrant that succeeded him, a dissolute, depraved bigot and hypocrite, who

was outwardly a Protestant and at heart a Papist. He lived and died one, while pretending to be a son of the Church of England—aye, and sworn to it—and died a perjured man. If I must have a master, give me one whom I can respect, rather than a knot of knavish attorneys. Bonaparte was a bad man; but I would rather have had Bonaparte than such a set of corrupt, intriguing, public plunderers as he turned adrift. The Senate of Rome, the Parliament of England, "the Council of Elders and Youngsters," the Legislature of France—all made themselves first odious and then contemptible; and then comes an usurper; and this is the natural end of a corrupt civil government.

There is a class of men who possess great learning, combined with inveterate professional habits, and who *ipso facto,* or perhaps I should rather say *ipsis factis,* for I must speak accurately, as I speak before a professor, are disqualified for any but secondary parts anywhere, even in the cabinet. Cardinal Richelieu was what? A priest. Yes, but what a priest! Oxenstiern was a chancellor. He it was who sent his son abroad to see *quam parva sapientia regitur mundus*—with how little wisdom this world is governed. This administration seemed to have thought that even less than that little would do for us. The gentleman called it a strong, and able cabinet—second to none but Washington's first cabinet. I could hardly look at him for blushing. What, Sir! is Gallatin at the head of the Treasury—Madison in the department of State? The mind of an accomplished and acute dialectician, of an able lawyer, or if you please, of a great physician, may, by the long continuance of one pursuit—of one train of ideas—have its habits inveterately fixed, as effectually to disqualify the possessor for the command of the councils of a country. He may, nevertheless, make an admirable chief of a bureau—an excellent man of details, which the chief ought never to be. A man may be capable of making an able and ingenious argument on any subject within the sphere of his knowledge; but every now and then the master sophist will start, as I have seen him start, at the monstrous conclusions to which his own artificial reasoning had brought himself. But this was a man of more than ordinary natural candor and fairness of mind. Sir, by words and figures you

may prove just what you please; but it often and most generally is the fact, that, in proportion as a proposition is logically or mathematically true, so it is politically and commonsensically (or rather nonsensically) false. The talent which enables a man to write a book, or make a speech, has no more relation to the leading of an army or a senate, than it has to the dressing of a dinner. The talent which fits a man for either office is the talent for the management of men; a mere dialectician never had, and never will have it; each requires the same degree of courage, though of different kinds. The very highest degree of moral courage is required for the duties of government. I have been amused when I have seen some dialecticians, after assorting their words—"the counters of wise men, the money of fools"—after they had laid down their premises, and drawn, step by step, their deductions, sit down completely satisfied, as if the conclusions to which they had brought themselves were really the truth—as if it were irrefragably true. But wait until another cause is called, or till another court sits—till the bystanders and jury have had time to forget both argument and conclusion, and they will make you just as good an argument on the other side, and arrive with the same complacency at a directly opposite conclusion, and triumphantly demand your assent to this new truth. Sir, it is their business—I do not blame them. I only say that such a habit of mind unfits men for action and for decision. They want a client to decide for them which side to take; and the really great man performs that office. This habit unfits them for government in the first degree. The talent for government lies in these two things—sagacity to perceive, and decision to act. Genuine statesmen were never made such by mere training; *nascuntur non fiunt* education will form good business men. The maxim, *nascitur non fit*, is as true of statesmen as it is of poets. Let a house be on fire, you will soon see in that confusion who has the talent to command. Let a ship be in danger at sea, and ordinary subordination destroyed, and you will immediately make the same discovery. The ascendency of mind and of character rises and rises as naturally and as inevitably where there is fair play for it, as material bodies find their level by gravitation. Thus, a great logician, like a certain animal, oscillating between the hay on

different sides of him, wants some power from without, before he can decide from which bundle to make trial. Who believes that Washington could write as good a book or report as Jefferson, or make as able a speech as Hamilton? Who is there that believes that Cromwell would have made as good a judge as Lord Hale? No, Sir, these learned and accomplished men find their proper place under those who are fitted to command, and to command them among the rest. Such a man as Washington will say to Jefferson, do you become my Secretary of State; to Hamilton, do you take charge of my purse, or that of the nation, which is the same thing; and to Knox, do you be my master of horse. All history shows this; but great logicians and great scholars are, for that very reason, unfit to be rulers. Would Hannibal have crossed the Alps, when there were no roads—with elephants—in the face of the warlike and hardy mountaineers, and have carried terror to the very gates of Rome, if his youth had been spent in poring over books? Would he have been able to maintain himself on the resources of his own genius for sixteen years in Italy, in spite of faction and treachery in the Senate of Carthage, if he had been deep in conic sections and fluxions, and the differential calculus, to say nothing of botany and mineralogy, and chemistry? "Are you not ashamed," said a philosopher to one who was born to rule; "are you not ashamed to play so well upon the flute?" Sir, it was well put. There is much which becomes a secondary man to know—much that it is necessary for him to know, that a first-rate man ought to be ashamed to know. No head was ever clear and sound that was stuffed with book learning. You might as well attempt to fatten and strengthen a man by stuffing him with every variety and the greatest quantity of food. After all, the chief must draw upon his subalterns, for much that he does not know and cannot perform himself. My friend, Wm. R. Johnson, has many a groom that can clean and dress a race-horse, and ride him too, better than he can. But what of that? Sir, we are, in the European sense of the term, not a military people. We have no business for an army; it hangs as a dead weight upon the nation, officers and all. All that we hear of it is through pamphlets—indicating a spirit that, if I was at the head of affairs, I should very speedily put down. A state

of things that never could have grown up under a man of decision of character at the head of the State, or the Department—a man possessing the *spirit of command;* that truest of all tests of a chief, whether military or civil. Who rescued Braddock when he was fighting, *secundem artem,* and his men were dropping around him on every side? It was a Virginia militia major. He asserted in that crisis, the place which properly belonged to him, and which he afterwards filled in a manner we all know.

"To my constituents, whose confidence and love have impelled and sustained me under the effort of making it, I dedicate this speech."

ON THE GREEK CAUSE

Extract from a Speech delivered in the House of Representatives, January 24, 1824.

It is with serious concern and alarm, that I have heard doctrines broached in this debate, fraught with consequences more disastrous to the best interests of this people, than any that I ever heard advanced, during the five and twenty years since I have been honored with a seat on this floor. They imply, to my apprehension, a total and fundamental change of the policy pursued by this Government, *ab urbe condita*—from the foundation of the Republic, to the present day. Are we, sir, to go on a crusade, in another hemisphere, for the propagation of two objects as dear and delightful to *my* heart, as to that of any gentleman in this, or in any other assembly—Liberty and Religion—and, in the name of those holy words—by this powerful spell, is this nation to be conjured and beguiled out of the highway of heaven—out of its present comparatively happy state, into all the disastrous conflicts arising from the policy of European powers, with all the consequences which bow from them? Liberty and Religion, sir! Things that are yet dear, in spite of all the mischief that has been perpetrated in their name. I believe that nothing similar to this proposition is to be found in modern history, unless in the famous decree of the French National Assembly, which brought combined Europe against them, with its united strength; and after repeated struggles finally effected the

downfall of the French power. . . . I will respectfully ask the gentleman from Massachusetts, whether, in his very able and masterly argument—and he has said all that could be said on the subject, and much more than I supposed could have been said by any man in favor of his resolution—whether he, himself, has not furnished an answer to his speech. I had not the happiness myself to hear his speech, but a friend has read it to me—in one of the arguments in that speech, towards the conclusion, I think, of his speech, the gentleman lays down from Puffendorff, in reference to the honeyed words and pious professions of the Holy Alliance, that these are all surplusage, because nations are always supposed to be ready to do what justice and national law require. Well, sir, if this be so, why may not the Greeks presume—why are they not in this principle, bound to presume—that this Government is disposed to do all, in reference to them, that they ought to do, without any formal resolutions to that effect? I ask the gentleman from Massachusetts, whether the doctrine of Puffendorff does not apply as strongly to the resolution as to the declaration of the Allies—that is, if the resolution of the gentleman be indeed that almost nothing he would have us suppose, if there be not something *behind* this nothing, which divides this House, (not *horizontally*, as the gentleman has somewhat quaintly said—but *vertically*) into two unequal parties; one the advocate of a splendid system of crusades, the other, the friends of peace and harmony; the advocates of a *fireside policy*—for, as long as all is right at the fireside, there cannot be much wrong elsewhere—whether, I repeat, does not the doctrine of Puffendorff apply as well to the words of the resolution, as to the words of the Holy Alliance?

There was another remark that fell from the gentleman from Massachusetts—of which I shall speak, as I shall always speak of anything from that gentleman, with all the personal respect that may be consistent with the freedom of discussion. Among other cases forcibly put by the gentleman, why he would embark in this incipient crusade against Mussulmen, he stated this one—that they hold human beings as property. Aye, sir—and what says the Constitution of the United States on this point?—unless, indeed, that instrument is wholly to be excluded from consideration—unless it is to be

regarded as a mere useless parchment, worthy to be burnt, as was once actually proposed. Does not that Constitution give its sanction to the holding of human beings as property? Sir, I am not going to discuss the abstract question of liberty or slavery, or any other abstract question. I go for matters of fact. But I would ask gentlemen in this House, who have the misfortune to reside on the wrong side of a certain mysterious parallel of latitude, to take this question seriously into consideration—whether the Government of the United States is prepared to say, that the act of holding human beings as property, is sufficient to place the party so offending, under the ban of its high and mighty displeasure?

Sir, I am afraid, that along with some most excellent attributes and qualities—the love of liberty, jury trial, the writ of habeas corpus, and all the blessings of free government we have derived from our Anglo-Saxon ancestors, we have got not a little of their John Bull, or rather John Bull-dog spirit —their readiness to fight for anybody, and on any occasion. Sir, England has been for centuries the gamecock of Europe. It is impossible to specify the wars in which she has been engaged for contrary purposes; and she will with great pleasure, see us take off her shoulders the labor of preserving the balance of power. We find her fighting, now for the Queen of Hungary—then for her inveterate foe, the King of Prussia —now at war for the restoration of the Bourbons—and now on the eve of war with them for the liberties of Spain.

These lines on the subject, were never more applicable, than they have now become:

> Now Europe's balanced—neither side prevails,
> For nothing's left in either of the scales.

If we pursue the same policy, we must travel the same road, and endure the same burthens, under which England now groans. But, glorious as such a design might be, a President of the United States would, in my apprehension, occupy a prouder place in history, who, when he retires from office, can say to the people who elected him, I leave you without a debt, than if he had fought as many pitched battles as Cæsar, or achieved as many naval victories as Nelson. And what, sir, is debt? In an individual it is slavery. It is slavery of

the worst sort, surpassing that of the West India Islands, for it enslaves the mind, as well as it enslaves the body; and the creature who can be abject enough to incur and to submit to it, receives, in that condition of his being, perhaps an adequate punishment. Of course, I speak of debt, with the exception of unavoidable misfortune. I speak of debt caused by mismanagement, by unwarrantable generosity, by being generous before being just. I am aware that this sentiment was ridiculed by Sheridan, whose lamentable end was the best commentary upon its truth. No, sir; let us abandon these projects. Let us say to those seven millions of Greeks, "We defended ourselves when we were but three millions, against a power, in comparison with which the Turk is but a lamb. Go and do thou likewise." And so with the governments of South America. If, after having achieved their independence they have not valor to maintain it, I would not commit the safety and independence of this country in such a cause. I will, in both these, pursue the same line of conduct which I have ever pursued, from the day I took a seat in this House, in 1799, from which, without boasting, I challenge any gentleman to fix upon me any colorable charge of departure. Let us adhere to the policy laid down by the second as well as the first founder of our republic—by him who was the Camillus, as well as Romulus, of the infant State—to the policy of peace, commerce, and honest friendship with all nations, entangling alliances with none; for to entangling alliances we must come, if you once embark in policy such as this. And, with all my British predilections, I suspect I shall, whenever that question shall present itself, resist as strongly an alliance with Great Britain, as with any other power. We are sent here to attend to the preservation of the peace of *this* country, and not to be ready, on all occasions, to go to war, whenever anything like what, in common parlance, is termed a *turn up*, takes place in Europe. What, sir, is our condition? We are absolutely combatting shadows. The gentleman would have us to believe his resolution is all but nothing; yet, again, it is to prove omnipotent, and fill the whole globe with its influence. Either it is nothing, or it is something. If it be nothing, let it return to its original nothingness; let us lay it on the table, and have done with it at once; but, if it is that something,

which it has been on the other hand represented to be, let us beware how we touch it. For my part, I would sooner put the shirt of Nessus on my back than sanction these doctrines—doctrines such as I never heard from my boyhood till now. They go the whole length. If they prevail, there are no longer any Pyrenees; every bulwark and barrier of the Constitution is broken down; it is become *tabula rasa,* a *carte blanche,* for every one to scribble on it what he pleases.

A PREDICTION AS TO SLAVERY

Extract from a Speech in House of Representatives, January 31, 1824.

We are told that, along with the regulation of foreign commerce, the States have yielded to the general government in as broad terms the regulation of domestic commerce —I mean the commerce among the several States—and that the same power is possessed by Congress over the one as over the other. It is rather unfortunate for this argument that, *if it applies to the extent to which the power to regulate foreign commerce has been carried by Congress, they may prohibit altogether this domestic commerce,* as they have heretofore, under the other power, prohibited foreign commerce. But why put extreme cases? This government cannot go on one day without a mutual understanding and deference between the state and general governments. This government is the breath of the nostrils of the States. Gentlemen may say what they please of the preamble to the Constitution; but this Constitution is not the work of the amalgamated population of the then existing confederacy, but the offspring of the States; and however high we may carry our heads and strut and fret our hour, "dressed in a little brief authority," *it is in the power of the States to extinguish this government at a blow. They have only to refuse to send members to the other branch of the legislature,* or to appoint electors of President and Vice-President, and the thing is done. . . . I said that this government, if put to the test—a test it is by no means calculated to endure—as a government for the management of the internal concerns of this country, is one of the worst that can be conceived, which is determined by the fact that it is a

government not having a common feeling and common interest with the governed. I know that we are told—and it is the first time the doctrine has been openly avowed—that upon the responsibility of this House to the people, by means of the elective franchise, depends all the security of the people of the United States against the abuse of the powers of this government. But, sir, how shall a man from Mackinaw or the Yellowstone River respond to the sentiments of the people who live in New Hampshire? It is as great a mockery—a greater mockery than to talk to these colonies about their virtual representation in the British Parliament. I have no hesitation in saying that the liberties of the colonies were safer in the custody of the British Parliament than they will be in any portion of this country, if all the powers of the States as well as of the general government are devolved on this House. . . . We did believe there were some parchment barriers—no! what is worth all the parchment barriers in the world, that there was in the powers of the States some counterpoise to the power of this body; but if this bill passes, we can believe so no longer.

There is one other power which may be exercised in case the power now contended for be conceded, to which I ask the attention of every gentleman who happens to stand in the same unfortunate predicament with myself—of every man who has the misfortune to be and to have been born a slaveholder. If Congress possess the power to do what is proposed by this bill, they may not only enact a sedition law—for there is precedent—but *they may emancipate every slave in the United States*, and with stronger color of reason than they can exercise the power now contended for. And where will they find the power? They may follow the example of the gentlemen who have preceded me, and hook the power on to the first loop they find in the Constitution. *They might take the preamble, perhaps the war-making power;* or they might take a greater sweep, and say, with some gentlemen, that it is not to be found in this or that of the granted powers, but results from all of them, which is not only a dangerous but *the most* dangerous doctrine. Is it not demonstrable that slave labor is the dearest in the world, and that the existence of a large body of slaves is a source of danger? Suppose we are at

war with a foreign power, and freedom should be offered them by Congress as an inducement to them to take a part in it; or suppose the country not at war, at every turn of this federal machine, at every successive census, that interest will find itself governed by another and increasing power, which is bound to it neither by any common tie of interest or feeling. And if ever the time shall arrive, as assuredly it has arrived elsewhere, and in all probability may arrive here, that a coalition of knavery and fanaticism shall for any purpose be got up on this floor, *I ask gentlemen who stand in the same predicament as I do to look well to what they are now doing, to the colossal power with which they are now arming this government. The power to do what I allude to is, I aver, more honestly inferable from the war-making power than the power we are now about to exercise. Let them look forward to the time when such a question shall arise, and tremble with me at the thought that that question is to be decided by a majority of the votes of this House, of whom not one possesses the slightest tie of common interest or of common feeling with us.*

OUR AMERICAN EXPERIMENT

We are now making an experiment, which has never yet succeeded in any region or quarter of the earth, at any time, from the deluge to this day. With regard to the antediluvian times, history is not very full; but there is no proof that it has ever succeeded, even before the flood. One thing, however, we do know, that it has never succeeded since the flood; and, as there is no proof of its having succeeded before the flood, as *de non apparentibus et non existentibus eadem est ratio;* it is good logic to infer, that it has never succeeded, and never can succeed anywhere. In fact the *onus probandi* lies on them that take up the other side of the question; for although *post hoc ergo propter hoc* be not good logic, yet when we find the same consequences generally following the same events, it requires nothing short of the skepticism of Mr. Hume, to deny that there is no connection between the one and the other, whatever, metaphysically speaking, there may be of *necessary* connection between cause and effect.

I say, then, that we are here making an experiment which has never succeeded in any time or country, and which—as God shall judge me at the great and final day—I do in my heart believe will here fail; because I see and feel that it is now failing. It is an infirmity of my nature; it is constitutional; it was born with me; it has caused the misery (if you will) of my life; it is an infirmity of my nature to have an obstinate constitutional preference of *the true* over the *agreeable;* and I am satisfied, that if I had an only son, or, what is dearer, an only daughter—which God forbid!—I say, God forbid! for she might bring her father's gray hairs with sorrow to the grave; she might break my heart; but, worse than that, what! Can anything be worse than that? Yes, sir, I might break hers. I should be more sharp-sighted to her foibles than any one else. . . . . I say, in my conscience and in my heart, I believe that this experiment will fail. If it should not fail, blessed be the Author of all Good for snatching this people as a brand from the burning, which has consumed as stubble all the nations—all the fruitfulness of the earth—which, before us, have been cut down, and cast into the fire. Why cumbereth it the ground? Why cumbereth it? Cut it down! Cut it down!

I believe that it will fail; but, sir, if it does not fail, its success will be owing to the resistance of the usurpation of one man, by a power which was not unsuccessful in resisting another man, of the same name, and of the same race. And why is it that I think it will fail? Sir, with Father Paul, I may wish it to be perpetual, *esto perpetua,* but I cannot believe that it will be so. I do not believe that a free republican government is compatible with the apery of European fashions and manners—is compatible with the apery of European luxury and habits; but if it were, I do know that it is entirely incompatible with what I have in my hand—a base and baseless paper system of diplomacy, and a hardly better paper system of exchange.

Now, sir, John Quincy Adams, coming into power under these inauspicious circumstances, and with these suspicious allies and connections, has determined to become the apostle of liberty, of universal liberty, as his father was, about the time of the formation of the Constitution, known to be the

apostle of monarchy. It is no secret. I was in New York when he first took his seat as Vice-President. I recollect—for I was a schoolboy at the time—attending the lobby of Congress, when I ought to have been at school. I remember the manner in which my brother was spurned by the coachman of the then Vice-President, for coming too near the arms emblazoned on the scutcheon of the vice-regal carriage. Perhaps I may have some of this old animosity rankling in my heart, and, coming from a race who are known never to forsake a friend or forgive a foe, I am taught to forgive my enemies; and I do, from the bottom of my heart, most sincerely, as I hope to be forgiven; but it is *my* enemies, not the enemies of my country, for, if they come here in the shape of the English, it is my duty to kill them; if they come here in a worse shape—wolves in sheeps' clothing, it is my duty and my business to tear the sheep-skins from their backs, and, as Windham said to Pitt, open the bosom, and expose beneath the ruffled shirt the filthy dowlas. This language was used in the House of Commons, where they talk and act like men; where they eat and drink like men; and do other things like men, not like Master Bettys. Adams determined to take warning by his father's errors; but in attempting the perpendicular, he bent as much the other way. Who would believe that Adams, the son of the sedition-law President, who held office under his father—who, up to December 6, 1807, was the undeviating, stanch adherent to the opposition to Jefferson's administration, then almost gone—who would believe he had selected for his pattern the celebrated Anacharsis Cloots, "orator of the human race?" As Anacharsis was the orator of the human race, so Adams was determined to be the President of the human race, when I am not willing that he should be President of my name and race; but he is and must be, till the third day of March, eighteen hundred and—I forget when. He has come out with a speech and a message, and with a doctrine that goes to take the whole human family under his special protection. Now, sir, who made him his brother's keeper? Who gave him the President of the United States, the custody of the liberties, or the rights, or the interests of South America, or any other America, save, only, the United States of America, or any other country under the

sun? He has put himself, we know, into the way, and I say, God send him a safe deliverance, and God send the country a safe deliverance from his policy—from his policy.

RETORT ON McLANE

How easy, sir, would it be for me to reverse the gentleman's proposition, and to retort upon him that I would not, in return, take that gentleman's heart, however good it may be, if obliged to take such a head into the bargain! But, sir, I do not think this—I never thought it—and therefore I cannot be so ungenerous as to say it; for, Mr. Speaker, who made me a searcher of hearts? . . . And, sir, if I should ever be so unfortunate, through inadvertence or the heat of debate, as to fall into such an error (as that which Mr. McLane had made in his argument), I should, so far from being offended, feel myself under obligation to any gentleman who would expose its fallacy even by ridicule—as fair a weapon as any in the whole parliamentary armory. I shall not go so far as to maintain, with Lord Shaftesbury, that it is the unerring test of truth, whatever it may be of temper; but if it be proscribed as a weapon as unfair as it confessedly is powerful, what shall we say, I put it, sir, to you and to the House, to the poisoned arrow? to the tomahawk and the scalping-knife? Would the most unsparing use of ridicule justify a resort to these weapons? Was this a reason that the gentleman should sit in judgment on my heart? yes, sir, *my heart*—which the gentleman, whatever he may say in his heart, believes to be a frank heart, as I trust it is a brave heart! Sir, I dismiss the gentleman to his self-complacency—let him go—yes, sir, let him go and thank his God that he is not as *this* publican!

LABOR IS NECESSARY TO EXCELLENCE

From 'Letters of John Randolph to a Young Relative.'

GEORGETOWN, Jan. 8, 1807.

MY DEAR THEODORE,

I have just received your letter of the 4th, and wait, with great anxiety, for one from Dr. Haller, on the same subject.

Let me recommend to you another perusal of Lord Chatham's letters to his nephew. Attend to his precepts respecting *deportment* to inferiors, equals, and superiors. Let these words, also, be engraven on your mind—"Whatever you take from pleasure, amusement, or indolence, for these first few years of your life, will repay you a hundred fold in the pleasures, honours, and advantages, of all your remaining days." The candour with which you confess your indiscretion towards Dr. H., and your determination to avoid giving him future cause of displeasure, prevent my saying anything on that subject; except to caution you against any indulgence of *sudden* suggestions of your feelings. Some impulse of this kind, I must persuade myself, and not boyish conceit, would have impelled you to lay down a regular exercise of your school. Remember that *labour is necessary to excellence*. This is an eternal truth, although vanity cannot be brought to believe, or indolence to heed it. I am deeply interested in seeing you turn out a respectable man, in every point of view; and, as far as I could, have endeavoured to furnish you with the means of acquiring knowledge and correct principles, and manners, at the same time. Self-conceit and indifference are unfriendly, in an equal degree, to the attainment of knowledge, or the forming of an amiable character. The first is more offensive, but does not more completely mar all excellence than the last; and it is truly deplorable that both flourish in Virginia, as if it were their native soil. A petulant arrogance, or supine, listless indifference, marks the character of too many of our young men. They early assume the airs of manhood; and these premature men remain children for the rest of their lives. Upon the credit of a smattering of Latin, drinking grog, and chewing tobacco, these striplings set up for legislators and statesmen; and seem to deem it derogatory from their

manhood to treat age and experience with any degree of deference. They are loud, boisterous, overbearing, and dictatorial: profane in speech, low and obscene in their pleasures. In the tavern, the stable, or the gaming-house, they are at home; but, placed in the society of real gentlemen, and men of letters, they are awkward and uneasy; in all situations, they are contemptible.

The vanity of excelling in pursuits, where excellence does not imply merit, has been the ruin of many a young man. I should, therefore, be under apprehensions for a young fellow, who danced uncommonly well, and expect more hereafter from his heels than from his head. Alexander, I think, was reproached with singing well, and very justly. He must have misapplied the time which he devoted to the acquisition of so great a proficiency in that art. I once knew a young fellow who was remarkably handsome; he was highly skilled in dancing and fencing—an exceeding good skater, and one of the most dexterous billiard players and marksmen that I ever saw:—he sang a good song, and was the envy of every foolish fellow, and the darling of every silly girl, who knew him. He was, nevertheless, one of the most ignorant and conceited puppies whom I ever beheld. Yet, it is highly probable, that if he had not been enamoured of the rare qualities which I have enumerated, he might have made a valuable and estimable man. But he was too entirely gratified with his superficial and worthless accomplishments to bestow a proper cultivation on his mind.

Farewell, my dear Theodore. I am almost blind. May you, my son, prove all that can be desired by your sincere friend, and affectionate kinsman, JOHN RANDOLPH.

P.S.—Have you read all Miss Edgeworth's tales? Do you remember the story of Lame Jervas? It is hardly romance. I mean in this respect, that temperance, fidelity, and industry, have raised many a man, from as low beginnings, to respectability and affluence. The Lottery, too, is an admirable story, and, perhaps, a true one, except as to the happy conclusion. The little sketch which I have sent Buona, will serve to give you a rude idea of the waters of the Missouri. I hope you have not forgotten your geography. Do not neglect

that amusing and useful study. Write me often, and continue to send copies of your translations and exercises in French, as well as Latin.

THE CULTIVATION OF CORRECT PRINCIPLES

From 'Letters of John Randolph to a Young Relative.'

WASHINGTON, Dec. 30, 1821.

YOUR letter of the 20th has lain several days on my table. The difficulty of writing, produced by natural decay, is so increased by the badness of the materials furnished by our contractors, (who make the public pay the price of the best,) that I dread the beginning of a letter. At this time, it requires my nicest management to make this pen do legible execution.

So true is your remark, that I have tried to strike root into some of the people around me—one family, in particular; but I found the soil too stony for me to penetrate, and, after some abortive efforts, I gave it up—nor shall I ever renew the attempt, unless some change in the inhabitants should take place.

The medical gentleman, whom you suppose to be actuated by no friendly spirit towards you, made the observation in question, to one whom he believed well disposed towards you; and he mentioned it to another, of the same description, who told it to me. I do not believe that the remark extended beyond us three.

One of the best and wisest men I ever knew, has often said to me that a decayed family could never recover its loss of rank in the world, until the members of it left off talking and dwelling upon its former opulence. This remark, founded on a long and close observation of mankind, I have seen verified, in numerous instances, in my own connexions—who, to use the words of my oracle, "will never thrive, until they can become 'poor folks' ";—he added, "they may make some struggles, and with apparent success, to recover lost ground; they may, and sometimes do, get half way up again; but they are sure to fall back—unless, reconciling themselves to circumstances, they become in form, as well as in fact, poor folks."

The blind pursuit of wealth, for the sake of hoarding, is a species of insanity. There are spirits, and not the least worthy, who, content with an humble mediocrity, leave the field of wealth and ambition open to more active, perhaps more guilty, competitors. Nothing can be more respectable than the independence that grows out of self-denial. The man who, by abridging his wants, can find time to devote to the cultivation of his mind, or the aid of his fellow-creatures, is a being far above the plodding sons of industry and gain. His is a spirit of the noblest order. But what shall we say to the drone, whom society is eager to "shake from her encumbered lap?" —who lounges from place to place, and spends more time in "Adonizing" his person, even in a morning, than would serve to earn his breakfast?—who is curious in his living, a connoisseur in wines, fastidious in his cookery; but who never knew the luxury of earning a single meal? Such a creature, "sponging" from house to house, and always on the borrow, may yet be found in Virginia. One more generation will, I trust, put an end to them; and their posterity, if they have any, must work or steal, *directly*.

Men are like nations. One founds a family, the other an empire—both destined, sooner or later, to decay. This is the way in which ability manifests itself. They who belong to a higher order, like Newton, and Milton, and Shakespeare, leave an imperishable name. I have no quarrel with such as are content with their original obscurity, vegetate on from father to son; "whose ignoble blood has crept through *clod-poles* ever since the Flood"—but I cannot respect them. He who contentedly eats the bread of idleness and dependence is beneath contempt. I know not why I have run out at this rate. Perhaps it arises from a passage in your letter. I cannot but think you are greatly deceived. I do not believe the world to be so little clear-sighted.

What the "covert insinuations" against you, on your arrival at Richmond, were, I am at a loss to divine. I never heard the slightest disparagement of your moral character; and I know nobody less obnoxious to such imputations.

When you see the C's., present my best wishes and remembrance to them all. I had hoped to hear from Richard. He is one of the young men about Richmond, with whom it

is safe to associate. *Noscitur è Sorio* is older than the days of Partridge; and he who is the companion of the thriftless, is sure never to thrive: tavern haunters and loungers are no friends to intellectual, moral, or literary improvement, any more than to the accumulation of wealth.

I have seen nobody that you know but Frank K. and Gen. S. The last asked particularly after you. That you may prosper in this life, and reach eternal happiness in the life to come, is my earnest prayer.

JOHN RANDOLPH of Roanoke.

Dr. Dudley.

OPIE READ

[1852—]

W. L. VISSCHER

OPIE READ, the son of Guilford and Elizabeth Wallace Read, was born in Nashville, Tennessee, on December 22, 1852. His gift of story-telling must have been innate, for he says: "At our home when I was a boy, were several of my nephews. They were younger than I, and to tell them stories was my assignment. They would ask my father to make me tell them stories, and he did. I don't know why. He never heard me tell a story." But Read liked his assignment, and from individual stories turned to an improvised serial about one "Robert, the Good Shooter." This thrillingly sensational and somewhat bloodcurdling romance ran through nearly two years, affording to the young *raconteur* abundant exercise in oral improvisation and ministering, no doubt, to his facility in invention and in rapidity of composition.

About this time came his own most thrilling adventure, for when he was a boy of little more than nine years, during the Civil War, he rode into battle behind a Confederate bugler on the same horse. The bugler was shot dead and tumbled from his seat. Opie clambered into the empty saddle, and looked around. The scrambled mass of blue and gray was gone. He was in an open field. He saw a meadow lark light on a swaying red-tasseled iron-weed and heard the bird sing its summer song. He knew that the battle had ended and he rode home on the dead bugler's horse.

After the close of the war he persuaded his father to let him learn printing and then turned his skill to good account in setting type for his college magazine. Whether engaged in this mechanical work or serving in a more literary capacity on a newspaper, he had but one real aim, to become a novelist. To this end he bent his energies, and because he knew that a writer must have a publisher, he made for himself friends in that guild. He began his newspaper work in Franklin, Kentucky, but went later to Little Rock, Arkansas, where he so identified himself with his adopted State as to be reckoned among her men of letters. From 1878 to 1881 he was editor of the Arkansas *Gazette,* but in this latter year he bettered his condition by marrying Miss Ada Benham and accepting a position on the staff of the Cleveland *Leader.* After two years' sojourn on the

Northern Lakes, he returned to the balmier climate of his Southern home and established in 1883 the Arkansas *Traveler,* a humorous paper that reached a circulation of sixty thousand. This paper he gave up in 1883 that he might move to Chicago and give his whole time to writing novels and short stories. By 1896 he had written either in Arkansas or Chicago the following novels: 'Emmett Bonlore,' with much of himself in it; 'Len Gassett,' in which his father appears; 'A Kentucky Colonel,' his most successful production; 'The Colossus,' 'The Tennessee Judge,' pronounced by critics his most finished work; 'The Wives of the Prophet,' 'Down on the Suwanee River,' 'The Jucklins,' his favorite; 'Miss Madam,' with glimpses of his own wayward life, and 'My Young Master,' marked by care. Since 1896 his principal works are: 'Tear in the Cup and Other Stories,' 'Old Ebenezer,' 'The Carpet-Bagger,' 'The Starbucks,' 'The Harkriders,' 'The Son of the Swordmaker,' 'By the Eternal,' 'An American in New York,' 'In the Alamo,' 'Judge Elbridge,' 'A Yankee from the West,' 'An Arkansas Planter,' 'Up Terrapin River,' 'The Waters of Caney Fork,' and 'The Confessions of Marguerite.'

These, with several scattering titles, number about thirty, all of which have been commercially successful, some of them phenomenally so. 'The Starbucks' and 'The Harkriders' have been effectively dramatized by their author.

Read's romances are strong and pure, and he writes of character, custom, and peculiarities among the scenes he depicts just precisely as they are. When his characters talk, they talk naturally; and when the author speaks, his diction is pure and rich, yet plain and unassuming. The man utterly despises pedantry, and is as easy in his work as he is in telling a brilliant story to a party of admiring listeners; and yet he loiters along paths where flowers bloom, among the woods where birds are singing, into places where passions surge and amid the secluded nooks where love is sweetest and most blissful. He writes poetry in prose as naturally as white clouds float beneath the blue of summer skies. Yet with all his greatness Opie Read seems to comprehend it less than anyone who knows him and in his work and daily life is an exemplification of the kinship between humor and pathos.

Read has the reputation, among those who see him frequently and know him least, of being indolent. He is, in fact, one of the most incessant workers in the literary field. His very recreations are taken in the interest of his work. He tells stories at his club (the Chicago Press Club) to the knots of men who draw their chairs up to his to listen, and he does that to keep his fancy at work. He reads the heaviest, strongest and most voluminous books and then re-reads them. Gibbon. Macaulay, Motley, Carlyle, Hume are

his best friends and he loves Shakespeare. He is familiar with the great poets; these he goes to for strength and style.

At his best, Read is physically astonishing. Six feet three inches tall, heavily built, weighing about two hundred and fifty pounds without an ounce of superfluous flesh, he seems a giant. His great strength enables him to endure, without succumbing, the exactions of travel and lecturing, for this is his present career. For five or six years he has traveled thousands upon thousands of miles in America under the auspices of lecture bureaus and Chautauqua managements, giving readings from his short stories and lectures that exploit his deep, quaint, wise, and humorous philosophies. In that work he has become an entertainer of such charm that he cannot begin to fill all the engagements that are offered him.

"You must know Opie Read, the editor of the Arkansas *Traveler*," once said Eugene Field. "He is one of our kind of people." No subtler compliment could be paid this Southern humorist and romancer.

W. C. Rinehart

GETTING ACQUAINTED

From 'A Tennessee Judge.' Copyright by the author and used here by permission.

HAWLEY told the agent that he would take the place if the matter of terms and title could be satisfactorily settled; and early in the afternoon they drove back to town. Under the heat of the fervid day the place had lost some of its poetic freshness, but its air of restfulness remained. It held a lazy attractiveness. There was no sign anywhere of want, and yet the people ruffled not their good humor with unseemly thrift. Every man appeared to regard himself as eminently respectable, and if it be true that leisure is one of the marks of gentility, he certainly placed not too high an estimate upon himself. About the court-house, sitting in the shade with their chairs tipped back, reposed the town's aristocracy, waiting for some one to cut a watermelon. Their hats were on the ground beside them and each hat contained a handkerchief. They had not come merely to rest for a few moments

—they were there for all day. No, not exactly for all day. They had a "recess" when the court-house bell startled them into the consciousness that it was time to go home and get something to eat. How did they live? That question has been asked a thousand times, and no Solomon has ever been able satisfactorily to answer it. Occasionally the group would receive reinforcement from the lawyers and tradesmen about the square, and sometimes the county clerk would come out, and standing in the door, would tell a joke that had been brought from North Carolina in 1795.

Hawley was introduced. The business in hand was as nothing in comparison with a presentation to these worthies. The old gentlemen tilted forward as if they were about to pitch straight out on their faces, but recovered themselves with a knack learned after many years of practice, they straightened up and shook hands with him. How cordial they were; how perfect was their mastery over that smooth palaver which distinguishes the well-bred man who has nothing to say and who therefore must say it well. An old justice of the peace took the agent's place and acted as director of ceremonies. "I wish to assure you," he said to Hawley, "that you are most welcome. At all times, sir, we stand ready to invite the infusion of new and vigorous blood. You are from a city, sir, that we greatly admire, and if it were not for the fact that some of your thoughtless people have perpetuated Libby Prison—"

"Libby Prison," Hawley broke in, "is owned by a man who fought in the Confederate Army."

"Ah, you don't tell me! And if that fact were generally known, our trade with your city would be bigger than it is. But that's no matter. We welcome you most heartily and feel that you will become a most useful citizen. Just wait a moment." Hawley had started into the court-house. "Wait a moment, sir, we are going to cut a watermelon."

The agent was not dull to the importance of closing the trade; indeed his keenness was shown by a reproachful glance which he shot at the old justice of the peace, but the cutting of a watermelon, attended by many ceremonial flourishes, was a social function not to be interrupted by the harsh details of a business transaction. The melon was served and a number

of hogs that held the foraging privilege of the neighborhood, came across the square and devoured the rinds. After this the land transaction was again taken up. In the records held by a dusty shelf, not an obstructing mark was found; the title came down like a clear stream from a hill-top; and without searching for a perplexity, Hawley soon brought the deal to a close.

At evening the new owner of Ingleview sat in the ruined room of the old mansion and looked through the vines at the moon. How different from his wonted evening gaze out upon the tangled humanity of a thronged street. He heard the low murmur of the creek, a strange accompaniment to a negro's wierd song that came from somewhere away off in the shadow. His commercial instincts lay asleep, the spirit of his father was dormant; his gentler nature ruled his being —the soul of his mother was there.

* * * * * *

The next few days were spent in making arrangements for the improvement of the place. It was a time of great excitement in the neighborhood, it was the revival of business after a long season of inactivity. Carpenters, stonemasons and day laborers were summoned. It was an industrial "boom." A number of men were repairing a tumbledown place in a stone wall that ran parallel with the turnpike, and Hawley was standing near watching them, when an old gentleman rode up. "Here, boy," he called, speaking to one of the men, "hold this horse." The man obeyed; and the old gentleman, dismounting, came toward Hawley with his hand outstretched.

"I am glad to meet you, sir," said he as Hawley took his hand. "I am a neighbor of yours. Trapnell is my name."

"Judge Trapnell?"

"Yes, sir. You will please pardon this intrusion—it is not intended as a formal visit—but as I was passing I could not help but stop and ask you a question concerning the improvements you are to make. And sir, it may appear like a piece of impertinence—"

"Not at all," said Hawley, smiling at the peculiar old gentleman.

"I thank you, sir. I wanted to ask you if you intended

to pull down any of these old rock fences and replace them with barbed wire?"

"I had not thought of such a thing," Hawley answered.

"You are a gentleman, sir," said the Judge, bowing. "A number of our people have done this outlandish thing," he continued, wrinkling his brow with a severe frown. "They have pulled down the landmarks of a settled civilization and have replaced them with a devilish and un-American contrivance."

He took off his white hat, an ancient and fuzzy "plug," and with a red handkerchief which he grabbled out of the crown, wiped his face. And Hawley, looking closely at him, thought that he had never seen a more impressive man. He was very tall and exceedingly spare—no whiskers, no mustache—shaved almost under the skin. His complexion was red and there were broken veins in his cheeks; his "Adam's apple" looked like a knot tied in a red comforter; his nose was large, thin and of a pronounced Roman type; his hair was white and stood up straight in front; his eyes were gray, steady of gaze and quick of glance. He looked like an old oil painting of Andrew Jackson, and his temperament yielded to this resemblance. He swore "By the Eternal." While a young man he had been received by Jackson, with stately courtesy at the Hermitage, and now in his old age he worshiped that memory as a time when he had stood in the presence of God's greatest creation.

"Boy," the Judge called, "bring me my horse."

"You must not go yet, Judge," Hawley insisted. "It is about noon-time. Let us go to the house and get something to eat."

"I should like to go into the old house again, sir, and I intend to; but I do not wish to intrude."

"There can be no intrusion, and no embarrassment if you can put up with my fare."

"By the Eternal, sir, I can put up with anything. I will go with you."

They passed through a gap in the fence, the Judge leading his horse. "It has been a long time since I was on these grounds," he said, looking about him. "Old Radford and I had a falling out many years ago, and I swore that I would

never set foot on this soil so long as it belonged to any of his kin. There is no doubt as to the fact that the trade is closed, is there?" he asked, halting.

"None whatever."

"I am glad of it, sir," he rejoined, moving forward again. After a time he said: "If I am not impertinent in making the request I should like you to tell me what you intend to do here."

"I am going to repair the old place and live here, a part of the time at least. I know that I can't bring it back to the importance it once held, but I can make it attractive, at least to me. I am not going to cut down a single one of these plum thickets; not a stick of the timber shall be touched and the house shall remain practically the same."

"But I suppose you will fix up that end room where the wall is tumbled down," said the Judge.

"No, I am going to let that remain just the same. No repair and no adornment could change it for the better. I don't know what its memories are, but—"

"By the Eternal!" exclaimed the Judge, halting, "one of its memories is this—old Andrew Jackson slept in it. And you are not going to disturb it, Mr. Hawley," he said, holding out his hand and bending over when Hawley grasped it, "I can say, sir, with a deep feeling of truth that I welcome you to this neighborhood."

They strolled on again and the Judge continued: "There are very few people here that are worth knowing, sir. The young crop is a worthless set in comparison with those that are gone. As you doubtless know the world has fallen into decay. There is here and there a struggling remnant of worth, but the average man is a fool."

"Ah, but hasn't man in every age said the same thing, Judge?"

"Man has said many things in every age, sir, and the average man in every age has been a liar. But I speak from facts. Where are your great men now? Point them out, will you? There are talkative men and fussy men, but the great men are dead. Why, we have no man now as great as Henry Clay, even, and, in comparison with Jackson, Henry Clay was a mere trumpeter. The great men are dead, sir,

and the world is dying. When I say the world, I mean this country, for this is the only part of the world that ever was worth living in. Ah, and suppose Andrew Jackson could have had a real successor. Would there have been any war? No, sir. Rebellion would not have dared to lift its head—by the Eternal, sir, it would have been afraid to lick out its tongue. I was a Union man because I knew that Jackson would have been a Union man, and I remained one long after our boys went into the Confederate Army. And I should always have remained true to the cause if a lot of foreign hirelings hadn't come down upon us and destroyed our homes. But let that go. I am heartily glad, as I said before, that you have come among us. You are a man of sentiment and are therefore a gentleman. But I had my doubts when I heard that you were from Chicago, a town that respects nothing old or venerable."

* * * * * *

Early Sunday morning while Hawley lay in that state of drowsiness which luxuriates in the dreamy valley between sleep and a knowledge of surroundings, Aunt Lily's voice aroused him. "Breckfus is dun ready," she said, tapping on the door. "You didn' tell me not ter hab breckfus Sundays de same ez udder days an' I sorter had ter take mer chances; but it dun ready now, an' lessen you want it ter git col' you better come on."

When Hawley entered the breakfast-room, the old woman was standing near the table, and with a peach tree bough she was keeping off the flies.

"I must get some screens for this house," said he.

"Lawd, chile, whut you want wid screens?"

"To keep the flies out."

"Ain't I keepin' 'em out?"

"Yes, but it's too much trouble."

"Not fur me, caze I been doin' it too many years, now; an' I doan know 'bout dem screens, no how. But set right down caze deze vidults is gittin' col'. I doan know dat I cooks jest ter suit you ur not, sah, but ef I doan, tell me so an' I'll l'arn how. I yere e'm say de cookin' in dis country doan suit folks fum de Nawf, an' I jes' wanter tell you dat I stan's yere ready ter change my cou'se."

"Your cooking is all right," Hawley replied. But the old woman's suspicion was aroused when he added: "After a while I may get some one to help you."

"I doan wan' nobody fussin' roun' tryin' ter he'p me, sah," she quickly rejoined.

"I won't let any one interfere with you, Aunt Lily."

"I thanks you fur sayin' dat, de Lawd knows."

"By the way," said Hawley, smiling at her, "you don't resemble the lily that Solomon spoke of, for you toil and I think I've heard your spinning wheel."

The old woman shook her fat sides with laughter. "Now you ain' gwine joke me 'bout my name, is you? White folks been pesterin' me 'bout my name all my life. My young mistis named me, sah. An' I reckon her haid wuz mighty full o' nonsense at de time. Dar's my triflin' husband out dar now. See 'im settin' under dat tree?"

Hawley looked out and saw a short, bow-legged negro dozing on a bench. "He's er putty lookin' specimen fur er pusson ter be tied up wid, ain't he? But does you know dat man's er doctor? He is."

"Not a regular doctor, is he?"

"I doan know how regular he is, sah, but he's er doctor. He goes out in de woods an' digs up yarbs, an' I has yearn folks say dat dar is some zeazes dat kain' git er way fum 'im no way you kin fix it. But not laung ergo one o' his sick folks died an' it wuz sorter hinted roun' dat Ben pizened 'im, but not on purpose. Dat Dr. Moffet an' 'im do hab some awful quarls. Yander comes Dr. Moffet now."

The doctor came through the althea bushes, halted for a moment when he spied old Ben dozing and then sat down on the farther end of the bench. Ben looked up and demanded: "Whut you wanter come 'ruptin' er man, fur?"

"I'm not interrupting you, you black rascal."

"I 'knowledges dat I'se black, but I ain' no rascal. I'se er man o' science."

"Science!" the Doctor contemptuously repeated. "You couldn't read your name if you were to see it in letters a yard long."

"I doan kere nutin' 'bout dat; I doan kere nuthin' 'bout letters er yard laung—I'm er science, all de same. Man has

de rheumatiz an' I fetches out mer medicine an' 'e drinks some o' hit an' I rubs 'im wid some o' hit; an' den whut? de man walks on off, 'joycin'. But whut do 'e do ef you comes ter see 'im? Hah, whut do 'e do den? He lays dar in de bed an' mebby 'e neber do git up."

"But what about Sam Norris?"

"Oh, dat nigger? 'E didn' hab no rheumatiz."

"Ah, but you killed him."

"Who killed 'im?"

"You did, you black butcher."

"I didn' kill de man. De Lawd killed 'im. Lawd seed dat it wuz de man's time ter go—jes' happened ter ricolleck dat it wuz 'is time ter go an' 'E tuck 'im. I ain' 'sponsible fur whut de Lawd do. Ef de Lawd wants er man ter git well, my medicine cures 'im; an' ef de Lawd doan wan' 'im ter git well, nobody's medicine ain' gwine do 'im no good."

"I've told you a dozen times to leave this place; you've got no right here."

"Got ez much right yere ez you has. Science is got er right most anywhar."

"Well, I'm going to see Mr. Hawley and—"

" 'E's right dar in de house, I reckon; you better see 'im now."

"Here," said Hawley, stepping out into the yard, "I don't want any quarreling on this place."

"Dat's whut I been tellin' dis generman, sah, all de time" old Ben declared. "S' I 'dar's er monstus fine pusson got dis place now an' 'e doan wan' no jowerin'."

"Mr. Hawley," said the Doctor, getting up and bowing low, "I am delighted to see you this morning, sir. It is a beautiful day. I was just over by the old race track—a lovely place—with a wild flower here and there to shed a mourning fragrance over its lost glory."

"Won't you come into breakfast, Doctor?"

"No, I thank you. I scarcely eat enough, sir, to keep a chicken alive. What are you snorting at!" he demanded, turning upon the negro.

"Gracious er live, has it come ter er p'int w'er er pusson ain' got er right ter smile? Mr. Hawley, doant pay no 'ten-

tion ter dis white pusson, sah, caze 'e ain' right bright in 'is mine."

"I don't want any such talk as that," said Hawley, laughing in spite of all effort to restrain himself.

"No, sah, an' you ain' gwine git it, nuther. Caze lemme tell you right now dat whateber you wants done is law wid me. I'se been down ter de stable dis mawnin' er workin' hard er takin' kere o' dem new hosses o' yourn; an' ef you'll jest let me stay yere along wid dat ole wife o' mine, dar ain' nuthin' dat I ain' gwine do fur you. I gwine clean out de well dis day."

"I don't want you to work on Sunday."

"Dat's er fack, dis is Sunday. I clar I so busy dat I dun furgot de day o' de week. But I gwine hump merse'f ter mor. An' say; w'en you runs fur office, jes' let me know. I kin pull an' haul deze niggers er 'roun' like da wan' nuthin' but er rag kyarpet. Wall, I mus' go an' be er layin' out my plans."

"I wants you ter chop some wood 'fo' you goes," his wife called.

"Honey, dat wuz on my mine dis minit. Yas, I'll chop all de wood you wan'. Skuze me, sah," he added, speaking to Hawley, "but whut is yo' fust name?"

"Robert," Hawley answered.

"Ah, hah, an' does you wan' me ter call you Marse Bob?"

"No, I don't."

"Wall, ef you doan' I won'; but I'se mighty tempted ter. Wall, good mawnin', Marse Bob—dar, I dun furgit merse'f. Skuze me dis time but I does feel mighty wa'm toward you."

Ben hastened away as if upon an important errand, Aunt Lily turned to her household duties and Hawley went out and sat on the bench. It was still early and dew drops clinging to the rose bushes, flashed off miniature photographs of the sun. The shrivelled old Doctor sat in the fervid light, with his overcoat drawn about him. Hawley lighted a cigar, half musingly, and then, arousing himself, said: "Have a cigar. Pardon me for not offering you one sooner."

The Doctor bowed and took the cigar. They smoked in silence. But the proprietor of Ingleview did not know what an effort that silence cost the Doctor; he did not realize that the morphine eater's reserve required his strongest exercise of will. The young man felt a sense of loneliness. Had the

romance, the freshness of this old place so soon begun to fade? Was he holding dear the remembered roar of Chicago? The Doctor looked at him, their eyes met; and a sudden revulsion overcame Hawley's pity for that withered creature. He looked like a sneak, a malicious gossip. But he coughed —a hollow echo sent back the land of the dead—and the strong man's pity was alive again.

"I'm going into the library to see what books have fallen into my keeping," said Hawley. "Won't you come along?"

"No, I thank you. I must go to my lowly abode."

Hawley could have thanked him for this, but he did not; he mumbled a regret, fearing the while that the Doctor might decide to go with him, and then rather hastily he entered the house. A man that had spent much of his life among books would have laughed at this library. There were numerous volumes of light romances, all English, all teeming with lords and ladies, with not a glimpse of actual life as it once existed or as it is likely ever to exist. But there was a religious streak running from top to bottom. Tempestuous tracts conceived in hot and passionate enmity to Catholicism and indeed toward all forms of religion save the one bigoted creed of the writer thereof, were piled here and there, covered with dust, the dry mockery of old Earth. Amid this rubbish of fiction and fanaticism, Hawley found a book that must have been greatly cherished in its day; a large volume for the most part taken up with colored plates of race horses. How well thumbed it was; how smeared with the eager hands of childhood. And what signs of rivalry in ownership were found. Below the plate of one fleet-looking racer were these words, dim, yellowed: "This here is Tom's hoss;" and beneath them was scrawled: "No he ain't; he's Jim's." A Webster's spelling book fell to the floor and flew open at the picture of the old man pelting the youngster that had refused to come down out of the tree; and then there tumbled down an old novel, 'The Planter's Northern Bride.' With what a sniff of contempt the abolitionists had turned from it, but how devoted was the slave owner to its high-flown pages. It etherealized, it consecrated human bondage; it darkly frowned upon the earthly aspiration of black flesh; it told the negro that his glory in the world to come depended upon his meekness here.

Abraham had servants that he bought with his money; and no further was there need of argument. Hawley soon lost himself amid the gaudy decorations of this old book, finding here a silken banner with an error inscribed upon it; there he seemed to turn over a handkerchief of lace, musty with dead perfume. But in these faded fineries how clearly was traced the inner life of Ingleview, forty years ago. He put the book aside and stood gazing at the negro quarter on a hill-side, not far away. Old Ben, carrying a bundle of roots, crossed his view; and he heard Aunt Lily singing in the yard. An ancient clock in the hall growled and began to strike. It was more like a complaint, this whang, whang, whang—it was a begrudging release of the hour, a whining acknowledgment of time. Hawley snatched out his watch; the morning had slipped away and now it was hasten or miss his appointment with the Judge.

* * * * * *

The Judge's house was built of red bricks and stood with its sharp gable end toward the turnpike. There were numerous trees in the yard, oaks, elms and stubbed cedars; an orchard came close up to the fence, on one side, and on the other side was a garden wild with shrubbery and berry-briars. The creek that flowed through Ingleview, turned at a bluff a mile away, and ran past the foot of the stony hill on which the Judge's house seemed to sit in dullness, brooding.

The Judge was walking to and fro in the yard, with his hands behind him. His white hat was on the ground under a tree, and an old, sleepy-eyed dog lay with one paw resting on it.

"Come right in," cried the Judge, hastening toward the gate. "Here, I'll open it; has to be lifted up. Been threatening to fix it for more than a year. That's it. How do you find yourself this morning?" he asked, shaking hands with his visitor.

"First rate."

"I'm pleased to hear it. Step right this way."

A fleeting vision of white and pink told Hawley that a girl had disappeared behind a corner of the house, and the broad haw, haw, of a negro woman who stood in the door of a cabin informed him that the escape had been observed in another quarter. With stately, but easy ceremony, the Judge

showed his visitor into the hall, and when he had hung up his hat, conducted him into the old-fashioned parlor. The room was severe and the furniture was heavy. In one corner was a piano, so antiquated, so crippled in its legs that it appeared to lean against the wall for rest. There was a great arm-chair with a sheep-skin bottom; a horse-hair sofa nearly as large as a bed; a red bell-cord hung near the door; brass andirons gleamed in the fire-place—the whole bore the appearance of a room in a museum, representing the home life of some political leader of the past. . . . In the dining-room was the inevitable negro with a leafy bough, keeping the flies away. The light, coming aslant through a high, narrow window, fell upon the heavy silverware and beglittered the table. At an old mahogany side-board, knobbed, gnarled and twisted with cunning artifice, the Judge and his visitor stood and sipped the mint infusion. Time had thrown reverence upon this indulgence, and the Judge appeared in no haste to bring it to an end, although his wife, with worry-flushed face, stood at the foot of the table waiting for him to sit down. But the old man was at a shrine where confidences are spoken, where habits are confessed. He told Hawley that since early life he had taken three drinks a day, never more and never fewer; he did not believe in striving to enforce temperance, for, in the government of the appetite every man was a law unto himself. Whisky was plentiful in his day; every respectable house had its side-board, and yet, besotted drunkenness was rare. The liquor was purer and man had more pride. If a traveler stopped at a house to ask direction to a place, before his question was answered he was invited to drink. The negroes were given a dram every morning. It was a mistake to believe that the introduction of that vile brew, lager beer, had aided the cause of temperance. It was a dastardly slop, an un-American hog-wash. It dulled our native keenness, it put clogs on the nimbly-tripping feet of fancy, compelled fancy to labor with phlegmatic legs.

THE GREATEST SOLDIER

From 'The Fiddle and the Fawn, and Other Stories.' Copyright, Rand, McNally & Co., and used here by permission.

THE great war was nearing its close. It was the evening when men looked back upon the noonday of slaughter. At the front all was expectant. In the conquered states civil law began to lift its head. But even here there were independent bands to be captured or destroyed. One band was headed by Lit Braze. The soldier who studies the moods of his enemy was not slow to learn the whims of Braze. One night in a downpour of rain the colonel commander of a post remarked:

"We may expect that fellow now."

And he came, his horses dashing madly, and with sabers glittering like evil snakes in the air. But he was driven back.

One day the colonel sent for Captain Lane.

"Captain," said he, "I am informed that Braze and his men are lurking in the Gath neighborhood, about thirty miles from here. The band is greatly reduced in numbers. Take your company and finish them."

The captain saluted and withdrew. He rode forth at the head of his troops. Along toward nightfall he picked up a guide.

"He is a dashing fellow, and it is a pity to kill him," said the captain to the guide, who rode with him at the head of the column.

"I guess he's dashing enough," the guide replied. "He knows how to fight and then get away."

"I imagine that he's young and handsome," said the captain.

"Wait till you see him," the guide remarked.

It was thought best, after a certain time, to dismount and advance on foot. The country was wild. All night the captain and his men wandered about in the woods. Beneath a big tree the commander halted to rest.

"Let me poke around and see if I can find him," said the guide.

The captain turned upon him. "Look here, I am beginning to suspect you, and if my suspicions become a little stronger I'll hang you up to this tree."

The guide laughed. He had nerve. "You may suspect me all you please," said he. "If I try to throw you down you may hang me up. I want you to catch him—or kill him, rather, for he won't give up. I once belonged to his gang."

"Ah, then, of course you want him killed," replied the captain. "Very well," he added, "go out and see if you can locate him."

The guide, with his neck thrust out, glided away among the trees. "Boa constrictor," said the captain, watching him.

At daylight the guide returned. "I have found him," said he. "And he couldn't be in a better place—down in a hollow. He thinks he's hid away where nobody can find him. It isn't much bigger than a sink-hole, the place isn't, and you can station your men all around and pick him and his men like shooting turkeys. Come on."

"Sergeant," said the captain, "keep your eye on this fellow and if you catch him in a lie shoot him down."

The sergeant saluted and took his place beside the guide.

They found Braze situated just as the guide had reported. "We will make short work of him," the captain whispered. "Wait. What are they doing? They are holding Easter services. Who is that gray-haired man preaching?"

"That's Braze," the guide answered. "Let me pick him." He cocked a carbine.

"Wait," the captain commanded. "Why did he take up arms? Do you know?"

"The Union guerrillas hanged his son."

"What for?"

"Because they could."

"What was the father doing at the time?"

"Praying beside the deathbed of a Federal soldier. He was a preacher."

"Listen. They are singing. Keep low, everyone."

They crouched in silence till the hymn was done. Then the guerrilla preacher began to pray. He thanked the Lord that peace was near at hand. He prayed for his enemies. He asked the Lord to forgive those who had injured him. He spoke of his son, and sat down, sobbing.

"About face," whispered the captain.

Through the woods the soldiers marched, sullen, and with

many a dark look cast at the captain. The guide was disgusted.

"Why didn't you kill him? You had him in your power?"

"Silence, sir. I shall make my report to the colonel."

"And so will I. You had him and you let him get away. I believe you said something about hanging me. It may be my turn to say something about hanging to you. Oh, you can't do anything with me now. The men are all hot at you, and you'll be in luck if they don't string you up themselves."

The captain tapped the butt of a pistol, and the guide rode on in silence.

The colonel was sitting in his tent when the captain's troop rode into camp. The guide jumped off his horse and hastened to the colonel. The captain slowly followed. When he entered the tent the colonel was in a rage. For a time he could not speak. At last he uttered the word: "Traitor." The captain smiled.

"Colonel," said he, "you are a Christian, and when you are calmer you will agree with me. I was sent to kill those wretches. I found them—their leader was preaching to them of the Resurrection—an old man preaching to a congregation in rags. They had decked a stump for an altar. The sun was just rising and fell upon it. And what you may call treason, but which I call a tenderness, fell upon me. I saw a sort of misled John Brown praying. Sincerity was his accent. Faith was his watchword. The great guns of the war were hushing one by one. Birds were building their nests. And I said to myself: 'Does my country in the glory of her victory want the blood of these poor misguided wretches?' And I believe it was the spirit of my country that whispered: 'No.' I admit that I have disobeyed orders. I make no defense, except that I could not find it in my heart to murder them. Colonel, I am covered with wounds. I enlisted as a private and I have fought my way up. You have commended me for bravery. You know that there is no treason in my nature. You know that I love my country better than I do my life. In New England my father is preaching—praying for the souls of men. And the old man standing in the valley with the sun upon his gray head reminded me of him. I will take off my sword; I will—"

A shout arose. A soldier came running into the tent. "Braze and his men have come in and surrendered," the soldier said.

The colonel reached forth and grasped the captain's hand. "Keep your honored sword," he said. "Mercy is the greatest soldier."

THE LAST OF THEM

From 'The Fiddle and the Fawn, and Other Stories.' Copyright, Rand, McNally and Company, and used here by permission.

THE Squatter, once so famous in Arkansas, and who gave rise to the song and the dialogue of the Arkansas Traveler, has almost entirely disappeared. Where his cabin stood there is not a cotton factory, and at the forks of the road, where his daughter Sal saw "sperets," there is an academy for young women. The old man and the old woman are asleep away off somewhere beneath the trees, and Sal's son is the prosecuting attorney of his district, and next year he may go to Congress.

I am inclined to believe that I saw, or encountered would be the better expression, the very last of the genuine Arkansas Squatters. A newspaper had sent me up among the hills to stir a sensation out of an alleged discovery of gold, and I was returning, horseback, when one evening about "half an hour by sun" I came to the typical log house of the traditional Squatter. I had long since lost the road and was simply riding at large. The Squatter, with his wheat-straw beard, his hay hair and his autumn leaf complexion, was standing with his arms resting on the rail fence that made a pretense of surrounding his cabin, but I noticed that the fence was thrown down in several places and that a skinny hog and a hip-shot cow wandered in and out at will. The old fellow nodded at my approach and immediately withdrew his attention from me, and I believe that he would have suffered me to pass on without a word on his part, so careless was he and so unconcerned with regard to the children of the world. But I drew rein and spoke to him, and not ignorantly, for I knew his character—knew that to get directions from him I must indeed be adroit.

"How are you, sir?"

"About the same."

"Fine weather."

"So I hearn."

"You live here, I suppose."

"Ain't died here."

"I see! and I suppose you have been here long enough to give me instructions as to the best way to reach the Dardanelle road. I am lost."

"When do you expect to find yourself?"

"That's what I don't know. But as soon as I strike the Dardanelle road I'll know where I am."

"Don't you know where you are now?"

"I must confess that I don't."

"Well, I'll tell you."

"I'll be much obliged to you."

"You are right here talkin' to me."

"That's true, but where are you, that's the question."

"Why, I'm with you," he answered with a drawl.

"I don't suppose there's any disputing of that fact. But I'd like to go to the Dardanelle road."

"Then why don't you?"

"I will as soon as I can."

"There ain't nobody a holdin' of you."

"That's a fact, but I don't know which way to go."

"Go as you please."

"But that might not be right."

"Then turn to the left."

I saw that this tact was useless, so I thought that I would try the effect of skilful flattery. Surely the old scoundrel had a weak place hidden somewhere. "By the way, didn't I see you in Little Rock last winter?"

"Don't know what you seed last winter nur summer befo' last."

"I didn't know but I saw you at the state house. Weren't you in the Legislature?"

"It must 'a' been my brother you seen."

"Was he in the Legislature?"

"No, in the penitentiary."

That wouldn't do. I must try some other way. "You look as if you might be a pretty good sort of a man."

"I've had 'ligion four times."

"How did you lose it?"

"Cussin' that cow out yan; and I wanter tell you she would snatch the 'ligion outen the possul Peter and the rest of them. She's a caution."

"I mean you must be a good man physically, boxing or wrestling."

"I used to be, but since I broke the neck of the county jedge an' crippled the sheriff for life rasslin, w'y I ain't prided myself much."

"I don't suppose you could be induced to show me how to get to that road."

"I'm afeerd not."

"But do you think you are showing a Christian spirit?"

"Don't reckon I am, but as I tell you I ain't a Christian since I lost my 'ligion a cussin' of the cow."

"Look here, the night is going to be fearfully dark. Are you going to see me sleep in the woods?"

"I won't be thar to see you."

"I am half inclined to get down and take a fall out of you." I believed that I might possibly have found his weak spot. His old eyes brightened.

"Pardner, git down and look at yo' saddle, won't you?"

I dismounted, tied my horse and told him that I was ready, and with many a capering, didoish for so old a fellow, he came toward me—he wrapped his long arms about me and told me to help myself; he laughed with a strange glee; he swore that he hadn't been so happy since he broke the neck of the county judge. I clutched him, and began to struggle, in the pretense of exerting my might to throw him down, but in reality looking out for a place to fall; and I did fall. "Got enough?" the old rascal asked, a yellowish grin spreading broadcast over his face.

"Yes, plenty," I answered. "I know when I have enough. I can tell a man as soon as I put my hands on him, and I want to say without shame, either, that you are the first man that has thrown me since I reached my prime. You talk of throwing the county judge—why, not long ago I threw a circuit judge."

"You don't tell me!" he cried, his eyes sparkling.

"Yes, I do tell you and it is a fact; and furthermore, I believe you can throw down the supreme judge of the state."

He put his head affectionately on my shoulder. "Podner," said he, lifting his head to wipe his eyes, "you ain't goin' to leave me to-night. It's goin' to rain, an' thar ain't a house over yonder on that road. I'll give you the best on the place, and to-morrow mornin' I'll take you to the road. Mother," he yelled at his wife who had just appeared in the doorway, "kill the finest chicken you've got, git out yo' Sunday stuff, for the Progician son is here."

LIZETTE WOODWORTH REESE

[1856—]

LETITIA H. WRENSHALL

LIZETTE WOODWORTH REESE was born in that part of Baltimore County which is now within the city limits of Baltimore and known as Waverly. She still lives in this locality, her pretty cottage immediately facing Lake Montebello, a small but beautiful sheet of water. Her poetic gift may be traced as an inheritance from the pure Welsh blood of her father's family, whose origin is evidenced by the surnames of Davis, Morgan, Woodworth, and Reese; while from her German mother she has received the enduring powers of application and tenacity of purpose, which are among her strongest characteristics.

Miss Reese commenced teaching at an early age, and is at this time, as for some years past, teacher of English in the Western High School of Baltimore. Though closely occupied with her professional duties, she finds time to take an active part in others of a semi-public nature, notably those of "The Teachers' Literary Club"; reading for the benefit of associations in whose advancement she is interested; and the work of "The Woman's Literary Club of Baltimore," an organization strictly confined to the purpose indicated by its name. One of the founders, in 1891, she has remained closely identified with it, is a director in its board of management, chairman of the Committee on Poetry, and is a frequent contributor to the programs of the Committee on Fiction. She is also one of the two chairmen of the Memorial Committee, which on All Souls' Day, November the second, decorates the graves of the authors and artists in the cemeteries of Baltimore. The autumn flowers of her garden are treasured for weeks before the day, in order that her tribute may be personal; and in storm and sunshine alike she places the laurel wreaths and blooms with her never idle hands.

Miss Reese's first poem, "The Deserted Home," was published in the *Southern Magazine,* in 1874, when she was a young girl. Some years passed before she again appeared in print; since this she has become widely known, and her prose and poetry alike are quickly accepted by the leading publications of the United States. Among the magazines in which her writings have been published during the last twenty years are *The Atlantic Monthly, Scribner's, Harper's Monthly, The Smart Set,* etc., etc.

Her short stories have been well received and have attracted much attention. As delineations of human passion and pain, half smothered yet struggling with hard conditions of life, held fast in fate, they are powerfully written, with unusual perception and analysis of the contrarieties of the spiritual self. The extreme simplicity and directness of style compel vivid realization of her word-painting, as in "Old Miss Rich," in *The Outlook* of February, 1898; "Cornelia's Birthday," in *Harper's Monthly* of June, 1903; "Lavender," in *Lippincott's,* in 1904, and "Henrietty," in the same magazine, in 1905. Justice demands reference to much writing, bright and breezy, of keen yet gentle wit (not bearing Miss Reese's signature), contributed to the editorial departments of well-known publications.

It is, though, with Miss Reese's poetry that the first and paramount interest must remain. All written prior to 1896 has been collected in three volumes; the first, 'A Branch of May,' was published in 1887 by Cushing and Company of Baltimore. The edition was soon exhausted, but the poems were included in her second book, 'A Handful of Lavender,' which is dedicated "To the Sweet Memory of Sidney Lanier." This was issued by the Riverside Press in 1891, and is now likewise out of print. The third book, 'A Quiet Road,' was issued in 1896. A number of the poems in these volumes have been selected by Edmund Clarence Stedman for his 'American Anthology.' From the first two come "Anne," "Lydia," "The Daffodils," "Thomas à Kempis," and "Immortality." From 'A Quiet Road' come "Telling the Bees," "In Time of Grief," "To a Town Poet," "Trust," "A Holiday," "Keats," and "Reserve." This noted author and critic writes as follows: "Miss Reese's poetry is of rare quality, artistic, natural, beautiful with the old-time atmosphere and association, and at times rising to a noble classicism, of which the lines 'To a Town Poet' afford a fine example." Mr. Stedman also pronounces "Immortality" a classic. These lines, with "Tell Me Some Way," "Daffodils," "A Colonial Picture," "Tears" (a sonnet published in *Scribner's* of 1899), and other poems have been frequently reprinted, finding their way to the public through many channels.

Abroad, as at home, Miss Reese has won recognition. The *London Spectator* has accorded her high praise, placing her in the front rank of American poets. In the East she has been read and appreciated, as witnessed by a recent request from Japan for permission and material to make her writings the subject of lectures before the University of Tokyo; the lecturer is a Japanese writer who has published two or three books of poems, and is a contributor to American magazines.

It has been said that thoughts come either in color or in sound, but Miss Reese thinks in form; sculpture appeals to her with greater

strength than painting, hence the crystal clearness of her verse. She works slowly and polishes much, and every word is chosen and placed in her mind before pen is put to paper.

While close acquaintance with the Elizabethan literature has undoubtedly influenced, though not molded, the careful expression of her beautiful thoughts, it would be impossible for one so original and possessing her strong personality to write in any but her own way. She sings her own song, clear, sweet, and true, with the passing of time ever circling in higher flights. She writes of what she sees, seeing with the eyes of the poet. Her strong sense of the beauty of nature is manifest. The bare trees of winter, the living green of summer, the blossoming orchards, the wind through the grass, alike call to her for speech, and she gives the message truly.

Many of her poems may be recognized as descriptive of scenes in and around Baltimore, as "An Old Belle," "The Seller of Herbs"; and visitors to Druid Hill Park will read with delight of that which they have there seen, when on some hillside, silhouetted against the sunset, slowly passes the "Shepherd" and his sheep. Yet as truly as she interprets nature's voice, this is not the limit of her powers. The eyes of the poet see deep into the human heart, and she reads, as few can, its longing in life and in death. This dramatic quality has grown with her growth and strengthened with her strength, as evidenced by her later poems. Time's sunlight is still overhead with Miss Reese; inspiration and courage are strong and fresh in her unflagging nature; her zenith is yet before her.

Letitia N. Brownshall

ANNE

From 'A Branch of May.' Copyright, Houghton, Mifflin and Company, and used here by permission of the author and the publishers.

Her eyes be like the violets,
  Ablow in Sudbury Lane;
When she doth smile her face is sweet
  As blossoms after rain;
With grief I think of my gray hairs,
  And wish me young again.

In comes she through the dark old door
  Upon this Sabbath day;
And she doth bring the tender wind
  That sings in bush and tree;
And hints of all the apple boughs
    That kissed her by the way.

Our parson stands up straight and tall,
  For our dear souls to pray,
And of the place where sinners go,
  Some grewsome things doth say;
Now she is highest Heaven to me;
  So Hell is far away.

Most stiff and still the good folk sit
  To hear the sermon through;
But if our God be such a God,
  And if these things be true,
Why did He make her then so fair,
  And both her eyes so blue?

A flickering light, the sun creeps in,
  And finds her sitting there;
And touches soft her lilac gown,
  And soft her yellow hair;
I look across to that old pew,
  And have both praise and prayer.

Oh, violets in Sudbury Lane,
  Amid the grasses green,
This maid who stirs ye with her feet
  Is far more fair I ween!
I wonder how my forty years
  Look by her sweet sixteen!

INSPIRATION

All selections from 'A Quiet Road' are copyrighted by Houghton, Mifflin and Company, and used here by permission of the author and the publishers.

Upon the hills I left my sheep;
  Shepherd no more was I,
With staff and scrip a watch to keep;
  My flocks were of the sky.

I ran down to the river-reeds;
  I set the foremost loose;
I made it ready for my needs,
  And sweet enough for use.

The rude East smote me where I stood;
  The stars were great and few;
Sudden, along the expectant wood,
  A wavering note I blew.

Fog wrapped me in a winding-sheet;
  Nor sky nor road was clear;
I blew a note so echoing sweet
  The night rose up to hear.

The kine came from the pastures chill;
  The flock came from the fold;
By tavern-sides the folk sat still;
  The dead stirred in the mould.

Ere yet the dark was at its close,
  Quaking I blew once more;
The silence petaled like a rose,
  And all my song was o'er.

Myriad and golden past the wood,
The spears of morn grew plain;
Empty within the light I stood
And brake my reed in twain.

TELL ME SOME WAY

From 'A Handful of Lavender.' Copyright, Houghton, Mifflin and Company, and used here by permission of the author and the publishers.

Oh, you who love me not, tell me some way
Whereby I may forget you for a space;
May clean forget you and your lovely face—
Yet well I know how vain this prayer I pray.

All weathers hold you. Can I make the May
Forbid her boughs blow white in every place?
Or rob June of her Rose that comes apace?
Cheat of their charms the elder months and gray?

Aye, were you dead, you could not be forgot:
So sparse the bloom along the lanes would be;
Such sweetness out the briery hedges fled:
My tears would fall that you had loved me not,
And bitterer tears that you had gone from me;
Living, you break my heart, so would you dead.

AN OLD BELLE

From 'A Quiet Road.'

A Daughter of the Cavaliers
(A phrase a little dulled with years),
But something sweeter than them all,
Serene she sits at evenfall.

Tall tulips crowd the window-sill
Vague ghosts of those that blew at will—
Ere she was old and time so fleet—
In one walled space down Camden street.

And straight she and her lover there
In that town garden take the air;
Tall tulips lift in scarlet tire,
Brimming the April dusk with fire.

Without, the white of harbored ships;
The road that to the water slips;
The tang of salt, the scent of sea;
Within, her only love and she!

Back to the new she comes once more,
To roofs ungabled, ways that roar;
To the sole April left her still,
That potted scarlet on the sill.

Dust are those pleasant garden walls;
Her only love in green Saint Paul's;
Serene she sits at her day's close;
Last of her kin, but still a rose!

A HOLIDAY

From 'A Quiet Road.'

Along the pastoral ways I go,
To get the healing of the trees;
The ghostly news the hedges know;
To hive me honey like the bees,
Against the time of snow.

The common hawthorn that I see,
Beside the sunken wall astir,
Or any other blossoming tree,
Is each God's fair white gospeler,
His book upon the knee.

A gust-broken bough; a pilfered nest;
Rumors of orchard or of bin;
The thrifty things of east and west—
The countryside becomes my Inn,
And I its happy guest.

TRUST

From 'A Quiet Road.'

I am Thy grass, O Lord!
  I grow up sweet and tall
But for a day; beneath Thy sword
  To lie at evenfall.

Yet have I not enough
  In that brief day of mine?
The wind, the bees, the wholesome stuff
  The sun pours out like wine.

Behold, this is my crown;
  Love will not let me be;
Love holds me here; Love cuts me down;
  And it is well with me.

Love, Love, keep it but so;
  Thy purpose is full plain;
I die that after I may grow
  As tall, as sweet again.

IN TIME OF GRIEF

From 'A Quiet Road.'

Dark, thinned, beside the wall of stone,
  The Box dripped in the air;
Its odor through my house was blown
  Into the chamber there.

Remote and yet distinct the scent,
  The sole thing of the kind,
As though one spoke a word half meant
  That left a sting behind.

I knew not Grief would go from me,
  And naught of it be plain,
Except how keen the Box can be
  After a fall of rain.

TO A TOWN POET

From 'A Quiet Road.'

Snatch the departing mood;
  Make yours its emptying reed, and pipe us still
Faith in the time, faith in our common blood,
Faith in the least of good;
  Song cannot fail if these its spirit fill!

What if your heritage be
  The huddle trees along the smoky ways;
At a street's end the stretch of lilac sea;
The vendor, swart but free,
  Crying his yellow wares across the haze?

Your verse awaits yóu there;
  For love is love though Latin swords be rust.
The keen Greek driven from gossiping Mall and square;
And care is still but care
  Though Homer and his seven towns are dust.

Thus Beauty lasts, and Lo!
  Now Proserpine is barred from Enna's hills,
The flower she plucked yet makes an April show,
Sets some town still aglow,
  And yours the Vision of the Daffodils.

The Old-World folk knew not
  More surge-like sounds than urban winters bring
Up from the wharves at dusk to every spot;
And no Sicilian plot
  More fire than heaps our tulips in the spring.

Strait is the road of Song,
  And they that be the last are oft the first;
Fret not for fame; the years are kind though long;
You, in the teasing throng,
  May take all time with one shrewd lyric burst.

Be reverend and know
  Ill shall not last, or waste the ploughed land;
Or creeds sting timid souls; and naught at all,
Whatever else befall,
  Can keep us from the hollow of God's hand.

Let trick of words be past;
  Strict with the thought, unfearful of the form,
So shall you find the way and hold it fast,
The world hear, at the last,
  The horns of morning sound above the storm.

AN ENGLISH MISSAL

From 'A Quiet Road.'

Upon these pages clear,
  I, Basil, write my name;
My task is ended, and the year
  Is gone out like a flame.

Martin and John the good
  Are gathered to the blest;
It seems an hour ago they stood
  And praised me with the rest.

I missed them when they went;
  Then filled this page with palms,
And saw them both—their travail spent—
  Harbored in Heavenly calms.

The tulips in this book
  Their like our garden knew,
All spring what could I do but look,
  And set them here anew?

The Saint that yonder walks
  Smiles from our chancel space;
But Mary with the lily-stalks
  Has mine own Mother's face.

The thought of her was sweet
As blossoms are in Lent,
Green turned our wending Convent street,
And all about was Kent.

Kent lilies round her nod;
I drew her staid and fair:
I drew her with the Son of God
Clasped to her bosom there.

Brief is our life and dark;
The grave shall hold us fast;
Yet here I find in old Saint Mark
That only right shall last.

I Basil, too, must heed,
Else were my task undone,
God has more books than I can read,
I praise Him for this one.

FRA GREGORY'S WORD TO THE LORD

From 'A Quiet Road.'

My years in this green close are set;
The mint buds lilac row by row;
Thy suns blaze on; Thy showers wet;
And I rejoice that it is so.

Each stalk of lavender is sweet;
As I fare back from ailing men,
I smell it out there in the street,
And praise Thee I am home again.

Lord, in the shop at Nazareth,
Was not the scent of Cedar thine
Mixed with thy work a country breath,
As is this Lavender with mine?

Ever the while I sow or reap
My sick folks seem about me, Lord,
As were I shepherd, they the sheep;
Their cares smite through me like a sword.

Fra Simon has a lovely book,
  On rainy days he comes to me,
Over the painted leaves to crook
  And therefrom read some word of Thee.

Fra Simon wrought this book himself;
  Luke with his viol breaks my heart;
A few dried simples on a shelf
  Are all my song, and all my art.

I sort them out on floor and sill;
  Fennel, and balm, and silver sage;
This one for fever, this for chill;
  And loving each, I get my wage.

Do such as I to glory pass,
  Skilled but in what each season grows?
I, gatherer of the Convent grass,
  With smell of mould about my clothes?

I cannot sing; I scarce can pray;
  Let me have there some garden space,
Where I may dig in mine old way,
  And looking up, Lord, see thy face.

A CELTIC MAYING SONG

From 'A Quiet Road.'

Seven candles burn at my love's head,
  Seven candles at his feet;
He lies as he were carved of stone
  Under the winding sheet.

The Mayers troop into the town
  Each with a branch of May,
But when they come to my love's house
  Not one word do they say.

But when they come to my love's house,
  Silent they stand before;
Out steps a lad with one white bough,
  And lays it at the door.

APRIL WEATHER

From 'A Quiet Road.'

Oh! hush, my heart, and take thine ease,
For here is April weather!
The daffodils beneath the trees
Are all a-row together.

The thrush is back with his old note;
The scarlet tulip blowing;
And white—ay, white as my love's throat—
The dogwood boughs are growing.

The lilac bush is sweet again;
Down every wind that passes,
Fly flakes from hedge row and from lane;
The bees are in the grasses.

And Grief goes out, and joy comes in,
And care is but a feather;
And every lad his love can win;
For here is April weather.

THE MYSTERY

From *The Smart Set.* Copyright, and used here by permission of the author and the publishers.

"I have been here before."—*Rosetti.*

As up and down the world I go,
All ancient do the places show;
The gardens full of honeybees,
The roofs, the high and windy trees.

April begins. The gnarled pear
Out in the lane buds white and fair;
Long since—for I can see it plain—
It blossomed in just such a lane.

This sunset light upon the glass,
Long since I saw across the grass;
Perhaps in Rouen, perhaps in Rome;
Where'er, I know that it was home.

The very thought of this is sweet;
What though the memory be fleet!
The sound, the odor but a snatch?
It is the clicking of the latch.

THE YOUNG MOTHER

From *The Smart Set*. Copyright, and used here by permission of the author and the publishers.

The Host lifts high the candle-light—
  Out in the dark she waits before—
"Now who is this at mid of night,
  Comes faring to my door?"

With rushes is the chamber set;
  The house is sweet without, within;
For it may be she will forget
  The place where she hath been.

But lonely, lonely in the room,
  With strange eyes looks she all about;
She sees the broken boughs in bloom,
  The red wine poured out.

They crowd around her where she stands,
  The children and the elders there;
They put the cup within her hands;
  They break the loaf so fair.

Oh! what to her that they are kind!
  Oh! let the tears come like a tide!
She cannot keep from out her mind
  The son for whom she died!

AT COCKCROW

From *The Congregationalist*. Copyright, and used here by permission of the author and the publishers.

The stars are gone out spark by spark;
  A cock crows up the cloudy lane,
A cart toils creaking through the dark;
  Lord, in Thy sight all roads are plain,
Or run they up or down,
Sheep tracks, highways to town,
Or even that little one,
Beneath the hedge, where seldom falls the sun.

If it were light, I would go west;
  I would go east across the land;
But it is dark, I needs must rest
  Till morn breaks forth on every hand;
Lord, choose for me,
The road that runs to Thee.

AUGUSTUS JULIAN REQUIER

[1825—1887]

GEORGE A. WAUCHOPE

AUGUSTUS JULIAN REQUIER was born at Charleston, South Carolina, in 1825 and died in 1887. He was descended from French stock, and having been educated in the schools of his native city, was admitted to the Bar in 1844. In 1842 he published a play in blank verse entitled 'The Spanish Exile,' which was acted with success and gave him popularity as an author. Two years later appeared 'The Old Sanctuary,' a pre-Revolutionary romance. After practicing his profession for a short time, he removed to Marion, South Carolina, where he resided for four or five years. From 1850 to 1865 he resided in Mobile, Alabama, where in 1853 he was appointed United States Attorney for the Southern District of Alabama. During the Civil War he held the office of Confederate States Attorney for Alabama. He afterward made his home in the city of New York, where he practiced law until his death.

Judge Requier was the author of 'The Spanish Exile' (1842); 'The Old Sanctuary, A Romance of South Carolina' (1844); 'Marco Bozzaris: A Tragedy;' 'Crystalline, and Other Poems' (1859). Among his best poems are "Ashes of Glory," "Only a Dream," "Clouds in the West," "Who Was It?" "The Legend of Tremaine" (1862), "Ode to Shakespeare," and "Ode to Victory" (1862). He also wrote a number of essays which were published in various periodicals.

Upon the departure of Judge Requier from Mobile to New York a newspaper of the former city said of him: "It is natural that we should grant grudgingly what we cannot afford to part with; and in the present case we thus constrainedly contribute a jurist of eminent skill, energy, and acquirements; an orator who blends the impassioned fervor of Prentiss with the laboriously informed acumen of Pinckney; a littérateur whose productions are foremost among those which illustrate the artistic resources of his section; and last, but not least, a gentleman whose amiable deportment and refined manners are the genuine reflex of a soul incapable of guile."

"Cultivated and sensitive himself," says Dr. James Wood Davidson, "he has tastes that separate him from the many. His genius is chaste, logical, vigorous, ideal, and subjective. In chastened energy,

ideal purity, and symmetrical art, he stands clearly first among the poets of the South. He has less sensuous fervor than Hayne; less geniality and naturalness than Timrod; less melodramatic verve and brilliant antithesis than Flash; and less dash and graceful fire than Randall; but at the same time he has more suggestive ideality, greater philosophical art, and a more elevated range of thought than any of them. He is metaphysical, and in the same degree removed from the sensuous and the popular. . . . Among the sad utterances of lament for a lost cause—the threnodies of a sorrowing South in her recent defeat, and the furling and folding of her conquered banner —Mr. Requier's 'Ashes of Glory' holds honorable place."*

George Armstrong Wauchope.

*'Living Writers of the South,' pp. 455-456 (1869).

ASHES OF GLORY

From Simms's 'War Poetry of the South,' Charleston, 1867.

Fold up the gorgeous silken sun,
  By bleeding martyrs blest,
And heap the laurels it has won
  Above its place of rest.

No trumpet's note need harshly blare—
  No drum funereal roll—
Nor trailing sables drape the bier
  That frees a dauntless soul!

It lived with Lee, and decked his brow
  From Fate's empyreal Palm:
It sleeps the sleep of Jackson now—
  As spotless and as calm.

It was outnumbered—not outdone;
  And they shall shuddering tell,
Who struck the blow, its latest gun
  Flashed ruin as it fell.

Sleep, shrouded Ensign! not the breeze
That smote the victor tar,
With death across the heaving seas
Of fiery Trafalgar;

Not Arthur's knights, amid the gloom
Their knightly deeds have starred;
Nor Gallic Henry's matchless plume,
Nor peerless-born Bayard;

Not all that antique fables feign,
And Orient dreams disgorge;
Nor yet, the Silver Cross of Spain,
And Lion of St. George,

Can bid thee pale! Proud emblem, still
Thy crimson glory shines
Beyond the lengthened shades that fill
Their proudest kingly lines.

Sleep! in thine own historic night—
And be thy blazoned scroll,
A warrior's Banner takes its flight,
To greet the warrior's soul!

ONLY A DREAM

From Simms's 'War poetry of the South,' Charleston, 1867.

By the lake beyond the meadow,
Where the lilies blow—
As the young moon dipt and lifted
Her reflected bow!—
Lived and died a dream of beauty,
Many years ago.

Something made the milk-white blossoms
Even whiter grow;
Something gave the dying sunset
An intenser glow,
And enriched the cup of rapture,
Filled to overflow.

Hope was frail, and Passion fleeting—
It is often so;
Visions born of golden sunsets
With the sunsets go;
To have loved is to have suffered
Martyrdom below!

By the lake beyond the meadow,
Where the lilies blow—
Oh! the glory there that perished,
None shall ever know—
When a human heart was broken,
Many years ago!

WHO WAS IT?

From Davidson's 'Living Writers of the South,' New York and London, 1869.

I met—when was it, oh! between
The sunset and the morn
Of one indelible day as green
As memory's oldest born.
I met her where the grasses grow—
Away from tower and town—
Whose gypsy bonnet clipt the glow
Of chestnut isles of brown!

I asked the rose to breathe her name;
She pouted and she said,
She could not speak of her who came
To pale her richest red.
I asked the lily, ripple-rimmed—
A flake-like curve of snow—
She sighed her glory had been dimmed
By one she did not know.

I stooped beside a tufted bed
Of leaflets moist with dew,
Where one sweet posy hung its head
Of deep, divinest blue;

And asked the violet if her power
Could reach that spell of flame.
She smiled, "I am her favourite flower,
And—Lizzie!—is her name."

ODE TO SHAKESPEARE

From 'Poems,' 1860.

He went forth into Nature and he sung,
Her first-born of imperial sway—the lord
Of sea and continent and clime and tongue;
Striking the Harp with whose sublime accord
The whole Creation rung!

He went forth into Nature and he sung
Her grandest terrors and her simplest themes—
The torrent by the beetling crag o'erhung,
And the wild-daisy on its brink that gleams
Unharmed, and lifts a dew-drop to the sun!
The muttering of the tempest in its halls
Of darkness turreted; beheld alone
By an o'erwhelming brilliance which appals—
The turbulence of Ocean—the soft calm
Of the sequestered vale—the bride-like day,
Or sainted Eve, dispensing holy balm
From her lone lamp of silver thro' the gray
That leads the star-crowned Night adown the mountain way!
These were his themes and more—no little bird
Lit in the April forest but he drew
From its wild notes a meditative word—
A gospel that no other mortal knew:
Bard, priest, evangelist! from rarest cells
Of riches inexhaustible he took
The potent ring of her profoundest spells,
And wrote great Nature's Book!

They people earth and sea and air,
The dim, tumultuous band,
Called into being everywhere
By his creative wand;

In kingly court and savage lair,
Prince, Peasant, Priest, and Sage and Peer,
And midnight hag and ladye fair,
Pure as the white rose in her hair,
And warriors that on barbèd steed,
Burn to do the crested deed,
And lovers that delighted rove
When moonlight marries with the grove,
Glide forth—appear!
To breathe or love or hate or fear;
And with most unexampled wile,
To win a soul-enraptured smile,
Or blot it in a tear.

* * * * *

Bright shall thine altars be,
First of the holy Minstrel band,
Green as the vine-encircled land
And vocal as the sea!
Thy name is writ
Where stars are lit,
And thine immortal shade,
'Mid archangelic clouds displayed
On Fame's imperial seat,
Sees the inseparable Nine
In its reflected glory shine,
And Nature at its feet.

THE IMAGE

From 'Poems,' 1860.

Thou dwellest in my thoughts,
As shines a jewel in some ocean cave,
Which the eye marks not and the waters lave—
A ray of light imprisoned! which none save
The soul that shrines it knows—its temple and its grave.

Thou bathest in my dreams;
A form of dainty Beauty—something seen
At cloudy intervals, through a gauze-like screen—
A voice of gentle memories—a mien
Too tender for an angel's, yet as fair, I ween.

Thou sparklest through my fears;
A hope which blossoms as an early flower,
Shines in the sun nor droops beneath the shower—
A holy star that glides at vesper hour
Into the dusk-hung sky—and, saintly, seems to lower!

In daylight and in dreams,
'Mid hopes that beckon and 'mid fears that frown,
Thou art the juice that every care can drown;
A rose amongst the thorns—the azure down
Of the meek-brooding dove—the Halo and the Crown!

ALICE HEGAN RICE

[1870—]

GEORGE MADDEN MARTIN

ALICE HEGAN RICE, the daughter of Samuel Hegan and Sallie Caldwell, is of English and Irish stock by both lines of descent. She was born at Shelbyville, Kentucky, at the Caldwell homestead, in January, 1870, but has lived her entire life in Louisville, Kentucky, in which city her paternal grandfather, Francis Hegan, settled in 1834.

Her education was received at Hampton College, a private school of Louisville. Previous to the appearing of her first book, her life was that of the Southern girl and woman of easy circumstances, a purely social experience, in which casual travel, and some interest in organized club work among women, had their part, together with philanthropic work among such poor as she came in personal contact with.

Out of these ordinary experiences, social and philanthropic, she drew her first book, 'Mrs. Wiggs of the Cabbage Patch,' which appeared in 1901 under the signature of Alice Caldwell Hegan, the reception of which at once placed her among the American humorists. A few pen sketches only, slight and casual in their nature, had preceded the writer's first book.

Miss Hegan was married, in 1902, to Cale Young Rice, poet and dramatist. A considerable portion of the time since has been spent by Mr. and Mrs. Rice in travel in Europe and Japan. In 1903 her second book appeared, under the title of 'Lovey Mary,' followed in 1905 by 'Sandy.' A book for children, entitled 'Captain June,' appeared in 1907. The most recent work of Mrs. Rice, now appearing serially in *The Century Magazine* (1908-'09), bears the title of 'Mr. Opp.' Several short stories also have appeared from her pen in various magazines. The present year, 1909, finds the subject of this sketch returned to Japan for an indefinite stay, from which country Mr. and Mrs. Rice go to India for travel and study of the land and its people.

Mrs. Rice is characterized by the same qualities which are to be found in her writings, a strong and genial interest in human life and human nature, a bent toward practical philanthropy and an optimistic insistence upon the ultimate good in all that these inter-

ests have revealed to her. Her knowledge of life and people as she sees them comes from acquaintance with life and people direct. She is a humorist at first hand rather than a closet student of human nature. Back of her writings lie a sympathy with the subjects, and a heartiness and appreciation, as though with her it be "the first of democratic doctrines, that all men are interesting."

Perhaps her place as a writer in American fiction rests as yet with her two books, 'Mrs. Wiggs of the Cabbage Patch,' a piece of that rare product, pure comedy, and the continuation of the same story, in the same vein, 'Lovey Mary.' The history of the popularity of the two books is necessarily a part of this sketch. Their sales in America and England reaching and passing what hitherto had been the phenomenal in that day of the curiously phenomenal sales in fiction, no sketch of Mrs. Rice or of her work would be consistent or complete that omitted such reference to the publisher's record; both because it is a bit of the history of fiction of her day, and because the figures are a register by the public of that day's choice in popular tales.

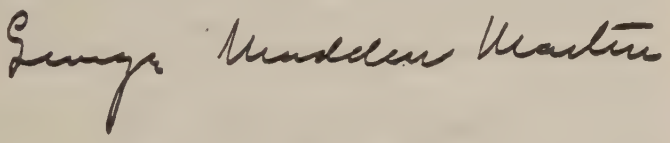
These stories, 'Mrs. Wiggs of the Cabbage Patch' and 'Lovey Mary,' its sequel, are simple in construction and in the manner of their telling. Both are stories born, not made, and characterized by the spontaneity which as a rule marks natural utterance. Both are youthfully joyous expressions, stories *virginibus puerisque,* their incidents and their characters transcending the experiences of no one, and therefore capable of appealing to all classes, the lines of the stories being those followed by the universal and conventional story-tellers from the beginning. Both stories deal charitably and affectionately with the lives of the plain people, a love of humanity pervading them, their creed being an optimistic and simple one. Their humor is natural and unforced, a mixture of comic appreciation and human sympathy. In 1903 the two books were dramatized as one story, and again the history of the response of the American and English public must be referred to as proof of the successful appeal of the writer to her public.

'Sandy,' the story of a little Irish emigrant and stowaway, and his subsequent fortunes in America, lacks the convincing quality of the author's first books. Also to this stage of the writer's development, that of the emergence from the natural utterance to the conscious and constructive, belongs 'Captain June,' a story for children, the scene of which is laid in Japan.

To yet another phase in the development of Mrs. Rice would seem to belong a short story, "The Soul of O Sana San," a narrative in Japanese setting, told in an imaginative and poetic strain thus far peculiar to this one tale from the writer.

In 'Mr. Opp,' the most recent work of Mrs. Rice, the author presents a new study and characterization, purely American in the drawing, of the optimist and visionist in the daily business of life, and in this case, of the optimist, instinctively and triumphantly persistent in his attitude, even beyond the end which, for him, is failure.

In this story the writer again deals with the plain people, and again does so with that affectionate appreciation and sympathetic humor which in her hands result in kindly comedy. The setting and the characters are purely and typically local; and because they are faithful they are also typically American. While the story, in conscious purpose and constructive planning, is to be regarded as the author's first venture into the field of the novel as distinct from the simple story, yet in it, as in her first books, 'Mrs. Wiggs of the Cabbage Patch' and 'Lovey Mary,' the achievement, over and above story or characterizations, lies in the writer's interpretations of the lives and the philosophy of the people she portrays.



BIBLIOGRAPHY

Mrs. Wiggs of the Cabbage Patch. Century Company, 1901.

Lovey Mary. Serial in *The Century Magazine,* 1902-'03; in book form, 1903.

Sandy. Serial in *The Century Magazine,* 1905. 1905.

Captain June. Serial in *St. Nicholas Magazine,* 1906-'07. 1907.

Mr. Opp. Serial in *The Century Magazine,* 1908-'09. 1909.

The Soul of O Sana San. *The Century Magazine,* December, 1905.

The Wild Oats of a Spinster. *The Century Magazine,* July, 1906.

When Jove Nods. *Harper's Magazine.*

Cupid Goes Slumming. *American Magazine,* August, 1907.

Some Women Writers. *The Outlook,* October 1, 1908.

Friends of My Girlhood. By Alice Hegan Rice. *The Outlook,* December 3, 1908.

THE ANNEXATION OF CUBY

From 'Mrs. Wiggs of the Cabbage Patch.' Copyright, The Century Company, and used here by permission of the publishers.

They well deserve to have,
That know the strongest and surest way to get.

ALMOST a year rolled over the Cabbage Patch, and it was nearing Christmas again. The void left in Mrs. Wiggs's heart by Jim's death could never be filled, but time was beginning to soften her grief, and the necessity for steady employment kept her from brooding over her trouble.

It was still needful to maintain the strictest economy, for half the money which had been given them was in Miss Olcott's keeping as a safeguard against another rainy day. Mrs. Wiggs had got as much washing as she could do; Asia helped about the house, and Billy did odd jobs wherever he could find them.

The direct road to fortune, however, according to Billy's ideas, could best be traveled in a kindling-wagon, and, while he was the proud possessor of a dilapidated wagon, sole relic of the late Mr. Wiggs, he had nothing to hitch to it. Scarcely a week passed that he did not agitate the question, and, as Mrs. Wiggs often said, "When Billy Wiggs done set his head to a thing, he's as good as got it!"

So she was not surprised when he rushed breathlessly into the kitchen one evening, about supper-time, and exclaimed in excited tones: "Ma, I've got a horse! He was havin' a fit on the commons an' they was goin' to shoot him, an' I ast the man to give him to me!"

"My land, Billy! What do you want with a fit-horse?" asked his mother.

" 'Cause I knowed you could cure him. The man said if I took him I'd have to pay for cartin' away his carcass, but I said, 'All right, I'll take him, anyway.' Come on, ma, an' see him!" and Billy hurried back to his new possession.

Mrs. Wiggs pinned a shawl over her head and ran across the commons. A group of men stood around the writhing animal, but the late owner had departed.

"He's most gone," said one of the men, as she came up.

"I tole Billy you'd beat him fer takin' that ole nag offen the man's han's."

"Well, I won't," said Mrs. Wiggs, stoutly. "Billy Wiggs 's got more sense than most men I know. That hoss's carcass is worth somethin'; I 'spect he'd bring 'bout two dollars dead, an' mebbe more livin'. Anyway, I'm goin' to save him if there's any save to him!"

She stood with her arms on her hips, and critically surveyed her patient. "I'll tell you what's the matter with him," was her final diagnosis: "his lights is riz. Billy I'm goin' home for some medicine; you set on his head so 's he can't git up, an' ma 'll be right back in a minute."

The crowd which had collected to see the horse shot began to disperse, for it was supper-time, and there was nothing to see now but the poor suffering animal, with Billy Wiggs patiently sitting on its head.

When Mrs. Wiggs returned she carried a bottle, and what appeared to be a large marble. "This here is a calomel pill," she explained. "I jes' rolled the calomel in with some soft, light bread. Now, you prop his jaws open with a little stick, an' I'll shove it in, an' then hole his head back, while I pour down some water an' turkentine outen this bottle."

It was with great difficulty that this was accomplished, for the old horse had evidently seen a vision of the happy-hunting ground, and was loath to return to the sordid earth. His limbs were already stiffening in death, and the whites of his eyes only were visible. Mrs. Wiggs noted these discouraging symptoms, and saw that violent measures were necessary.

"Gether some sticks an' build a fire quick as you kin. I 've got to run over home. Build it right up clost to him, Billy; we 've got to git him het up."

She rushed into the kitchen, and, taking several cakes of tallow from the shelf, threw them into a tin bucket. Then she hesitated for a moment. The kettle of soup was steaming away on the stove ready for supper. Mrs. Wiggs did not believe in sacrificing the present need to the future comfort. She threw in a liberal portion of pepper, and seizing the kettle in one hand and the bucket of tallow in the other, staggered back to the bonfire.

"Now. Billy," she commanded, "put this bucket of tallow

down there in the hottest part of the fire. Look out; don't tip it—there! Now, you come here an' help me pour this soup into the bottle. I'm goin' to git that ole hoss so het up he'll think he's havin' a sunstroke! Seems sorter bad to keep on pestering him when he's so near gone, but this here soup'll feel good when it once gits inside him."

When the kettle was empty, the soup was impartially distributed over Mrs. Wiggs and the patient, but a goodly amount had "got inside," and already the horse was losing his rigidity.

Only once did Billy pause in his work, and that was to ask:

"Ma, what do you think I'd better name him?"

Giving names was one of Mrs. Wiggs's chief accomplishments, and usually required much thoughtful consideration; but in this case if there was to be a christening it must be at once.

"I'd like a jography name," suggested Billy, feeling that nothing was too good to bestow upon his treasure.

Mrs. Wiggs stood with the soup dripping from her hands, and earnestly contemplated the horse. Babies, pigs, goats, and puppies had drawn largely on her supply of late, and geography names especially were scarce. Suddenly a thought struck her.

"I'll tell you what, Billy! We'll call him Cuby! It's a town I heared 'em talkin' 'bout at the grocery."

By this time the tallow was melted, and Mrs. Wiggs carried it over by the horse, and put each of his hoofs into the hot liquid, while Billy rubbed the legs with all the strength of his young arms.

"That's right," she said; "now you run home an' git that piece of carpet by my bed, an' we 'll kiver him up. I am goin' to git them fence rails over yonder to keep the fire goin'."

Through the long night they worked with their patient, and when the first glow of morning appeared in the east, a triumphant procession wended its way across the Cabbage Patch. First came an old woman, bearing sundry pails, kettles, and bottles; next came a very sleepy little boy, leading a trembling old horse, with soup all over its head, tallow on its feet, and a strip of rag-carpet tied about its middle.

And thus Cuba, like his geographical namesake, emerged from the violent ordeal of reconstruction with a mangled

constitution, internal dissension, a decided preponderance of foreign element, but a firm and abiding trust in the new power with which his fortunes had been irrevocably cast.

THE SOUL OF O SANA SAN

From *The Century Magazine*, December, 1905, and used here by permission of the publishers.

O Sana San stood in the heart of a joyous world, as much a part of the radiant, throbbing, irresponsible spring as the golden butterfly which fluttered in her hand. Through the close-stemmed bamboos she could see the sparkling river racing away to the Inland Sea, while slow-moving junks, with their sixfold sails, glided with almost imperceptible motion toward a far-distant port. From below, across the rice-fields, came the shouts and laughter of naked bronze babies who played at the water's edge, and from above, high up on the ferny cliff, a mellow-throated temple bell answered the call of each vagrant breeze. Far away, shutting out the strange, big world, the luminous mountains hung in the purple mists of May.

And every note of color in the varied landscape, from the purple irises whose royal reflection stained the water below, to the rosy-tipped clover at the foot of the hill, was repeated in the kimono and *obi* of the child who flitted about in the grasses, catching butterflies in her long-handled net.

The constant echo of war that sounded around her disturbed her no more than it did the birds overhead. All day long the bugles sounded from the parade-grounds, and always and always the soldiers went marching away to the front. Around the bend in the river were miniature fortifications where recruits learned to make forts and trenches, and to shoot through tiny holes in a wall at imaginary Russian troopers. Down in the town below were long white hospitals where twenty thousand sick and wounded soldiers lay. No thought of the horror of it came to trouble O Sana San. The cherry-trees gladly and freely gave up their blossoms to the wind, and so must the country give up its men for the Emperor. Her father had marched away, then one brother, then another, and she had held up her hands and shouted, "Banzai!" and smiled

because her mother smiled. Everything was vague and uncertain, and no imagined catastrophe troubled her serenity. It was all the will of the Emperor, and it was well.

Life was a very simple matter to O Sana San. She rose when the sun climbed over the mountain, bathed her face and hands in the shallow copper basin in the garden, ate her breakfast of bean-curd and pickled fish and warm yellow tea. Then she hung the quilts over poles to sun, dusted the screens, and placed an offering of rice on the steps of the tiny shrine to Inari, where the little foxes kept guard. These simple duties being accomplished, she tied a bit of bean-cake in her gaily colored handkerchief, and stepping into her *geta,* went pattering off to school.

It was an English school, where she sat with hands folded through the long mornings, passively permitting the lessons to filter through her brain, and listening in smiling patience while the kind foreign ladies spoke incomprehensible things. Sometimes she helped pass the hours by watching the shadows of the dancing leaves outside; sometimes she told herself stories about "The Old Man Who Made Withered Trees to Blossom," or about "Momotaro, the Little Peach Boy." Again she would repeat the strange English words and phrases that she heard, and would puzzle out their meaning.

But the sum of her lore consisted in being happy; and when the shadow of the mountains began to slip across the valley, she would dance back along the homeward way, singing with the birds, laughing with the rippling water, and adding her share of brightness to the sunshine of the world.

As she stood on this particular morning with her net poised over a butterfly, she heard the tramping of many feet. A slow cavalcade was coming around the road—a long line of coolies bearing bamboo stretchers—and in the rear, in a jinrikisha, was a foreign man with a red cross on his sleeve.

O Sana San scrambled up the bank and watched with smiling curiosity as the men halted to rest. On the stretcher nearest her lay a young Russian prisoner with the fair skin and blond hair that are so unfamiliar to Japanese eyes. His blanket was drawn tight around his shoulders, and he lay very still, with lips set, gazing straight up through the bamboo leaves to the blue beyond.

Then it was that O Sana San, gazing in frank inquisitiveness at the soldier, saw a strange thing happen. A tear formed on his lashes and trickled slowly across his temple; then another and another, until they formed a tiny rivulet. More and more curious, she drew yet nearer, and watched the tears creep unheeded down the man's face. She was sure he was not crying, because soldiers never cry; it could not be the pain, because his face was very smooth and calm. What made the tears drop, drop on the hard pillow, and why did he not brush them away?

A vague trouble dawned in the breast of O Sana San. Running back to the field, she gathered a handful of wild flowers and returned to the soldier. The tears no longer fell, but his lips quivered and his face was distorted with pain. She looked about her in dismay. The coolies were down by the river, drinking from their hands and calling to one another; the only person to whom she could appeal was the tall English nurse who was adjusting a bandage for a patient at the end of the line.

With halting steps and many misgivings, she timidly made her way to his side; then placing her hands on her knees, she bowed low before him. The embarrassment of speaking to a stranger and a foreigner almost overwhelmed her, but she mustered her bravest array of English, and pointing to the stretcher, faltered out her message:

"Soldier not happy very much is. I sink soldier heart sorry."

The Red Cross nurse looked up from his work, and his eyes followed her gesture.

"He is hurt bad," he said shortly; "no legs, no arms."

"*So—deska?*" she said politely, then repeated his words in puzzled incomprehension: "Nowarms? Nowarms?"

When she returned to the soldier she gathered up the flowers which she had dropped by the wayside, and timidly offered them to him. For a long moment she waited, then her smile faded and her hand dropped. With a child's quick sensitiveness to rebuff, she was turning away when an exclamation recalled her.

The prisoner was looking at her in a strange, distressed

way; his deep-set gray eyes glanced down first at one bandaged shoulder, then at the other, then he shook his head.

As O Sana San followed his glance, a startled look of comprehension sprang into her face. "Nowarms!" she repeated softly as the meaning dawned upon her, and with a little cry of sympathy she ran forward and gently laid her flowers on his breast.

The cavalcade moved on, under the warm spring sun, over the smooth white road, under the arching cryptomerias; but little O Sana San stood under the yellow disk of her big sunshade and watched it with troubled eyes. A dreadful something was stirring in her heart, something clutched at her throat, and she no longer saw the sunshine and the flowers. Kneeling by the roadside, she loosened the little basket which was tied to her *obi* and gently lifted the lid. Slowly at first, and then with eager wings, a dozen captive butterflies fluttered back to freedom.

Along the banks of the Upper Flowing River, in a rudely improvised hospital, lay the wounded Russian prisoners. To one of the small rooms at the end of the ward reserved for fatally wounded patients a self-appointed nurse came daily, and rendered her tiny service in the only way she knew.

O Sana San's heart had been so wrought upon by the sad plight of her soldier friend that she had begged to be taken to see him and to be allowed to carry him flowers with her own hand. Her mother, in whom smoldered the fires of dead samurai, was quick to be gracious to a fallen foe, and it was with her consent that O Sana San went day after day to the hospital.

The nurses humored her childish whim, thinking each day would be the last; but as the days grew into weeks and the weeks into months, her visits became an established fact.

And the young Russian, lying on his rack of pain, learned to watch for her coming as the one hour of brightness in an interminable night of gloom. He made a sort of sun-dial of the cracks in the floor, and when the shadows reached a certain spot his tired eyes grew eager, and he turned his head to listen for the patter of the little *tabi* that was sure to sound along the hall.

Sometimes she would bring her picture-books and read him wonderful stories in words he did not understand, and show him the pictures of Momotaro, who was born out of a peach and who grew up to be so strong and brave that he went to the Ogres' Island and carried off all their treasures—caps and coats that made their wearers invisible, jewels which made the tide come or go, coral and amber and tortoise-shell—and all these things the little Peach Boy took back to his kind old foster mother and father, and they all lived happily forever after. And in the telling O Sana San's voice would thrill, and her almond eyes grow bright, while her slender brown finger pointed out the figures on the gaily colored pages.

Sometimes she would sing to him, in soft minor strains, of the beauty of the snow on the pine-trees, or the wonders of Fuji-San.

And he would pucker his white lips and try to whistle the accompaniment, to her great amusement and delight.

Many were the treasures she brought forth from the depths of her long sleeves, and many were the devices she contrived to amuse him. The most ambitious achievement was a miniature garden in a wooden box—a wonderful garden where grasses stood for tall bamboo, and a saucer of water, surrounded by moss and pebbles, made a shining lake across which a bridge led through a *torii* to a diminutive shrine above.

He would watch her deft fingers fashioning the minute objects, and listen to her endless prattle in her soft, unknown tongue, and for a little space the pain-racked body would relax and the cruel furrows vanish from between his brows.

But there were days in which the story and the song and the play had no part. At such times O Sana San slipped in on tiptoe and took her place at the head of the cot where he could not see her. Sitting on her heels, with hand folded in hand, she watched patiently for hours, alert to adjust the covers or smooth the pillow, but turning her eyes away when the spasms of pain contorted his face. All the latent maternity in the child rose to succor his helplessness. The same instinct that had prompted her to strap her doll upon her back when yet a mere baby herself, made her accept the burden of his suffering, and mother him with a very passion of tenderness.

Longer and sultrier grew the days; the wistaria, hanging

in feathery festoons from many a trellis, gave way to the flaming azalea, and the azalea in turn vanished with the coming of the lotus that floated sleepily in the old castle moat.

Still the soul of the young Russian was held a prisoner in his shattered body, and the spirit in him grew restive at the delay. Months had passed before the doctor told him his release was at hand. It was early in the morning, and the sun fell in long level rays across his cot. He turned his head and looked wistfully at the distance it would have to travel before it would be afternoon.

The nurse brought the screen and placed it about the bed —the last service she could render. For hours the end was expected, but moment by moment he held death at bay, refusing to accept the freedom that he had so earnestly longed for. At noon the sky became overcast and the slow falling of rain was heard on the low wooden roof. But still his fervent eyes watched the sun-dial, and he waited for her coming.

At last the sound of *geta* was heard without, and in a moment O Sana San slipped past the screen and dropped on her knees beside him. Under one arm was tightly held a small white kitten, her final offering at the shrine of love.

When he saw her quaint little figure, a look of peace came over his face, and he closed his eyes. An interpreter, knowing that a prisoner was about to die, came to the bedside and asked if he wanted to leave any message. He stirred slightly, then in a scarcely audible voice asked in Russian what the Japanese word was for "good-by." A long pause followed, during which the spirit seemed to hover irresolute upon the brink of eternity.

O Sana San sat motionless, her lips parted, her face full of the awe and mystery of death. Presently he stirred and turned his head slowly until his eyes were on a level with her own.

"*Sayonara,*" he whispered faintly, and tried to smile; and O Sana San, summoning all her courage to restrain the tears, smiled bravely back and whispered, "*Sayonara.*"

It was scarcely said before the spirit of the prisoner started forth upon his final journey, but he went not alone. The soul of a child went with him, leaving in its place the tender, newborn soul of a woman.

THE EDITOR ENTERTAINS

From 'Mr. Opp.' The *Century Magazine;* used here by permission of the publishers.

As Willard Hinton stood on the porch of "Your Hotel" and waited for his host for the night to call for him, he was in that state of black dejection that comes to a young man whose Ambition has proposed to Fortune, and been emphatically rejected. For six years he had worked persistently, and ceaselessly towards a given goal, doing clerical work day by day and creative work by night, going from short hand into long hand, and from numerical figures into figures of speech. For the way that Hinton's soul was traveling was the Inky Way, and at its end lay Authorship.

Unlike the great masses of literary porcupines who shoot a quill at a moment's notice, Hinton had taken himself and his work seriously, and served an apprenticeship of hard study, and conscientious preparation. So zealous was he, in fact, that he had arrived at the second stage of his great enterprise with a teeming brain, a practiced hand, and a pair of seriously affected eyes over which the oculists shook their heads and held out little encouragement.

For four months he had implicitly obeyed orders, attending only to his regular work, eating and sleeping with exemplary regularity, and spending all of his spare time in the open air. But the ravages, made in the long nights dedicated to the Muse, were not to be so easily repaired, and his eyes instead of improving were growing rapidly worse. The question of holding his position had slipped from a matter of months into weeks.

As he stood on the porch, he could hear the bustle of entertainment going on within the limited quarters of Your Hotel. Jimmy Fallows was in his element; as bar-tender, head-waiter, and jovial landlord he was playing a triple bill to a crowded house. Occasionally he opened the door, and urged Hinton to come inside:

"Mr. Opp'll be here 'fore long," he would say, "He's expecting you, but he had to stop by to take his girl home. You better step in and git a julep."

But Hinton, wrapped in the gloom of his own thoughts, preferred to remain where he was. Already he seemed to

belong to the dark, to be a thing apart from his fellow men. He shrank from companionship and sympathy as he shrank from the light. He longed to crawl away like a sick animal into some lonely corner and die. Whichever way he turned, the great Spectre of Darkness loomed before him. At first he had fought, then he had philosophically stood still, now he was retreating. Again and again he told himself that he would meet it like a man, and again and again he shrank back, ready to seek escape anywhere, anyhow.

"Oh God, if I weren't so damnably young," he cried to himself, beating his clenched hand against his brow, "more than half my life yet to live, and in the dark!"

The rattle of wheels and the stopping of a light in front of the Hotel, made him pull himself together.

The small gentleman in the checked suit, whom he had seen on the wharf, strode in without seeing him. He paused before he opened the door and smoothed his scanty locks and rearranged his pink necktie. Then he drew in his chin, threw out his chest and with a carefully prepared smile of welcome entered.

The buzz within increased, and it was some minutes before the door opened again and Jimmy Fallows was heard saying:

"He's round here some place. Mr. Hinton! Oh! here you are; let me make you acquainted with Mr. Opp, he's going to take you out to his house for the night."

No sooner had Hinton's hand been released from Mr. Opp's cordial grasp, than he felt that gentleman's arm thrust through his, and was conscious of being rapidly conducted down the steps and out to the vehicle.

"On no possible account," Mr. Opp was saying, with Hinton's grip in one hand and two umbrellas in the other, "would I have allowed myself to be late, except that it was what you might consider absolutely necessary. Now you get right in, just take all that robe. No, the grip can go right here between my feet. We trust that you will not regard the weather in any ways synonymous with the state of our feelings of welcome."

Mr. Hinton remarked rather shortly that the weather never mattered to him one way or another.

"That's similar to myself," Mr. Opp went on, "I come of very sturdy, enduring stock. For a man of my size I doubt

if you'd find a finer constitution in the country. You wouldn't particularly think of it to look at me, now would you?"

Hinton looked at the small, stooping figure, and at the peaked, sallow face, and said rather sarcastically that he would not.

"Strong as an ox," declared Mr. Opp.

Just here the horse stumbled and they were jerked violently forward.

Mr. Opp apologized: "Just at present we are having a little difficulty with our country roads. We have taken the matter up in the Opp *Eagle* last week. All these things takes time to regulate but we are getting there. This oil boom is going to revolutionize things. It's my firm and abiding conviction that we are on the eve of a great change. It wouldn't surprise me, in the least, if this town grew to be one of the principalest cities on the Ohio River."

"To be a worthy eyrie for your *Eagle?*" suggested Hinton.

"The Opp *Eagle,*" corrected Mr. Opp, "I don't know as you know that I am the sole proprietor, as well as being the editor in addition."

"No," said Hinton, "I did not know. How does it happen that a man with such colossal responsibilities can take time to dabble in oil wells?"

"You don't know me," said Mr. Opp, with a paternal smile at his own ability, "promoting and organizing comes as natural to me as breathing the atmosphere! I am engineering this scheme with one hand, the Town Improvement League with another, and the Opp *Eagle* with another. Then, in a minor kind of way, I am a active Odd Fellow, first cornetist in the Unique Orchestra and a director in the bank. And beside," Mr. Opp concluded with some coyness, "there is the natural, personal, social diversions that most young men indulge in."

By this time they had reached the grey old house on the river bank, and Mr. Opp hitched the horse and held the lantern while Hinton stepped from one stony island to another in the sea of mud.

"Just enter right into the dining room," said Mr. Opp throwing open the door, "Unfortunately we are having a temporary difficulty with the parlor heating apparatus. If you'll

just pass right on up stairs, I'll show you the guest chamber. Be careful of your head please!"

With pomp and dignity Mr. Hinton was conducted to his apartment, and urged to make known any possible want that might occur to him.

"I'll be obliged to leave you for a spell," said Mr. Opp, "in order to attend to the proper putting up of the horse. If you'll just consider everything you see as yours, and make yourself entirely at home, I'll come up for you in about twenty minutes."

Left alone Hinton went to the bureau to pin a paper around the lamp, and as he did so he encountered a smiling face in the mirror. The face was undoubtedly his, but the smile seemed almost to belong to a stranger, so long had it been since he had seen it.

He made a hasty toilet, and sat down with his back to the light to await his summons to dinner. The large room poorly and scantily furnished gave unmistakable evidence of having been arranged especially for his coming. There was no covering on the floor, and no pictures on the wall, but the wall paper was of a sufficiently decorative character to warrant the absence of other adornment. It may be said to have been a botanical paper, for roses and lilies, and sunflowers, and daisies grew in riotous profusion. The man who hung the paper evidently was of a scientific turn, for in matching the strips he had gained some results in cross-grafting that approached the miraculous.

After sufficient time had elapsed to have stabled half a dozen horses, Hinton, whose appetite was becoming ravenous, went into the hall and started down the steps. When half way down he heard a crash of china, and saw his host, in his shirt sleeves, staggering under a large tray overcrowded with dishes.

Beating a hasty retreat he went quietly up the steps again, but not before he heard a querulous voice saying:

"Now Mr. D. if you haint done busted two plates and a tea-cup!"

Retiring to his room until the trouble should be adjusted, Hinton once more contemplated the floral paper. As he sat there the door creaked slightly and looking up, he thought he

saw some one peeping at him through the crack. Later he distinctly heard the rustle of garments, a stealthy step, and the closing of the door across the hall.

At last Mr. Opp came somewhat noisily up the steps and, flinging wide the door, invited him to descend. In the dining room below the scene was nothing short of festal! All the candlesticks were filled with lighted candles, an American flag was draped across the top of the clock, and the little schooner that rocked behind the pendulum seemed fired with the determination to get somewhere to-night if it never did again. Even the owls on either end of the mantel wore a benignant look, and seemed to beam a welcome on the honored guest.

But it was the dining table that held the center of the stage, and that held everything else as well. The dinner, through its sequence of soup, meat, salad, and dessert, was displayed in lavish hospitality. Cove etiquette evidently demanded that no square inch of the table cloth should remain unoccupied.

Seated at the table, with hands demurely folded, was the most grotesque figure that Hinton had ever seen. Clad in a queer, old-fashioned garment of faded blue cloth, with very full skirt and flowing sleeves, with her hair gathered into a tight knot at the back of her head, and a necklace of nut-shells about her neck, a strange little lady sat and watched him with parted lips and wide excited eyes.

"If you'll just sit here opposite my sister," said Mr. Opp, not attempting an introduction, "I'll as usual take my customary place at the head of the board."

It was all done with great *éclat,* but from the first there were unmistakable signs of nervousness on the part of the host. He left the table twice before the soup was removed, once to get the napkins which had been overlooked, and once to persuade his sister not to put the baked potatoes in her lap.

When the critical moment for the trial of strength between him and the goose arrived, he was not in good condition. It was his first wrestling match with a goose, and his technical knowledge of the art consisted in the meagre fact that the strategic point was to become master of the opponent's legs. The fowl had, moreover, by nature of its being, the advantage

of extreme slipperiness, an expedient recognized and made use of by the gladiators of old.

Mr. Opp, limited as to space, and conscious of a critical audience, rose to the occasion, and with jaw set and the light of conquest in his eye entered the fray. He pushed forward, and pulled back, he throttled, he went through facial and bodily contortions. The match was conducted in "the catch hold first down to loose style," and the honors seemed equally divided. At last, by the adroit administration of a left leg stroke, Mr. Opp succeeded in throwing his adversary, but unfortunately he threw it too far.

The victory, though brilliant, was not without its casualties. The goose, in its post-mortem flight, took its revenge, and the overturned cranberries sent a crimson stain across the white cloth, giving a sanguinary aspect to the scene.

When order was restored and Mr. Opp had once more taken his seat, the little lady in the blue dress, who had remained quiet during the recent conflict, suddenly raised her voice in joyous song.

"Now Kippy," warned Mr. Opp, putting a restraining hand on her arm, and looking at her appealingly. She shrank back in her chair and her eyes filled, as she clasped his hand tightly in both of hers.

"As I was remarking," Mr. Opp went steadily on, trying to behave as if it were quite natural for him to eat with his left hand, "the real value of the underground product in this country has been but fairly made apparent, and now that you capitalists are coming in to take a hold there's no way of forming an idea of the ultimate result."

Hinton, upon whom no phase of the situation had been lost, came valiantly to Mr. Opp's rescue. He roused himself to follow his host's lead in the conversation, he was apparently oblivious to the many irregularities of the dinner. In fact it was one of the rare occasions upon which Hinton took the trouble to exert himself. Something in the dreary old room with its brave attempt at cheer, in the half-witted little lady who was making such superhuman effort to be good, and above all in the bombastic, egotistical, ignorant editor who was trying to keep up appearances against such heavy odds, touched the best and deepest that was in Hinton, and lifted him out

of himself. Gradually he began to take the lead in the conversation. With infinite tact he relieved Mr. Opp of the necessity of entertaining, and gave him a chance to eat his dinner. He told stories so simple that even Miss Kippy loosened her hold on her brother's hand to listen.

When the sunset of the dinner in the form of a pumpkin pie had disappeared, the gentlemen retired to the fire.

"Don't you smoke?" asked Hinton, holding a match to his pipe.

"Why yes," said Mr. Opp, "I have smoked occasionally. It's amazing how it assists you in creating newspaper articles. One of the greatest editorials I ever turned out was when I had a segar in my mouth!"

"Then why don't you smoke?"

Mr. Opp glanced over his shoulders at Aunt Tish who, with Miss Kippy's doubtful assistance, was clearing the table.

"I don't mind telling you," he said confidentially, "that up to the present time I've experienced a good many business reverses, and considerable family responsibility. I hope now in a year or two to be able to indulge them little extra items. The lack of money," he added somewhat proudly, "is no disgrace, but I can't deny it's what you might call limiting."

Hinton smiled. "I think I've got a cigar somewhere about me. Here it is, will you try it?"

Mr. Opp didn't care if he did, and from the manner in which he lighted it, and the way in which he stood with one elbow on the high mantel shelf and his feet gracefully crossed, while he blew curling wreaths toward the ceiling, it was not difficult to reckon the extent of his self-denial.

"Do you indulge much in the pleasure of reading?" he asked, looking at Hinton through the cloud of smoke.

"I did," said Hinton, drawing a deep breath.

"It's a great pastime," said Mr. Opp. "I wonder if you are familiar with this here volume," he took from the shelf "The Encyclopedia of Wonder, Beauty, and Wisdom."

"Hardly a thumb-nail edition," said Hinton, receiving it with both hands.

"Say, it's a remarkable work," said Mr. Opp earnestly, "you ought to get yourself one. Facts in the first part, and the prettiest poetry you ever read in the back; a dollar down

and fifty cents a month until paid for. Here, let me show you; read that one:

"I can't see it," said Hinton.

"I'll get the lamp."

"Never mind, Opp, it isn't that. You read it to me."

Mr. Opp read with great pleasure, and having once started he found it difficult to stop. From "Lord Ullin's Daughter" he passed to "Curfew," thence to "Barbara Frietchie" and "Young Lochinvar" and as he read, Hinton sat with closed eyes and traveled into the past.

He saw a country school house, and himself a youngster of eight, competing for a prize. He was standing on a platform, and the children were below him, and behind him was a row of visitors. He was paralyzed with fear, but bursting with ambition. With one supreme effort he began his speech,

"Oh! the Young Lochinvar has came out of the West!

He got no further, a shout from the big boys and a word from the teacher, and he burst into tears and fled for refuge to his mother. How the lines brought it all back! He could feel her arms about him now, and her cheek against his and hear again her words of comfort. In all the years since she had been taken from him he had never wanted her so insistently, as during those few moments that Mr. Opp's high voice was doing its worst for the long suffering Lochinvar.

"Mr. D," said a complaining voice from the doorway, "Miss Kippy won't lemme tek her dress off to go to baid. She 'low she gwine sleep in hit."

Mr. Opp abruptly descended from his elocutionary flight, and asked to be excused for a few moments.

"Just a little domestic friction," he assured Hinton, "you can glance over the rest of the poems and I'll be back soon."

Hinton left alone, paced restlessly up and down the room. The temporary diversion was over, and he was once more face to face with his problem. He went to the table and taking a note from his pocket bent over the lamp to read it. The lines blurred and ran together, but a word here and there recalled the contents. It was from Mr. Mathews, who preferred writing disagreeable things to saying them. Mr. Mathews, the note said, had been greatly annoyed recently by repeated errors in the reports of his secretary, that he was neither as

rapid nor as accurate as formerly, and that an improvement would have to be made, or a change would be deemed advisable.

"Delicate tact!" sneered Hinton, crushing the paper in his hand; "courtesy sometimes begets a request, and the shark shrinks from conferring favors. And I've got to stick it out, to go on accepting condescending disapproval until 'a change is deemed advisable.'"

He dropped his head on his arms, and so deep was he in his bitter thoughts that he did not hear Mr. Opp come into the room. That gentleman stood for a moment in great embarrassment; then he stepped noiselessly out, and heralded his second coming by rattling the door knob.

The wind had risen to a gale, and it shrieked about the old house and tugged at the shutters, and rattled the panes incessantly.

"You take the big chair," urged Mr. Opp, who had just put on a fresh log and sent the flames dancing up the chimney, "and here's a pitcher of hard cider whenever you feel the need of a little refreshment. You ain't a married man, I would judge, Mr. Hinton?"

"Thank the Lord, no!" exclaimed Hinton.

"Well," said Mr. Opp, smiling and pursing his lips, "you know that's just where I think us young men are making a mistake."

"Matrimony," said Hinton, "is about the only catastrophe that hasn't befallen me during my short and rocky career."

"See here," said Mr. Opp, "I used to feel that way too."

"Before you met her?" suggested Hinton.

Mr. Opp looked pleased but embarrassed. "I can't deny there is a young lady," he said, "but she is quite young as yet. In fact I don't mind telling you she's just about half my age!"

Hinton, instead of putting two and two together, added eighteen to eighteen. "And you are about thirty-six?" he asked.

"Exactly," said Mr. Opp surprised. "I am most generally considered a long sight younger."

From matrimony the conversation drifted to oil wells, then to journalism, and finally to a philosophical discussion of life itself. Mr. Opp got beyond his depth again and again, and at times he became so absorbed that he gave a very poor imita-

tion of himself, and showed signs of humility that were rarely if ever visible.

Hinton meantime was taking soundings, and sometimes his plummet stopped where it started, and sometimes it dropped to an unexpected depth.

"Well," he said at last, rising, "We must go to bed. You'll go on climbing a ladder in the air, and I'll go on burrowing like a mole in the ground, and what is the good of it all? What chance have either of us for coming out anywhere? You can fool yourself; I can't; that's the difference."

Mr. Opp's unusual mental exertions had apparently affected his entire body; his legs were tightly wrapped about each other, his arms were locked, and his features were drawn into an amazing pucker of protest.

"That ain't it," he said emphatically, struggling valiantly to express his conviction, "this here life business ain't run on any such small scale as that. According to my notion or understanding it's—well—what you might call, in military figures, a fight." He paused a moment, and tied himself if possible into even a tighter knot; then he proceeded slowly and groping his way, "Of course there's some that just remains around in camp, afraid to fight and afraid to desert, just sort of indulging in conversation, you might say, about the rest of the army. Then there is the cowards and deserters. But a decent sort of a individual, or rather soldier, carries his orders around with him, and the chief and principal thing he's got to do is to follow them. What the fight is concerning, or in what manner the General is a-aiming to bring it all correct in the end, ain't, according to my conclusion, *a particle of our business!*"

Having arrived at this point of the discussion in a somewhat heated and indignant state, Mr. Opp suddenly remembered his duties as host. With a lordly wave of the hand he dismissed the subject and conducted Hinton in state to his bed chamber, where he insisted upon lighting the fire and arranging the bed.

Hinton sat for a long time before undressing, listening to the wind in the chimney, to the scrape, scrape of the cedar on the roof, and to the yet more dismal sounds that were echoing in his heart. Everything about the old house spoke

of degeneration, decay, yet in the midst of it lived a man who asked no odds of life, who took what came, and who lived with a zest, an abandon, a courage that were baffling. Self-deception, egotism, cheap optimism, could they bring a man to this state of mind? Hinton wondered bitterly what Opp would do in his position, suppose his sight was threatened, how far would his foolish self-delusion serve him then?

But he could not imagine Mr. Opp—lame, halt, or blind —giving up the fight. There was that in the man, egotism, courage, whatever it was, that would never recognize defeat, that quality that wins, out of a life of losing, the final victory.

Before he retired, Hinton found there was no drinking water in his room, and, remembering a pitcher full in the dining room, he took the candle and softly opened his door. The sudden cold draught from the hall made the candle flare, but as it steadied, Hinton saw that an old cot had been placed across the door opposite his, as if on guard, and that beside it, in his night clothes, a shivering figure knelt, with his head clasped in his hands. It was Mr. Opp saying his prayers.

CALE YOUNG RICE

[1872–]

MARGARET STEELE ANDERSON

CALE YOUNG RICE, poetic dramatist and lyric poet, was born in Dixon, Webster County, Kentucky, December 7, 1872. While he was still in early childhood his family removed to Evansville, where he grew up and prepared for college. He went first to Cumberland University and afterward to Harvard, where he took the degrees of A.B. and A.M. In 1890 his family removed to Louisville, he joining it later, after filling, for a year, the chair of English literature at Cumberland. On December 18, 1902, he was married to Alice Caldwell Hegan, whose first work was then making its way in the field of the short novel. Since that time, though varied by much travel and other pleasures, the life of the two has been a life of literary work, Mr. Rice giving most of his time to poetic drama, which he finds his particular element. While distinctly a poet and devoting his life to his work, he is interested in affairs political and social; he is a man who has thought much of the great problems of religion and of morals; he is equally the student of the outdoor world and of psychical forces; and his sympathies, naturally acute, have been broadened by the sight of a varied life. Mr. Rice, being still a young man, has, humanly speaking, a long life of work in front of him. Up to this time he has written four dramas, one of which, "A Night in Avignon," has been successfully played by Donald Robertson, whose ventures in producing the literary drama are already known to the public. "Yolanda of Cyprus," another play, will be staged by Mr. Robertson in 1909; and meanwhile a new volume of lyrics, 'Nirvana Days,' will be published by the McClure Company.

Mr. Rice's lyrical work may be divided, perhaps, into four groups: poems of nature, poems of philosophy and meditation, poems of love, and many brief, dramatic narratives. Of his lyrics, which deal with nature, it may be said that their distinguishing quality is a faithfulness to both material and spiritual truth. It is not merely the colors of autumn that delight the poet; it is also her melancholy and the longing she evokes for something after death. It is not merely the ripeness of July that he loves, but the silence and solitude of her deep forests where the stillness suggests eternities. It is not only the outward beauty and majesty of the sea that compels him, but

the sea as "a surging shape of life's unfathomed morn," the "incarnate motion of all mystery." The deep reveling in tangible beauty —which is natural and joyous—is the lesser part of this poetry; and here, too, the revel is ethereal, symbolized, not so much by the nymph in the brake, as by the delicate day-moon.

In his poetry of philosophy and meditation there is a constant sense of the highest, the noblest. This is most fully expressed in two poems, "The Young to the Old" and "Invocation," the first of which is a plea for human dream and endeavor; in the second we find the aspiring spirit which marks so much of his poetry.

Of the dramatic lyrics, the finest, perhaps, are "Jael," "Adelil," "Mary at Nazareth," "A Japanese Mother," "Wormwood" and "On the Moor," all of which have the true romantic character, a mingling of simplicity and mystery. The conception of Jael is unusual, the woman being portrayed as at once triumphant and terrified.

As exemplifying the delicate quality of the love-poems, we may take "Transcended," a short lyric expressive of the highest human love; allied to the dramatic narratives are his occasional ballads, such as "A Song of the Old Venetians."

In the past two or three years Mr. Rice has written a number of poems on Japanese subjects—poems which are, in effect, appreciations of the Japanese life, spirit, religion, and art. "Maya," for instance, expresses the ageless age of the Orient, while the inward look of the Eastern religions is intimated in the poem entitled "The Great Buddha of Kamakura to the Sphinx."

The body of Mr. Rice's lyrical verse is characterized by a feeling that is finely romantic—romantic in the highest sense of the word, which implies at its best, a profound and dominating sense of the wonder of life, the beauty of it, the glory and the passion. Of these qualities he is peculiarly aware, both in his lyrics and in his dramas.

Mr. Rice's plays, in their high spirit, in their feeling toward that lordly, passionate life which is the one element for poetic drama, in their excellence of build, and by reason of many passages of beauty, are comparable to those of Stephen Phillips, who led the modern way in this form of literature. Mr. Rice is one of our few present-day poets who have the steadiness, the weight, the substance, for a long, well-balanced, well-sustained drama. His first play, "Charles di Tocca," while, perhaps, not of such merit as the others, is excellent in motive and contains, in its latter part particularly, some passages of Elizabethan force and splendor.

This play, like "David" and like "Yolanda of Cyprus," has the motive, movement, and color of true romantic drama, which de-

mands not only the setting of an older world, but that varied prismatic light which symbolizes the romantic spirit.

In "David," his second drama, Mr. Rice has taken for his subject, not the mature monarch of Israel, but the young shepherd of the hills, who has been secretly anointed king by the prophet Samuel, but who is still far from his throne, and the theme of the drama is the courage, trial, and triumph of this chosen soul. It is a subject which appeals inevitably to our ancient, sweet, unconquerable passion for ideal youth, and to that reawakened love of the heroic, the glamorous which has made possible the revival of poetic drama. The figure of David, as Mr. Rice conceives it, is not borrowed from the big, clumsy boy, divinely immature, of Michel Angelo's sculpture, nor from the inspired musician and seer of Browning; the emphasis here is on the patriot and the lover—young, but no mere lad—a poet, but not old enough for the great heights of vision which appear in Browning's monologue, and which are possible to age alone. He corresponds, indeed, more closely to the David of Scripture, who is described as "a mighty valiant man, and a man of war, and prudent in matters." A splendid purity, a fidelity which nothing shakes, a oneness of purpose, a courage that triumphs alike over his enemies and himself—such are the points of character brought out and emphasized in this drama. The figure is large, as it was in fact and must be in poetry; but it is not overdrawn; it is heroic, not gigantic. The other notable characters of the drama are Saul, Samuel, Merab, Michal, and the pythoness Miriam, all of whom are distinct and effective, Saul, the half-mad king being drawn with a notable vigor.

In "Yolanda of Cyprus" the theme is the beauty of a sacrificial love, the girl Yolanda assuming the guilt of her adopted mother, Berengere of Lusignan. The fine simplicity of this theme is emphasized by the construction of the play, which shows a peculiar unity. The thing is rounded, whole, complete. Every line has a vital relation to the center, and from this art, it is needless to say, comes the strength of the drama. As for the grouping and movement of figures, the setting, the atmosphere, the colors, they are all significant of a keen sense for artistic and effective externals. The stage directions are in themselves most exquisitely suggestive of the life and air of this island in the Mediterranean; and through the entire drama there is a fragrance as of a Southern sea-breath mingled with odors of jasmine and touched by Eastern spices and balms.

"A Night in Avignon" is a one-act play, the material for which is Petrarca's love for Laura. The treatment here is exquisite, the sympathy most acute. Mr. Rice has a perfect appreciation of medi-

eval, chivalrous love—which was, in reality, the lore of Love itself, the passion for a dream, the adoration of an ideal, about which such sonnets as those of Dante and those of Petrarch were hung like wreaths of small but perfect roses. In an hour of weakness Petrarca falls from his dream and turns to things material and lawless. In the midst of his half-hearted revel the lady Laura appears, the very substance of his faith, coming to him only to express her gratitude for his pure affection.

In summing Mr. Rice's lyric poetry, one may say that it expresses a great variety of moods, that it is charged with sympathy for human hopes, aspirations, and passions, and that in form it is suited to material and to spirit. Of his poetic drama the final estimate must, of course, be the stage; but "A Night in Avignon" has recently met this test, while "David" and "Yolanda of Cyprus" have the approval of such critics as Richard Mansfield, Mrs. Fiske, and Donald Robertson, all of whom have noted these as actable dramas. Mr. Rice's work, throughout, is lofty and delicate, with no least hint of decadence; it is distinctly individual and copies from none; it is, of course, not without its faults, but the faults are never those of the spirit. In one of his earliest poems, an answer to the sensuous fatalism of the Rubáiyát, he showed clearly the figure of his ideal—which since that time has grown in stature and in faith.

Margaret Steele Anderson

BIBLIOGRAPHY

From Dusk to Dusk. Nashville, Tennessee, Cumberland Presbyterian Publishing House, 1898.

With Omar. Privately published. 1900.

Song—Surf. Boston, Richard G. Badger and Company, 1901.

Charles di Tocca: A Poetic Drama. New York, McClure, Phillips and Company, 1903.

David: A Poetic Drama. New York, McClure. Phillips and Company, 1904.

Plays and Lyrics. New York, McClure, Phillips and Company, 1906.

A Night in Avignon: A Poetic Drama. New York. McClure, Phillips and Company, 1907.

Nirvana Days. New York. The McClure Company.

JAEL

All selections, unless otherwise noted, are from 'Plays and Lyrics.' Copyright, The McClure Company, and used here by permission of the author and the publishers.

Jehovah! Jehovah! art Thou
not stronger than gods of the heathen?
I slew him, that Sisera, prince
of the host Thou dost hate.
But fear of his blood is upon me,
about me is breathen
His spirit—by night and by day
come voices that wait.

Athirst and affrightened he fled from
the star-wrought waters of Kishon.
His face was as wool when he swooned
at the door of my tent.
The Lord hath given him into
the hand of perdition.
I smiled—but he saw not the face
of my cunning intent.

He thirsted for water: I fed him
the curdless milk of the cattle.
He lay in the tent under purple
and crimson of Tyre.
He slept and he dreamt of the surge
and storming of battle.
Ah ha! but he woke not to waken
Jehovah's ire.

He slept as he were a chosen
of Israel's God Almighty.
A dog out of Canaan!—thought he
I was woman alone?
I slipt like an asp to his ear
and laughed for the sight he
Would give when the carrion kites
should tear to his bone.

I smote thro' his temple the nail,
to the dust a worm did I bind him.
My heart was a-leap with rage
and a-quiver with scorn.
And I danced with a holy delight
before and behind him—
I that am called blessed o'er all
who're of Judah born.

"Aye, come, I will show thee, O Barak,
a woman is more than a warrior,"
I cried as I lifted the door
wherein Sisera lay.
"To me did he fly and I
shall be called his destroyer—
I, Jael, who am subtle to find
for the Lord a way!"

"Above all the daughters of men
be blest—of Gilead or Asshur,"
Sang Deborah, prophetess, under
her waving palm.
"Behold her, ye people, behold her
the heathen's abasher;
Behold her the Lord hath uplifted—
behold and be calm.

"The mother of him at the window
looks out thro' the lattice to listen—
Why roll not the wheels of his chariot?
why does he stay?
Shall he not return with the booty
of battle, and glisten
In songs of his triumph—ye women,
why do ye not say?"

And I was as she who danced when
the Seas were rendered asunder
And stood, until Egypt pressed in
to be drowned unto death.

My breasts were as fire with the glory,
the rocks that were under
My feet grew quick with the gloating
That beat in my breath.

At night I stole out where they cast him,
a sop to the jackal and raven.
But his bones stood up in the moon
and I shook with affright.
The strength shrank out of my limbs
and I fell a craven
Before him—the nail in his temple
gleamed bloodily bright.

Jehovah! Jehovah! art Thou
not stronger than gods of the heathen?
I slew him, that Sisera, prince
of the host Thou dost hate.
But fear of his blood is upon me
about me is breathen
His spirit—by day and by night
come voices that wait.

I fly to the desert, I fly to the
mountain, but they will not hide me.
His gods haunt the winds and the caves
with vengeance that cries
For judgment upon me; the stars in
their courses deride me—
The star Thou hast hung with a breath
in the wandering skies.

Jehovah! Jehovah! I slew him
the scourge and sting of Thy Nation.
Take from me his spirit, take from me
the voice of his blood.
With madness I rave—by day
and by night, defamation!
Jehovah, release me! Jehovah!
If still Thou art God!

TRANSCENDED

I who was learned in death's lore
  Oft held her to my heart
And spoke of days when we should love no more—
  In the long dust, apart.

"Immortal?" No—it could not be,
  Spirit with flesh must die.
Tho' heart should pray and hope make endless plea,
  Reason would still outcry.

She died. They wrapped her in the dust—
  I heard the dull clod's dole,
And then I knew she lived—that death's dark lust
  Could never touch her soul!

ADELIL

Proud Adelil! Proud Adelil!
  Why does she lie so cold?
(I made her shrink, I made her reel,
  I made her white lids fold.)

We sat at banquet, many maids,
  She like a Valkyr free.
(I hated the glitter of her braids,
  I hated her blue eye's glee!)

In emerald cups was poured the mead;
  Icily blew the night.
(But tears unshed and woes that bleed
  Brew bitterness and spite.)

"A goblet to my love!" she cried,
  "Prince where the sea-winds fly!"
(Her love!—it was for that he died,
  And for it she should die.)

She lifted the cup and drank—she saw
A heart within its lees.
(I laughed like the dead that feel the thaw
Of summer in the breeze.)

They looked upon her stricken still,
And sudden they grew appalled.
("It is thy lover's heart!" I shrill
As the sea-crow to her called.)

Palely she took it—did it give
Ease there against her breast?
(Dead—dead she swooned, but I cannot live,
And dead I shall not rest.)

ON THE MOOR

I

I met a child upon the moor
A-wading down the heather;
She put her hand into my own,
We crossed the fields together.

I led her to her father's door—
A cottage mid the clover.
I left her—and the world grew poor
To me, a childless rover.

II

I met a maid upon the moor,
The morrow was her wedding.
Love lit her eyes with lovelier hues
Than the eve-star was shedding.

She looked a sweet goodbye to me,
And o'er the stile went singing.
Down all the lonely night I heard
But bridal bells a-ringing.

III

I met a mother on the moor,
By a new grave a-praying.
The happy swallows in the blue
Upon the winds were playing.

"Would I were in his grave," I said,
"And he beside her standing!"
There was no heart to break if death
For me had made demanding.

A JAPANESE MOTHER

(In Time of War.)

The young stork sleeps in the pine-tree tops,
Down on the brink of the river.
My baby sleeps by the bamboo copse—
The bamboo copse where the rice field stops:
The bamboos sigh and shiver.

The white fox creeps from his hole in the hill;
I must pray to Inari.
I hear her calling me low and chill—
Low and chill when the wind is still
At night and the skies are starry.

And ever she says, "He's dead! he's dead!
Your lord who went to battle.
How shall your baby now be fed,
Ukibo fed, with rice and bread—
What if I hush his prattle?"

The red moon rises as I slip back,
And the bamboo stems are swaying.
Inari was deaf—and yet the lack,
The fear and lack, are gone, and the rack,
I know not why—with praying.

For though Inari cared not at all,
Some other god was kinder.
I wonder why he has heard my call,
My giftless call—and what shall befall?
Hope has but left me blinder!

THE DAY-MOON

So wan, so unavailing,
Across the vacant day-blue dimly trailing!

Last night, sphered in thy shining,
A Circe—mystic destinies divining;

To-day but as a feather
Torn from a seraph's wing in sinful weather,

Down-drifting from the portals
Of Paradise, unto the land of mortals.

Yet do I feel thee awing
My heart with mystery, as thy updrawing

Moves thro' the tides of Ocean
And leaves lorn beaches barren of its motion;

Or strands upon near shallows
The wreck whose weird form at night unshallows

The fisher maiden's prayers—
"For *him!*—that storms may take not unawares!"

So wan, so unavailing,
Across the vacant day-blue dimly trailing!

But Night shall come atoning
Thy phantom life thro' day, and high enthroning

Thee in her chambers arrassed
With star-hieroglyphs, leave thee unharassed

To glide with silvery passion,
Till in earth's shadow swept thy glowings ashen.

THE WINDS

The East Wind is a Bedouin,
  And Nimbus is his steed;
    Out of the dusk with the lightning's thin
Blue scimitar he flies afar,
  Whither his rovings lead.
      The Dead Sea waves
      And Egypt caves
    Of mummied silence laugh
When he mounts to quench the Siroc's stench,
And to wrench
      From his clutch the tyrant's staff.

The West Wind is an Indian brave
  Who scours the Autumn's crest.
Dashing the forest down as a slave
He tears the leaves from its limbs and weaves
  A mælstrom for his breast.
    Out of the night
    Crying to fright
  The earth he swoops to spoil—
There is furious scathe in the whirl of his wrath,
In his path
  There is misery and moil.

The North Wind is a Viking—cold
  And cruel, armed with death!
Born in the doomful deep of the old
Ice Sea that froze ere Ymir rose
  From Niflheim's ebon breath.
  And with him sail
      Snow, Frost, and Hail,
  Thanes mighty as their lord,
To plunder the shores of Summer's stores—
And his roar's
  Like the sound of Chaos' horde.

The South Wind is a Troubadour;
  The Spring, his serenade.
Over the mountain, over the moor,
He blows to bloom from the winter's tomb
  Blossom and leaf and blade.
    He ripples the throat
    Of the lark with a note
  Of lilting love and bliss,
And the sun and the moon, the night and the noon,
Are a-swoon—
  When he woos them with his kiss.

TO THE SEA

Art thou enraged, O sea, with the blue peace
Of heaven, so to uplift thine armèd waves,
Thy billowing rebellion 'gainst its ease,
And with Tartarean mutter from cold caves,
From shuddering profundities where shapes
Of awe glide through entangled leagues of ooze,
To hoot thy watery omens evermore,
And evermore thy moanings interfuse
With seething necromancy and mad lore?

Or, dost thou labour with the drifting bones
Of countless dead, thou mighty Alchemist,
Within whose stormy crucible the stones
Of sunk primordial shores, granite and schist,
Are crumbled by thine all-abrasive beat?
With immemorial chanting to the moon,
And cosmic incantation dost thou crave
Rest to be found not till thy wild be strewn
Frigid and desert over earth's last grave?

Thou seemest with immensity mad, blind—
With raving deaf, with wandering forlorn;
Parent of Demogorgon whose dire mind
Is night and earthquake, shapeless shame and scorn
Of the o'ermounting birth of Harmony.

Bound in thy briny bed and gnawing earth
With foamy writhing and fierce-panted tides,
Thou art as Fate in torment of a dearth
Of black disaster and destruction's strides.

And how thou dost drive silence from the world,
Incarnate Motion of all mystery!
Whose waves are fury-wings, whose winds are hurled
Whither thy Ghost tempestuous can see
A desolate apocalypse of death.
Oh, how thou dost drive silence from the world,
With emerald overflowing, waste on waste
Of flashing susurration, dashed and swirled
'Gainst isles and continents and airs o'erspaced!

Nay, frustrate Hope art thou of the Unknown,
Gathered from primal mist and firmament;
A surging shape of Life's unfathomed moan,
Whelming humanity with fears unmeant.
Yet do I love thee, O, above all fear,
And loving thee unconquerably trust
The runes that from thy ageless surfing start
Would read, were they revealed, gust upon gust,
That Immortality is might of heart!

A SEA-GHOST

Oh, fisher-fleet, go in from the sea
  And furl your wings.
The bay is gray with the twilit spray
  And the loud surf springs.

The chill buoy-bell is rung by the hands
  Of all the drowned,
Who know the woe of the wind and tow
  Of the tides around.

Go in, go in! O haste from the sea,
  And let them rest—
A son and one who was wed and one
  Who went down unblest.

Aye, even as I whose hands at the bell
  Now labour most.
The tomb has gloom, but O the doom
  Of the drear sea-ghost!

He evermore must wander the ooze
  Beneath the wave,
Forlorn—to warn of the tempest born,
  And to save—to save!

INVOCATION

(From a High Cliff)

From 'Nirvana Days.' Copyright, The McClure Company. and used here by permission of the publishers.

Sweep unrest
Out of my blood,
Winds of the sea! Sweep the fog
Out of my brain
For I am one
Who has told Life he will be free.
Who will not doubt of work that's done,
Who will not fear the work to do.
Who will hold peaks Promethean
Better than all Jove's honey-dew.
Who when the Vulture tears his breast
Will smile into the Terror's Eyes.
Who for the World has this Bequest—
Hope, that eternally is wise.

* * * * * *

Then go, go in! and leave us the sea,
For only so
Can peace release us and give us ease
Of our salty woe.

THE SONG OF THE OLD VENETIANS

From 'Nirvana Days.' Copyright, The McClure Company.

The seven fleets of Venice
  Set sail across the sea
For Cyprus and for Trebizond
  Ayoub and Araby.
Their gonfalons are floating far,
  St. Mark's has heard the mass,
And to the noon the salt lagoon
  Lies white, like burning glass.

The seven fleets of Venice—
  And each its way to go,
Led by a Falier or Tron,
  Zorzi or Dandalo.
The Patriarch has blessed them all,
  The Doge has waved the word,
And in their wings the murmurings
  Of waiting winds are heard.

The seven fleets of Venice—
  And what shall be their fate?
One shall return with porphyry
  And pearl and fair agate.
One shall return with spice and spoil
  And silk of Samarcand.
But nevermore shall *one* win o'er
  The sea, to any land.

Oh, they shall bring the East back,
  And they shall bring the West,
The seven fleets our Venice sets
  A-sail upon her quest.
But some shall bring despair back
  And some shall leave their keels
Deeper than wind or wave frets,
  Or sun ever steals.

THE GREAT BUDDHA OF KAMAKURA TO THE SPHINX

From 'Nirvana Days.' Copyright, The McClure Company.

Grave brother of the burning sands,
  Whose eyes enshrine forever
The desert's soul, are you not worn
Of gazing outward to dim strands
  Of stars that weary never?

Infinity no answer has
  For Time's untold distresses.
Its deepest maze of mystery
Is but Illusion built up as
  The blind build skies—with guesses.

Nor has Eternity a place
  On any starry summit.
The winds of Death are wide as Life,
And leave no world untouched—but race,
  And soon with Night benumb it.

And Karma is the law of soul
  And star—yea, of all Being.
And from it but one way there is,
Retreat into that trancèd Whole—
  Which is not Sight nor Seeing;

Which is not Mind nor Mindlessness,
  Nor Deed nor driven Doer,
Nor Want nor Wasting of Desire;
But only that which won can bless;
  And of all else is pure.

Turn then your eyes from the far track
  Of worlds, and gazing inward,
O brother, fare where Life has come,
Yea, into its far Whence fare back,
  All other ways are sinward.

DAVID'S LAMENT FOR JONATHAN

From 'David.' Copyright, The McClure Company.

DAVID (*at last*). Adriel! Adriel!
What have you?
ADRIEL. Saul—is slain!
MICHAL. My father?
ADRIEL. Slain!
And Jonathan—
DAVID.—No!
ADRIEL. Fell beside him down . . .
The fray was fast—Israel fled—the foe
Fierce after Saul, whom Jonathan defended.
MICHAL.—My father!
DAVID. And my brother Jonathan!
If I believe it will not miracle
Alone bring joy again unto my pain?
(*The wailing again, and deeper groans.*)
O Israel, the Infinite has touched
Thy glory and it changes to a shroud!
Thy splendor is as vintage overspilt,
For Saul upon the mountains low is lying,
And Jonathan beside him, beautiful
Beyond the mar of battle and of death.
Yea, kingly Jonathan! And I would give
The beating of my life into his veins.
Willing for it would I be drouth and die! . . .
(*As the wails re-arise.*)
Peaks, mountains of Gilboa! let no more
Dew be upon you, and as sackcloth let
Clouds cover you, and ashes be your soil,
Until I bring upon Philistia
And Gath and Askalon extinguishing,
And sorrow—and immensity of tears!
(MICHAL *goes to him. He folds her in his arms.*)
But we must calm the flowing of this grief.
Though yet we cannot mind us to remember,
Love will as sandal-breath and trickling balm
O'erheal us in the unbegotten years,

Too headlong must not be our agony.
Hush now thy woundedness, my Michal, now.
See, o'er the East the lifted wings of Dawn.

(*They climb the stair to the house-top. As they look away toward the battle's rout the clouds part, and over them breaks the full brightness of the sun.*)

THE YOUNG TO THE OLD

From 'Nirvana Days.' Copyright, The McClure Company.

You who are old—
And have fought the fight—
And have won or lost or left the field—
Weigh us not down
With fears of the world, as we run!
With the wisdom that is too right,
The warning to which we cannot yield,
The shadow that follows the sun,
Follows forever!
And with all that desire must leave undone
Though as a god it endeavor;
Weigh, weigh us not down!
But gird our hope to believe—
That all that is done
Is done by dream and daring—
Bid us dream on!
That Earth was not born
Or Heaven built of bewaring—
Yield us the dawn!
You dreamt your hour—and dared, but we
Would dream till all you despaired of *be;*
Would dare—till the world,
Won to a new wayfaring,
Be thence forever easier upward drawn!

YOLANDA'S SACRIFICE

From "Yolanda." 'Plays and Lyrics.' Copyright, The McClure Company.

BERENGERE.—A change is over you—a difference
Drawn as a veil between us.
YOLANDA. I am weary.
BERENGERE.—You love me?
YOLANDA. As, O mother, I love him,
With love impregnable to every ill,
As Paradise is.
BERENGERE. Then—
YOLANDA. I pray, no more,
To-night I am flooded with a deeper tide
Than yet has flowed into my life—and through it
Sounds premonition: so I must have calm.
(She embraces Berengere, goes slowly up steps and off.)
BERENGERE (*chilled*).—What fear—if it is fear—has so unfixed her?
It is suspicion—Then I must not meet
Him here to-night—or if to-night, no more.
Her premonition!—and my dream that I
Should with a cross bring her deep bitterness.
(Thinks a moment, then takes the crucifix from her neck.)
Had Renier but come, perhaps I might . . .
(*Lays it on table.*)
O were I dead this sinning would awake me! . . .
And yet I care not (*dully*). . . . No, I will forget
(*Goes firmly from door to door and looks out each. Then lifts, unnoting, the cross-shaped candlestick; and waving it at the loggia turns, holding it before her.*)
Soon he will come up from the cool, and touch
Away my weakness with mad tenderness.
Soon he will . . . Ah!
(*Has seen with terror the candlestick's structure.*)
The cross! . . . My dream! . . . Yolanda!
(*Lets it fall.*)
Mercy of God, move me in! . . . Sacrilege!
(*Sinks feebly to the divan, and bows, overcome.*)

CAMARIN (*appearing after a pause on the loggia*).
My Berengere, a moment, and I come!

(*Enters, locking the grating behind him. Then he hurries down and leans to lift her face.*)

BERENGERE.—No, no! nor ever, ever again, for ever!
(*Shrinks.*)
Go from me and behind leave no farewell. . . .
CAMARIN.—This is—illusion. In the dew I've waited,
And the night's song of you is in my brain—
A song that seems—
BERENGERE Withhold from words. At last
Fate is begun! See, with the cross it was
I waved you hither. Leave me—let me pass
Out of this sin—and to repentance—after.
CAMARIN.—I cannot, cannot!
BERENGERE. Pity, then, my fear.
This moment were it known would end with murder,
Or did it not, dishonour still would kill!
Leave, leave.
CAMARIN.—To-morrow, then; but not to-night!
(*He goes behind and puts his arms around her.*)
Give me thy being once again, thy beauty.
For it I'm mad as bacchanals for wine.
(*Yolanda, entering on the balcony, hears, and would retreat, but sees Renier come to the grating.*)
Once more be to me all that woman may!
Let us again take rapture wings and rise
Up to our world of love, guilt would unsphere.
Let us live over days that passed as streams
Limpid by lotus-banks unto the sea,
O'er all the whispered nights that we have clasped
Knowing the heights and all the deeps of passion!
But speak, and we shall be amid the stars.
(*Renier draws a dagger and leaves the grating. With a low cry Yolanda staggers down: the two rise, fearful.*)
BERENGERE.—Yolanda!
YOLANDA. Mother, mother! . . . Ah, his eyes!
BERENGERE.—What brings you here—to spy upon me?

YOLANDA. Listen! . . .
Think not of me—no, hush—but of the peril
Arisen up . . . Your husband!
CAMARIN. Renier?
YOLANDA.—Was at that grating—heard. And from its sheath,
A dagger—! Ah, he will come.
BERENGERE (*weakly*). What does she say?
YOLANDA.—Find calmness now, and some expedient.
(*She struggles to think.*)
BERENGERE.—I cannot die.
YOLANDA. No, no.
BERENGERE. My flesh is weak,
Is poor of courage—poverished by guilt,
As all my soul is! But, Yolanda, you—!
YOLANDA.—Yes, something must be done—something be done.
(*Camarin goes to the curtains and returns.*)
BERENGERE.—The shame . . . the shame . . . the shame!
YOLANDA. There yet is time.
BERENGERE.—You can deliver! you are innocent.
YOLANDA.—Perhaps. Let me but think.—He came—
BERENGERE. You see?
There is escape? a way from it?
YOLANDA. Perhaps.
He came after your words . . . yes . . . could not see
Here in the dimness . . . but has only heard
Sir Camarin?
BERENGERE. I do not know!
YOLANDA. Go, go,
Up to your chamber and be asleep.
There is a way—I think—dim, but a way.
Go to your chamber; for there yet may be
Prevention!
BERENGERE. I—yes, yes.
YOLANDA. There is a way.
(*Berengere goes.*)
Strength now to walk it! strength unfaltering.
CAMARIN.—What do you purpose?

YOLANDA. Here to take her place,
Here at the lowest of her destiny.
CAMARIN.—I do not understand.
YOLANDA. But wholly shall.
Clasp me within your arms; he must believe
'Tis I and not his wife you have unhallowed,
Your arms about me, though they burn! and breathe me
Thirst of unbounded love as unto her.
(*He clasps her, and they wait.*)
Ah, it is he!
CAMARIN. No.
YOLANDA. Yes, the words; at once!
CAMARIN (*hoarsely*).—With all my body and soul-breath
I love you,
(*Renier enters with Moro.*)
And all this night is ours for ecstasy.
Kiss me with quenchless kisses, and embrace
Me with your beauty, till—
(*Yolanda with a cry, as of fear, looses herself, pretending to discover Renier, who is struck rigid.*)
MORO. My lord, my lord! . . .
it is Yolanda.
RENIER. Then—
(*The dagger falls from him.*)
Why, then—Amaury!
(*Yolanda, realizing, stunned, sinks back to the divan.*)

THE TRYST BENEATH THE MOON

From "Charles di Tocca." Copyright, The McClure Company.

HELENA. Antonio!
ANTONIO.—My Helena, what is it? You are wan
And tremble as a blossom quick with fear
Of shattering. What is it? Speak.
HELENA.—Not true!
O, 'tis not true!
ANTONIO.—What have you chanced upon?
HELENA.—Say no to me, say no, and no again!
ANTONIO.—Say no, and no?

HELENA. Yes; I am reeling, wrung,
With one glance o'er the precipice of ill!
Say his incanted prophecies spring from
No power that's more than frenzied fantasy!
ANTONIO.—Who prophesies? Who now upon this isle
More than visible and present day
Can gather to his eye? Tell me.
HELENA. The monk—
Ah, chide me not!—mad Agabus, who can
Unsphere dark spirits from their evil airs
And show all things of love or death, seized me
As hither I stole to thee. With wild looks
And wilder lips he vented on my ear
Boding more wild than both. "Sappho!" he cried,
"Sappho! Sappho!" and probed my eyes as if
Destiny moved dark-visaged in their deeps.
Then tore his rags and moaned, "So young, to cease!"
Gazed then out into awful vacancy;
And whispered hotly, following his gaze,
"The Shadow! Shadow!"
ANTONIO. This is but a whim,
A sudden gloomy surge of superstition.
Put it from you, my Helena.
HELENA. But he
Has often cleft the future with his ken,
Seen through it to some lurking misery
And mar of love: or the dim knell of death
Heard and revealed.
ANTONIO. A witless monk who thinks
God lives but to fulfil his prophecies!
HELENA.—You know him not. 'Tis told in youth he loved
One treacherous, and in avenge made fierce
Treaty with Hell that lends him sight of all
Ills that arise from it to mated hearts!
Yet look not so, my lord! I'll trust thine eyes
That tell me love is master of all times,
And thou of all love master!
ANTONIO. And of thee?
Then will the winds return unto the night
And flute us lover songs of happiness!

HELENA.—Nor dare upon a duller note while here
We tryst beneath the moon?
ANTONIO. My perfect Greek!
Athene looks again out of thy lids.
And Venus trembles in thy every limb!
HELENA.—Not Venus, ah, not Venus!
ANTONIO. Now, again?
HELENA.—'Twas on this temple's ancient gate she found
Wounded Adonis dead, and to forget,
Like Sappho leaped, 'tis said, from yonder cliff
Down to the waves' oblivion below.

PETRARCA'S DESPAIR

From 'A Night in Avignon.' Copyright, The McClure Company.

SANCIA.—Well, well, Messer Petrarca! How long will
You shut us in this dark—that is as black
As old Pope John the twenty-second's soul?
A pretty festa, this!
PETRARCA (*brokenly*).—Merciless God!
(*Falls abased before Laura's look tortured with remorse.*)
O lady, what have I done beyond repair! . . .
(*She gathers her veil.*)
What have I lost within this gulf of shame!
For a paltry pleasure have I sold my dream,
Whose pinions would have lifted you at last?
LAURA (*very pale*).—I did not know, Messer Petrarca, you
Had friends awaiting.
(*Pauses numbly.*)
I came to-night, as first I would have said,
With holy gratitude—
For a love I thought you gave.
With gratitude that honor well could speak,
I thought, and yet be honor;
With gratitude forgetful of all else. . . .
And trusting . . . But no matter.
All trust shall be embalmed and laid away.
I go with pity; seeing
My husband—is even as other men.

(*She passes to the door and out: Petrarca moans. Then Lello enters and comes to him anxiously.*)

LELLO.—Francesco!

PETRARCA.—Lello!

(*Dazed.*)

Lello! Have I dreamed?

(*Rising, with anguish.*)

Did Laura come to me out of the night—
Come as the first voice breaking beyond death
To one despairing? . . .
And was I lifted up to Heaven's dawn?
And then . . .

(*Reels.*)

God! am I falling . . . ? Shall I ever . . . ?
Down this . . . ? . . . My friend stay with me!
No, go . . . and take them with you—
Sancia—all! . . .
I have slain the Spring forever!
The green of the whole fair world! . . . O Laura! Laura!

(*Sinks down on the couch and buries his face in his arms. Lello goes sorrowfully out.*)

AMÉLIE RIVES

(Princess Troubetzkoy)

[1863–]

R. T W. DUKE, JR.

THAT section of Virginia which lies along the eastern slope of the Blue Ridge Mountains, generally known as Piedmont, is one of peculiar beauty and healthfulness. Broken up into a series of valleys by the foot-hills and bisected here and there by independent ranges of small mountains; watered by numerous rivers and innumerable rivulets; highly cultivated in many parts, it rolls its softly molded hills, like waves of some multi-colored sea, down into the alluvial plains of the lower Rappahannock and James rivers. The early settlers of this portion of the State sought the southeastern slope of the little mountains, known as the Southwest Range, attracted by the fertility of the soil, the salubrity of the climate, and the proximity to the larger streams Here, in what is known as the County of Albemarle, along with Peter Jefferson (father of the author of the Declaration of Independence), the Randolphs, Nicholases, Gilmers, Frys, and Cabells, came, in the early part of the Eighteenth Century, Dr. Thomas Walker, the descendant of an English family of Staffordshire, himself having been born in King and Queen County, Virginia, and, with his wife, who had been a Widow Meriwether (born Thornton, and second cousin of George Washington), made his home at the foot of Peter's Mountain and called it Castle Hill. He was a man of education, of strong, vigorous mentality, a brave explorer, the guardian of Thomas Jefferson, and the father of John Walker, United States Senator from Virginia, Thomas Walker, Captain in the Revolutionary Army, and Francis Walker, member of Congress from Virginia.

To his youngest son, Francis, Dr. Walker left Castle Hill and a large number of goodly acres. Francis married in 1798 Jane Byrd Nelson, eldest child of Colonel Hugh Nelson of Yorktown, and Judith Page, his wife, the latter being the daughter of the Honorable John Page of Gloucester, and the former a son of William Nelson, President of the Dominion of Virginia.

To a daughter, Judith Page, Francis Walker bequeathed Castle Hill. In 1819 she married William Cabell Rives, afterward Congressman and Senator from Virginia and Minister to France. He

was the author of 'The Life and Times of James Madison,' and was distinguished for statesmanship and oratory. His wife was an authoress, and published during her lifetime several volumes of widely admired sketches; her letters from the court of Louis Philippe have been lately published in one of the leading magazines.

William Cabell Rives was the son of Robert Rives, of Scotch descent, who married Margaret J. Cabell of the distinguished Cabell family of Virginia. The youngest son of this marriage was Alfred Landon Rives, Colonel of Engineers of the Confederate States Army, general manager of the Panama Railroad, and a distinguished engineer. He married a daughter of James B. McMurdo of Richmond, Virginia, a granddaughter of R. Channing Moore, the second Episcopal Bishop of Virginia.

Amélie Rives is the eldest daughter of Colonel Alfred Landon Rives and Sadie McMurdo, his wife. This sketch of the author's ancestry is not made so much to show from what distinguished lines she sprang, as to attempt to account in some way for the marvelous breadth of her genius and the many-sided phases of her literary work. She was born in Richmond, Virginia, in what is now the Rectory of St. Paul's Church, August 23, 1863. Until she was seven years of age her time was divided between Richmond and Castle Hill. In 1871 her father, moving to Mobile, Alabama, she lived there in winter, spending the summers at Castle Hill. In 1884, her father coming into possession of that estate, it became her permanent home. This beautiful place, situated amid the fairest of landscapes, the lawn shaded by great oaks, with its box-tree hedges and old-fashioned flowers, is a typical Virginia home. The house built by Dr. Walker in 1764 still stands upon it, connected with a more stately mansion erected by the Honorable William C. Rives more than sixty years ago. Forests and streams, rich meadows, upland lawns lie about it, and the shadows of Peter's Mountain almost fall upon the lawn in the afternoon.

The influence of this place, the love for it, the pride in it are seen in many of Amélie Rives' sketches. Here she learned the fondness for the ancestral home which Hearn so well described as a pleasure with a ghostly sweetness. Here she was raised by her old Virginia "Mammy," and learned to know the black servants, whose fidelity, and warmth of affectionate service she has well depicted. She learned here the secret of the forest and the glade, and the vision of the mountains so near at hand doubtless had much to do with that undercurrent of sadness which Schopenhauer connects with their vision, and which runs like a purple line through all her work. She rode as soon as she could sit a horse, and rode superbly. Her horses were her true and tried friends. The dogs were

her companions in long and lonely walks, and she knew and loved them in no silly way.

Schools had nothing to do with her education. Her governess had instructions to mark out no fixed line of study. She was permitted to browse in whatever literary pastures she chose, and a very large library was hers for the choosing. Before she was sixteen her reading had extended over a vast field; Shakespeare and the Elizabethan dramatists had been read and reread, and the dramatists of the Restoration had become well known to her. She learned rapidly to read and speak French, and knowledge seemed to be both imbibed and absorbed by her. Light and color attracted her before she thought of letters, and many who have seen her delicate work in black-and-white as well as in oils have wondered whether her artistic bent did not lie plainly in that direction. Very early, however, she began to put her thoughts upon paper, and prose and verse, dramas and stories embracing the widest range of subjects were written by her ere she was well in her teens.

For a while she kept this work entirely to herself, but on showing to a friend some of her articles, at his earnest solicitation her story, "A Brother to Dragons," was sent to the *Atlantic Monthly* without comment. It was accepted at once and published anonymously in March, 1886. Its success was immediate, and like another distinguished author she awoke one morning to find herself famous. Within a year her work, both in prose and verse, was seen in every well-known magazine. A sonnet in the *Century* for June, 1886, was the first of her poems to appear. In 1887 two striking stories, "Nurse Crumpet Tells the Story," and "Inja," appeared in the September and December numbers of *Harper's Monthly*. Another and more ambitious story, "Virginia of Virginia," appeared in the same periodical in January, 1888; and when in April, 1888, her first novel, 'The Quick or the Dead," appeared in *Lippincott's*, it found a large and receptive number of readers. The storm of adverse, and in many instances contemptible, criticisms which the appearance of this book caused has been almost forgotten. The author's youth, her beauty, her quiet dignity of personal conduct, her almost secluded life, should have rendered criticism courteous, even though it was to be condemnatory; yet much that was said of the book was just from the standpoint of those who do not believe that the study of human passion in certain respects is wise, to say the least of it. The artist soul, sexless after a fashion, believes that the highest art is that which has no fear, which, like our first parents, is naked but not ashamed, and that the influence which has molded the history of nations, and which was the inspiration of Greek art and the mother of poetry, is a legitimate subject for

literary treatment. But not all souls are artistic. Very many refuse to look at the diamond in its blue clay; and violent attack must be expected by every writer who disregards the conventionalities. The story is crude in many ways. How could it be otherwise when its author was a girl under twenty-three when it was written and not twenty-five when it was published? Her ungoverned methods of study and work are plainly indicated in it, but as plainly is seen a virility of thought and strength of expression that are wonderful, considering the personality of the author. That she put much of herself into this book, as she has in everything she has written, is true; for no author has ever succeeded who has not done that. "The bullet hits its mark," as Lewes has said of Goethe, "if according to the huntsman's tradition it has first been dipped in the marksman's blood." But that Barbara is any more the author than Pendennis is Thackeray is absurd. The English—the style, some may prefer to call it—of the book is marked by a peculiarity which is still apparent in all of Amélie Rives's work. There are no marks of the file. We sometimes wish there were. Her sentences are well rounded, never curt nor unmusical, and "fine writing," the danger of most young authors, seldom, if ever, appears. Her thoughts are often nervously expressed—one can see the rapidity with which they drove the pen; the word often fits the mood, and the mood is sometimes dangerously tense and again dreamily sensuous. Her interpretation of character is not very deep, and seldom, if ever, worldly-wise. The men and women of her own day are not the persons who appeal to her best talent, and her men are usually more clearly and naturally drawn than her women.

During the four years succeeding 1888, stories and novels, poems and dramas, flowed from her pen. In 1896 'Barbara Dering,' a sequel to 'The Quick or the Dead?' appeared, and in it she took occasion in more than one place to hit slyly some of the critics who had so grossly criticized her previous work.

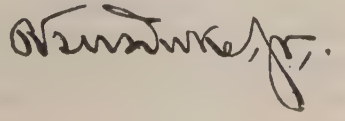
She was married in June, 1888, to John Amstrong Chanler of New York, but the marriage was dissolved at her instance, and in February, 1896, she married Prince Pierre Troubetzkoy, a distinguished Russian artist, whose mother was an American.

For some time her health prevented her from engaging in active literary work; but in recent years she has resumed her pen, and three stories, written in a maturer and more effective style, have appeared in *Harper's Monthly* since 1902. During the year 1908 the house of Harper and Brothers issued her latest novel, 'The Golden Rose.' In this book she has resumed the subject treated in 'The Quick or the Dead?' but from an entirely different point of view. The love of the spirit, as distinguished from the

love of the senses, is the theme, and it is treated with delicacy and strength, with more rare beauty of language, but with a display of erudition and reading which has caused some unfavorable comment. Plotless, as are most of her novels, the interest is yet well maintained, for it is a beautiful story in more ways than one. The soul of the artist looks out of the page, and manner and matter are well balanced. To those who love thought more than action, ideas more than incident, the work distinctly appeals. But, in the writer's judgment, the Princess Troubetzkoy is at her best in the ideal world which she has created in the characters of the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries. "A Brother to Dragons," "Nurse Crumpet Tells the Story," "The Farrier Lass of Piping Pebworth," are three stories which of their kind never have been surpassed. The "Story of Arnon" (Noah's fifth son) is also regarded as a work stronger than any one of her longer stories. Read these if you would read Amélie Rives at her best. For she is an idealist; this every-day world of steam and electricity, with its every-day men and women, is not for her. She breathes a loftier atmosphere, and her thought loves to dwell upon an earlier age.

The prose-writing of the Princess Troubetzkoy has, to a great extent, led to a neglect of her work in verse. Nor has she been entirely without fault in failing to gather into collected shape the many fugitive bits of poetry that are scattered through the periodicals. With a rare perception of metrical value, with a keen sense of passionate beauty, she has rarely published any verse which is not of decided merit. The blank verse of her dramatic work has not only feeling and originality, but at times shows characteristics not unworthy of the highest rank. Her sonnets are not only correct in form, but possess the rare merit of originality in matter, and are made up of beautiful thought in musical setting.

"*Agli Artisti,*" the challenge a great writer put upon his title-page, she might inscribe as the foreword of most of her works. Much of it, however, will always command attention, even from the general—and applause from the appreciative. Some of her characters will live, and when those who love nature painted by a loving and skilful hand—nature which is still ours and as responsive now as in any century—wish to have its charm fitly presented, they will find scattered, through her prose and poetry, realistic descriptions wedded to idealistic thought. We have the right to expect even greater things from her mature years and ripened judgment.



BIBLIOGRAPHY

A Brother to Dragons. *Atlantic Monthly,* 1886.
Nurse Crumpet Tells the Story. *Harper's Monthly,* 1887.
Inja. *Harper's Monthly,* 1887.
Virginia of Virginia. *Harper's Monthly,* 1888.
The Quick or the Dead? *Lippincott's Magazine,* 1888.
The Witness of the Sun. *Cosmopolitan Magazine,* 1889.
Tanis, the Sang-Digger. *Lippincott's Magazine,* 1889.
Herod and Mariamne. *Lippincott's Magazine,* 1889.
The Farrier Lass of Piping Pebworth.
The Story of Arnon. *Lippincott's Magazine,* 1892.
Athelwold. *Harper's Monthly,* 1892.
Barbara Dering. *Lippincott's Magazine,* 1893.
Sélené. *Harper's Magazine,* 1895.
The Mocking of the Gods. *Harper's Magazine,* 1902.
The Flittermouse. *Harper's Magazine,* 1905.
The Garden of the King. *Harper's Magazine,* 1907.
The Golden Rose. Harper and Brothers, 1908.
Poems in *The Century Magazine,* 1886-'87.
Poems in *Harper's Magazine,* 1888-'89 and 1891.
Poems in *North American Review,* 1902.

('Virginia of Virginia' has been published in book form by the Harpers; the same house has issued also, in book form, 'Athelwold,' 'A Brother to Dragons, and Other Stories,' and 'Seléné.')

THE APRIL RIDE, AND THE CONFLICT OF LOVE

From 'Barbara Dering.' Copyrighted by J. B. Lippincott Co.

After a few moments spent quietly at one of the open windows, she ordered Wilful and started upon a long ride. It was now the middle of April, the air mild as a fairy's breath, the pear-trees one flutter of white blossom, the peach-trees frailly rosy, the young leaf-buds on the maples and poplars making a dim green dust between her and the distant horizon. Yellow crocus-tips were just breaking the black garden-mould here and there, and violets crowded damp and pungent under their matted leaves. On the greening hillsides the sheep moved lazily, their dull-pink wool, tinted by the red soil, melting into the general harmony about them. The incessant bleating of the lambs was punctuated by the sharp

"tink-tink" which came from the bell-wether's neck. A hundred different bird-notes thrilled the fluctuant air. The singers whirred their gay wings close to Barbara's cheek, swung head down as though tipsy with sunshine among the honeyed white of the pear-trees, alighted in Wilful's haughty way and were off again before he could send a purring breath of inquiry through his dilated nostrils. Butterflies clear as amber and smoother than satin tilted past on the placid breeze. The spongy soil gave forth a delightful perfume, as of the quintessence of spring. The noise of distant brooks came tremulously to the ear. Under-foot was a dark tangle of periwinkle in which, here and there, a pale blue flower-star glimmered or a toad-stool perked its fat, white stem, on which sat the round umbrella-like top, as daintily browned as a well-made *méringue* In this part of the lawn white pines grew thickly, and the earth was dank and rich. Wild vines covered the tree-stems and rioted along the ground, in friendly interlacings with the glistening periwinkle trails. Wild strawberries were here in bloom, and here in the scraggy branches of lopped cedars which had died from age, one could see the soft round of nests and the glint of faintly-colored eggs.

When Wilful had jumped the octagon, moss-crusted rails of the old fence which girdled the grounds, they broke at once, from the twilight of thick evergreens, into the full splendor of the day. There was a wash of lucent gold from east to west. A veil of transparent yet throbbing glory seemed lowered between Barbara's eyes and the wide valley about her. Beyond was the pale-green shimmer of young oats, undulations of deep-red soil breaking the tender monotony, tufty woods, their shadows softened by a vapory azure, thin crests of tall stone-pines glowing dark and bright as splendid emeralds. The red-bud trees made globes of dusky color far away, symmetrical and fragile-looking as though they had been dandelion-balls dyed crimson. The sky was a hood of harebell-tinted silk trimmed lace-like with pale clouds.

Barbara rode on and on, breathing deep of the generous air, and feeling with a healthful pleasure the elastic movements of her horse. She was in perfect accord with the fertile beauty of the day and season, and her own glowing loveliness struck no note of contrast, but was rather an accen-

tuation of the vivid wonders about her. She came finally to a branching road which ran southward through a belt of timber towards what was called "the flat woods." And while she hesitated, Wilful, as though deciding for her, wheeled suddenly and began to gallop along this level way. At first she frowned and tried to turn him, but, with a sudden change of mood, urged him on; and so they galloped, for a long while, through the spring forest, which was softly green overhead and fragrant with the breath of wild azaleas. At length the railway was crossed, and they were well on their way to the different country which lay beyond the flat woods. Between Barbara's brows was the little crease which, with her, always meant determination. After they had gone about eight miles she drew up beside a broad willow-edged stream and left Wilful to pick his way carefully down the bank and thrust his muzzle deep into the lazy water. As he drank, a little flotilla of white geese sailed gently up across the silver reflections of the willows, out-dazzling the radiant clouds above. Their deep-orange bills seemed almost like flames darting from their sleek heads, and on this fiery yellow the small nostrils looked like specks of jet. A bird shook the willow-branch near her with its swift alighting and began its cheery call. As a child, Barbara had fancied that it said, "We greet you! We greet you! We greet you! Now! Now! Now! Now!"

She looked up in time to see its glistening breast and delicate claws before it flew off, glittering like a bit of spun glass in the fresh glare; then Wilful, having sighed deeply, in token that he was content and ready to start, they went on along the now level roads.

A half-hour more of trotting and cantering, varied by a steady walk now and then, brought them to a huge old gate of wrought-iron, swung between granite posts, on the balls of which clung falcons with their wings spread. A tumble-down stone wall, held from utter dilapidation in many places by the strong bands of the Virginia-creeper, ran from this gate to right and left until hidden by hedges of mock-orange. Barbara opened the heavy gate with her riding-crop as though accustomed to its eccentricities, for she was careful to hold the handle of her whip against it until Wilful was well

through, when it clanged to again, as though with a spring. The road was no longer red, but of a gray-white, and wound along between gently-curving fields, downy with young grass and sometimes dignified by an immense oak, on whose gnarled branches the tender leaves had an inappropriate and frivolous look, sometimes varied by the tall streak of a Lombardy poplar like a Titanic exclamation-point against the blond sky. A long avenue of Norway spruces made a dark tunnel through the brilliant wall of the day, and under these Barbara guided Wilful. These trees were very old and grew in fantastic shapes. One was like a vast lyre, another was twisted into a huge S, another resembled the zigzag of the conventional thunderbolts grasped by Zeus in a child's mythology. Their young cones, oozing with sap, hung brightly green among the sombre tassels. Wilful's hoofs struck noiselessly upon the matting of brown tags, or crunched upon the dry resin-tipped cones of last year's growth. A warm, thrilling odor enfolded her, and, through the openings in the dark boughs, little slits of sunlit grass beyond, shone with a jeweled brightness.

At the end of this avenue there was a gate, which opened upon a field of wheat, and in the centre of this field a white oblong gleamed through a railing of iron. When Barbara reached the gate she slipped down, tied Wilful to one of its posts, and, passing through, closed it as gently as though she were entering the room of a sleeping child. With her habit gathered under one arm and her eyes bent gravely on the narrow path, she walked on towards the white stone. A young larch-tree grew near the iron railing, and as she reached it she saw that some one was standing on the other side, for a white gown showed through the fringe of foliage. This figure was slight and small, and leaned with one cheek against the hand which grasped the rusty iron above its head. The other hand held a basket of white and blue violets. Beyond was a foam of young pear-trees—the grass of the enclosure was freaked with their blown petals.

"Kitty!" said Barbara, whispering, and with a certain questioning inflection as though doubtful of her welcome.

The girl turned with a violent start, her face pale, her eyes wide. They looked at each other a moment in silence. Then

Barbara made an impetuous movement and caught the other to her breast, kissing her, at the same time, on the cheeks, hair, and forehead.

"Forgive me, Kitty," she said, at last. "You used to love me."

"I have never stopped loving you," murmured the girl, faintly. She was trembling, and her basket of violets lay overturned at her feet. "But why—why—" She broke off and stood devouring Barbara's face with her large eyes, which, although of a soft blue, were strangely like Dering's.

"Why have you come here?" she went on, abruptly. "Are you happy?"

"No, dear," said Barbara, quietly. "But I thought you were in Normandy still at school, Kitty. I thought no one was here but the old servants."

"No. I came last week. Aunt Miriam is with me." Then she added, timidly, "I will go away, Barbara, and—and come back—afterwards, if you wish."

"Thank you, dear Kitty," answered Barbara, in the same still voice. "That will be very sweet of you."

"And the violets—I should love you to have them," suggested Kitty, shyly. But Barbara shook her head.

"No, dear, that is your own offering. Those lovely pear-blossoms are all that I could wish. But I thank you, darling—thank you, darling Kitty."

The girl threw herself upon Barbara's breast with a sudden movement.

"Oh, Barbara," she cried, "you love him best! You love him best! I have known it always. I was only a little thing, but I knew you couldn't love another time as you loved him. Tell me it's true, Barbara! Tell me! tell me!

"It's true, sweetheart," said Barbara, her lips white.

"Oh, thank God!" cried the girl. "Thank God! But how sad! I am very cruel. You must be so miserable, Barbara."

"Not always," answered Barbara, gently. "There are different ways of loving, dear child."

"And you love this one a different way?" asked Kitty, a tinge of jealousy sharpening her voice.

"Yes, dear."

"You do love him, then! Is he good to you?"

"He loves me as he has never loved any one else."

"As you loved Val?"

"No, men don't love like that."

"Val loved you like that. More than that!" cried the girl, with sudden fierceness. "*He* would never have married again. I've heard him say so."

Barbara was silent, her lips still pale.

"Oh, forgive me!" cried Kitty, with a gush of tears. "I have never judged you, Barbara. I—I know how much he was like Val. I shall always love you. I shall never say anything to hurt you again."

Barbara tried to smile in sign of forgiveness, but her parted lips only trembled, and two large tears ran slowly from her lowered eyelids. Kitty kissed them away, with passionate murmurs of self-reproach, and whispered:

"I'll leave you now, darling. Stay as long as you wish. I'll keep every one away."

Barbara nodded, and, after one more straining embrace, Kitty turned and ran swiftly along the winding path which led to the avenue of spruce-trees.

When she was out of sight Barbara gathered an armful of the white pear-bloom, and entering the enclosure, went and kneeled beside the white stone. She had taken off her riding-hat, and the April sunshine lighted her hair. After a little while she bent down and kissed the grass which covered Valentine's grave. Then, turning, she pressed her lips to the carved letters of his name. She left them there so long that the cold marble grew warm beneath her touch. With one hand she smoothed the long grass as though it had been the coverlet of her child. An irrepressible anguish mingled with a solemn joy rose through her veins until her submerged heart felt as though it must suffocate.

"My darling! my darling! my darling!" she said over and over. "My own! my very own! My first love! my kind love! my best love!" Her tears now fell so fast that her cheeks were wet, as though bathed in rain. There was no sobbing —only the continual gush, as though from the very fountain of her soul. It seemed to her that she knelt there, in that ecstasy of exquisite pain and tenderness, for a long while. Then, as though remembering a forgotten duty, she began

to lay the pear-blossoms very gently upon the mound beside which she knelt, almost as though she feared to waken some one. Afterwards she put her arms about the stone, and leaning her cheek against it, was motionless again. She felt no need of explaining anything, even to her own heart. She had made a sorrowful mistake, but it was only sorrowful, not wilful, and she felt that her "kind love" would understand, as he had always done. The love that she gave him, so passionately ethereal in its lastingness, immortalized him until he seemed to her a very presence—as real as the sunlight above her, although as intangible. She had needed the terrible experience of her second marriage to learn the lesson of real love—that love which is the result of perfect companionship, of mutual reverence, of soul-accord as fine and perfect as that of two instruments keyed to the same pitch, which is as indescribable as perfume, as ineffable as the music heard in dreams; to which passion bears the relation of his sceptre to a king, its color to a flame; which is neither entirely tenderness nor entirely fire, but that royal blending of the two which means completeness; a feeling in which nature becomes divine and divinity natural; which gives wings to the heart, and hallows, by its supreme instinct, every subtlest detail of human life. This love, unknowing, she had given to Valentine —still gave it to him, chastened and intensified by the anguish she had suffered since his death. But she had also learned to put aside all longing for supreme happiness in her present life. To be supremely strong for the happiness of others was now her heart's desire. In spite of all the pessimism and scepticism of the age, there was in her a wholesome fervor of belief in the final working together of all things for good, an unconquerable voice which spoke lowly in the silence of her soul, and which said "God is in me and I in Him." She had determined to put from her all regrets which might weaken her power for good in the world about her. Her love for Valentine must pass from an unutterable sorrow to a mighty consolation—an upholding proof of the possibility of idealness in human love. That she was capable of an emotion so pure, so entirely apart from the material, gave her a sense of worthiness at once refreshing and soothing. She honored her nature, which was at the same time so loyal, so courageous, and so

wise, for she knew that these quiet hours beside the grave of her first love separated her life into two parts. For the last time she yielded herself to these sorrowful, sweet memories. For the last time she gave up her soul to him. When she turned from that quiet place it would be to take up her life as it was and to bear it unflinchingly until the end.

She knew that in a different way, as she had said to Kitty, she loved Dering, and as she sat there with her cheek against the stone, she was filled with a profound determination to make him happy, to help him to develop what was highest in his nature, to win him utterly by her unfailing sympathy and patience.

The air was cooling. A level glimmer drowsed over the green reaches about her. Once more she pressed her lips to the cold marble, clasping it about with her warm arms, as though it had been a living thing and could respond to her passion of renunciation, of farewell, of forgetfulness. Her thick hair, so easy to uncoil, fell down upon its austere whiteness—the hair that he had loved! For the first time she sobbed heart-brokenly.

THE VIOLENCE OF LOVE

From 'Herod and Mariamne.' Copyright, The J. B. Lippincott Company, and used here by permission of the author and the publishers.

ACT I, SCENE I

ENTER HEROD

HEROD (*not seeing Mariamne*).—Herod commanded by a
Roman turn-coat;
Antony summon Herod! Antony—
The by-word of all nations, the last toy
Of an Egyptian wanton! Who that reads
In future ages will believe it? Oh,
That Antony had summoned me in person!
The Egyptian harlot had been loverless
In less time than she takes to make a kiss.
Ah, Mariamne!

MARIAMNE.—Shall I stay, my lord?

HEROD.—Hath Herod ever bid thee from him?

MAR. No.
But I can well imagine that this summons
Hath left thee with a love of loneliness.
HER.—Come close. Give me thine eyes. Dost think with Antony
Concerning this affair?
MAR. With Antony?
HER.—Ay—that thy brother's blood is on my hands.
Thou dost not think it?
MAR. As I live, my lord,
If I do think it, let me live no longer.
HER.—Then I care not who thinks it. Mariamne,
I am not Herod when I am with thee.
MAR.—What then, my lord?
HER. Why, Mariamne's lover.
I am no longer king, no longer soldier,
No longer conqueror, unless in truth
I rule thy heart.
MAR. Thou knowest that my heart
Is but thy throne.
HER. Let me be king of thee,
And God is welcome to the sway of heaven.
MAR.—Do not blaspheme.
HER. Away! thy veins run milk
And make thy heart a baby. Not blaspheme!
Love cannot utter blasphemy, for Love
Is his own god and king of his own heaven.
Well, dost thou love me?
MAR. Thou dost know I do.
HER.—Thou dost not! Thou dost make a pet of Duty,
And fatten him on what should be my food.
Love me? Not thou! Thou lovest the cold peace
That's child of frozen virtue. I have fire
To melt the Sphinx, but not to warm the blood
Of one chaste woman.
MAR. Chaste I am, my lord,
Yet for that chasteness do but better love thee.
HER.—I tell thee no! Thou dost but use the word
To play with, as a child its father's sword.
Thou hast ne'er seen it scarlet with joy's death,

Or smoking with the heart's blood of a thought.
What! thou lie 'wake o' nights? Thou scorch thy brain
With bootless wishing? Thou eat pictured lips?
Thou feed regret with memory, and then rage
Because he is not satisfied? Thou love?
Nay, girl, the sun will set the sea afire
Ere thy cool heart be set aflame with love.
Moreover, look you, sooner shall the waves
Of that same ocean cool the thirsty sun
Than thy pale humor make me moderate.
MAR.—I would not have thee love me less.
HER. Thou wouldst not?
Why dost thou shrink, then? Look how thou dost pale
And redden when I touch thee. Come, thine eyes,
Thine arms, thy lips, still shrinking? Israel's God!
Shall Herod coax his lawful wife for favors?
I say thou dost not love me, yea, moreover,
That thou dost lie when thou wouldst have me think
Thou dost not blame me for thy brother's death.
I know thou thinkest that I had him slain.
MAR.—I do not think it, Herod. Dost thou think
I would be here if I believed it?
HER. Where,
Where wouldst thou be, then? Not here, say'st thou?
Where then? Speak, woman! where?
MAR. Why, dead, maybe;
But not with thee.
HER. Thou liest! Didst thou die,
I'd have thy body brought into my chamber
And make my bed thy sepulchre.
MAR. Ay, Herod,
My body, but not me. Nay, my dear lord,
Why waste such moments as are left in strife
And harsh dissension? Soon thou wilt be gone,
And Mariamne but a recollection.
Why dost thou doubt me? Why should I not love thee,
Who art the chief of men and lovers? Nay,
If, as thou sayest, I shrink, it is because
My love doth fear the violence of thy love,
Not I thyself—not Mariamne, Herod.

HER.—Love is not blind, as the Greeks fable it,
For he doth look from these fair eyes o' thine,
Else am I pleasure's bondman.
MAR. Nay, not so.
Thou'rt husband to the truest wife in Jewry.
HER.—And the least loving.
MAR. Wilt thou wrong me still?
I know not how to dress out love in words.
I can but tell thee o'er and o'er again
The naked fact, I love thee.
HER. Would to heaven
I knew what loving means to thee!
MAR. I'll tell thee:
It means to put myself beyond myself,
To think of him I love in that self's stead,
To be sleep's enemy because of him,
Because of him to be the friend of pain,
To have no thought, no wish, no dream, no memory,
That is not servant to him; to forget
All earlier loves in his—all hates, all wrongs;
Being meek to him, though proud unto all others;
Gentle to him, though to all others harsh;
To him submissive, though unto high heaven
Something rebellious. Last, to keep my patience
And bear his doubts, who have his children borne.
HER.—Enough, enough! Thou most magnificent
Of queens and women, I will never doubt thee
After to-day.
MAR. Alas, my lord, to-morrow—
To-morrow'll be to-day.
HER. I will not doubt thee
So long as I do live.
MAR. Oh, that thou wouldst not!
Doubt is the shaft wherewith Love wounds himself:
Doubt me no more, and be no more unhappy.
HER.—Alas! unhappiness doth wait below
To ride with me, seeing I must leave thee, love,
And that for such a summons! Jewry's throne!
Antony summon me? It is as though
The dog did whistle for his master.

IMPRECATIONS

From 'Herod and Mariamne.'

ACT V, SCENE III

ENTER HEROD AND SALOME

HEROD.—Thou canst not swear that it was poisoned?
SALOME. No;
But can there be a doubt?
HER. Ha!
SAL. I repeat it
Can there be any doubt? She knows too well
That thou art but her fancy's slave, her toy,
To brew thee merely love-potions.
HER. Her slave?
I'll make thee slave to her! So? I a slave!
Thou hast a daring bent o' mind? Look thou!
Unless thou prove this love-brew poisonous,
Thou shalt in prison rot. As I am Herod,
I do believe thou'st lied from first to last
Concerning this affair and all that's touched it.
Thou art a most accomplished liar. Prove it,
Or I will make her ten times queen again,
And brand the hideous story of thy falseness
With red-hot irons on thy naked flesh,
Then have thee whipped through every street and by-way
Of all the towns in Jewry, that all men
May read of it! Away, and bring me proof,
Or look for death in agony unequalled! (*Exit Salome.*)
What if I've been deceived in everything
From then till now?

(*Enter Mariamne and boys.*)

What! Mariamne?
MAR. Ay,
Who looks like Mariamne, save herself?
And these, sir, are her sons. She comes to thank thee—
She and her sons—for thy last kindness to them.
HER.—Wilt thou not sit? Here is a chair.

MAR. Nay, Herod,
I'd have mine eyes at level with thine own;
And loving thanks are better proffered standing.
HER.—Why so?
MAR. 'Tis hard to give thanks graciously.
HER.—Not when 'tis Mariamne thanking Herod.
MAR.—More then than ever.
HER. Say'st thou?
MAR. Ay, my lord—
More then than ever.
HER. Why, right well thou knowest
I'm always thankful to be thanked by thee.
Come, kiss me. For what wouldst thou thank me?
MAR. For
Hyrcanus' death! Nay, kiss me! I am sister
To Aristobulus. Nay, wilt not kiss me?
Thy treasurer Joseph loved me. Nay, now kiss me.
I am the grandchild of Hyrcanus!
HER.—What! what! wilt thou dare?
MAR. Then thou'lt not kiss me? Haply
I am not looking fair enough to-day?
I'll have a robe dyed in Hyrcanus' blood,
And 'broidered richly with the hair of Joseph
And Aristobulus, to wear withal
When I would please thee. Come, a kiss—a kiss.
HER.—Devil!
MAR. Or, if that will not pleasure thee,
I'll make a feast for thee, and in thine honor
These thy two sons I'll have served up, with blood
For wine.
HER.—Devil, I say!
MAR. Or, if that dish
Were something coarse for such a mighty king,
Their hearts alone I'd offer thee.
HER. God's heart!
Dost think I'll let thee live to mock me?
MAR. No:
Killing's thy forte. I pray thee send me, sir,
To Aristobulus, and Joseph, and Hyrcanus.
Haply thou hast some tender message, sir,

That I could bear them? 'Tis the only errand
On which for thee I would go willingly.
Come, send me—send me.

HER. Can a man bear this
And not go mad?

MAR. Mad? Oh, no, thou'rt not mad.
I'm mad, the time is mad, earth, sea, heaven, hell,
The past, the future—but not Herod! No!
He'll stand a monument to sanity
When for some excellent reason he hath slain
Everything save his reason!

HER. God in heaven!

MAR.—Nay, God is not in heaven! If He were there,
Herod would not be here! He travels, sir;
There's a rebellion on some distant star,
And He hath gone to quell it. Ay, in heaven
Thou know'st but these three souls, Hyrcanus, Joseph,
And Aristobulus. Cry out to them!
Cry out to them! cry out to them!

HER. Thou darest?
Woman!

MAR.—Ay—to my woe. The wife of Herod
Should have by justice been a dragoness,
Giving birth to monsters that had murdered him,
Not unto men for him to murder.

HER. Curse thee!

MAR.—Curse me, didst say?—curse me? Now, as I live,
May everything that hath on every world
Since the creation, died, be resurrected
To curse thee with a separate curse! Oh, demon,
Thou'st found the core of sin and eaten it.
What! thou wouldst curse me? Am I not accursed
Sufficiently in having been thy wife?
Didst thou not curse me with a curse complete
When thou didst make me mother of thy sons?
Be thou accursed, Herod, ay, accursed,
Beyond thy utmost knowledge of a curse.
Forget that I once loved thee. Recollect
My hatred only. Thirst, thou shalt have blood,
And blood alone, to quench thy torment. Hunger,

Thou shalt not eat, but be thyself devoured.
Cry out to heaven, and thy prayers rebounding
Shall hurl thee into hell; while death to thee
Shall be one dream of life most horrible!
HER.—Oh, God!
MAR. Ay, tremble; for He hears not thee,
While Mariamne's curse is registered! (*Exit.*)
HER.—What! Mariamne! Mariamne! Mariamne!
Return! Thou canst not hate me! No! No! No!
That's to be mad—to say that Mariamne
Hates Herod And I am not mad. I dreamed.
Then I am dead! She said that I would dream
Of life in death. Who said so? Mariamne?
No—one who looked like her. Yet there is none—
Not one who looks like her, saving herself.
She said that, too. Her eyes! her eyes! her eyes!
They were two fires; they burned into my heart's core.
Nay, but my heart's a fire. My heart? What heart?
I gave my heart to Mariamne—yea,
And she fed anger on it. Well, I'm glad,
I'm glad, in spite of all, that I'm not mad;
Else might I think all this had really happened;
And now I know I'm dreaming.

LOVE SONG

From the *Century Magazine*, April, 1887, and used here by permission of the publishers.

The moon shines pale in the Western sky,
Like a pearl set over a brow that blushes;
There is many a homeward bird in the air,
And the hedges thrill with the thrushes.

Though my love be further away from me
Than the East from the West, or the Day from the Night,
I have turned my face to his dwelling-place,
And I bid him "good night," "good night."

Though he less can feel my hurrying breath
  Than the tree the bird that lilts on its bough,
Yet since the winds Love's messengers be,
  They will bear him my kisses, I trow!

Oh moon! shine first on my lips and then
  Go shine on the forehead of him I love!
He will dream perchance that an angel's wing
  Has quivered his brow above!

And sing, ye birds, in his ears the song
  My heart is singing within my breast:
It will thrill his heartstrings with ecstasy,
  And possess his soul with rest.

Ye, too, O fragrance of earth and flower,
  And voices of night in May!
Watch near him until in the Eastern field
  Blossom the roses of day.

But thou, O wind! lay close on his lips
  The kisses thou hast in thy flight,
And he will stir in his sleep, and wake
  And whisper—"My heart—good night."

A HYMN TO THE SEA

From the *North American Review*, and used here by permission of the publishers.

O Mighty One, thou who art friend of Death,
And yet no enemy to piteous Life
But rather her consoler; thou whose breath,
Brimming the vasty shell of heaven with strife,
Doth take the Pleiades by their golden hair,
Yet o'er a fragile globe of silver-seed
So delicately wingeth, that nowhere
Its symmetry is marred; thou who dost feed
The restless soul with restlessness, the heart
That longs for peace with that hushed spirit of peace

Which, from the birth of time hath moved apart
Over thy moon-ruled waters;—O release
From sorrow's selfishness my aching soul,
And with thy healing chant my broken heart make whole!

* * * * * *

Thou who didst take wild Sappho to thy breast,
And smooth her glorious hair to maiden meekness,
And kiss her cool, pale lids to lovely rest,
Surely unto her handmaids, strong with weakness
To crave of thee surcease, thou wouldst be kind—
Yea, to the least of them, even unto me—
O sure Magician of tired souls and blind?
Lo, I can feel thee drawing me to thee
Even as thyself art by Sélené drawn,
The while fair Tethys, with the certain smile
Of wives and goddesses, reigns calmly on
O'er all but thy vast tides. A weary while,
A weary while have I been caged of fate;
Free now my ready soul, ere freedom be too late!

* * * * * *

My heart, O Sea! my heart too hath its tides,
Its moods of rage, its calms, its storms again;
Its ice-bound regions where no life abides,
Its snow-fields where a rose would seem a stain;
Its caverns deep, more murmurous musical
Than shells that in their dreaming sing of thee;
Its wrecks majestic, and its towers tall
Of moon-white castles built for ecstasy,
But turned by time to echoing tombs forlorn,
Where many a drownèd hope doth lie in state.
Lo! these are mine too; but that jubilant scorn,
That blithe disdain of ever-changing fate,
Which thou by very mutability
Dost manifest to all—that would I learn of thee!

* * * * * *

Thou terrible, thou beautiful, thou free!
Soother of woes unsoothèd else! Desire
Of desolate poet-souls! To thee, to thee,
To thee alone I cry! O lift me higher!

O toss me starward as I were thy spray!
Into my empty life, as 'twere a shell,
Breathe thou thy mystic monody, and lay
Upon my heart thy deep, eternal spell!
For lo! thy pain supreme is like to mine!
Heavenward thou yearnest and must yearn for aye,
And even as the Lady Moon divine
Over thy passionate surge holds gentle sway,
O may my soul's tides ever rulèd be,
By the pure golden sphere of Love's high mystery!

FAITH

From "Grief and Faith," *Harper's Magazine*, May, 1887, and used here by permission of the publishers.

So be it, then, beloved. I can bear all,
  Knowing that thou art only gone a space;
  That some day I shall look upon thy face,
And grief be lifted from me like a pall.
God, who hath let thee answer my mad call,
  Hath shown me mercy past belief. His grace
  And comfort, at all times, in every place,
I do petition, therefore, lest I fall,
Borne down by mine own spirit. Dearest, sleep;
  Sleep till my soul doth bid thy soul awake.
Dream I am happy. Know not that I weep.
  Rest utterly; and I, for thy sweet sake,
Will try to live as thou didst, that the deep
  Of death may bear me to thee, as a lake
Doth bear a shattered vessel to the shore.
  Yea, sleep, my darling, and may blessèd dreams
  Make for thee life of death. To me all seems
A conscious death disturbed by life's fierce roar,
A torture and a burden evermore.
  Existence's ocean hath for me no gleams
  Such as greet other men beneath the beams
Of hope's fair sunrise. All that went before:
Like a bright bird that heralds some proud ship
  With sunlight on its breast and on its wings.

Now Sorrow, following on black clouds that dip
  Unto the blacker billows, with her brings
Despair and Loss, like lovers lip to lip.
  And smites the blithe bird even while he sings.
But I will try to live as thou hast said—
  To bear this burden bravely, as a man
  Should bear all burdens. Yea, I will and can
Grow worthier of thee, O most precious dead,
And forcing back such tears as are unshed,
  Remember that dark life is but a span,
  While bright love is eternal. Lo! the plan
On which all systems move, what man hath read?
Being thus ignorant, what man would dare
  To change one line an atom—were the power
Bestowed upon him—or to move one hair
  The little sphere? Hath any seen a flower
Bepaint her tender leaves, or learned the fair,
  Exquisite secret of the Spring? The hour
Hath come when grief-tried faith must live or die.
  And hope be slain or cherished. Most dread God,
  Being her God, Thou shalt be mine. Thy rod
I wordless will endure, that by-and-by,
Hearkening unto my spirit's utmost cry,
  Thou wilt grant that I tread where she hath trod,
  Leaving this anguish underneath the sod
Which shall o'erspread our bodies, while on high
Her soul shall be as wife unto my soul.
  Darling, once more, farewell! I will do all
That thou hast asked, and more. These bells that toll
  Thy body's death, lifting the awful pall
Of doubt from my quick spirit, make it whole,
  And faith shall answer when thy God doth call.

WILLIAM CABELL RIVES

[1793—1868]

JOSEPH W. EVERETT

WILLIAM CABELL RIVES, statesman, diplomatist, and historian, was born in Nelson County, Virginia, May 4, 1793. He received an excellent education at Hampden-Sidney and at William and Mary Colleges, and after graduation had the rare privilege of studying law and politics under Thomas Jefferson. Like so many young Virginians of his day, he early turned his attention to public life, and for nearly fifty years played a brilliant and conspicuous part in the affairs of State and Nation.

He possessed a mind of rare scope and power. His constructive faculties were of the first order; his temperament was calm and judicial; his penetration profound, and his powers of analysis and argument were strongly and acutely developed. From the noted Cabell family he inherited a love of letters and statecraft; from the substantial blood of the Riveses he acquired strength of purpose, industry, and executive ability. In bearing he was courtly and dignified; in personal appearance, extraordinarily handsome. Coupled with these native powers and graces were the pleasing advantages of birth and position, and of unexcelled social surroundings. As preceptors he had Jefferson, Madison, and Monroe; as neighbors and political associates, the Randolphs, Pages, Carters, Cabells, Nelsons, Lewises, Walkers, and Gilmers. He lived in the golden age of Virginia's supremacy, when her sons held easy premiership in the social, political, and military destinies of the nation.

His entry into the field of politics was most auspicious. From the curricula of his Virginia colleges he brought a liberal education, and from the brain of the great Jefferson he had learned not only the science of government but the strategy of politics as well. He was equipped for both the forum and the field of statecraft. In further aid of his ambitions, he was a Democrat, when Democracy—fresh from the hands of its creator—was regnant and destined to supremacy for a quarter of a century. Nor were these fortunate circumstances the only ones to his credit. The young Republic had but recently been launched; the harbor bars were scarcely out of sight, and the hour of *test* had arrived—the hour when her new machinery was to bear the brunt of violent and continued storms. Rough seas were already sweeping across her decks, and from all

quarters came insistent demands for trained service. Nor were the rewards incommensurate with the dangers.

At this critical yet potential moment young Rives began his political career. It was long, brilliant, and successful. Lack of space forbids all save the barest recital of its progress, yet the mere outlines will sufficiently indicate its scope and character. From 1814 to 1863 he served successively as aide-de-camp to General John H. Cocke of Virginia (1814-'15); Member of the Virginia Constitutional Convention (1816); Member of the Virginia Legislature (1817-'19); Presidential Elector (1821); Member of the Virginia Legislature (1822-'23); Representative in Congress (1823-'29); United States Minister to France (1829-'32); United States Senator (1832-'34, 1836-'39, 1841-'45); United States Minister to France, the second time (1849-'53); delegate to the Peace Congress (1861); and member of the first and second provisional Confederate Congresses (1861-'63)

In this brief synopsis a score of points are worthy of extended notice, but only one or two can be mentioned. While Minister to France Mr. Rives negotiated the Indemnity Treaty of 1831. In 1824 he resigned his seat in the United States Senate because of his unwillingness to join his colleagues in censuring the course of President Jackson for removing the National Bank deposits. The Virginia Legislature desired the vote of censure passed, but Mr. Rives remained firm, and yielded up his seat in consequence. At another period of his Congressional life, he changed his political affiliations (from sincere motives) and thereby lost, as his friends confidently affirmed, the nomination for the Presidency of the United States. It was at this time that, in a brilliant speech defending his course, he exclaimed: "I know full well, Mr. President, that in taking this course I am to incur the anathemas of party, but I cannot forget that I have a country to serve as well as a party to obey." He opposed secession, yet when Virginia severed her connection with the Union, he served her and the South in the first and second Congresses of the Confederacy.

His career as a diplomat was notably successful. He not only conducted the affairs of his country with signal ability, but became exceedingly popular at the French Court—so much so, in fact, that Queen Amélie stood as godmother for his eldest daughter, and, with rare graciousness, conferred her own name upon the little American.

Mr. Rives's fame, however, rests upon his political career. His speeches in Congress display the finest powers of his genius—his profound depth of mind, his logical reasoning faculties, his broad culture, and his rare grasp of difficult and involved constitutional questions. The times and the man were well met. The Congressional

arena gave fairest play for his constructive powers, his liberal education, and his broad and exact knowledge of the science of government—learned so early and intelligently at the feet of Jefferson.

"It was the great merit of Mr. Rives's life," says a biographer, "that he acquired distinction and commanded popular favor by pure force of merit. His reputation was in no part due to the ultraism of the partisan, or to the seductive arts or to the inflammatory power of the orator. It may be doubted whether on any occasion of his life, before any assemblage of listeners, he ever uttered a sentence that in its language or sentiment, or in the mode of its delivery, would have been unseemly in the most august deliberative body. Constitutional jurisprudence, the philosophy of government, and the history of nations were favorite studies with him and in these subjects he was profoundly learned."

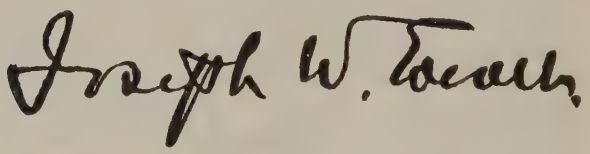
It is sufficient tribute to his genius to remember that he won fame and renown at a time when Webster, Clay, and Calhoun were in the ascendant, and when such mighty questions as "slavery" and "states' rights" were up for discussion and final arbitrament. It was a day of intellectual giants, of loftiest patriotism, of bitterest party feeling, and of crucial test for the destinies and welfare of the young Republic. Looking back now, through the storm and stress of later years, it is comforting to feel that if such genius and such patriotism could not arrest the tragedy of '61, its advent must have been inevitable, and its mission of final and undisputed beneficence.

In the evening of his life, Mr. Rives turned his attention to authorship. Besides numerous pamphlets and addresses (bearing mainly on political subjects), he published in 1845 'The Life and Character of John Hampden'; in 1855, 'The Ethics of Christianity'—a production of negligible value; and from 1849-'60 'A History of the Life and Times of James Madison.' The latter work is by far the greatest production of his pen. It is a monumental tribute to the revered "Father of the Constitution," and a record of inexhaustible detail, touching the period in which he lived, and the illustrious men with whom he communed. It is history pure and simple—prepared by one whose equipment for the task was well-nigh perfect. Rives had not only enjoyed the personal friendship of Madison, and the freest use of his political papers, but had also been a cherished disciple of Jefferson and Monroe. His own life was almost contemporaneous with the existence of the Constitution, and from its very framers he had imbibed wisdom and inspiration. Further, in the halls of Congress he had heard its merits and demerits discussed by intellectual giants, and had seen its marvelous theories put to the crucial test of practice. Thus, by word of mouth, by personal experience, and by natural endowments, the author was rarely equipped for his theme

The results are well known. 'The Life and Times of James Madison' is one of the finest fruits of American history and biography. Its style is polished and judicial; its presentation of facts convincing, and its scope of research and argument is phenomenal. Rarely, if ever, has a disciple rendered such valued and devoted tribute to his preceptor.

Mr. Rives died at Castle Hill, his Albemarle estate, in 1868. He was seventy-five years of age. Near his homestead, in a beautiful house of worship, a mural tablet bears the following inscription—a masterly summary of his genius and achievements:

In memory of one of the founders
of this Church,
William Cabell Rives, LL.D.
Statesman, Diplomatist and Historian.
Born 4th May, 1793. Died 25th April, 1868.
Uniting a clear and capacious intellect,
A courageous and generous temper,
With sound learning and commanding eloquence,
He won a distinguished place among the foremost men
Whom Virginia has consecrated to the service of the country;
While he added lustre to his talents
By the purity and dignity of his public career,
And adorned his private life with all the virtues
Which can grace the character of Husband, Father, Friend
and Christian.



STRUCTURE OF THE GOVERMENT

Extracts from a Speech delivered in the United States Senate, February 14, 1833.

Sir, the questions now to be settled are of the deepest import to the destinies of this country. They touch not the construction of this or that clause of the constitution only; they go to the whole frame and structure of the Government, and the vital principle of its existence. Sir, I should be recreant to my duty on this floor, as the representative of a State which, under Providence, had the chief agency in the establishment of this happy system of Government, if I did not attempt, however feebly, the expression of my views on such an occasion.

I am impelled to this expression, Mr. President, by another consideration. It is my misfortune to differ from my worthy and honorable colleague, as well as from other honorable Senators coming from the same quarter of the Union as myself, in several of the views I have taken of this subject. It is due to them, as well as to myself and those whom we represent, that the grounds of this difference of opinion should be stated and explained. And, in order to preclude all misapprehension, I beg leave to say, in the outset, that no one is or has been more thoroughly opposed to that whole system of policy usually denominated the American system than I have been, and still am. My voice, sir, has been often and strenuously, however ineffectually, raised against it in another division of this Capitol. I consider it unjust in principle, inexpedient in practice, oppressive and unequal in its operation—in short, an abuse of power contrary to the true genius of our institutions.

But, sir, what is entitled to far more consideration, the State which I have the honor in part to represent has repeatedly and strongly protested against this system; and it is but yesterday that her Legislature earnestly renewed her appeal to the councils of the nation so to modify the system as to remove the just causes of complaint which had arisen against it. Sir, this appeal, and similar appeals which have emanated from the Legislatures of other States, fortified by all those high considerations of patriotism, policy, and justice, which the crisis suggests, cannot fail to have their proper effect.

There is every reason to believe that this distracting question will be settled, and speedily and satisfactorily settled, as it ought to be. But, notwithstanding these grounds of hope, one of the States of the Union has rashly undertaken to redress her griefs by a formal abrogation of the laws of the United States within her limits. She has declared the whole series of revenue laws, from the origin of the Government to the present day, to be null and void; has prohibited their execution within her borders, under high penalties; and has ordained various other measures with the express view of defeating and arresting their operation.

In this state of things, we are called upon to say if the Government of the United States shall acquiesce in this open defiance and violation of the laws of the Union, without taking any step whatever for their enforcement? For myself, I am free to say that I do not thus read my oath to support the constitution of the United States. I do not thus understand my duty to my country, or the interest and the honor of my own State. What, sir, will be the consequence, if South Carolina be permitted, without opposition, to nullify the revenue laws of the Union? Will not that uniformity of imposts, and that equality in the fiscal and commercial regulations of the Union, which are guarantied by the constitution, be at once abolished by the arbitrary act of South Carolina, to her own advantage, and to the detriment of the other States? Sir, as a representative of Virginia, I am not willing that Virginia shall be compelled to pay taxes, while South Carolina, by her own illegal and unauthorized action, is suffered to go quit of them. Yet this must be the unjust consequence of acquiescence in nullification; or, otherwise, a result still more distressing to the whole country will ensue—the entire commerce of the country will be drawn to the free ports of South Carolina; the ports of the other States, with all the important branches of industry connected with them, will be consigned to ruin; and, at the same time, the whole revenue of the nation will be cut off and destroyed. . . .

The relation of allegiance, sir, is not between citizen and Government; it is between citizen and sovereign. It is the whole body of the community which is, with us, the sovereign; and it is to that sovereign that allegiance is due. Now, sir,

I have already shown that the United States, for certain purposes, do form one great political community, in which the sovereignty of the Union resides, just as the sovereignty of the respective States resides in the people of each State separately considered. It is to the United States, then, in their sovereign character, and not to the Government of the United States, that allegiance is due. That there is a direct relation of allegiance between the United States and the citizens of this country, so far as the objects of the Union are concerned, is sufficiently manifested, not only by what is intrinsically implied in the term "citizen of the United States," which is frequently used in the constitution, but by the fact that the constitution provides for the punishment of treason against the United States. Treason is essentially the breach of the allegiance due to the sovereign power against which it is committed. There is, then, a direct allegiance due from the people of this country to the United States, as citizens of the United States, to the extent of the sovereignty which, for special purposes, resides in the Union. We are, at the same time, citizens of our respective States; and, as such, we owe allegiance each one to his own State, to the full extent of the sovereignty abiding in the States severally. To each power we owe allegiance, within the limits of their respective sovereignties; to neither beyond.

But, sir, it is said that allegiance and protection are reciprocal, and that as our protection in all the most interesting relations of life is derived from our respective States, to them our allegiance is exclusively due. It has been contended that we derive no protection from the United States, except when we are on the ocean, or in foreign countries, beyond the limits of the States. If this were so, still it would be something that we are efficiently protected by the strong arm of the Union, where the States are powerless to protect. But, sir, is it true that we receive no protection from the United States, while we remain within the limits of the country? Do not the United States, on the contrary, protect us even against the arbitrary and unjust legislation of our own States, in declaring, as the constitution declares, that "no State shall pass any bill of attainder, *ex post facto* law, or law impairing the obligation of contracts?" Is it not the United States which, through the

medium of the judicial power, secures to us an impartial administration of justice in all controversies with citizens of other States or foreigners? Is it not the United States, again, which secures to us the privileges and immunities of citizens in the other States? What power is it that protects us in the enjoyment of our most inestimable political rights; which guaranties to us the blessings of a "republican form of government"; which defends us against the excesses of "domestic violence" and faction, as well as the calamities of hostile "invasion?" Is it not this same despised United States? Sir, wherever we are, at home or abroad, on the bosom of the ocean, or by the tranquil fireside, whether danger threatened us in our civil, political, or international relations, the broad aegis of the Union is over us, and covers us with its ample protection. Let it not be said, then, that we derive no protection from the United States, which might merit some small return of allegiance. Sir, proud as I am of the title of citizen of Virginia, grateful as I am for the unmerited favor which that honored mother has shown to me, I yet feel, with the father of the country, that "the just pride of patriotism is exalted" by the more comprehensive title of citizen of the United States; that title which gives me a share in the common inheritance of glory which has descended to us from our revolutionary sages, patriots and heroes; that title which enables me to claim the names of the Rutledges, the Pinckneys, and the Sumpters of South Carolina, of the Hancocks, the Adamses, and the Otises of Massachusetts, and all the other proud names which have illustrated the annals of each and all these States as "compatriot with my own."

* * * * * *

Sir, we live in times when it is a solemn duty which every man owes his country, to speak his opinions without disguise or equivocation, even at the risk of giving offence to some of those whom it would be his greatest pleasure, as well as his highest ambition, to content in all things. I have been already admonished, sir, that a sword is at this moment suspended over my head, which may descend and sever the worthless thread of my political existence for the act of public duty I am now performing. Sir, if it should be so, I shall have at least one consolation—the consciousness of having fallen in

defence of the constitution of my country, and of that liberty which is indissolubly connected with it.

Sir, I take leave to say, that there breathes not the man who is more devoted than I am to the maintenance of the just rights of the States. It is in that faith that I was brought up and in that faith I shall continue to the last. It is in the salutary influence and power of the States, under distinct and organized forms of action, and the wise partition of power established between them and the authorities of the Union, that our system possesses guaranties and advantages unknown to any other which ever existed. Sir, the gentlemen who have claimed to be the special champions of State rights here, appear to have a much more limited idea of those rights than I have. They speak of State rights as if they consisted exclusively in the right of opposing acts of the General Government. But, sir, according to my notion of them, they comprehend all rights of political power whatever, not delegated to the United States; all such being expressly reserved by the constitution to the respective States. . . .

But, sir, the most vehement denunciations have been directed against those clauses of the bill which authorize the employment of military force, in certain cases, to repel attempts, by force, to obstruct the execution of the laws. We have been told that it is making war upon South Carolina. Now, sir, while I do not concur in the policy of these provisions, at the present moment, for reasons which I shall presently state, I utterly deny the justness of this qualification of the bill, as well as the principle on which it is founded. There is no proceeding whatever, in any part of this affair, against South Carolina. The Government of the United States, in the execution of the laws, can have no proper reference to States. It acts upon individuals, not upon States, as I have already had occasion abundantly to show; and the constitution of the United States, when it declared that nothing in the constitution or laws of a particular State should control the laws of the United States, has not permitted the Government of the Union, in executing the laws of the United States, to inquire if opposition to them is, or is not, authorized by a particular State. If the laws be opposed by combinations too powerful to be overcome in the ordinary course of judicial proceedings, there is

the same right, under the constitution, to execute the laws by calling in the aid of the military power, whether such combination be authorized by a law of the State, (which the constitution has declared, in such a case, to be a nullity,) or whether they be purely voluntary. I have not, then, the slightest difficulty in regard to the right and the power of the Government to employ the physical force of the country, in a case like the present, if it should be necessary. I am also aware that the provisions in the bill now alluded to are strictly defensive, authorizing force only to repel force; that, amended as they have been, they give a far less extensive power over the military force than was given during the Administration of Mr. Jefferson, for the enforcement of the embargo; and, that, in fact, they give no power of that sort which does not already exist under the acts of 1795 and 1807. I have likewise the fullest confidence, not only in the discretion, but in the scrupulous forbearance, with which any powers proposed to be vested by this bill in the Chief Magistrate will be used. But I foresee that the introduction of these provisions in the bill, while unnecessary, if my view of the acts of 1795 and 1807 be correct, will be industriously, and, to a certain extent, successfully used as a topic to inflame the jealousies, and mislead the sympathies of a generous people, and to add to the irritation and excitement already unhappily existing in a large section of the Union. I would make no new provision of this sort, therefore, till an overt act had been committed. And then, I verily believe with Mr. Jefferson, that a republican Government would show itself as strong, in a good sense, as any on earth: "At the call of the law, every man would fly to the standard of the law, and the defence of public order would be considered by every citizen as his individual concern." . . .

It is time, Mr. President, to put an end to our unhappy divisions. It has been my fortune, in another situation, to witness the effects they have produced on the character and consideration of our Government abroad, and on the generous efforts of the friends of liberty in other parts of the world. Sir, my heart has swollen with a pride and exultation, which can be appreciated only by those who have felt them in a foreign land, when I have heard my country the theme of every tongue; its institutions, with the glorious results of liberty

and happiness they have produced, the subject of universal envy and admiration; rebuking, on the one hand, the gloomy spirit of despotism, and animating, on the other, the generous aspirations of freedom. But, in a few short months, how has this scene been changed! The language of admiration and respect lost in that of indifference and distrust; the votaries of liberty discouraged and confounded; the disciples of legitimacy exulting in the failure of the only system of free government which ever promised a perfect success; all Europe filled with predictions of the speedy dissolution of our Union, and consigning us henceforward to the same rank of impotence and anarchy as the unhappy and distracted States of the southern parts of our own continent.

These have been the bitter fruits of our divisions abroad. What have they been at home? In the midst of unexampled prosperity, anxiety and alarm pervading every bosom; that sacred union, in regard to which we were taught by the father of our country to "discountenance whatever might suggest even a suspicion that it could, in any event, be abandoned," openly questioned and decried, and millions trembling for its fate. Sir, let us put an end to these divisions; let us disappoint the malignant predictions of the enemies of free government; let us restore confidence to the patriot at home, and hope to the votary of freedom abroad. I do, in my conscience, believe that the preservation of the Union is our only security for liberty. If we are to be broken into separate confederacies, constant wars and collisions with each other must ensue, out of which will grow up large military establishments, perpetual and burdensome taxes, an overshadowing Executive power; and, amid these deleterious influences, what hope can there be that liberty would survive?

It is here, I confess, that I see the danger of military despotism; and not where the imagination of the Senator from South Carolina (Mr. Calhoun) has found it. Is not the actual condition of South Carolina, in this respect, an impressive admonition to us on the subject? The whole State converted into a camp; the Executive and other authorities armed with dictatorial powers; the rights of conscience set at naught, and an unsparing proscription ready to disfranchise one-half of her population. Sir, this is but a prefiguration of the evils

and calamities to which every portion of this country would be destined, if the Union should be dissolved. Let us then rally around that sacred Union, fixing it anew, and establishing it forever on the immutable basis of equal justice, of mutual amity and kindness, and an administration at once firm and paternal. Let us do this, and we shall carry back peace to our distracted country, happiness to the affrighted fireside, restore stability to our threatened institutions, and give hope and confidence once more to the friends of liberty throughout the world. Let us do this, and we shall be, in short, what a bountiful Providence has heretofore made us, and designed us forever to remain—the freest and happiest people under the sun.

THE DISTINGUISHING GLORY OF CHRISTIANITY

Extract from Speech before the Young Men's Christian Association of Richmond, December, 1855.

Christianity, then, gentlemen, is a strenuous and active principle, "fruitful in good works," laboring "in season and out of season" for the happiness of the world. There is no generous sentiment of the heart which it does not vivify and strengthen, no noble aspiration of the mind which it does not elevate and sustain, no duty which it does not supply the highest and strongest motives for the discharge of. The celestial hand-maid and guide of humanity, there is no situation in life, private or public, humble or elevated, to which its precepts are not applicable. You do then, gentlemen, in every respect a good work in aiming to give them the widest influence and diffusion, and, as Israel was enjoined to do in receiving the tables of the Ten Commandments from the hands of the Almighty, "to teach them diligently unto thy children, to talk of them when thou sittest down in thine house, and when thou walkest by the way, and when thou liest down, and when thou risest up; to bind them as a sign upon thine hand and as frontlets between thine eyes; to write them upon the posts of thy house and on thy gates."

A celebrated writer on the "Internal evidence of the Christian religion," in justly upholding the superiority of Chris-

tianity as a practical system of ethics over every other which had ever been promulgated in ancient or modern times, has somewhat inconsiderately, I think, under the influence of peculiar views, rejected from the list of Christian virtues certain qualities and affections which the general sentiment of mankind has always regarded with approbation. This is, in my judgment, to mutilate the rightful dominion of Christianity over the whole field of human sympathies and action. On the contrary, gentlemen, my belief is that there is no virtue recognized as such by any code of morals, in harmony with the general sense of mankind, which Christianity not only does not own and acknowledge, but furnishes a more powerful and persuasive motive to its exercise.

The qualities to which the writer in question would deny the character of virtues in the eye of Christianity, are *friendship, patriotism,* and *courage.* On what principle friendship, which is but a more concentrated love of our neighbor—of that love of one another which Christ enjoined as a new commandment to his disciples, commanding them "to love one another as he loved them," and calling them at the same time, with peculiar significance, by the very name of *friends*—on what principle such a sentiment, thus inculcated by Christ himself, can be considered as opposed to the genius and inconsistent with the spirit of Christianity, it would seem difficult to comprehend. So with regard to patriotism—a sentiment combining all the instinctive charities of neighborhood, family, birth-place and country, and so touchingly embodied in the Saviour's lamentation over Jerusalem: "O, Jerusalem, Jerusalem! how often would I have gathered thy children together, as a hen gathereth her brood under her wings, and ye would not;" how such a natural and noble affection is to be brought, too, under the ban of the law of love, may well give rise to hesitation and doubt. In the whole compass of recorded eloquence, there is no effusion of sorrowing but faithful patriotism to be compared with that which the sacred writings contain in the case of the captive Israelites: "How shall we sing the Lord's song in a strange land? If I forget thee, O Jerusalem, let my right hand forget her cunning."

Courage, gentlemen, exerted in a good cause and sustained by right principles, is one of the noblest attributes of hu-

manity. The adversaries of Christianity, from Celsus down to Hume, have sought to assail it by imputing to it a want of courage as a necessary consequence of its doctrines of humility and forbearance. Strange that one of its champions, and in other respects one of its ablest champions, should sanction the unjust reproach by exhibiting the same misconceived view of the holy cause he defends! Humility before God is the highest boldness towards man. Christ himself, while inculcating the fear of God, solemnly warns his disciples, whom again he calls *friends,* to discard all fear of man: "I say unto you my friends, be not afraid of them that kill the body, and after that have no more that they can do; but I will forewarn you whom ye shall fear: Fear Him which, after he killed, hath power to cast into hell; yea, I say unto you, fear Him." A religion which teaches its followers to regard all temporal possessions, even the most cherished, as of but little worth compared with the great interests of eternity —to "count life itself as not dear, so that they may *finish* their course with joy"—which holds out its high rewards in another and never-ending life—which enjoins everything to be done and suffered for conscience sake: such a religion must needs be the parent and nurse of the loftiest courage in whatever cause is sanctified by a sense of duty.

Where in the trials and conflicts of humanity, can you find a more sublime courage, active as well as passive, than that exhibited by the apostles? They proclaimed the word of God in the face of infuriated multitudes, and in the presence and against the interdict of incensed magistrates, armed with the whole power of human vengeance; they encountered every form of danger than can appal the heart of man, or as one of them has graphically recorded them, "perils of waters, perils of robbers, perils by mine own countrymen, perils by the heathen, perils in the city, perils in the wilderness, perils in the sea, perils among false brethren"—and yet, in the midst of all these, they were unshaken and immovable. When summoned by the terrors of offended power, not to teach in the name of Christ, they persisted, braving imprisonment, torture and death, and calmly answered, "we ought to obey God rather than men." If I were called on to say who, of all the men that history has transmitted to the present times, most per-

fectly fulfilled that noble picture of moral and personal courage drawn by the Roman poet—

> Non civium ardor prava jubentium,
> Non vultus instantis tyranni,
> Mente quatit solida, neque auster
> Dux inquieti turbidus Hadriae,
> Nec fulminantis magna Jovis Manus;
> Si fractus illabatur orbis,
> Impavidum ferient ruinae—

I should say first St. Paul, then Luther. The story of the one is known to all who have read the Book of Life. The other, an uninspired man, but strong in the armour of righteousness, trod in the footsteps of his great prototype.

To form a just idea of the courage of Luther, we must transport ourselves back to the times in which he acted his great and trying part on the stage of humanity. The Papal power, then in the zenith of its spiritual dominion, was still further strengthened by an alliance with the most formidable princes of the earth—Charles 5th, Emperor of Germany and King of Spain; Francis 1st, King of France; Henry the 8th, of England, then the boasted Defender of the Faith. The age was one of bitter persecution and ferocious intolerance. Following in the traditions of the century before, which had seen John Huss burnt at the stake for the opinions which Luther now professed, in that which had just commenced it prepared the way for the bloody atrocities of the Duke of Alva, and the treacherous and exterminating massacres of Catherine de Medicis. Here, then, the poor monk of Wittemberg was called to wrestle literally against "principalities and powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, and spiritual wickedness in high places;" and he fearlessly confronted them all.

When summoned by the Emperor to appear before the diet at Worms, and his friends were trembling with apprehensions for his safety, he, being then in feeble health, answered them by saying: "If I cannot perform the journey to Worms as a man in health, I will be carried there in a litter. If they intend to use violence against me, as they probably do, I commit the matter into the hands of God. *He* still lives and reigns

that preserved the three Israelites in the fiery furnace. If it be not His will to save me, my life is but little worth. Expect anything from me but flight or recantation. Fly, I cannot; still less can I recant." As he approached Worms, he received another warning, from the Chaplain and confidential adviser of the Elector of Saxony, not to enter the City. His reply was in a yet loftier strain, and somewhat imbued, perhaps, with the plain-spoken roughness of the times. "Go tell your master that though there should be as many devils at Worms as there are tiles on its roofs, I would enter it." He did enter it, and appeared with sublime self-possession before that assembly of the great of this world, presided by the Emperor in person, which, there is every reason to believe, had met for his destruction. To a summons to recant his heresies, thrice repeated with every circumstance which could give it overpowering force upon the weakness of human nature, and with the fate of John Huss full before his eyes, he firmly and courageously replied—"I neither can nor will retract anything, for it cannot be right for a Christian to speak against his conscience."

MEMORABLE COMPETITION

From 'Life and Times of James Madison.'

Thus terminated, after a session of nearly four weeks, a convention second in importance only to that which produced the Constitution. Memorable as it was for its results and for the superior abilities of the many distinguished men who took part in its discussions, it was hardly less memorable for the stirring spectacle it presented of an individual competition of talents, noble and lofty in its character, between two of the public men of Virginia, differing widely in their respective gifts and attainments, but each of the highest order in his own line of excellence. We have now before us a letter written in 1857 by a gentleman in his ninetieth year, the only surviving witness, probably, at that time of the great contest, recalling, with the vivid enthusiasm of youth and with faculties undimmed by age, the impressions which the scene had made upon him.

"At the time of the convention," he says, "I was a stripling, and clerk in one of the public offices, and could of course only attend the debates at intervals snatched from the duties of the office. But the impressions made by the powerful arguments of Madison and the overwhelming eloquence of Henry can never fade from my mind. I thought them almost supernatural. They seemed raised up by Providence, each in his way, to produce great results; the one, by his grave, dignified, and irresistible arguments to convince and enlighten mankind; the other, by his brilliant and enrapturing eloquence to lead whithersoever he would. Although there were other brilliant stars in the convention, such as Pendleton, Wythe, Mason, etc., etc., etc., the discussion, after a few days, was narrowed down very much to Mr. Henry and Mr. Madison. They were both, at all times, great and interesting; but the convention yielded gradually to the convincing and irresistible arguments of Madison, and adopted the Constitution. These two eminent men seemed ever deeply impressed with the magnitude of the issues before them, and each to labor with his whole strength and energy to accomplish the object he had in view—the one the adoption, the other the rejection, of the Constitution."

The result of this memorable contest is not without instruction to the candidates for a true public fame. However brilliant and dazzling the triumphs of the gifted popular orator, the eloquence of reason and conviction asserts its legitimate empire when heard in senates and deliberative bodies sitting on the grave questions of State. Eloquence, indeed, has been called the art of persuasion: but conviction is often the surest, as well as lawful, road that leads to persuasion. A great authority has said that dialectics is the foundation of the art of persuasion; and to know how to convince, and to enforce conviction, is to be eloquent. Truth honestly and earnestly presented, with the accessories of accumulated and various knowledge, of lucid reasoning, of a graceful and impressive diction, strengthened by the moral power of virtuous and noble sentiments, exerts an irresistible influence upon the heart as well as the mind of man. All these Mr. Madison possessed, and in an exalted degree.

Owing to the difference of manners and institutions, it is

difficult to find an apt parallel to his style of eloquence among the statesmen and orators of antiquity. But, in the land from which the language and civic usages of America are derived, a contemporary delineation of the manner of Bacon as a public speaker might seem to have been drawn, in anticipation, for the future transatlantic statesman. "There happened in my day," says the famous Ben Jonson, "one noble speaker, who was full of gravity in his speaking. No man ever spoke more neatly, more pressly, more weightily; or suffered less emptiness, less idleness, in what he uttered. No member of his speech but consisted of its own graces. His hearers could not cough or look aside from him without loss. He commanded where he spoke, and the fear of every man that heard him was that he should make an end." To this attractive portrait of Bacon as a speaker, if we add, with kindred graces of eloquence, the noble integrity, the practised wisdom, and profound constitutional learning of Somers, whose career that of Mr. Madison in so many points resembled, we shall have attained the most perfect idea that comparison can give of the powers and accomplishments of the successful defender of the Constitution before the convention of Virginia.

ESSAYS OF THE FEDERALISTS

From 'Life and Times of James Madison.'

It will be seen from this general review of Mr. Madison's contributions to the "Federalist," and the class of subjects treated of by him, that he had his full share in stamping upon the work that character of wisdom, originality, and depth, which is universally accorded to it, not only as a commentary on the Constitution, but as a dissertation on the principles of free government. Mr. Jefferson, in writing to Mr. Madison from Paris, on the 18th of November, 1788, pronounced it "the best commentary on the principles of government which was ever written." Chancellor Kent, in his great work on American law, speaks of it in these notable terms: "I know not, indeed, of any work on the principles of free government that is to be compared, in instruction and intrinsic value, to the small and unpretending volume of the 'Federalist'; not

even if we resort to Aristotle, Cicero, Machiavel, Montesquieu, Milton, Locke, or Burke. It is equally admirable in the depth of its wisdom, the comprehensiveness of its views, the sagacity of its reflections, and the fearlessness, candor, simplicity, and elegance, with which its truths are uttered and recommended."

It was made by Judge Story the basis of his elaborate and systematic treatise on the Constitution. He styles it "an incomparable commentary," and places it in the same category, even as to authority, with the decisions of the supreme court on questions of constitutional law. To the value of Mr. Madison's contributions to it, the learned judge bears the highest practical testimony, in the numerous textual citations from them which he introduces into the body of his own commentaries. Leaving out the judicial department of the Constitution, which was in some sort the professional domain of Colonel Hamilton, the attentive reader will not fail to observe that this leading treatise on the Constitution recurs far more frequently, for the illustration of its principles, to the numbers of the "Federalist" written by Mr. Madison, than to those of either of the other distinguished contributors. And it is a circumstance not unworthy of remark in this same connection, that, in the only instance in which Chancellor Kent, in his great work, makes special and distinctive mention of particular numbers of the "Federalist"—those, to wit, from No. 52 to 64, which he describes as containing "a profound discussion" of the principles on which the organization of the two Houses of Congress rested—of the fourteen numbers there referred to, nine were written by Mr. Madison, three by Colonel Hamilton, and one by Mr. Jay.

We would be the last to derogate from the just merit of Colonel Hamilton in the distinguished part he bore in this master work of American genius and political science. That merit was far too great to admit any palliation or excuse for the effort made to magnify it at the expense of justice to his associates. In urging the adoption of the Constitution by the people, as he did, through the "Federalist," with extraordinary earnestness and vigor, he was often, it is true, in developing the principles of the system, the advocate of opinions not his own. He had declared in the convention, as we have seen, that "no man's ideas were more remote from the plan than

his own were known to be; but it was not possible to deliberate between anarchy and convulsion on the one side, and the *chance* of good to be expected from the plan on the other." The result was, that he threw himself into the struggle for its adoption with all the energy of his character and the vigor of his intellect; and both were displayed in his contributions to the "Federalist" in a bold and striking manner, and with admirable skill and power.

But he was still an advocate. He wrote and spoke, not from his own point of view, but from that of others. The position of Mr. Madison was different. He had been the chief architect in the formation of the Constitution. He was familiar with all the counsels that shaped and controlled every part of its mechanism. He was an earnest believer in the republican theory of government, which Colonel Hamilton was not. From Mr. Madison, therefore, besides his own important contributions, proceeded the ruling inspiration which gave tone and color to the discussions of the "Federalist." The correspondence of Colonel Hamilton himself bears testimony to this. It shows, that, even after Mr. Madison was called away from a personal participation in the work by the necessity of his presence in Virginia, his solicitude watched over it; and he wrote to Colonel Hamilton, making suggestions, with regard to the portion that remained to be executed, which were cordially accepted and acted upon by the latter.

ABBY MEGUIRE ROACH

[1876—]

MARILLA WAITE FREEMAN

THE art of Abby Meguire Roach is the most difficult of all arts—the transfiguration of the familiar. Her people and situations are of the sort one sees every day. So simple and direct is her handling of them that at first thought one labels it pure realism. More and more, however, as one reads, what seemed so simple shows beneath the surface as subtle and complex; the warp and woof in the pattern of every-day life begin to unfold, and the hand of the idealist appears. That which is at once the purpose and the value of her work stands forth—the illumination of the common lot.

As a writer, Mrs. Roach eludes both classification and comparison. She penetrates human motive and character with the same keen probe that Edith Wharton uses, but she wields her instrument more gently. Her people, less sophisticated, more "common" than Mrs. Wharton's, are also more universal in their types and problems. It has, indeed, been said of Mrs. Roach's characters that they are types rather than individuals. And yet, the ethereal Natalie Palmer, red-blond, G. W. Reno, full-throated Molly-Moll, the vivid and engaging Surprise, and Agnes, the "celestial vampire"—to name a few at random—are persons not easily forgotten. The fact is that for so young a writer ("young" signifying a comparative newness in authorship), and for one with so small a volume of work yet to show, the number of characters she has created and of human histories she has told is a notable achievement. And if, recurringly, it is the "situation" that holds us rather than the individuals that compose it, is not that life—and literature as well? What is Becky Sharp but a type? What else but types did Dickens draw? And what of Sir Willoughby Patterne, the pattern of us all? It is as types, in their common humanity, that people of the imagination have interest and meaning for us. And though, to quote one critic, "Mrs. Roach chooses situations typical of ordinary life, in every one she brings out distinguishing personal elements, and in regard to each she seems to say the last word."

If comparison is to be attempted, it is with a contemporary English writer, May Sinclair, that Mrs. Roach's affinity is greatest.

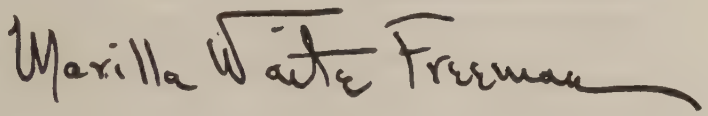
Both have treated the problems of the marriage relation with a clear-eyed vision of realities, a sympathetic comprehension of the motives of the human heart, and unafraidness in the presence of fundamental truths, a delicate courageousness of speech, which are beyond praise. If the English writer's canvases are larger, her touch surer, her genius richer, Mrs. Roach is not yet mature, and there is in whatever she does a hopefulness of outlook, a perception of the ultimate significances of life, which give her work a place and power all its own.

As one has wondered of Miss Sinclair, and of the author of 'Jane Eyre' before her, how such genius, such profound intuitive knowledge of life could have developed so early and in so simple an environment, so one regards Abby Meguire Roach. From a short and normal girlhood, and a quietly happy married life of five years, sprang full-fledged her first volume of stories, each of them a heart-searching page out of real life. She had shown a rather unusual record of childish precocity in a "poem" published at nine years, an "epic" in six cantos composed at twelve, and, at thirteen, had collaborated in the writing of a novel that was actually published in a woman's home magazine in Philadelphia. She wrote also the inevitable verses of adolescence, and a few short stories and essays (some of them appearing in leading magazines) after the year at Wellesley College that concluded her schooling. But it was not until five years after her marriage (in 1899, to Mr. Neill Roach of Louisville) that Mrs. Roach appeared unheralded with a whole volume of short stories—most of them being novelettes—which, although the result of the unconscious mental accumulation of years, were actually produced in a few months, with the greatest rapidity. Harper and Brothers issued them first through the magazine, and then in book form, in 1906, under the title 'Some Successful Marriages.'

Other stories of a different kind Mrs. Roach has written, notably two novelettes which appeared in the *Century Magazine*, "Tents of a Night" and "Manifest Destiny"—companion studies of the girl and the man philanderer; and, in particular, a short love story, "The Dream of the Morning," which, infused as it is with humor and poetry, with charming and delicate sentiment, is an exquisite pastel.

But it was the group of stories of married life that attracted wide attention during their magazine appearance which ranked Mrs. Roach with the most distinctive and distinguished fiction writers of to-day. A few critics spoke of the book as "pathologic"; some regarded the title as ironic; and of course there were not lacking those to throw up the hands of holy horror at the mere mention of

such vital and important subjects as the author handled. But in most quarters the book was recognized as fundamentally sane and optimistic, as "part of that inroad into conventional and unreal sentiment which is a notable movement in modern thought." More than one critic ranked "His Claim" first, as "one of the most beautiful and noticeable stories of the last decade." But "Life's Accolade," "One of Life's Paradoxes," "The Spirit of Partnership," "The Vanished Gods," have their special advocates.



HIS CLAIM

From "Some Successful Marriages." Copyright, 1905, Harper and Brothers, and used here by permission of the author and the publishers.

Who holds by Thee hath heaven in fee
To gild his dross thereby,
And knowledge sure that he endure
A child until he die—

"I COULDN'T let any one know.—Here! here are two seats. What splendid cars they have nowadays on these suburban lines!—After Mr. Hungerford's business here in B— came up, there was only time to come, and be delighted at the chance. You were so near the hotel I sent you word at once. I thought you might tell me the best way out to Natalie Palmer's. Of course, I supposed you saw her occasionally. It's lovely of you to be taking me."

"Not at all. I shall enjoy seeing her. The idea of my not knowing she lived in B—."

"And she's been here ever since her marriage. How many years? Twenty, fully. Dear me, yes, she has eight children."

"Eight? The ethereal Natalie Palmer?"

"I asked her once if she thought it wise. We've kept up occasional letters. She said she certainly would not venture to doubt its wisdom, though it wasn't a question of her judgment—it was all in the dear Lord's hands."

"Some people shirk a good deal on the dear Lord," Mrs.

Talcott reflected. "They might as logically eat green apples for hunger and send the bills to Him."

"Well, for Natalie it wouldn't seem exactly an easy way of shirking."

"Dear, no; if it had been she would have thought something harder her duty. The most conscientious girl I ever knew. And the daintiest. And eight!"

"When she wrote me of her engagement to Dan Maddox she said she had been slow coming to it; she had been afraid she was not worthy of nor equal to a tie which, once formed, was as indissoluble as that between God and His creature, or parent and child; but at last she was sure she could give Mr. Maddox the obedience and indestructible love that were the wifely duty."

Mrs. Talcott laughed. "Can't you just see Natalie Palmer saying that?"

"That's the charm of her letters—they are so like her. She still uses that fine, round script that we were taught, my dear, as regular and carefully spaced to the line as print. You can fairly hear Natalie's voice rippling across the pages, soft and sprightly. Natalie was always such a *lady*. You know I adored her. We had the most soulful of intimacies. We wouldn't have dreamed of discussing clothes or lovers. Our confidences were all of duty, influence, aspiration. For a while after we left school we both kept diaries and wrote out our innermost yearnings to each other. My youngsters soon got me into a different atmosphere, but Natalie has never changed the fashion of her hair nor her sentiments. As we both grew busy we settled down to a couple of letters a year. And I have never destroyed one of hers; they are the most delightful serial story I ever read—the unconscious portrayal of an exquisite nature, utterly happy in a perfect home life."

"Slow there, slow now!" Mrs. Talcott checked her. "You will exhaust the superlatives."

Mrs. Hungerford's smile was absent politeness. "But it has been ideal."

"Fortunate for her convictions."

"But do you know it has always seemed to me surprising. She sent me their wedding picture; and his was a good face, but commonplace. This attraction of opposites! Isn't it

strange? Can you believe real union is possible for them? And yet . . . Or may they be opposites without being aliens? Mr. Maddox looked devout. Perhaps that explained him in it, and her, too. Even at school, Natalie was the sort of creature of whom some enraptured disciple was always making a fetich. As witness me! So perhaps that devoutness was a fundamental kinship and a bond. You know how devout Natalie herself is! I don't know. I don't know." She sat musing. "Now my life has been about as satisfactory as most people's. Mr. Hungerford's a dear, if he does make it a point of the simple life and democratic independence not to wear a dinner coat. And our children are as good and clever as *our* children could well be in this age without miracles. And I'm sure we all enjoy our home as much as is possible considering the servant problem. But Natalie doesn't seem to have married a character, only a half-human, half-divine relationship; nor to have borne little heirs to whooping-cough and tempers; and, judging from her obliviousness to such details, she must have a tribe of fairies to do her housework. I asked her not long ago if anything disagreeable had ever happened to her; certainly nothing commonplace ever has. Her pictures of their life remind you of a Fra Angelica—everything is so smooth, delicate, clear, airy; a troop of rapturous little angels 'piping to the spirit ditties of no tone.' When they took this house at 3420 M Street—Dear me, isn't it far! It will be noon before we get there. I hope the conductor hasn't forgotten where we want to go."

"I hope not. It's a part of the city entirely strange to me."

"It's well out, I fancy. They have these electrics now, but then it was almost country. When they took the place she wrote that they did not expect to make their permanent home of it; but they have never moved. She said, as they waited, the world came to them, and meanwhile 'their little home came to seem a sort of inseparable body of their life.' She always calls it 'our little home'—there never was the least pretentiousness about Natalie. She wrote once that Mr. Maddox would never corner a market, she knew; *that* wasn't his claim on love. She always refers to him with that note of modest affection and pride. Just what his claim is she doesn't mention. Natalie Palmer would no more discuss her husband than an

illness. 'And then, of course,' she added, 'we have had to break up our investments into a good many *small ventures!*' —six of them there were at that time, and unfailing humor and poetry for every addition to the tribe. She writes entirely without stress; evidently there's neither lack nor luxury. Can't you just tell how Natalie Palmer would live—simple, dainty? Do you remember how beautiful her hands were? And how little her head was for her height and large frame? The way she fluffed her yellow hair made the head look bigger, but the face smaller still."

"And so she's as romantically pious as ever!" Mrs. Talcott remembered.

"More so. It has grown on her, and rather surprisingly to me. Natalie always was the most literal Gospel Christian I ever knew. You know what I mean. My husband is a Pauline Christian, and my father-in-law is an Old Testament Christian, and I'm a modern evolution of one. But Natalie incarnates the Beatitudes. At the same time she has a great deal of human passion and ideality. And religion doesn't as a rule become a mania with people whose lives are so happy as hers. Positively, her religion at times has the ecstasy of the nun or martyr. The mystical doctrine of the Fatherhood and Brotherhood of God is to her as literal and personal a relation as it ever was to the most primitive mind. And unconsciously, in her polytheistic monotheism, the idea of the personality of the Son of Man has taken precedence of the other conceptions of God, so that *the Christ* has become her particular patron deity. She writes of HIM in the intimate, tender way other women speak of their husbands, and with none of the reserves about the spiritual relation that a woman like her has about the earthly. I used to be confused by some of her references to HIM. But Mr. Maddox, it seems, is always respectfully and admiringly *Mr. Maddox*. It is her God who is in perfection all the relations the most perfect human being could be only partially, defectively—Lover, Friend, Master. . . . With her temperament she was bound, I suppose, to be a little disappointed even in the best, and equally bound to love and adore something. So, in spite of a happy marriage, she has gotten up—how shall I express it?—a love affair with God. And as HE is simply the ideal man, her

ideal and pattern, and as she considers love the highest human attribute, HE is personified love, and her whole aim is to be all pity, self-sacrifice, forgiveness. How I run on! I have been so interested in it. The conductor is motioning us. Is this where we get off? It *is* suburbs."

The two women were left on a corner, looking up an unshaded and unpaved street, with two irregular rows of vacant lots and cottages—working-men's cottages—facing each other across it. The street looked like a child's mouth before the first set of teeth is completely deposed or the second installed.

"I declare, he has put us down at the wrong place!" Mrs. Hungerford was disgusted.

But Mrs. Talcott looked at the lamp-post. "M Street." The first few houses were not numbered. "3410, 3418." A vacant lot, and, next, a cottage older than the rest, of the country style, and blotched with gray and peeling whitewash.

"It can't be—!" Mrs. Hungerford stopped short.

Half the palings were off the dingy fence. The board-walk was loose and treacherous. The broken gate hung half open. And in a yard greened in spots by clumps of weeds a cherub and a puppy wrestled over a tin can.

"Young man, who lives here?" Mrs. Talcott called.

The boy was absorbed, but her voice brought to the cottage door a girl of eighteen or so, a tall, slight girl, with a small head and a little face in a mist of fair hair.

"Natalie!" The girl's look was acknowledgment and interrogation. "Natalie Palmer!"

"Oh no," she began; then, "Oh, are you looking for my mother, Mrs. Maddox? Oh, come in. Muddie, here are two old friends of yours who took me for you!" Her voice was a crescendo of laughter.

The door led directly into the front room, and Mrs. Hungerford, following, stupid with bewilderment, caught her patent-leather toe in a snag in a strip of rag carpet across the sill. Natalie's steadying hand was quick, but her laughter ended abruptly in a sharp staccato.

For a moment there was no sound in the room except the purr of Mrs. Talcott's silk skirts as she stepped in.

From an old horse-hair arm-chair, one of whose legs was a stick of kindling-wood, rose a long, thin figure in a purple

print wrapper, from which the print was mostly obliterated. The little face was too little, shrunken; the light hair scant and faded; the body under the full dress seemed loose and bony. But there was distinction in the mere movement with which she rose and turned. Then she saw them. "Why, Nellie Hungerford!" She literally swept across to her motionless caller and caught her up. "Nellie! You darling!" Laughter and tears were in the voice. She gave a more ceremonious but no less gracious hand to Anne Talcott. "When did you two come to B—? Why didn't you let me know? How did you find me? Come, sit down and *talk*. Take that rocker, Nellie. *Careful!*" Warning and amusement. "It has a trick of tilting back too far," which Mrs. Hungerford had discovered. "It's a mischievous tease, but all what my boys would call a 'bluff'—or is it a 'muff'? I can't learn this modern slang. Natalie, bring your bed-pillow for Mrs. Talcott. This soap-box isn't comfortable without." Natalie came, with downcast eyes and inexpressive face.

Mrs. Maddox herself resumed the arm-chair cautiously. And therein is the reason why she resumed the apparently best seat. But she would no more have thought of explaining that than of publicly reproving the children. Now she looked at her guests with pleasure welling over her face. "You dear girls! This is sweet of you. Did you have trouble finding me? *We* feel in the very heart of the city now. When we moved here there wasn't another house in sight, and nothing could have been prettier than these prairie-like commons early on a spring morning when the mist and sunlight and tender green gave an effect like the down on a plum. There's always a bloom on the world if one looks. In summer the prettiest time used to be following an afternoon thunder-storm, when the sun was low and the light came level through the wet grass." She drooped in her chair, her body seemed to collapse. She sat gazing through the window on the barrenness of nature and the crudeness of man with eyes from which looked that unfailing wonder which is the secret of immortal youth. The two strangers looked at her and her surroundings with different expressions. "Then in the fall there's a red-brown grass; a pest to the farmers, they say; and the cattle won't touch it; but it's a pretty impressionistic bit for us. And in

winter our snow was white and smooth much longer than in town. But, of course," she recalled herself, "now we have the human interest to watch."

"There were no trees, even, when you first came?" Mrs. Talcott exclaimed.

"No, we always had a full sweep of God's fields and sky."

"And sun and wind," Mrs. Talcott added, mentally.

Mrs. Maddox pulled her body together and up. "You won't mind my going on with my knitting? A cotton wash-rag." She held it up gayly. "A dealer in the city gives me fifty cents a dozen for them. And I am so glad to do what I can to help in my spare time." Mrs. Hungerford was still looking out of the window, at which the shade was torn half across, and which framed the small Olympian wrestler in the yard, through whose torn and buttonless shirtwaist showed patches of browned skin and whiter recesses. Mrs. Maddox followed her glance, and laughed softly. "You're right. I never have had much spare time. But now that I'm obliged to keep still—" She hesitated with a sort of maidenliness at once embarrassed and reticent. "I will never be able to be very active again," she explained, and passed on in unchallengeable privacy. "So it's fortunate I can add my little grain of sand so easily. It's very sweet to me to be able to help. Mr. Maddox"—she spoke the name as if "it meant, not much, indeed, but something"—"Mr. Maddox has a harder infirmity than mine to bear, inherited and increasing. And, besides, it is not always so simple as it sounds for a man to get the work he will—can do." She ran on happily, like a child talking to herself. "I don't know any more beautiful mission for a woman than to fulfil the original destiny that the Master assigned her, being a helpmeet. Wash-rags seem rather trifling, I admit," she smiled. "But nothing is trifling." And she kept on smiling absently at the work in her hands—long hands, thin now to boniness, hardened and drawn, but unpervertibly shapely and psychic.

A clattering of the board-walk announced otherwise noiseless footsteps, and a barefoot boy of twelve or thirteen swung into the doorway and stopped short, checking so a small avalanche of cherub and puppy following. "Boys!" cautioned the mother, the gentlest reproach with laughter in it. Off came

both hats. "Down Rex! down!—We are considering rechristening the dog," she told her guests. "He's at the destructive age, and, as Natalie said the other day, there are too many wrecks in the house." Did she know she was skimming dangerous ice over deep water? Was she unconscious of double meaning? or so conscious she chose this way of italicizing the meaning she preferred? "Speak to mother's friends, boys." They came across, embarrassed but sturdy. The cherub was an animated Raphael Bambino; the face of the elder, too, still kept the endearing chubbiness of babyhood, though the body was spindling into meagre youth. "This is Mrs. Hungerford and Mrs. Talcott. And this is Dan—" She drew the newcomer towards her, but he twisted in her arm so that her lips found only an ear-tip, and slipped free—"Dan, who is at once too old and too young for kisses." She smiled, but looked at him keenly. And Mrs. Talcott reflected that she would not have needed to prostitute the forms of affection to detect the cigarettes. "And this is Harry, my baby. Harry is past four, and my baby. Natalie was over seventeen before I had a baby older than two. It makes one's arms feel empty." Harry did not evade the arm. He leaned against her, rubbing her cheek with his in answer to the lingering wistfulness of her touch on his curls. "There's nothing in life so sweet as a baby, is there?"

But this one had something on his mind. He squirmed around and put his mouth to her ear for a stage whisper. "Muddie, I'm hungry."

"Bless his heart. Of course he is. It must be luncheon-time. Natalie?—No, Nellie, you and Anne are not going to get off now. We don't make a bit of difference for guests. And they are always welcome to what we have. You came too far and got here too late to go right away. We haven't talked at all.—Run along with Natalie, son, and set the table for her. And, Harry, ring the bell out front for the girls; they are all somewhere in the neighborhood. Mr. Maddox," she explained, with that dignity with which she always spoke his name, "is seldom home to luncheon. And my seventeen-year-old Will, and Dave, who comes next to him, are in business, and take their sandwiches with them. Natalie's in an office, too, you know—"

"I remember you wrote several times about her taking a business course," Mrs. Hungerford murmured, "because you thought every girl should be equipped for self-help."

"Oh, I think so, indeed. And it's one of the most glorious gains of the nineteenth century that women *can*. In our day there was nothing for us but to be teachers or companions or dependants, or"—Her face rippled with the mere shimmer of humor that was so frequent in it—"or, in an emergency, to knit wash-rags. My three little daughters are in the Manual Training School. Natalie's having her vacation"—She remembered the thread of her story—"and, like the dear girl she is, she has spent it here with me, giving me a vacation and house-cleaning."

"I thought I smelled kerosene," Mrs. Talcott said.

Mrs. Hungerford looked at her warningly, but Mrs. Maddox acknowledged it pleasantly. "Yes, hasn't house-cleaning a nice, fresh odor?—How slow Natalie is!—I have let her spend her holiday so because I know the best rest is simply change of occupation; and I never did think either business or college should be allowed to interfere with domestic training. After all, home-making is the woman's chief work, and I want my daughters to have every opportunity to develop the talent.—Oh, ready?—Just come through, girls. This is my room, and this the boys'." She led, with the flowing grace of her faded purple, and indicated the rooms like the custodian of a palace. "We eat in the kitchen. It saves steps where one has to take and count all one's own.—And here are Julie, and Madge, and Bess, whom you haven't seen."

Mrs. Hungerford took each shy, courteous little hand, and stood looking around the circle of faces. "Natalie," she said, "where did you get these children? You never were pretty, and Mr. Maddox's picture. . . ."

Mrs. Maddox turned on her such a look as Moses might have brought from the Mount. "Isn't it a marvel? When I was first married I didn't dare hope for even one child; I couldn't believe myself good enough to be trusted so by the Children's Friend." Mrs. Talcott, remembering how and where the great mass of humanity comes into the world, gasped. "Do you know, I like to fancy that sometimes the Redeemer gives the angels a chance to be incarnated, and, by

living the human life, to know the enrichment of temptation and sorrow, the rapture of salvation."

Mrs. Hungerford found herself still holding Harry's warm little fist.

"Do you think I'm a syrup, too?" he asked, suddenly, in his bubbling, baby voice.

"A what, dear?"

"A syrup."

Mrs. Hungerford looked to the mother, who looked to the child.

"A lady said I was, the other day; she said we all were; she said we were *just too sweet!*"

"Evidently a new celestial order," Mrs. Talcott commented, "a hybrid, a cross between a seraph and a cherub. Your angels are very slightly disguised, Natalie."

It was a kitchen-table covered with brown oil-cloth blotched with stains and heat-rings. "Oh, we *do* make some difference for guests, it seems." Mrs. Maddox smiled festively over the board. In the centre was a tumbler of field daisies. "Did Harry pick them while we waited? Thank you, son. Posies on the table and posies all around. Will you ask the blessing, Nellie?—Anne?" Neither ventured, so the sweet voice of the hostess invited the Dearest of All Friends to be their Guest, as always, and to supply their spirits as their bodies.

Then Natalie, with a pot from the stove, went from plate to plate, scooping out for each, with a long-handled iron spoon, a mound of mushy, gray rice. The butter was rancid, the cistern water lukewarm and slightly acrid, the bread like dried mortar. "Dan's bread," his mother said, proudly. "I congratulate you, son." And Dan looked as if he wished she wouldn't. "Dan does all he can to help mother, especially when Natalie is not here. He has made it only a few times, and it isn't so light as it will be when he gets his hand in thoroughly. But isn't it splendid for an amateur? He has never had a bit of instruction; is just learning from a newspaper recipe. It's an accomplishment I never could boast; but every house ought to make its own bread—then you know what you're getting."

There was nothing more on the table except a yellow

crock of stewed dried apples. Oh yes, one thing more. "Tea for luncheon?" Mrs. Maddox smiled indulgently. "The housekeeper is generous to-day, isn't she, children?" The children dimpled, but Natalie drew her brows together and shook her head at her mother. "This is a real tea-party. We live very simply"—She mentioned it as a casual bit of information —"and I understand that rice is the most nutritious as well as inexpensive food for the little folks."

At the head of the table she sat overlooking the company delicately aglow with hospitality and satisfaction. "I don't know when anything has given me more pleasure. If only Mr. Maddox and the boys were here. I would so love you all to know one another." She did the honors with all the air of apples of gold and *pitchers* of silver. When Harry called for "more," Natalie started to get up, but her mother, sitting with her back to the stove, turned and reached for the pot, evidently according to custom, and reheaped the outheld plate. "I have learned to use all the labor-saving devices." It was merely a matter of remark, not of apology. "I've never been very strong, you know, and I had, of course, first of all to do the work cut out for me. The Head always gives us strength for everything He requires of us, only He expects us to have common-sense enough to know that He doesn't require of us what He hasn't given us strength to do. So the children came first as his direct assignment—and favor." She never looked at them that an exquisite tenderness did not touch eyes and lips. "Mr. Maddox"—That tone as usual that made him in your thought august—"had almost as close a claim, as the choice into which He led, or which He at least allowed. Then the house—" She looked around in tranquil amusement. "It looks as if it had come last, doesn't it? Each day I do all I can; I can't do more. I used to make a great deal of fuss about perfection in material things, but that was when I had a mother and sister to fuss at and let do the rest. I care just as much now, but when it all fell on me and I realized my limitations, I had to choose the most important things—and they are not the material. And I had to learn not to let what went undone jar me, nor to be discouraged. It's all part of the Plan."

How much method was there in her simplicity? Mrs. Tal-

cott wondered. She rippled on, as limpid as a shallow stream, with both lights and shadows subdued. Her guests rose to the occasion. They talked of old friends and old times, Mrs. Maddox with unaffected gayety, Mrs. Talcott with laughter it was hard to keep in bounds, Mrs. Hungerford with smiles it was hard to keep from tears.

Mrs. Hungerford noticed that her old chum ate nothing, hardly even made pretence. Once she caught Natalie's eyes on her mother from the other end of the table, solicitous and inquiring. This time it was the mother who shook her head, and she smiled. But again, when the table was particularly lively, Mrs. Hungerford saw the hands clinch in the lap until the knuckles whitened.

"Natalie, you're in pain," she cried.

Instantly the loose, bony body straightened to its height. "Oh, a trifle. I have it now and then." An involuntary twinge contracted the fingers again.

"Do you know what the trouble is? Are you having proper attention? Are—?" Then at something in her hostess's look, suddenly Mrs. Hungerford feared to tread.

But Mrs. Talcott rushed in. "Surely, with so many busy bees in the hive—"

Was it only a sense of futility that checked her on the threshold, or was it a glimpse that arrested her with wonder?

"You must remember," Mrs. Maddox replied, patiently, since she *must* speak of the distasteful subject, "that a growing family means growing needs. The type-writer and the weaver"—The wonted flicker across her face—"can cast in their last farthing. But a man has inevitable expenses to keep his place among men, and the boys have their friends and must do their share with them. I wouldn't rob them of their youth." Mrs. Talcott looked at Natalie's straightened lips and narrow shoulders and wondered about *her* friends and *her* youth. "Now don't grudge me my little aches. It's the generations of them that have spared us women the temptations of hot blood and have—made—a Natalie possible." She smiled gratitude and petition at her daughter, and Natalie gave her one tremulous, retreating glimpse of wet eyes that invalidated the rebel mouth. "As for my lacks, they are oppor-

tunities from a loving Teacher to grow in HIS likeness. Do you remember Clara Hughes' invalid mother—?"

The table grew lively again. Now and then the children chirped in. Rex was greedy and intrusive; so much so, in fact, that at last Mrs. Maddox gave judgment. "You'll have to put him out, Harry, dear." The child's face clouded; there was one look of appeal; then obedience; his lip trembled, but there was no pouting. And Rex seemed equally mystified and subdued by such unusual suppression. The children were fearless without being forward, obedient without constraint. They seemed to run by a long tether, light as a strand of cobweb, but live as an electric wire, vibrant to the gentlest signal of look, gesture, intonation.

They grew restless at the prolonged reminiscences of their elders, and fell to fidgeting and whispering.

"To be sure," Mrs. Maddox remembered, "we can finish our talk outside. Let's set the young people free." At the word five pairs of bare feet slipped to the floor and stood. The guests rose, following their hostess, and, as they looked inquiringly, all the voices joined in a trailing attempt at a tuneful grace. Then the bare feet scampered to the sink, where napkinless mouths and fingers were washed. And they pelted out-of-doors.

"What lovely children!" Mrs. Hungerford breathed. The mother looked after them with visionary eyes. "Are they always like that?"

"We make no difference for guests," she reminded her.

"And all of them?"

Modesty hesitated. "Oh, the Giver of all Good Things has been very generous in both quantity and quality." She turned in going through the door to see Dan's hand in the match-box. "Son," she said, in a low tone, "remember, in trying to imitate father and brother, that there is a difference between the mannerisms and the man."

Mrs. Talcott, too, was observing him. "Does he look like his father, Natalie?" she asked. "I notice in Julie, too, the same features beginning to develop, not yours. Can you see the resemblance?"

"Features!" Mrs. Hungerford expostulated. "Resemblance! They seem more like the children of your spirit, Na-

talie, than of your body. And you—no 'don'ts,' no nagging, no argument, no 'control'; simply response. How do you accomplish so much without letting the machinery show?"

"Oh, it's love that makes the wheels go 'round, and that oils them, too," Mrs. Maddox smiled, then sobered. "Love rules the world." She fell to musing. "Only by love can we succeed or conquer, cure or save. HE *is* love—love so strong that HE gave His whole life for the sinner; condemning the sin, but loving the sinner."

A shambling step sounded on the plank-walk. Did a shadow "darken her face with white"? "It's Mr. Maddox!" she said, brightly, and crossed to a big man leaning in the doorway with one hand on the jamb; a big man, with broad shoulders, and a dull face thatched by sullen brows and eyes. "Dan, dear, here are two old school-friends of mine; Mrs.—"

He shoved her aside, and lurched through the room so close to Mrs. Talcott that his foot dragged her skirt. An unmistakable stale, sourish odor drifted after him.

Natalie had sprung to her feet; she stood rigid, bent forward, listening, ready, even after the door of the next room slammed behind him.

The two strangers shrank and froze. For a moment the Gorgon head turned them all to stone.

Then Mrs. Maddox crossed to her seat with her regal deliberation. "I am sure you will not be offended," she said, gently. "Mr. Maddox's infirmity makes him strange at times. Poor Dan!" Then, her face lit with transfiguring sweetness and light, "Dear Dan!"

Abruptly in the next room rose sounds of demolition. And instantly the tense bow of Natalie shot her like an arrow to the door.

"Yes, dear, go. He must be dizzy again. See if you can help him."

Two pairs of big eyes appeared in the outer doorway—or, rather, three pairs and one drooping tail. "What is it, boys? You don't think it's supper-time already, do you? Go play till then."

Dan turned off with a bit of swagger, and, as Rex leaped on him, he pushed him aside, lurched a step or two, then, with a whoop, turned to romp. But Harry ran across to his mother

and flung a passionate arm around her. "Nobody shall hurt my muddie!"

For the second time the hands clutched each other till they whitened. She caught him up. "Muddie's knight." Then she laughed. "What a brave man!" Then, gravely: "No one *can* hurt muddie, dear. HE is here."

The callers exchanged glances.

But at sight of it Mrs. Maddox expanded again in that way peculiar to her. "You were telling me about Lillie Weatherford," she reminded them, ignoring the next room. "Did you say she was happy in her marriage?"

In Mrs. Hungerford the essence of friendship answered to meet that call with whatever compliance or evasion would gratify it most. She signalled *no* to Mrs. Talcott. But when it came to speech she stammered. "I have—always—thought so." This was no day for assurance.

"She was a girl of whom I would have expected it. Happiness is an art, you know, and a happy marriage a life work." She took up her knitting, and voice and hands ran on smoothly. "In spite of this advantage or that misfortune, married or unmarried, happiness is an accomplishment, and depends on the individual. You hear people talk of this or that ruining their dispositions. Why, that's the test of a disposition, its proof of any value. Something is as wrong with the person himself as with circumstances if they can annoy and antagonize. One must learn to let evil slide off, and unfailingly to radiate love." Her work dropped absently. " 'Go rather unto the lost sheep of the house of Israel.' When effort and argument only make the offender more set"—Her curious mixture of simplicity and secretiveness again, the obsession, the oblivious bravado of the child playing with fire—"there is nothing more but to go on loving and waiting, as HE does. Let the past go; trust the future—"

"And accept the present?" Mrs. Talcott challenged her.

But Natalie was coming from the next room. The noise had quieted. She came out straight and stern. Her mother looked at her with an affectionate smile. "He's resting? Poor father! There, dear, don't fret. He'll be better in the morning. All things work together for good."

"Don't you suppose we're expected to help along?" said the girl.

"Oh, we must help, surely; never give up, never lose patience, and never worry."

"Somebody has to do the worrying, mother." Then she ran across to her with little sounds of repentance and protection. "But not you, muddie. You've done your share, goodness knows. If you had fretted besides, where would our sweetness have come from? You're a hero, mother, and a martyr! But oh, do you think anything is any good without the truth?"

And now Mrs. Talcott would go.

Their hostess swept her royal rags to the gate with them, full of blithe appreciation of the day and warm invitation for future ones. She stood smiling after them, even through their wait on the corner. She waved the symbolic wash-rag as they boarded the car. Then she went in and shut the door.

It was some time before the travellers spoke.

At last Mrs. Talcott shrugged her shoulders uncomfortably. "Well, I don't know but that she'd drive me to drink, too. Devout, he was, did you say? Alas, yes: after the decline of the Cæsars, the Middle Ages; with the Götterdämmerung, savagery; on the failure of the throne of wisdom and grace, the French Revolution.

"Well, at least, Natalie won't make such a marriage."

"Oh, Natalie, poor child, will probably make no marriage at all. But oh, the exquisite Natalie Palmer! 'Mr. Maddox will never corner a market, I know; that isn't his claim on love.' 'Just what his claim is—' "

"I know now." Mrs. Hungerford was crying behind her veil.

"What? The claim of a cancer that you can't get away from, and so conceal, and ignore, or draw high moral conclusions from?"

"It goes even deeper than that. Don't, don't be satirical. How can you? Don't you understand?"

Mrs. Talcott laughed and groaned. "Oh yes, I understand perfectly. 'A tie as indissoluble as that between Creator and creature.' 'Go rather unto the lost sheep of the house of Israel.' It's her idea of the attitude of God."

"Well," Mrs. Hungerford sighed, "there's one comfort in it, it just shows what religion can do for one, make of one."

"*Do for one,* yes," Mrs. Talcott agreed, "*but make of one?* It seems to me the individual makes his religion more than the religion makes the individual. Nevertheless"—Her hand dropped kindly to her old friend's—" 'Nevertheless, do not pity (her) too much.' " Indeed, is she the one to be pitied? Is she to be pitied at all?—with achievement on her brow and her assumption in sight! Pity?

" 'Who holds by Thee hath heaven in fee
To gild his dross thereby,
And knowledge sure that he endure
A child until he die—' "

HARRISON ROBERTSON

[1856—]

E. POLK JOHNSON

THOSE who know him best find it impossible to class Harrison Robertson other than with the young men of the literary world, not alone because of his buoyant youthfulness, but because of the warm sympathy pervading his work for all that pertains to youth. He is no longer so young as when, in the early 'eighties, he first appeared in *The Century* and in *Harper's Magazine* in lighter and pleasing vein. That these slight poems were of more than passing merit is attested by the fact that they often find a place in the newspapers of to-day.

Mr. Robertson was born in Murfreesboro, Tennessee, January 16, 1856. He received his education at Union University, and subsequently studied law, but never practiced it, being impelled by an irresistible force to follow other pursuits. "We do but row while we are steered by Fate." In 1878, from being an occasional contributor to its columns, he became a member of the editorial staff of the Louisville *Courier-Journal,* with which newspaper he has since had a continuous and responsible connection. During the frequent and protracted absences of Mr. Henry Watterson, the distinguished editor of the *Courier-Journal,* Mr. Robertson assumes complete charge of its editorial policy and columns, the engrossing demands of which leave but little leisure for purely literary pursuits. It was in the midst of demands like these that Mr. Robertson wrote "How the Derby Was Won," which appeared in *Scribner's Magazine,* in 1889, and at once created a sensation, as it gave sure promise that a new name was to be added to the list of successful writers. This short sketch was so perfect as to give the reader an idea that he was a real spectator of the race. It stands at the very head of the list of racing stories.

Following in quick succession came his extended efforts, viz.: 'If I Were a Man,' 'Red Blood and Blue,' 'The Inlander,' 'The Opponents,' and later the first and almost the only good automobile story, 'The Pink Typhoon,' which in its merry brightness showed the quick insight of the practical writer who knew the ground beneath his feet and felt his footing sure.

Mr. Robertson follows in no man's footsteps. He marks out his

own paths and treads them lightly and fearlessly. He has been appreciatively hailed as "distinctly the novelist of the New South," but Mr. Robertson would be the first to disclaim this. There are no sectional limitations to his art. He writes of the South because he is of the South, because he knows it well and loves it; but his appeal is to the intellectual world unbounded by sectional or political lines. His mental horizon is so broad, his methods of thought and expression so genial and truthful, that all the world of thought and action may be and is attracted to him. His is a truthful pen and a fearless one, going in a dramatic and romantic spirit to the very root of things. In "If I Were a Man" he left the old paths and gave to the semi-political novel a new status and a better one than it had before enjoyed. The dignified *Forum* welcomed the story as "a contribution of grave interest." In "Red Blood and Blue" he abandoned the political field, finding his theme amid other developments, social and industrial, and brought to the front the later heroes of the South who are working out its ultimate triumphant destiny as bravely and gloriously as their fathers fought its battles on other and sterner fields. "The Inlander" shows us a man originating amid the spirit of the South of ante-bellum days, but coming finally, through travail of heart and mind, yet triumphantly, to the actualities of to-day.

Mr. Robertson has written all his stories in the midst of the engrossing cares of a busy journalist. There has been no time of leisure in which to separate himself from the newspaper work of the day—and ofttimes the night—and to devote himself exclusively to the writing of any one of his productions. Never more than two hours at a time have been given to story-writing. Perhaps it is because of this that he has perfected his work. Having so little time at his disposal, he has carefully husbanded every moment; made every one count, and has found the precise words wanted, and only those, using them to express his thought in succinct form. In reading his novels one finds few superfluous words. His characters—and there are never too many of them—are living beings, whom one seems to know personally; there is nothing superhuman about them. As we put aside one of his books, it is with the spirit of saying "good-night" as to one's friends, confident of a cheery "good-morning" when another day has come.

Mr. Robertson's descriptive power is true, and possibly it is his greatest power—witness that stirring short story, "How the Derby Was Won." The reader sees the green fields and the blue-tinted hills in the far distance; the mighty outpouring of the populace; the crowded race-course. One cannot read this stirring story without the feeling that it is the work of a master's hand and heart. After reading the story, a critic wrote of the author these words: "In

descriptive powers there is no American writer to-day who is Harrison Robertson's superior. He is vividly graphic, tremendously forcible, exquisitely finished, as the occasion may require. He thrills with the intensity of his dramatic scenes, and charms with the beauty of his nature pictures. And yet, over all of his work is the restraint which distinguishes the achieved result from the overleaping effort." No word of this panegyric but is due the modest man who, going quietly about his tasks, has added another name to the list of younger writers who are working out the literary problem of the moment. Harrison Robertson has only begun his part of the great task. He will go far.

E. Polk Johnson

BIBLIOGRAPHY

If I Were a Man. Charles Scribner's Sons, 1899.
Red Blood and Blue. Charles Scribner's Sons, 1900.
The Inlander. Charles Scribner's Sons, 1901.
The Opponents. Charles Scribner's Sons, 1902.
The Pink Typhoon. Charles Scribner's Sons, 1906.
How the Derby Was Won. *Scribner's Magazine,* August, 1889.
The Rich Miss Girard. *Scribner's Magazine,* September, 1893.
Drummed Out. *Scribner's Magazine,* October, 1898.
The Rivals of Mr. Kincannon. *Scribner's Magazine,* October, 1907.
Coquette. *The Century Magazine.*
Two Triolets. *The Century Magazine.*
Aprille. *Harper's Magazine.*
Perspectives. *Harper's Magazine.*
An Idle Poet. *Harper's Magazine.*
Kentucky Philosophy. *Harper's Magazine.*

YABOO WINS THE RACE

From "How the Derby Was Won." *Scribner's Magazine*, August, 1889.

About two weeks before the date fixed for the Derby, Gid rode over to Uncle Lije's to look at Yaboo, and just before reaching the gate into the old trainer's domain, he saw two female figures on horseback ride through it and gallop off down the road. One of them he recognized as Jean; but the fact that she had visited Uncle Lije or Aunt Polly was in no way surprising to him, for he knew that those two worthies, who considered themselves members in good standing of the Heath family, enjoyed the special favor of the Major and his daughter, and that the latter had succeeded to the place in Uncle Lije's affections which perhaps only the sister of "Marse Tom" could have filled.

As the two figures on horseback disappeared behind a green swell of the undulating meadow that swept the smooth turnpike out of view Gid withdrew his eyes from that point of the landscape, and turning through the gate, rode around to the stables, where he found Uncle Lije in the act of removing a side-saddle from the back of Yaboo. The old trainer cast a somewhat apprehensive glance at Gid, and shaking his head wisely and grinning in a manner not to be explained by any evident provocation, hastened to say, before Gid had an opportunity to speak himself:

"He's comin' on, Mr. Gid, he's comin' on; wuked a mile dis mawnin' wid his shoes on in '47. De ole Bonnie Scotlan' blood begins to warm up, I tell you! Ef he keeps on disaway dey'll hear fum us in dat Derby yit, en Huguenot he gotter be feelin' lak hisse'f ef he wanter have a walk-over."

"But why have you had that side-saddle on him?" Gid asked, with more dignity than usually characterized his conversation with Uncle Lije.

"Oh, dat ain't gwiner do no harm," evasively.

"Uncle Lije, one of those ladies who left here a few minutes ago has been riding Yaboo!"

"Well, dat don't mek no diffunce," the old negro replied, uneasily. "Alec Saffel he wuz sick dis mawnin', en Miss Jean she happen to come by, en she took it into her head she wanter

breeze Yaboo 'roun' de track, en long's Yaboo need de wuk, en long's Miss Jean she alluz could do mo' wid dat hawse den any yuther livin' soul, not scusin' Alec Saffel hisse'f, I s'posed I mout ez well let her have her way."

As he thought of Jean Heath riding that fiendish brute, Gid for the first time in his life burned with anger against Uncle Lije. Taking the saddle from the ground, he tossed it with some vehemence under the shed, enjoining Uncle Lije that he was never, upon penalty of having the horse shot, to allow Miss Heath to touch Yaboo again.

"Yes, suh," he answered in bewilderment; "but," he added, under his breath, as he turned to throw a blanket over Yaboo, "I'd ruther be hamstrung den tell Honey dat."

It was Derby day in Kentucky. For weeks past its approach had been the incentive to more comment than any other day on the calendar, Christmas alone perhaps excepted. For months even the papers had devoted a liberal portion of their space to daily discussions of the horses which might be expected to start in the Derby and their relative chances of winning it. This space had gradually increased as the day drew nearer, until for a fortnight immediately preceding its dawn the Derby gossip had been the most conspicuous feature of the local columns of the Louisville press, while there had been no important journal throughout the country which had not kept its readers informed by telegraph of all the news that could be gleaned concerning the race. Speculation about it was general, even among those who knew nothing of the thoroughbred and cared nothing for the sport.

It was a strong evidence of the hold this race has upon the Kentuckians that this spring, when it was conceded on all sides that it would be a "gift" to Huguenot, the lack of the usual element of uncertainty could not degrade Derby day from its preëminence in popular interest. At that time the Kentucky Derby was not only the first of the great regular events of the American turf, but it was more coveted by horsemen than any other prize of the year. In it the prides of the Bluegrass met on equal terms the giants of the Pacific slope and the choicest of the Eastern three-year-olds, and five minutes after the struggle was over the conqueror was worth to his owner a respect-

able fortune; for in addition to the five or six thousand dollars which the stake was worth, the winner also usually won with the stake that which was of far greater value, the reputation of being the best colt of his age this side of England.

To-day all roads in some way connected with Louisville. The Bluegrass plateau was virtually depopulated. The Legislature had adjourned for the occasion and come down from Frankfort the night before, followed by the Governor and the rest of the State officers. Tennessee, Indiana, Ohio, to say nothing of other more distant sections of the country, were largely represented by crowds of visitors that overflowed the hotels and filled the lean maws of the boarding-houses. It was a holiday in the city; many of the shops and stores were closed; others dozed with one door open, while some clerk, less fortunate than his fellows, kept lonely vigil within. The May sun never shone with more exhilarating splendor, and by twelve o'clock the avenues leading to the race-course at Churchill Downs began to assume an unwonted animation. The street-cars were packed with people, and an unusual number of vehicles rolled over the thoroughfares. By two o'clock the principal boulevard leading to the Downs was a vivid panorama of speeding roadsters and whirring wheels, the gala procession swelled by every conveyance that could be pressed into service.

At Churchill Downs everything had been put in readiness for this long expected afternoon. Club-house and grand-stand were jauntily repainted; the hedges were primly trimmed; the lawns and flower-beds were as freshly and geometrically irreproachable as nature and man could make them; the field around which the race-course winds was one great eclipse of wimpling bluegrass; while the course itself had been cudgelled and cozzened into a smooth and soft elasticity whose very touch beneath his hoofs would make the veriest "plug" feel for the moment as if all the blood of all Arabia bounded in his veins.

By half-past two, when the first race was called, the grand-stand was thronged; the overflowing crowd filled the grounds about it, and the grass of the field was crushed and hidden from sight beneath the feet of thousands, who stood in the sun, and joked and laughed and scuffled, waiting for the running of the great race.

Gid Bronxon had decided to start Yaboo in the Derby, although he had no real hope of beating Huguenot, whom he knew to be in excellent condition. But there is always a possibility that some accident may befall the best of horses; and, besides, it would be worth something to anybody's colt to run as well as second to Huguenot, as Uncle Lije had more than once insisted. Young Bronxon did not begrudge Huguenot his coming triumph; he was too genuine an admirer of fleetness and gameness in a thoroughbred not to admire at all times his triumph honestly won. Nevertheless, he could not help feeling somewhat rebellious against his untoward fate that he should be prevented from winning this race, which would mean so much to him, by the superiority of a horse whose owner was, of all men, Casey Pallam, the fortune-favored young Tennessean, who, if report was reliable, was no surer of winning the Derby than he was of winning Jean Heath herself.

The first race was a three-quarter-mile dash, with nearly a score of contestants, whose coyness and fretfulness at the post were watched with impatience by the spectators, who resented anything that would delay the principal race of the day. A start was at last made, with every jockey fighting for the lead; and as they turned into the homestretch one of the horses was seen to fall, and immediately afterward another tumbled over him. As the second went down, Gid Bronxon, who was watching the race through a pair of field-glasses, uttered a slight exclamation and hastened toward the scene of the accident. The two fallen horses were quickly on their feet, none the worse for their misadventure, and one of the jockeys also sprang up, laughingly brushing the dust from his gorgeously colored jacket; but the other rider lay where he had been thrown, and as Gid came up he saw that the boy was, as he had thought, Alec Saffel. A physician, who was not hard to find in the crowd which had hurried to the spot, declared that the little fellow had suffered no injury more serious than the dislocation of a shoulder. Gid had him taken to the club-house and properly cared for; and then walked out listlessly on the lawn, his hands aimlessly in his pockets and his eyes fixed vacuously on the variegated foliage of the plants that shaped a jockey's cap and saddle at his feet. His last chance of winning the Derby, insignificant as it had been, had gone, for young Saffel's mishap

would prevent him riding Yaboo, and even if another good jockey could be secured at that late hour, it was extremely improbable that anyone unfamiliar with the horse would be able to manage him.

Uncle Lije came slowly forward, looking so lugubrious that Gid, who was not wearing a very cheerful expression himself, could not repress a smile. "Well, Mr. Gid," forlornly, "luck's gone agin us."

"It seems so, Uncle Lije."

"I knowed sumpn bad wus gwiner happen 'fo night, case I tied one shoe 'fo I put on tother dis mawnin, en I ain't nurver seed dat sign miss yit."

"Well, we'll have to withdraw Yaboo and save him for some other day. Alec will be all right before the meeting is over, I reckon," Gid answered, with some attempt at consolation.

"We gotter try fer de Derby anyhow," Uncle Lije maintained. "Dat race wuff mo' to us den all de res' Yaboo kin run in de whole meetin'—you know dat widout me tellin' you, Mr. Gid. So I done got dis-yere boy Whitlock to ride him, stidder Alec. We hatter take our chances, Mr. Gid, dough de Lawd knows dey mighty slim shakes. Alec Saffel de onles boy yit ever could do anything wid dat Yaboo."

Gid authorized Uncle Lije to do whatever he thought best, and then made his way absently to a seat high up in the grandstand. There he sat until after the second race, with his head bared gratefully to the breeze, and his eyes directed toward the misty billows of the Indiana hills. And as he gazed at them they seemed, as from a majestic amphitheatre, to look down with exalted indifference upon this paltry scene of excitement and contention about him; and catching something of the spirit of their philosophical serenity, he told himself that a man was a fool who, with no more resources than his, ventured upon the turf with the expectation of keeping his head above it. Reaching this sagacious conclusion, he diverted his eyes from the Indiana hills to a certain spot in the ladies' section of the grandstand, where Jean Heath and her aunt were sitting.

This change of view did not result in reflections that were particularly profitable or pleasing, for perhaps the most definite impressions which he received were, that the bonnet of Jean's

aunt was aggressively old-fashioned as she sat among those stylish Louisville girls, and that the clothes of Casey Pallam, who was constantly saying something that made Jean laugh, were conspicuously new and his diamonds were disgustingly dazzling. At four o'clock the bell rang to call the horses from the stables for the Derby. Most of them, however, had already been on the track for several minutes, taking their "warming-up canters," in hoods and blankets, preliminary to the desperate struggle through which they were expected to go a little later. As they brushed by the stand many were the glasses levelled upon them and as many were the criticisms passed upon their movements and prospects; while the universal inquiry was, "Which is Huguenot?"

It was difficult to distinguish Huguenot from the other blanketed figures, there was one horse, at least, easy of identification by those who knew him; for as the others were galloping around the course, away across the field, at one of the gates opening from the stables to the track, he was prancing and plunging, resisting all efforts to coax or drive him. Gid Bronxon knew, even before he focussed his glasses upon the refractory beast and recognized Uncle Lije at his head, that it was Yaboo.

At the ringing of the second bell—the signal that the horses should be saddled for the race—there was a suddenly increased stir among the concourse of people that stretched far back beyond the grand-stand to the long pavilion where the odds were laid against the wise men's ability to "pick the winner." It was to this spot that hundreds were pressing, madmen for the moment in their efforts to "back their judgment"; surging like fierce breakers against the rocks to dash their money on their favorites. "Huguenot!" "Huguenot!" was the cry from all quarters. Everybody wanted "Huguenot," the "sure thing," and such a continuous rush was made upon him that he was "swept off the boards."

"Long odds against the outsiders!" was the iterant chorus. "Anything you want against the short ones!" "Who is this Yaboo? Fifty to one Yaboo!" "One hundred to one Yaboo!"

"Boss, gimme two dollars' wuff dat hunnud to one Yaboo," said Uncle Lije, who having succeeded in getting the horse on

the track, had slipped over for a moment "to take a look at de odds."

"What do you know about Yaboo, Uncle?" some one inquired, eager for a "tip" from the old trainer, as he walked away with his bit of pasteboard calling for $202 if Yaboo should win.

"No'h'n'—don't nobody know no'h'n' 'bout dat hawse. I des reskin' two dollars on his Bonnie Scotlan' blood."

"Then you don't think he stands any chance of winning?"

"I dun-know no'h'n' 'bout dat; but ef he takes it into his head dat he feels lak runnin' dis evenin', en his rider kin keep him fum boltin' de track, er jumpin' de fence, er cuttin' up some er his oudacious shines, de hawse whut beats him is gotter call on all fo' his laigs, da's all."

The horses were over in the paddock now, their grooms sponging their mouths, tightening girths and giving them other last touches of preparation for the race. Most of them were ready, and were being led slowly around the paddock, while the jockeys stood about, receiving the final instructions and waiting the signal to mount and proceed to the starting-post.

The signal was not long in coming. The president of the club, with his coat buttoned tightly about him and a flower on his lapel, arose in the judges' stand, and with a deliberation worthy the importance of the moment, rang the bell for the third and last time. Instantly there was a wild break from the grounds below to the grand-stand, which was already full, and every foot of space was found and occupied by some one anxious to secure a position from which to witness the race. From end to end the stand was one serried mass of people, packed tier above tier, its right section fluttering with the ribbons and the fans of the ladies, who in their holiday attire presented, from a slight distance, the appearance of a vast matted bank of many-colored, breeze-stirred bloom. The sward between the grand-stand and the track was thronged, and over in the field the inner circumference of the course, for a quarter of a mile, was a great crescent of swarming human beings, on foot, on horseback, and in all varieties of vehicles. Across the field the roofs of the stables, which circumscribe the course, were black with men and boys, and even beyond the limits of

the Association's grounds the trees and the telegraph-poles were living witnesses of the scene.

One of the Kentucky senators occupied a seat in the judges' stand, while the other was opposite, holding a timer's watch. On the platform adjoining the judges' stand was a bevy of distinguished strangers—a Governor or two, a rotund justice of the Court of Appeals, a few millionaires, and an eminent Englishman of letters, who was travelling and lecturing in America, as well as collecting notes which he did not expect to publish until he got safely back on the other side of the ocean.

The sprinkling-cart was hauled from the track by two sturdy draught horses, stolidly oblivious of the fact that they were literally drawers of water for their more aristocratic fellows in the paddock; the gate from the paddock was then opened, and the first of the Derby contestants minced daintily through it to the course, and was received with a round of handclapping. It was Petrel, a colt which would have been highly thought of if Huguenot had not been in the race; and as he paraded before the grand-stand and then dashed off to the half-mile post, at which the start was to be made, he was a striking picture of equine beauty. Following him from the paddock came Timarch, a well-formed, well-bred black giant, who looked, however, a little too fleshy for such a race as the Derby. Seven of the nine starters thus appeared, and each was awarded some sign of applause. As the eighth leaped lithely to the track with elastic step and free stride a cheer broke from thousands, which was repeated as the intelligent creature turned his head curiously toward his admirers, and as his jockey, grinning with gratification, lifted his cap in acknowledgment of the greeting. It was Huguenot, of course; no other horse on the grounds would have met such an ovation; and as he came forth the orange and blue of the Pallam colors, plaited about his mane and decking his rider, were unnecessary for his identification by the public. With his slender barrel, his deep chest, his powerful quarters, his hard muscles, his smooth legs, his small, symmetrical head, his gentle, fearless eyes, his strong, flexile action, his lustrous coat, and his rich blood-bay color, relieved by a dash of white on forehead and pastern, he was as perfect a specimen of patrician horseflesh as ever sprang from that remarkable sire of handsome and

great racers, the dead Virgil. Shaking his head from side to side as if for very joy in the ecstasy of motion, he was followed by a parting cheer as he cantered off to the starting-post; and Gid Bronxon, who was standing near the railing that separated the crowd from the track, saw Casey Pallam, a few feet away, smile radiantly as he lifted his hat to Jean Heath, who was beaming on him from the grand-stand.

The next moment Uncle Lije at his bit and young Whitlock on his back succeeded in getting Yaboo from the paddock to the course. As the uncomely colt plunged right and left, stubbornly refusing to obey either the cajoleries or the chastisement of his rider, laughter echoed from stand and field, and rose again as a big voice exclaimed, "Hitch him to the water-cart!" Gid Bronxon flushed as he saw Casey Pallam join in the laughter and cast an amused glance in the direction of Jean Heath. But he did not look at Jean Heath again himself.

Yaboo—and coming just after Huguenot, at that—was a rather laughable object, with his long, gangling body made still more grotesque by his contortions; his big, aquiline-nosed head; and his ashy color, of that particular shade of light chestnut which belonging to a plough-horse, would have been called "clay-bank"—a shade which cannot be made to take on a gloss, however great the care of the groom, and which appeared all the more commonplace under the silk of Gid's colors of crimson and creamy white.

After much persuasion and lashing Yaboo at last switched his tail in the air impatiently and rushed off rapidly toward the other horses, which were waiting for him at the half-mile post. Arriving there, he refused to stop, but ran on a quarter of a mile farther before Whitlock could check him; and ten minutes more were consumed in bringing him back to the starting-post. A good half-hour was then wasted in attempting to get him off with the other horses, but when they were moving forward in line Yaboo was otherwise engaged, in trying to dismount his rider, in kicking out lustily at the starter's assistant, in waltzing, bucking, rearing, and other favorite divertisements of his, or in suddenly turning and scudding away in the opposite direction to that in which the race was to be run.

The spectators were at first amused at these antics of Ya-

boo's, but their patience, as well as that of the starter, was fast becoming exhausted, and it looked as if it would be necessary to leave the crimson and white behind and run the race without Yaboo's assistance, when Gid smiled as he saw Uncle Lije go up to the judges and engage those officials in earnest conversation, emphasizing it with many obeisances and gestures. The old trainer was well known by the officers of the Association, and they probably had dealings with no one for whom they had more respect. He was evidently well pleased with his call, for when he left the judges' stand he was wreathed in smiles. Before Gid could reach him he had disappeared through the crowd, but the next minute a messenger from the judges was galloping across the field to inform the starter that another jockey would be allowed to ride Yaboo, and a few moments later Gid caught sight of Uncle Lije driving a buggy furiously toward the half-mile post, with a boyish figure in crimson and white at his side. He wondered idly what jockey Uncle Lije had picked up now, but was satisfied that it was of no importance who rode Yaboo, as nothing could be expected from the colt in his present humor.

Through his glasses he saw Uncle Lije and his companion spring from the buggy and go upon the track; saw Whitlock dismount with alacrity, and the new jockey approach Yaboo in front and stand for an instant patting him on the nose; saw him vault from Uncle Lije's hand into the saddle, and then bend over the colt and stroke his neck for a few seconds; saw him lift himself in his seat and gently shake the reins, and saw Yaboo walk slowly toward the other horses; saw him come abreast of them, then saw, like a flash of refracted light, a many-colored platoon plunge forward. The next instant the red flag had cut the air to the earth, there was a resonant shout from the grand-stand, and the Derby had begun.

For nearly a hundred yards the nine horses ran shoulder to shoulder in a beautiful line deployed straight across the track. Then the manœuvring for position commenced. Reins were tightened and others were slackened, and the brilliant hues of the jockeys wove in and out with shifting rapidity as some pushed to the front and others restrained their impatience. At the first quarter they were all close together, but divided into two phalanxes, in the last of which was Hugue-

not, while at his flank was the big nose of Yaboo. At the start Huguenot, with a bound like a panther's, had sprung to the front, but his rider had promptly taken him in hand, and was now leaning far back in his saddle in his effort to keep the spirited animal from making his race too soon. The crimson and white of Yaboo had not been at all conspicuous in that kaleidoscopic change of colors except for the persistency with which they remained just in the rear of the Pallam orange and blue.

As the horses swung into the stretch for the first time the trailing division closed on that in front, and they rounded the turn all bunched. But only for two or three seconds did they run in this order, for as the long stretch was fairly entered Petrel burst from the ruck and shot to the van, increasing his speed at every stride until by the time he had covered fifty yards he was fully three lengths ahead of all the others. Then another rein was loosened, and the big black form of Timarch loomed out in hot pursuit of the flying Petrel, followed by a general quickening of the pace by the others. Down the stretch they came, their shining coats and burnished trappings glinting against the sun, and the dust rising luminously in their wake. As they neared the stand Petrel was still leading, but Timarch was following with a rush that was fast lessening the distance between them. Behind Timarch, two lengths away, were the others in a pack, from which the shapely head of Huguenot showed slightly in advance of the remaining six. That head was sawing from side to side desperately as the colt fought against the unyielding bit that kept him from spurning his company and leaping disdainfully to the lead. Meanwhile, at his saddle-girth, unmindful of his disdain, and seemingly of everything else, Yaboo lounged sleepily along.

As the end of the stand was reached Timarch worked up to Petrel, and the two raced down to the "wire," cheered on by the applause of the spectators. They ended the first half mile of the race head and head, passing lapped together under the wire, and beginning in earnest the mile which was yet to be traversed. As they dashed by the judges the other horses were four lengths behind them; but just at this point Huguenot's jockey relaxed his reins a little, and with a wonderful bound that shook the grand-stand with a shout of joy, the orange and

blue began to cut down the gap which Petrel and Timarch had made. In a second Huguenot was clear of the bunch, and leaving it further in his rear at every one of those mighty, graceful bounds. But in another second Yaboo's rider had bent forward slightly, and Yaboo himself, appearing to wake from his dreams, switched his tail and hurried off in pursuit of his late companion. "Just look at old Water-cart!" yelled the big voice again, and before the laughter had subsided Yaboo's nose was back at its old place at Huguenot's saddle-girth; in another moment it was at his throat-latch; and in two more strides the crimson and white and the orange and blue were streaming through the sunlight blended together. The excitement now began to grow intense as the next quarter was finished with Huguenot and Yaboo side by side, only a length behind Petrel and Timarch, still lapped, while the others were struggling some lengths away. It was as if for the time there were two races, one between Petrel and Timarch and the other between Huguenot and Yaboo, with nothing to indicate which would be the winner of either. It was evident, however, that Petrel and Timarch were running at the top of their speed, while the other two each had something yet in reserve.

Gid Bronxon felt the hand that held his glasses become a trifle unsteady as he watched the good work which Yaboo was doing, and yielding to a sudden impulse he glanced up in the grand-stand, but he could not see either Jean Heath or her aunt. Looking over into the field, he broke into a nervous laugh as he caught sight of Uncle Lije hilariously tossing his hat high in the air.

But his laugh instantly died away when he levelled his glasses on the horses again. They were approaching the turn into the back-stretch, in the same order as last noted, when Yaboo abruptly left Huguenot and bolted obliquely to the opposite side of the track, an action which sent a murmurous commotion through the throngs which saw it, and left no doubt in any one's mind that all chances for the crimson and white were over. For Huguenot not only went on alone in pursuit of Petrel and Timarch, but by the time Yaboo had been pulled back into the course every horse in the race had passed that obstinate brute.

Along the back-stretch it soon began to look as if the re-

sult would be between Petrel and Huguenot, for Timarch faltered, and then dropped back to Huguenot, the latter going by the tired black colt quickly, and now rapidly overtaking the gallant Petrel. In the next twenty yards he collars Petrel, and a cry goes up from the grand-stand. There seems nothing in the race now except the two, and in another twenty yards the cry swells into an exultant roar as Huguenot's colors flash to the lead. Petrel's jockey draws his whip and plies it vigorously, and the brave colt makes a heroic effort to recover his lost ground. But it is useless. Petrel's race is run, and Huguenot enters on the last half-mile two good lengths in front, which it is easy to see he can make a dozen if necessary. "It's all over!" is the exclamation which rises above the pandemonium in the field and the grand-stand. "It's Huguenot's race!" "There's nothing in it that can make him run!" "He wins in a walk!"

Huguenot swings into the homestretch, retaining his advantage without an effort, and running with a free action that is as beautiful as it is powerful, his rider sitting motionless in supreme confidence that all that is required of him now is to hold the horse to his course.

The great crowd is laughing good-humoredly at Huguenot's easily won Derby. Many in it are shaking each other's hands, and Gid Bronxon observes that those near Casey Pallam are boisterously congratulating him.

Suddenly there is a new tumult. "Look!" "Look!" "Who is that?" "See how he comes!" For out from the rear tears a tornado of dust, swirling by horse after horse with a swiftness that is electric in its effect on those who see it. "Who is it?" "Who is it?" "What are those colors?" And a big voice bellows, "By the great Geehosaphat if it ain't old Watercart!" "Yaboo!" "Yaboo!" "Yaboo!" proclaim a thousand straining tongues, and the reverberant shouts startle from his fancied security Huguenot's jockey, who, turning in his seat, looks over his shoulder and sees swooping down on him that pillar of dust, out from which, even as he looks, there leaps like a gleam of lightning a sheen of crimson and white—and Yaboo is once more alongside of Huguenot. The rider in orange and blue is no longer motionless in his saddle; his arms beat the air rapidly as he shakes Huguenot's sides incessantly, as,

for the first time, he begins to urge the son of Virgil to do his best. But Yaboo is not to be gotten rid of easily. It is as if he were borne on by some preternatural force, on which he has been hurled forward with a momentum that is resistless. Do what he can, Huguenot cannot shake that demon from his side, and an eighth of a mile from the end the two are neck and neck, and each is running as he has never run before. On they plunge, stride for stride, the dust rising and hanging over the other horses a few yards behind them, whose riders are now making a last desperate attempt to force them to the front. And as they respond with their final rally, and dash furiously forward in a close cluster through that lowering dust, their hoof-beats echo like the rhythmically rolling rumble of low thunder, the quick ashes cleave the dust-cloud against the light like wind-writhen rain, and it is, indeed, as if a storm were sweeping down the course, from which those two terror-stricken beasts just in front of it are fleeing for their lives. On they fly, from one storm into another—from the storm behind them into the storm that bursts before them from ten thousand throats. They are so near now that the play of their tense muscles can be seen without the aid of glasses; but near as they are, those myriad eyes cannot see which, if either, leads the other. They are so near that the delicate nostrils of Huguenot, dilated to their utmost in this mighty struggle, glow like opalescent fire. They are so near that, straining, as if almost they would leave their sockets, the whites of Yaboo's eyes are plainly visible. Huguenot, with every faculty of his beautiful body and dauntless spirit thrown into this supreme effort, is superb, and more than worthy of every one of those deafening plaudits, "Huguenot!" "Huguenot!" Yaboo in motion, now the incarnation of a terrific power, is grand, and deserves that frantic acclaim, "Yaboo!" "Yaboo!" Pitted together they are magnificent, and "Huguenot!" "Huguenot!" "Yaboo!" "Yaboo!" "Yaboo wins!" "Huguenot wins!" rend that mad multitude with a warring chaos of enthusiasm. On they come, even yet as though yoked together; but now as they reach the sixteenth pole, is it—can it be that the crimson has forged just a hand's-breadth in front of the orange? "Huguenot is beaten!" rises from the people like a groan of defeat and a yell of victory. His jockey immediately raises his whip, and Hugue-

not for the first time in his life feels the sting of raw-hide. "Huguenot is whipping!" is heard above that wild uproar, if there is anyone to hear. The sensitive creature springs gamely from the lash, and with a herculean bound wrests the lead from his competitor. "Huguenot has him!" "Huguenot wins!" and the multitude sways and storms over the triumph of the favorite—for triumph it must be, as the goal is now not fifteen yards away. Yaboo's jockey bends lower over his horses's withers; there is a tremulous motion of his hands, a convulsive pressure of his knees, a quick lifting as if of the horse by the rider, and while the cruel blows yet fall on Huguenot's flank, Yaboo, amid an outburst that must startle the far Indiana hills, hurtles past the judges, winner, by a "head," of the Kentucky Derby.

As the jockeys rode back to the judges' stand to dismount after the finish of the race, Gid Bronxon suddenly sprang through the gate to the track, and hurrying to Yaboo, lifted his drooping rider from the saddle. His own face was as pale as the boy's, and as he held the exhausted figure for an instant in his arms he saw tears trembling on the little fellow's lashes. "Put me down, quick, quick!" came from the quivering lips, and like one in a dream Gid placed him on the ground. The crimson and white jacket disappeared immediately into the latticed weighing-room. In a moment Gid saw it come forth and slip away through the crowd. A minute later he caught a glimpse of it by Uncle Lije's side as the old trainer drove away in the buggy; and while the eyes of perhaps all in that throng were directed upon the horse that had won the Derby, and upon the time of the race, which had just been posted, Gid, going to the topmost railing of the grand-stand, followed with a dazed look the buggy as it left the grounds, turned into the old road that extends beyond them, and stopped in front of a little cottage back among the trees. Then he saw the crimson and white jacket leave the buggy and run up to the door, into the arms of a lady who was standing there, and on whose head was an aggressively old-fashioned bonnet.

The cottage, he happened to know, belonged to the old woman who had charge of the women's dressing-rooms beneath the grand-stand, and glancing in that direction as he made his way below, he saw her sitting faithfully at her post.

About eight o'clock that evening Gid met Major Heath in the lobby of the Galt House, and after receiving the old gentleman's congratulations the two engaged in a conversation which concluded in this way:

"I'm afeard not, Gid. Jean is in a turrible tantrum. Cryin' all the time, an' says she never wants to see nobody ag'in."

"But, Major, if it is possible, I *must* speak to her, somehow."

"Come along then, an' I'll see if I c'n manage it."

Among the "Notes" which followed a long description of the Derby in a Louisville paper next day were these:

"It is reported that the owner of Yaboo was offered $10,000 for him within half an hour after the race yesterday."

"It was noticed that the jockey who rode Yaboo had neither whip nor spurs. It is said that the horse will not submit to punishment."

"The most important and happiest man in town last night was old Uncle Lije Heath, who trained the Derby winner. He says he knew all the time that Yaboo was no half-breed, and that his Bonnie Scotland blood was bound to pull him through. Uncle Lije won two thousand dollars on the result."

"It is said that young Smith, who piloted Yaboo to victory, never rode in a race before. If such is the case the lad's performance was nothing short of marvellous. Smith is from the country, and was discovered by Uncle Lije Heath, who says, however, that the boy's parents would never consent to his going upon the turf. This is unfortunate, as there is no doubt that he would soon rank with the premier jockeys of America. Uncle Lije explains that Smith would not have ridden yesterday if the horse had not been a favorite of his, and if the ridicule with which the crowd greeted Yaboo had not made the boy indignant."

"The genial Major Heath, of Woodford County, was seen by a reporter in front of the Galt House late last night, in company with Mr. Bronxon, the owner of Yaboo. The Major seemed as radiant over the result as Mr. Bronxon himself, as the great son of Glenelg and Brunhilde was bred by the Major, being the first Derby winner he has yet produced. He sold Yaboo as a two-year-old, he says, for $160. Mr. Bronxon, in response to an inquiry by the reporter, said he thought that yesterday's experience would satisfy him, and that he would seek no further honors on the turf. Major Heath intimated that there was some probability of the formation of a partnership between himself and Mr. Bronxon for the management of the former's stock farm, an intimation which Mr. Bronxon did not deny."

TWO TRIOLETS

From *The Century Magazine.*

I

WHAT HE SAID:

This kiss upon your fan I press—
  Ah! Sainte Nitouche, you don't refuse it?
And may it from its soft recess—
This kiss upon your fan I press—
Be blown to you, a shy caress,
  By this white down, whene'er you use it.
This kiss upon your fan I press—
  Ah, Sainte Nitouche, you *don't* refuse it!

II

WHAT SHE THOUGHT:

To kiss a fan!
  What a poky poet!
The stupid man,
To kiss a fan,
When he knows that—he—can—
  Or ought to know it—
To kiss a *fan!*
  What a poky poet!

COQUETTE

From *The Century Magazine.*

"Coquette," my love they sometimes call,
  For she is light of lips and heart;
What though she smile alike on all,
  If in her smiles she knows no art?

Like some glad brook she seems to be,
  That ripples o'er its pebbly bed,
And prattles to each flower or tree,
  Which stoops to kiss it, overhead.

Beneath the heavens' white and blue
  It purls and sings and laughs and leaps,
The sunny meadows dancing through
  O'er noisy shoals and frothy steeps.

'Tis thus the world doth see the brook;
  But I have seen it otherwise,
When following it to some far nook
  Where leafy shields shut out the skies.

And there its waters rest, subdued,
  In shadowy pools, serene and shy,
Wherein grave thoughts and fancies brood,
  And tender dreams and longings lie.

I love it when it laughs and leaps,
  But love it better when at rest—
'Tis only in its tranquil deeps
  I see my image in its breast!

APRILLE

From *Harper's Magazine.*

She walked across the fields, ice-bound,
  Like some shy, sunny hint of spring,
And stooping suddenly, she found
  A violet—a dainty thing,
Which shunned the chilly light of day
Until sweet "Aprille" came that way.

They knew each other, girl and flower;
  There was some subtle bond between;
And I had walked, that very hour,
  The fields, and had no violet seen;
For me the winter landscape lay
All blossomless and bleak and gray.

They knew me not, blue flower, blue eyes;
  She, careless, passed me when we met;
The tender glance which I should prize
  Above all things, the violet
Received; and I went on my way,
Companioned with the cheerless day.

From wintry days blue violets shrink;
  From wintry lives blue eyes will turn;
And yet if she, I sometimes think,
  Could smile on me with sweet concern,
One life so like this wintry day
Would spring-time be for aye and aye.

KENTUCKY PHILOSOPHY

From *Harper's Magazine.*

You Wi'yum, come 'ere suh, dis instunce, Wut dat you got under dat box?
I do' want no foolin'—you hear me? Wut you say? Ain't nuth'n but *rocks?*
'Peahs to me you's owdashus p'ticler—s'posin' dey's uv a new kine.
I'll des take a look at dem rocks. Hi yi! der you t'ink dat I's bline?

I calls dat a plain water-million, you scamp, en I knows whah it growed;
It cum fum de Jimmerson cawn fiel', dah on ter side er de road.
You stole it, you rascal—you stole it! I watched you fum down in de lot.
En time I gits th'ough wid you, nigger, you won't even be a grease spot!

I'll fix you! Mirandy! Mi*ran*dy! go cut me a hick'ry—make 'ase!
En cut me the toughes' en keenes' you c'n fine anywhah on de place.

I'll larn you, Mr. Wi'yum Joe Vetters, ter steal en ter lie, you young sinner,
Disgracin' yo' ole Christian mammy, en makin' her quit cookin' dinner!

Now ain't you ashamed er yo'se'f, sir? I is. I's ashamed you's my son!
En de holy accorjin angel, he 'shamed er wut you has done;
En he's tuck it down up yander in coal-black, blood-red letters—
"One water-million stoled by Wi'yum Josephus Vetters."

En wut you 'sposin' Brer Bascum, yo' teacher at Sunday school,
'Ud say ef he know'd how you's broke de good Lawd's gol'n rule?
Boy, whah's de raisin' I give you? Is you boun' fuh ter be black villiun?
I's 'prised dat a chile er yo' mammy 'ud steal any man's water-million.

En I's now gwiner cut it right open, en you shain't have nary bite,
Fuh a boy who'll steal water-millions—en dat in de day's broad light—
Ain't—*Lawdy!* it's GREEN! Mirandy! Mirand-y! come on wi' dat switch!
Well, stealin' a g-r-e-e-n water-million! who ever yeered tell er des sich?

Caint tell w'en dey's ripe? W'y you thump um, en when dey go pank dey is green,
But w'en dey go *punk,* now you mine me, dey's ripe—en dat's des wut I mean.
En nex' time you hook water-millions—*you* heered me, you ign'ant young hunk,
Ef you don't want a lickin' all over, be sho' dat de allers go "punk!"

ELIZABETH ROBINS

[1862—]

ABBY MEGUIRE ROACH

AN actress, ranked by Bernard Shaw in such parts as Hilda in "The Master Builder," and Agnes in "Brand," with the greatest artists of what is the greatest drama of the period; author of at least one play of her own and of half a dozen considerable novels; traveler, propagandist, and what not, Elizabeth Robins is one of the most versatile and brilliant women of the day.

She was born in Louisville, Kentucky, August 6, 1862, was educated in Zanesville, Ohio, and was married in Salem, Massachusetts, January 12, 1885, to Mr. George Richmond Parkes. In 1888 or 1889, she went abroad for the summer with Mrs. Ole Bull, expecting to return in the autumn to her engagement with Mr. Augustin Daly at his New York theater. But, while passing through London, only a day or two before her steamer was to sail, she met people and saw life and work that arrested her. It was eight years before she returned to America, and it is England now that is her home, though she tries to spend a part of each year on her estate in Florida.

It is interesting to note that it was not until after ten rich years abroad, not until after her establishment as an actress of the first rank, that Miss Robins's writings became notable. 'The Fatal Gift of Beauty,' 'George Mandeville's Husband,' and 'The New Moon,' written under the pen-name "C. E. Raimond," were passable as early work. But it was 'The Open Question,' published in 1898, that revealed a writer for serious consideration and brought about the abandonment of the pseudonym. In the ten years since then she has produced four more books of weight, 'The Magnetic North,' 'A Dark Lantern,' 'The Convert,' and 'Come and Find Me.' 'Under the Southern Cross' also appeared about the same time as the two last.

Sweep and grasp, largeness of scope, and significance of theme, together with wealth of detail, great charm and skill in exposition, acumen, wit, justice, a remarkable verity, and an indomitable spirit—these characterize all that Miss Robins does.

Her subjects are extensive, both in kind and in number. 'The Open Question' and 'A Dark Lantern' deal with those special social questions called "problems of sex." 'The Magnetic North,' on the other hand, has not even a love story. It has to do with real ad-

venture, with the wilds, and with the brute, the heart, and the spirit in man. 'Come and Find Me,' with the same general theme of the North, of gold-seeking and exploration, has more "heart interest," but for the most part of the simpler sort. And 'The Convert,' though it covers the whole problem of the relations between the sexes—social, psychological, political, personal, physical—is based on the question of suffrage for women.

This wholesome balance of outlook, the quality most denied of work of this sort, and specifically often of Miss Robins's, is in fact one of its most self-evident traits. Her work is too comprehensive not to be balanced. 'The Open Question' does not, perhaps, cover its issue as completely and finally as does 'The Convert' or even 'The Dark Lantern'; it remains an open question. But it is an excellent example of how mature and direct treatment may handle any theme. 'The Dark Lantern' is an even better example. Inevitably, after its appearance, as is recorded to have occurred after the first performance of "Ghosts" in London, "the atmosphere . . . was black with vituperation, with threats, with clamor for extinction and suppression, with everything that makes life worth living in modern society." Miss Robins has the temper for this sort of thing. In 'The Convert,' handling a most prickly subject, she runs the whole range of attitudes—imperturbability, wit, reason, humor, appeal. indignation, passion, enthusiasm. And in 'The Dark Lantern,' with inflexible integrity and absolute consciousness of what she is doing and means to do, she covers, in the book's own pages, every possible objection to and criticism of the work itself. Not only are Garth and Katherine themselves fully-rounded characters, but the relation between them is logically developed, and their story perfectly balanced by other stories and characters illustrating other elements of life. Perhaps in every piece of work of this kind each reader would change some touches; but absolute judgment—and absolute agreement with the taste of everybody—on this most delicate of all themes would be superhuman. The fact remains that 'The Dark Lantern' shows a notably clean vision. It stands for the steady recognition of the facts of life, and the steady solving of it. It is one cry for truth, truth! however brutal and bitter. And its hardy virtue and honesty are like the lash of salt spray in the face. If more "morality" and "justification" than that are needed, and if the interpretation as well as the recording of life is looked for, it is all there, in the fourth "book" of the novel. The story of Vida, in 'The Convert,' also is introduced with plain purpose and is in excellent proportion. It is one of the points of discussion. Though it is not so artistically or so convincingly written as some other parts, the rest of the book is perhaps the most conclusive of all

Miss Robins's work. Not only does it cover and settle the main debate, but it is one of the most exhaustive and searching studies of the psychology of the situation between the sexes that has ever been made. It is full of touches as inexorably and excruciatingly true as anything of Ibsen's.

The ability to make her argument by delineation of character, by incident, by incidentals, is what makes Miss Robins's effects so subtle, cumulative, and convincing. Her work, with all its propaganda, never ceases to be fiction. The fictional form carries even 'The Convert' with great felicity (until the last), and gives opportunity for presenting all sorts of people in relation to the issue, and all sorts of points of view. To be sure, her method often suggests the stage more than the novel. 'The Convert' indeed was first written as a play, and its end is theatrical; and the entire affair of Jack Galbraith's destruction of his records, in the latter part of 'Come and Find Me,' is melodramatic. But that scene of the first sight of gold, of real Klondyke gold, to the frozen-in seekers after it in the little cabin on the Yukon, is drama. Most of the conversations are singularly human also. The suffrage debates, public and private, seem stenographic in their naturalness and fidelity.

It is interesting to note that Miss Robins's heroes are, as a rule, more life-like than her heroines. That is not to say that her men are better done than her women, but that her objective characters are more real than her subjective ones. The men are all objective, even the Colonel and the Boy being fundamentally so.

In many points Miss Robins is unexcelled. She is so readable! Even 'The Convert,' which is all argument, holds the interest throughout. But, when all is said, one wishes that work that is so good were just a little better. Along with a clarity and conciseness that win one's admiration go all sorts of carelessness of locution and confusions of the point of view. Indeed, the general effect of these stories is confused. They have no form, no coherence, no cumulative drawing to a climax. The fault is not so much that they are mere chronicles; that is not necessarily a fault at all. But they are inchoate—great masses of splendid material, all relevant enough, but unarranged, unamalgamated. People go in and out, clues are given and come to nothing, in the most inconsequential way. To be sure, these very things are part of the amazing lifelikeness of effect. But there are distinctions as to when a thing is well done, when it is art, and when it is not. Ernestine Blunt and the other suffragettes are examples of a most effective use of the episodic method, while the Blumpittys, about whom an elaborate air of mystery and expectation is worked up without fulfilment, leave the reader feeling positively fooled.

All the great novelists, however, have their limitations, or we may call them simply their characteristics. No verdict now regarding Miss Robins's work could be final. It just falls short of satisfying, but it is still crescent. The confusion apparent in it is that which attends volume and impetus. She has many superlative qualities. She handles themes of permanent interest. There is no doubt that, intellectually, she ranks with the first writers of her generation. She is at least one of the foremost exponents of modern thought, one of the leaders of the day, and she is read with a deserved popularity.

Abby Meguire Roach.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

George Mandeville's Husband. D. Appleton and Company, 1894.

The New Moon. D. Appleton and Company, 1895.

The Fatal Gift of Beauty, and Other Stories. Herbert S. Stone and Company, 1896.

The Open Question: A Tale of Two Temperaments. Harper and Brothers, 1898.

The Magnetic North. Frederick A. Stokes Company, 1904.

A Dark Lantern: A Story with a Prologue. The Macmillan Company, 1905.

The Convert. The Macmillan Company, 1907.

Under the Southern Cross. Frederick A. Stokes Company, 1907.

Come and Find Me. The Century Company, 1908.

Mills of the Gods. Moffat, Yard and Company, 1908.

THE GREAT WHITE SILENCE

From 'The Magnetic North.' Copyright, Frederick A. Stokes Company, and used here by permission of the publishers.

THE two who had been scornful of the frailty of temper they had seen common in men's dealings up here in the North, began to realize that all other trials of brotherhood pale before the strain of life on the Arctic trail. Beyond any question, after a while something goes wrong with the nerves. The huge drafts on muscular endurance have, no doubt, something to do with it. They worked hard for fourteen, sometimes seventeen, hours at a stretch; they were ill-fed, suffering from exposure, intense cold, and a haunting uncertainty of the end of the undertaking. They were reasonable fellows as men go, with a respect for each other; but when hardship has got on the nerves, when you are suffering the agonies of snow-blindness, sore feet, and the pangs of hunger, you are not, to put it mildly, at your best as a member of the social order. They sometimes said things they were ashamed to remember, but both men grew carefuller at crucial moments, and the talkative one more silent as time went on. . . .

Like a man walking in his sleep, the Colonel followed, now holding on to the sled and unconsciously pulling a little and when the Boy, very nearly on his last legs, remonstrated, leaning against it, and so urging it a little forward.

Oh, but the wood was far to seek that night!

Concentrated on the two main things—to carry forward his almost intolerable load, and to go the shortest way to the nearest wood—the Boy, by-and-by, forgot to tell his tired nerves to take account of the unequal pressure from behind. If he felt it—well, the Colonel was a corker; if he didn't feel it—well, the Colonel was just about tuckered out. It was very late when at last the Boy raised a shout. Behind the cliff overhanging the river-bed that they were just rounding, there, spread out in the sparkling starlight, as far as he could see, a vast primeval forest. The Boy bettered his lagging pace.

"Ha! you haven't seen a wood like that since we left 'Frisco. It's all right now, Kentucky;" and he bent to his work with a will.

When he got to the edge of the wood, he flung down the rope and turned—to find himself alone.

"Colonel! Colonel! Where are you? *Colonel!*"

He stood in the silence, shivering with a sudden sense of desolation. He took his bearings, propped a fallen fir sapling aslant by the sled, and, forgetting he was ready to drop, he ran swiftly back along the way he came. They had traveled all that afternoon and evening on the river ice, hard as iron, retaining no trace of footprint or of runner possible to verify even in daylight. The Yukon here was fully three miles wide. They had meant to hug the right bank, but snow and ice refashion the world and laugh at the trustful geography of men. A traveller on this trail is not always sure whether he is following the mighty Yukon or some slough equally mighty for a few miles, or whether, in the protracted twilight, he has not wandered off upon some frozen swamp.

On the Boy went in the ghostly starlight, running, stumbling, calling at regular intervals, his voice falling into a melancholy monotony that sounded foreign to himself. It occurred to him that were he the Colonel he wouldn't recognise it, and he began instead to call "Kentucky! Kentuck-kee!" sounding those fine barbaric syllables for the first time, most like, in that world of ice and silence.

He stood an instant after his voice died, and listened to the quiet. Yes, the people were right who said nothing was so hard to bear in this country of hardship—nothing ends by being so ghastly—as the silence. No bird stirs. The swift-flashing fish are sealed under ice, the wood creatures gone to their underground sleep. No whispering of the pointed firs, stiff, snow-clotted; no swaying of the scant herbage sheathed in ice or muffled under winter's wide white blanket. No greater hush can reign in the interstellar spaces than in winter on the Yukon.

"Colonel!"

Silence—like a negation of all puny things, friendship, human life—

"Colonel!"

Silence. No wonder men went mad up here, when they didn't drown this silence in strong drink.

On and on he ran, till he felt sure he must have passed the

Colonel, unless—yes, there were those air-holes in the river ice. . . . He felt choked and stopped to breathe. Should he go back? It was horrible to turn. It was like admitting that the man was not to be found—that this was the end.

"Colonel!"

He said to himself that he would go back and build a fire for a signal, and return; but he ran on farther and farther away from the sled and from the forest. Was it growing faintly light? He looked up. Oh, yes; presently it would be brighter still. Those streamers of pale light dancing in the North; they would be green and scarlet and orange and purple, and the terrible white world would be illumined as by a conflagration. He stopped again. That the Colonel should have dropped so far back as this, and the man in front not know—it was incredible. What was that? A shadow on the ice. A frozen hummock? No, a man. Was it really . . . ? Glory hallelujah—it *was*. But the shadow lay there ghastly still and the Boy's greeting died in his throat. He had found the Colonel, but he had found him delivered over to that treacherous sleep that seldom knows a waking. The Boy dropped down beside his friend, and wasn't far off crying. But it was a tonic to young nerves to see how, like one dead, the man lay there, for all the calling and tugging by the arm. The Boy rolled the body over, pulled open the things at the neck, and thrust his hand down, till he could feel the heart beating. He jumped up, got a handful of snow, and rubbed the man's face with it. At last a feeble protest—an effort to get away from the Boy's rude succour.

"Thank God! Colonel! Colonel! wake up!"

He shook him hard. But the big man only growled sullenly, and let his leaden weight drop back heavily on the ice. The Boy got hold of the neck of the Colonel's parki and pulled him frantically along the ice a few yards, and then realised that only the terror of the moment gave him the strength to do that much. To drag a man of the Colonel's weight all the way to the wood was stark impossibility. He couldn't get him eighty yards. If he left him and went for the sled and fuel, the man would be dead by the time he got back. If he stayed, they would both be frozen in a few hours. It was pretty horrible.

He felt faint and dizzy. It occurred to him that he would pray. He was an agnostic all right, but the Colonel was past praying for himself; and here was his friend—an agnostic—here he was on his knees. He hadn't prayed since he was a little chap down in the South. How did the prayers go? "Our Father"—he looked up at the reddening aurora—"Our Father, who art in heaven—" His eyes fell again on his friend. He leapt to his feet like a wild animal, and began to go at the Colonel with his fists. The blows rained thick on the chest of the prostrate man, but he was too well protected to feel more than the shock. But now they came battering down, under the ear—right, left, as the man turned blindly to avoid them—on the jaw, even on the suffering eyes, and that at last stung the sleeper into something like consciousness.

He struggled to his feet with a roar like a wounded bull, lunging heavily forward as the Boy eluded him, and he would have pounded the young fellow out of existence in no time had he stood his ground. That was exactly what the Boy didn't mean to do—he was always just a little way on in front; but as the Colonel's half-insane rage cooled, and he slowed down a bit, the Boy was at him again like some imp of Satan. Sound and lithe and quick-handed as he was, he was no match for the Colonel at his best. But the Colonel couldn't see well, and his brain was on fire. He'd kill that young devil, and then he'd lie down and sleep again.

Meanwhile Aurora mounted the high heavens; from a great corona in the zenith all the sky was hung with banners, and the snow was stained as if with blood. The Boy looked over his shoulder, and saw the huge figure of his friend, bearing down upon him, with his discoloured face rage-distorted, and murder in his tortured eyes. A moment's sense of the monstrous spectacle fell so poignant upon the Boy, that he felt dimly he must have been full half his life running this race with death, followed by a maniac bent on murder, in a world whose winter was strangely lit with the leaping fires of hell.

At last, on there in front, the cliff! Below it, the sharp bend in the river, and although he couldn't see it yet, behind the cliff the forest, and a little hand-sled bearing the means of life.

The Colonel was down again, but it wasn't safe to go near him just yet. The Boy ran on, unpacked the sled, and went, axe in hand, along the margin of the wood. Never before was a fire made so quickly. Then, with the flask, back to the Colonel, almost as sound asleep as before.

The Boy never could recall much about the hours that followed. There was nobody to help, so it must have been he who somehow got the Colonel to the fire, got him to swallow some food, plastered his wounded face over with carbolic ointment, and got him into bed, for in the morning all this was seen to have been done.

They stayed in camp that day to "rest up" and the Boy shot a rabbit. The Colonel was coming round; the rest, or the ointment, or the tea-leaf poultice, had been good for the snow-blindness. The generous reserve of strength in his magnificent physique was quick to announce itself. He was still "frightfully bunged up," but "I think we'll push on to-morrow," he said that night, as he sat by the fire smoking before turning in.

"Right you are!" said the Boy, who was mending the sled-runner. Neither had referred to that encounter on the river-ice, that had ended in bringing the Colonel where there was succour. Nothing was said, then or for long after, in the way of deliberate recognition that the Boy had saved his life. It wasn't necessary; they understood each other.

But in the evening, after the Boy had finished mending the sled, it occurred to him he must also mend the Colonel before they went to bed. He got out the box of ointment and be-spread the strips of torn handkerchief.

"Don't know as I need that to-night," says the Colonel. "Mustn't waste ointment."

But the Boy brought the bandages round to the Colonel's side of the fire. For an instant they looked at each other by the flickering light, and the Colonel laid his hand on the Boy's arm. His eyes looked worse for the moment, and began to water. He turned away brusquely, and knocked the ashes out of his pipe on a log. . . .

A change was going on in the travellers that will little commend them to the sentimentalist. . . . The Boy's

body, if not his temper, had got broken into the trail, but for a talkative person he had in these days strangely little to say. It became manifest that, in the long run, the Colonel would suffer the most physically; but his young companion, having less patience and more ambition, more sheer untamed vitality in him, would suffer the most in spirit. Every sense in him was becoming numbed, save the gnawing in his stomach, and that other, even more acute ache, queer compound of fatigue and anger. These two sensations swallowed up all else, and seemed to grow by what thy fed on.

The loaded sled was a nightmare. It weighed a thousand tons. The very first afternoon out from Anvik, when in the desperate hauling and tugging that rescued it from a bottomless snow-drift, the lashing slipped, the load loosened, tumbled off, and rolled open, the Colonel stood quite still and swore till his half-frozen blood circulated freely again. When it came to repacking, he considered in detail the items that made up the intolerable weight, and fell to wondering which of them they could do without.

The second day out from Anvik they had decided that it was absurd, after all, to lug about so much tinware. They left a little saucepan and the extra kettle at that camp. The idea, so potent at Anvik, of having a tea-kettle in reserve—well, the notion lost weight, and the kettle seemed to gain.

Two pairs of boots and some flannels marked the next stopping-place.

On the following day, when the Boy's rifle kept slipping and making a brake to hold back the sled, "I reckon you'll have to plant that rifle o' yours in the next big drift," said the Colonel; "one's all we need, anyway."

"One's all you need, and one's all I need," answered the Boy stiffly.

But it wasn't easy to see immediate need for either. Never was country so bare of game, they thought, not considering how little they hunted, and how more and more every faculty, every sense, was absorbed in the bare going forward.

The next time the Colonel said something about the uselessness of carrying two guns, the Boy flared up: "If you object to guns, leave yours."

This was a new tone for the Boy to use to the Colonel.

"Don't you think we'd better hold on to the best one?"

Now the Boy couldn't deny the Colonel's was the better, but none the less he had a great affection for his own 44 Marlin, and the Colonel shouldn't assume that he had the right to dictate. This attitude of the "wise elder" seemed out of place on the trail.

"A gun's a necessity. I haven't brought along any whim-whams."

"Who has?"

"Well, it wasn't me that went loadin' up at Anvik with fool thermometers and things."

"Thermometer! Why, it doesn't weigh—"

"Weighs something, and it's something to pack; frozen half the time, too. And when it isn't, what's the good of havin' it hammered into us how near we are to freezin' to death?" But it annoyed him to think how very little in argument a thermometer weighed against a rifle.

They said no more that day about lightening the load, but with a double motive they made enormous inroads upon their provisions.

A morning came when the Colonel, packing hurriedly in the biting cold, forgot to shove his partner's gun into its accustomed place.

The Boy, returning from trail-breaking to the river, kicked at the butt to draw attention to the omission. The Colonel flung down the end of the ice-coated rope he had lashed the load with, and "Pack it yourself," says he.

The Boy let the rifle lie. But all day long he felt the loss of it heavy on his heart, and no reconciling lightness in the sled.

. . . The boy turned his head sharply away from the fire. "Hear that?"

No need to ask. The Colonel had risen upright on his cramped legs, red eyes starting out of his head. The Boy got up, turned about in the direction of the hollow sound, and made one step away from the fire.

"You stay right where you are!" ordered the Colonel, quite in the old way.

"Hey?"

"That's a bird-song."

"Thought so."

"Mr. Wolf smelt the cookin'; want's the rest of the pack to know there's something queer up here on the hill." Then, as the Boy moved to one side in the dark: "What you lookin' for?"

"My gun."

"Mine's here."

Oh, yes! His own old 44 Marlin was lying far down the river under eight-and-fifty hours of snow. It angered him newly and more than ever to remember that if he had a shot at anything now it must needs be by favor of the Colonel.

They listened for that sound again, the first since leaving Anvik not made by themselves.

"Seems a lot quieter than it did," observed the Colonel by-and-by.

The Boy nodded.

Without preface the Colonel observed:

"It's five days since I washed my face and hands."

"What's the good o' rememberin'?" returned the Boy sharply. Then more mildly: "People talk about the bare necessaries o' life. Well, sir, when they're really bare you find there ain't but three—food, warmth, sleep."

Again in the distance that hollow baying.

"Food, warmth, sleep," repeated the Colonel. "We've about got down to the wolf basis."

He said it half in defiance of the trail's fierce lessoning; but it was truer than he knew.

They built up the fire to frighten off the wolves, but the Colonel had his rifle along when they went over and crawled into their sleeping-bag. Half in, half out, he laid the gun carefully along the right on his snow-shoes. As the Boy buttoned the fur-lined flap down over their heads he felt angrier with the Colonel than he had ever been before.

"Took good care to hang on to his own shootin'-iron. Suppose anything should happen"; and he said it over and over.

Exactly what could happen he did not make clear; the real danger was not from wolves, but it was *something*. And he would need a rifle. . . . And he wouldn't have one. . . . And it was the Colonel's fault.

. . . On getting back to the fire, he found the Colonel annoyed at having called "Grub!" three times—"yes, sah! three times, sah!"

And they ate in silence.

"Now I'm going to bed," said the Boy, rising stiffly.

"You just wait a minute."

"No."

Now, the Colonel himself had enunciated the law that whenever one of them was ready to sleep the other must come too. He didn't know it, but it is one of the iron rules of the Winter Trail. In absence of its enforcement, the later comer brings into the warmed-up sleeping-bag not only the chill of his own body, he lets in the bitter wind, and brings along whatever snow and ice is clinging to his boots and clothes. The melting and warming-up is all to be done again.

But the Colonel was angry.

"Most unreasonable," he muttered—"damned unreasonable!"

Worse than the ice and the wet in the sleeping-bag was this lying in such close proximity to a young jackanapes who wouldn't come when you called "Grub!" and wouldn't wait a second till you'd felt about in the dimness for your gun. Hideous to lie so close to a man who snored, and who'd deprived you of your 44 Marlin. Although it meant life, the Boy grudged the mere animal heat that he gave and that he took. Full of grudging, he dropped to sleep. But the waking spirit followed him into his dreams. An ugly picture painted itself upon the dark, and struggling against the vision, he half awoke. With the first returning consciousness came the oppression of the yoke, the impulse to match the mental alienation with that of the body—strong need to move away.

You can't move away in a sleeping-bag.

In a city you may be alone, free.

On the trail, you walk in bonds with your yoke-fellow, make your bed with him, with him rise up, and with him face the lash the livelong day.

. . . The Boy was too tired to turn his head round and look back, but he knew that the other man wasn't doing his share. He remembered that other time when the Colonel had fallen

behind. It seemed years ago, and even further away was the vague recollection of how he'd cared. How horribly frightened he'd been! Wasn't he frightened now? No. It was only a dull curiosity that turned him round at last to see what it was that made the Colonel peg out this time. He was always peggin' out. Yes, there he was, stoppin' to stroke himself. Trail-man? An old woman! Fit only for the chimney-corner. And even when they went on again he kept saying to himself as he bent to the galling strain, "An old woman —just an old woman!" till he made a refrain of the words, and in the level places marched to the tune. After that, whatever else his vague thought went off upon, it came back to "An old woman—just an old woman!"

. . . "I don't believe we're going to put this job through."

Now this was treason.

Any trail-man may think that twenty times a day, but no one ought to say it. The boy set his teeth and his eyes closed. The whole thing was suddenly harder—doubt of the issue had been born into the world. But he opened his eyes again. The Colonel had carefully poured out some of the rice into the smoky water of the pan. What was the fool doing? Such a little left, and making a second supper?

Only that morning the Boy had gone a long way when mentally he called the boss of the Big Chimbey Camp "an old woman." By night he was saying in his heart, "The Colonel's a fool." His partner caught the look that matched the thought.

"No more second helpin's," he said in self-defence; "this'll freeze into cakes for luncheon."

No answer. No implied apology for that look. In the tone his partner had come to dread, the Colonel began: "If we don't strike a settlement to-morrow—"

"Don't *talk!*"

The Boy's tired arm fell on the handle of the frying-pan. Over it went—rice, water, and all in the fire. The culprit sprang up speechless with dismay, enraged at the loss of the food he was hungry for—enraged at "the fool fry-pan"—enraged at the fool Colonel for balancing it so badly.

A column of steam and smoke rose into the frosty air between the two men. As it cleared away a little the Boy

could see the Colonel's bloodshot eyes. The expression was ill to meet.

When they crouched down again, with the damped-out fire between them, a sense of utter loneliness fell upon each man's heart.

. . . It was with an effort that he remembered there had been a time when they had been uncomfortable because they hadn't washed their faces. Now, one man was content to let the very skin go if he could keep the flesh on his face, and one was little concerned even for that. Life—life! To push on and come out alive.

The Colonel had come to that point where he resented the Boy's staying power, terrified at the indomitable young life in him. Yes, the Colonel began to feel old, and to think with vague wrath of the insolence of youth.

Each man fell to considering what he would do, how he would manage if he were alone. And there ceased to be any terror in the thought.

"If it wasn't for him"—so and so; till in the gradual deadening of judgment all the hardship was somehow your partner's fault. Your nerves made him responsible even for the snow and the wind. By-and-by he was The Enemy. Not but what each had occasional moments of lucidity, and drew back from the pit they were bending over. But the realisation would fade. No longer did even the wiser of the two remember that this is that same abyss out of which slowly, painfully, the race has climbed. With the lessened power to keep from falling in, the terror of it lessened. Many strange things grew natural. It was no longer difficult or even shocking to conceive of one's partner giving out and falling by the way. Although playing about the thought, the one thing that not even the Colonel was able actually to realise, was the imminent probability of death for himself. Imagination always pictured the other fellow down, one's self somehow forging ahead.

. . . Then it was, that a great tide of longing swept over the Boy—a flood of passionate desire for more of this doubtful blessing, life. All the bitter hardship—why, how sweet it

was, after all, to battle and to overcome! It was only this lying helpless, trapped, that was evil. The endless Trail? Why, it was only the coming to the end that a man minded.

Suddenly the beauty that for days had been veiled shone out. Nothing in all the earth was glorious with the glory of the terrible white North. And he had only just been wakened to it. Here, now, lying in his grave, had come this special revelation of the rapture of living, and the splendour of the visible universe.

The sky over his head—he had called it "a mean outlook," and turned away. It was the same sky that bent over him now with a tenderness that made him lift his cramped arms with tears, as a sick child might to its mother. The haloed sun with his attendant dogs—how little the wonder had touched him! Never had he seen them so dim and sad as to-night. . . . saying good-bye to one who loved the sun.

The great frozen road out of sight below, road that came winding, winding down out of the Arctic Circle—what other highway so majestic, mysterious?—shining and beckoning on. An earthly Milky Way, leading to the golden paradise he had been travelling towards since summer.

. . . They ate supper studiously avoiding each other's eyes In the background of the Boy's mind: "He saved my life, but he ran no risk. . . . And I saved his. We're quits." In the Colonel's, vague, insistent, stirred the thought, "I might have left him there to rot, half-way up the precipice. Oh, he'd go! *And he'd take the sled!* No!" His vanished strength flowed back upon a tide of rage. Only one sleeping-bag, one kettle, one axe one pair of snow-shoes . . . *one gun!* No, by the living Lord! not while I have a gun. *Where's* my gun?" He looked about guiltily, under his lowered lids. What? No! Yes! It was gone! Who packed at the last camp? Why, he —himself, and he'd left it behind. "Then it was because I didn't see it; the Boy took care I shouldn't see it! Very likely he buried it so I shouldn't see it! He—yes—if I refuse to go on, he—"

And the Boy, seeing without looking, taking in every move, every shade in the mood of the broken-spirited man, ready to die here, like a dog, in the snow, instead of pressing on as long

as he could crawl—the Boy, in a fervor of silent rage, called him that "meanest word in the language—a quitter." And as, surreptitiously, he took in the vast discouragement of the older man, there was nothing in the Boy's changed heart to say, "Poor fellow! if he can't go on, I'll stay and die with him"; but only, "He's *got* to go on! . . . and if he refuses . . . well—" He felt about in his deadened brain,, and the best he could bring forth was: "I won't leave him—*yet*."

. . . A mighty river-jam had forced them up on the low range of hills. It was about midnight to judge by the moon —clear of snow and the wind down. The Boy straightened up at a curious sight just below them. Something black in the moonlight. The Colonel paused, looked down, and passed his hand over his eyes.

The Boy had seen the thing first, and had said to himself, "Looks like a sled, but it's a vision. It's come to seeing things now."

When he saw the Colonel stop and stare, he threw down his rope and began to laugh, for there below were the blackened remains of a big fire, silhouetted sharply on the snow.

"Looks like we've come to a camp, Boss!"

He hadn't called the Colonel by the old nickname for many a day. He stood there laughing in an idiotic kind of way, wrapping his stiff hands in his parki, Indian fashion, and looking down to the level of the ancient river terrace, where the weather-stained old Indian sled was sharply etched on the moonlit whiteness.

Just a sled lying in the moonlight. But the change that can be wrought in a man's heart upon sight of a human sign! it may be idle to speak of that to any but those who have travelled the desolate ways of the North.

Side by side the two men went down the slope, slid and slipped and couldn't stop themselves, till they were below the landmark. Looking up, they saw that a piece of soiled canvas or a skin, held down with a drift-log, fell from under the sled, portière-wise from the top of the terrace straight down to the sheltered level, where the camp fire had been. Coming closer, they saw the curtain was not canvas, but dressed deerskin.

"Indians!" said the Colonel.

But with the rubbing out of other distinctions this, too, was curiously faint. Just so there were human beings it seemed enough. Within four feet of the deerskin door the Colonel stopped, shot through by a sharp misgiving. What was behind? A living man's camp, or a dead man's tomb? Succour or some stark picture of defeat, and of their own oncoming doom?

The Colonel stood stock-still waiting for the Boy. For the first time in many days even he hung back. He seemed to lack the courage to be the one to extinguish hope by the mere drawing of a curtain from a snow-drift's face. The Kentuckian pulled himself together and went forward. He lifted his hand to the deerskin, but his fingers shook so he couldn't take hold:

"Hello!" he called No sound. Again: "Hello!"

"Who's there?"

The two outside turned and looked into each other's faces —but if you want to know all the moment meant, you must travel the Winter Trail.

A TRAFALGAR SQUARE MEETING

From 'The Convert.' Copyright, The Macmillan Company and used here by permission of the publishers.

In front of the little row of women on the plinth a gaunt figure in brown serge was waving her arms. What she was saying was blurred in the general uproar. . . .

"You must be sure and explain *everything* to me, Geoffrey," said the girl. "This is to be an important chapter in my education." Merrily and without a shadow of misgiving she spoke in jest a truer word than she dreamed. He fell in with her mood.

"Well, I rather gather that he's been criticizing the late Government, and the Liberals have made it hot for him."

"I shall never be able to hear unless we get nearer," said Jean, anxiously.

"There's a very rough element in front there—"

"Oh, don't let us mind!"

"Most certainly I mind!"

"Oh, but I should be miserable if I didn't hear."

She pleaded so bewitchingly for a front seat at the Show that unwillingly he wormed his way on. Suddenly he stood still and stared about.

"What's the matter?" said Lady John.

"I can't have you ladies pushed about in this crowd," he said under his breath. "I must get hold of a policeman. You wait just here. I'll find one."

The adoring eyes of the girl watched the tall figure disappear.

"Look at her face!" Lady John, with her eyeglass up, was staring in the opposite direction. "She's like an inspired charwoman!"

Jean turned, and in her eagerness pressed on, Lady John following. . . .

The agreeable presence of the young charwoman was withdrawn from the fighting-line, and the figure of the working woman stood alone. With her lean brown finger pointing straight at the more outrageous of the young hooligans, and her voice raised shrill above their impertinence—

"I've got boys of me own," she said, "and we laugh at all sorts o' things, but I should be ashymed, and so would they, if ever they wus to be'yve as you're doin' tod-y." . . .

"You s'y woman's plyce is 'ome. Don't you know there's a third of the women in this country can't afford the luxury of stayin' in their 'omes? They *got* to go out and 'elp make money to p'y the rent and keep the 'ome from bein' sold up. Then there's all the women that 'aven't got even miserable 'omes. They 'aven't got any 'omes *at all.*"

"You said *you* got one. W'y don't you stop in it?"

"Yes, that's like a man. If one o' you is all right he thinks the rest don't matter. We women—"

But they overwhelmed her. She stood there with her gaunt arms folded—waiting. You felt that she had met other crises of her life with just that same smouldering patience. When the wave of noise subsided again, she was discovered to be speaking.

"P'raps *your* 'omes are all right. P'raps your children never goes 'ungry. P'raps you aren't livin', old and young,

married and single, in one room. . . . No, you won't even think about the overworked women and the underfed children, and the 'ovels they live in. And you want that *we* shouldn't think neither—"

"We'll do the thinkin'. You go 'ome and nuss the byby."

"I do nurse my byby; I've nursed seven. What have you done for yours?" She waited in vain for the answer. "P'raps—" her voice quivered—"p'raps your children never goes 'ungry, and maybe you're satisfied—though I must say I wouldn't a thought it from the look o' yer."

. . . As she retired against the banner with the others, there was some applause.

"Well, now," said a man patronizingly, "that wusn't so bad—fur a woman."

"N—naw. Not fur a woman."

Jean had been standing on tiptoe making signals. Ah, at last Geoffrey saw her! But why was he looking so grave?

"No policeman?" Lady John asked.

"Not on that side. They seem to have surrounded the storm centre, which is just in front of the place you've rather unwisely chosen." Indeed it was possible to see, further on, half a dozen helmets among the hats.

What was happening on the plinth seemed to have a lessened interest for Jean Dunbarton. She kept glancing sideways up under the cap brim at the eyes of the man at her side. . . .

"What is it, Geoffrey? Have I done anything?" Jean said very low.

"Why didn't you stay where I left you?" he answered, without looking at her.

"I couldn't hear. I couldn't even see. Please don't look like that. Forgive me!" she pleaded, covertly seeking his hand.

His set face softened. "It frightened me when I didn't see you where I left you."

She smiled with recovered spirits. She could attend now to the thing she had come to see. . . .

Stoner laughed. . . . He moved forward and touched a policeman on the shoulder. What was said was not audible —the policeman at first shook his head, then suddenly he turned round, looked sharply into the gentleman's face, and

his whole manner changed. Obliging, genial, almost obsequious. "Oh, he's recognized Geoffrey!" Jean said to her aunt. "They *have* to do what a member tells them! They'll stop the traffic any time to let Geoffrey go by!" she exulted.

"This will do," Stoner said at last, and he whispered again to the policeman. The man replied, grinning. "Oh, really," Stoner smiled, too. "This is the redoubtable Miss Ernestine Blunt," he explained over his shoulder, and he drew back so that Jean could pass, and standing so, directly in front of him, she could be protected right and left, if need were, by a barrier made of his arms.

"Now can you see?" he asked.

She looked round and nodded. Her face was without cloud again. She leaned lightly against his arm.

Miss Ernestine had meanwhile been catapulting into election issues with all the fervour of a hot-gospeller.

. . . In the midst of the laughter and interruptions, a dirty, beery fellow of fifty or so, from whom Stoner's arm was shielding Jean, turned to the pal behind him with—

" 'Ow'd yer like to be *that* one's husband? Think o' comin' 'ome to *that!*"

"I'd soon learn 'er!" answered the other, with a meaning look.

. . . She stood there for one triumphant moment in an attitude of such audacious self-confidence, that Jean turned excitedly to her lover with—

"I know what she's like! The girl in Ibsen's 'Master Builder'!"

"I don't think I know the young lady."

"Oh, there was a knock at the door that set the Master Builder's nerves quivering. He felt in his bones it was the Younger Generation coming to upset things. He *thought* it was a young man—"

"And it was really Miss Ernestine Blunt? He has my sympathies,"

The Younger Generation was declaring from the monument. . . . "Some of you have heard it would be dreadful if we got the vote, because then we'd be pitted against men in the economic struggle. But it's too late to guard against that. It's a fact. But facts, we've discovered, are just what

men find it so hard to recognize. Men are so dreadfully sentimental." She smiled with the crowd at that, but she proceeded to hammer in her pet nail. "They won't recognize those eighty-two women out of every hundred who are wage-earners. We used to believe men when they told us that it was unfeminine—hardly respectable—for women to be students and to aspire to the arts that bring fame and fortune. But men have never told us it was unfeminine for women to do the heavy drudgery that's badly paid. That kind of work had to be done by somebody, and men didn't hanker after it. Oh, no! Let the women scrub and cook and wash, or teach without diplomas on half pay. That's all right. But if they want to try their hand at the better-rewarded work of the liberal professions—oh, very unfeminine indeed."

As Ernestine proceeded to show how all this obsolete unfairness had its roots in political inequality, Lady John dropped her glass with a sigh.

"You are right," she said to Jean. "This is Hilda, harnessed to a purpose. A portent to shake middle-aged nerves." . . . "You complain that more and more we're taking away from you men the work that's always been yours. You can't any longer keep woman out of the industries. The only question is, on what terms shall she continue to be in? As long as she's in on bad terms, she's not only hurting herself, she's hurting you. But if you're feeling discouraged about our competing with you, we're willing to leave you your trade in war. Let the men take life! We *give* life!" Her voice was once more moved and proud. "No one will pretend that ours isn't one of the dangerous trades either. I won't say any more to you now, because we've got others to speak to you, and a new woman helper that I want you to hear."

With an accompaniment of clapping she retired to hold a hurried consultation with the chairman.

Jean turned to see how Geoffrey had taken it. "Well?"

He smiled down at her, echoing "Well?"

"Nothing so *very* reprehensible in what she said, was there?"

"Oh, 'reprehensible'!"

"It makes one rather miserable all the same."

He pressed his guardian arm the closer. "You mustn't take it as much to heart as all that."

"I can't help it. I can't indeed, Geoffrey. I shall *never* be able to make a speech like that."

He stared, considerably taken aback. "I hope not, indeed."

"Why? I thought you said you wanted me to—"

"To make nice little speeches with composure? So I did. So I do—" as he looked down upon the upturned face he seemed to lose his thread.

She was for helping him to recover it. "Don't you remember how you said—"

"That you have very pink cheeks? Well, I stick to it."

. . . There were angry, indistinguishable retorts, and the crowd swayed. Miss Ernestine Blunt, who had been watching the fray with serious face, turned suddenly, catching sight of some one just arrived at the end of the platform. She jumped up, saying audibly to the speaker as she passed him, "Here she is," and proceeded to offer her hand to help some one get up the improvised steps behind the lion. . . .

Stoner, with contracted brows, had stared one dazed instant as the head of the new-comer came up behind the lion on the left.

Jean, her eyes wide, incredulous, as though unable to accept their testimony, pressed a shade nearer the monument. Stoner made a sharp move forward and took her by the arm.

"We're going now," he said.

"Not yet—oh, *please* not just yet," she pleaded as he drew her round. "Geoffrey, I do believe—"

She looked back, with an air almost bewildered, over her shoulder, like one struggling to wake from a dream.

Stoner was saying with decision to Lady John, "I'm going to take Jean out of this mob. Will you come?"

"What? Oh, yes, if you think"—she had disengaged the chain of her eyeglass at last. "But isn't that, surely it's—"

"Geoffrey—!" Jean began.

"Lady John's tired," he interrupted. "We've had enough of this idiotic—"

"But you don't see who it is, Geoffrey. That last one is—" Suddenly Jean bent forward as he was trying to extri-

cate her from the crowd, and she looked in his face. Something that she found there made her tighten her hold on his arm.

"We can't run away and leave Aunt Ellen," was all she said; but her voice sounded scared. Stoner repressed a gesture of anger, and came to a standstill just behind two big policemen.

The last-comer to that strange platform, after standing for some seconds with her back to the people and talking to Ernestine Blunt, the tall figure in a long sage-green dust coat and familiar hat, had turned and glanced apprehensively at the crowd.

It was Vida Levering.

. . . The woman leaned down from the platform, and spoke her last words with a low and thrilling earnestness.

"I would say in conclusion to the women here, it's not enough to be sorry for these, our unfortunate sisters. We must get the conditions of life made fairer. We women must organize. We must learn to work together. We have all (rich and poor, happy and unhappy) worked so long and so exclusively for men, we hardly know how to work for one another. But we must learn. Those who can, may give money. Those who haven't pennies to give, even those people are not so poor but what they can give some part of their labour—some share of their sympathy and support. . . . I hope you'll all join the Union. Come up after the meeting is over and give us your names."

As she turned away, "You won't get any men!" a taunting voice called after her.

The truth in the gibe seemed to sting. Forestalling the chairman, quickly she confronted the people again, a new fire in her eyes.

"Then," she said, holding out her hands—"then *it is to the women I appeal!*" She stood so an instant, stilling the murmur, and holding the people by that sudden concentration of passion in her face. "I don't mean to say it wouldn't be better if men and women did this work together, shoulder to shoulder. But the mass of men won't have it so. I only hope they'll realize in time the good they've renounced and the spirit they've aroused. For I know as well as any man could tell me, it

would be a bad day for England if all women felt about all men *as I do*."

She retired in a tumult. The others on the platform closed about her. The chairman tried in vain to get a hearing from the swaying and dissolving crowd.

Jean made a blind forward movement towards the monument. Stoner called out in a toneless voice—

"Here! follow me!"

"No—no—I—" The girl pressed on.

"You're going the wrong way."

"*This* is the way—"

"We can get out quicker on this side."

"I don't *want* to get out."

"What?"

He had left Lady John and was following Jean through the press.

"Where are you going?" he asked sharply.

"To ask that woman to let me have the honour of working with her."

The crowd surged round the girl.

"Jean!" he called upon so stern a note that people stared and stopped.

Others—not Jean.

GEORGE B. ROSE

[1860—]

WALTER MALONE

GEORGE B. ROSE was born at Batesville, Arkansas, July 10, 1860. He is the son of U. M. Rose and Margaret T. (Gibbs) Rose. U. M. Rose, his father, is one of the most distinguished lawyers in the United States; he was Chancellor of Pulaski County, Arkansas, from 1860 to 1865, and for many years was on the Democratic National Committee. In the years of 1901 and 1902 he was president of the American Bar Association. He is the author of Rose's 'Digest of Arkansas Reports,' also many articles on American and European jurisprudence in various law journals. In 1907, on the appointment of President Roosevelt, he was one of the delegates from the United States to The Hague Peace Conference.

George B. Rose removed with his parents to Little Rock, Arkansas, in 1865, and has since resided there. He was admitted to the Arkansas Bar in 1879, and on May 2, 1882, he married Miss Marion Kimball. Since his admission to the Bar his law office has always been in Little Rock, he being in partnership with his father and other gentlemen of the legal profession.

He speaks French and Italian fluently, has a fair acquaintance with Spanish, and has a working knowledge of German. He is a member of the Society of Arts of London, of the National Arts Club of New York, of the International Law Association, and of the American Bar Association. He was the fourth president of the Arkansas State Bar Association.

In 1891 he published a small volume of short lyrics entitled, 'Wasted Moments.' In this volume he shows a predilection for the Greek and Italian works of art which have brought forth so much loving labor from him in later years. The book is filled mainly with poems of travel in Italy, referring frequently to Italian masters and their work.

In 1894 appeared "Sebastian, A Dramatic Poem." This drama shows considerable vigor, combined with depth of feeling. But it is to be regretted that Mr. Rose seems, to a large extent, to have abandoned poetic efforts; and these earlier attempts, which should have been revised, and also should have been supplemented by the work of maturer years, have remained neglected and overlooked by

their author. Therefore, in order to arrive at a knowledge of his best work, we must resort to his prose, especially to his critical essays on art and artists.

While still quite a young man, Mr. Rose published a pamphlet entitled "Dr. Ellison, A True Story of Little Rock." This tale is such as to make one regret that the author has not written more fiction. It is the story of a physician who compounded an elixir of life, after many prolonged efforts and much study; but before he had finished and perfected it a young girl, the object of his affections, died. With the aid of this elixir he restored her to life, but he could not give back to her a mind or a soul. So he found himself with the beautiful girl returned to life, but without the power of thought, without feeling, without affection or emotion. Barring certain crudities of expression and unskilfulness in development of the plot, the conception of this story and general treatment would place it with Mrs. Shelley's "Frankenstein," or the still more powerful stories of Edgar Allan Poe.

About the same time, he wrote another story and published it in pamphlet form, entitled "William Wilson, A True Story of Little Rock." The author here makes the error of giving this story the same chief title as that of one of Poe's most remarkable efforts, and commits the additional error of giving it the same sub-title as that of the other story just mentioned. The plot of this tale also is well conceived. Briefly, a man who has wronged a young woman of his acquaintance is pursued after her death by the phantom of a little child, their offspring, who had also died. In spite of the immaturity of the author at the time of the writing of this story, one is forced to admit a deal of strength and vividness in its execution. It is to be regretted that these stories have not been rewritten, and especially is it to be regretted that no others have since appeared to make good their promise.

On May 23, 1901, Mr. Rose delivered a thoughtful and well-expressed address before the Arkansas State Bar Association on "Literature and the Bar." He wrote the sketch of Arkansas history in a publication dealing with that State; also the history of Little Rock in Putnam's 'Historic Cities of the South,' as well as a history of the Supreme Court of Arkansas in a well-known legal publication. As president of the Arkansas Bar Association, he delivered an address dealing with the early lawyers of that State.

He has contributed many critical articles to different reviews. "The Feminine Soul of the Renaissance" appeared in the *Sewanee Review* for October, 1906; "Goethe: Man and Poet," appeared in the same review for October, 1901; "Arnold Boecklin" also appeared

first in that magazine. A short essay on Perugino appeared in *The Pathfinder* for June, 1907.

In 1898 appeared the work which so far has proved his highest and best effort, 'Renaissance Masters,' a collection of essays on the art of Raphael, Michelangelo, Leonardo da Vinci, Titian, Correggio, Botticelli, and Rubens. In 1900 a second edition of this work appeared. A third edition appeared in 1908, with an additional study of the art of Claude Lorraine.

In this work the author displays a love of art and a skilfulness in its interpretation which makes of that critical study a most charming and delightful book. He is thoroughly infatuated with the subject; more than this, he makes his reader become infatuated also. We find therein no dry technical details, no mere husks of criticism. The pages are glowing with fancy, aflame with color, and brilliant with the flush of life. His sentences are robed in purple; his paragraphs wear scepters and crowns.

But not only does his power manifest itself in splendid language; his pictures of the artists whom he loves and admires are vivid and lifelike to the highest degree. Indeed, his portraiture of the great masters calls forth his noblest efforts.

Mr. Rose says of himself: "If I have had any success in writing, it has been on Italian art. For a number of years I have gone to Europe every other summer, and sometimes in successive summers, and have put in all of my time in the study of Renaissance pictures. . . . At home I am merely the ordinary hard-working lawyer, who sticks to his desk from 8:30 to 6 o'clock, and has no time to write on anything else, save on Sunday. Matthew Arnold said sadly of himself that no bondman—no man who had to follow some other calling to earn his livelihood—ever attained literary greatness; and I am a bondman who can give only the dregs of exhausted energies to literature."

His love for the art of the Italian Renaissance is a consuming passion. It is plain that he cares very little for Domenichino, who does not belong to his sacred group. It is likewise plain that Velasquez occupies a secondary position in his estimation. Murillo he ignores entirely. To him Rembrandt is merely a painter of ugly pictures who is proficient in the treatment of light and shade alone. He rarely mentions the Dutch artists, and it is more than likely that their pictures of market-houses, fish, game, and cattle, or their representations of drunken revels, would repel rather than attract him. Of Teniers he has clearly a very poor opinion. Millet and the other artists of the Barbizon school find little favor in his eyes.

To his soul of souls there are only two ages of the world that are of supreme importance—one is that of Pericles and the other

that of the Italian Renaissance. The first compels his admiration, but the latter wins his love. In that gorgeous time of Raphael and Michelangelo and Titian he really lives and has his being. Even the terrible vices of that age call forth his charity. He is fascinated by the splendor of the court of Pope Alexander, and he is charmed by the beauty and accomplishments of Lucretia Borgia. If at the banquets of that age poison really was served to the guests, the glorious revel was graced by the presence of men and women of unexampled wit and brilliance, and in dying it might be some consolation to the victim to know that he had quaffed the fatal potion from a goblet wrought by the hands of Cellini himself.

This author is totally detached, as an author, from his surroundings. He may call his tales "True Stories of Little Rock," but they have no more connection with Little Rock than they have with the Land of Uz. For the great movements of the Nineteenth and Twentieth centuries in science and in mechanics he has little thought and less concern. The steamship, the railway, the telephone and telegraph are apart from his real life. Neither is he absorbed in the great pioneer work, wonderful as it is, in that vast Southwest country where he was born and now lives. He is forgetful of the hurry and onward rush of American progress. In the midst of it all he dreams of the fast-fading figures of Leonardo da Vinci's "Last Supper," and is haunted by the inscrutable smile of Mona Lisa.

Walter Malone

THE RENAISSANCE OF ITALIAN ART

From 'Renaissance Masters.' Copyright, G. P. Putnam's Sons, and used here by permission of the author and publishers.

THERE are two periods in the history of the world's art that are of supreme interest, the age of Pericles and the Italian Renaissance. But they are widely different in their character. The age of Pericles was the culmination of a long and harmonious development, the glorious blossoming of a perfect flower, which had grown in symmetrical grace to bloom in ideal beauty.

Not so with the Renaissance. No period of humanity has been torn with more conflicting ideas, with more diverse aspirations, with more opposing passions. Greek literature and Greek art had come again to light, and the hearts of many, carried away by the loveliness of this world, longed to return to the bright days of old when beauty was all in all, and men gathered to watch the naked runners at Olympia straining their forms of matchless grace and power, or stood upon the shore of the Athenian gulf to look at Phryne as she rose as Aphrodite from the purple sea. But in other breasts the religious fervor of the Middle Ages, the hatred of the pomp and glory of the earth, glowed as warmly as in the bosom of Peter the Hermit when he aroused Europe to throw itself upon Asia in the hope of recovering the Holy Sepulchre. What made the conflict so intense and so peculiar was that the new spirit did not come as a distinct faith against which the forces of conservatism could be clearly drawn. The lovers of antique art did not cease to be Christians, they were not even heretics, so that they could not be burned at the stake and an end made of the matter, as Simon de Montfort had wiped out in blood the brilliant civilization of Provence when a holy war had been proclaimed against the troubadours because they sang too sweetly of woman's love and of earthly beauty. The spirit of the Renaissance penetrated into every heart, and the conflict went on in the bosom of every man. For long centuries men had bowed beneath the yoke of an ascetic discipline imposed by a religious fervor that had blinded them to the loveliness of nature, and had regarded the fair earth as a

hideous dungeon haunted by evil spirits, the body as an unclean tenement of clay that imprisoned the soul and dragged it down to sin. Slowly their eyes were opened. They looked upon the world, and they saw that, though defaced by the ravages of man and stained by his crimes, it was still fair and good, and in their breasts there grew up, although they struggled against it, the old pagan love for the beauty of external things, for the purple sea breaking forever on the silver sands, for the sunlight's brilliance as it fell upon fields of golden grain and hills clothed in verdure; above all, for the beauty of the human countenance, for the grace of the human form. But these feelings were not simple and unmixed as in the bosom of a Greek. In every breast there were also the spiritual aspirations, the hatred of the world, the flesh, and the devil that characterized the Middle Age. These inconsistent elements waged an incessant war. Sometimes, as in the case of Fra Angelico, the spiritual side had almost the entire victory; sometimes, as in the case of Titian, the new paganism almost uprooted the Christian spirit; and sometimes, as in the case of Raphael, they were blended together in harmonious union.

When the Renaissance began we cannot tell. Far back in the Dark Ages we can see the spirit stirring, now manifesting itself here, now there, but always sternly repressed by the bigotry of the time. But when at length the human intellect broke its fetters, its advance was extremely rapid. Petrarch was already seventeen years of age when Dante died, yet, while the spirit of Dante is almost entirely mediæval, the spirit of Petrarch is almost entirely classic. Still, as showing how the two spirits were intermingled, the very groundwork of Petrarch's poetry is of the Middle Age. One of the peculiarities of the Middle Age was its constant yearning for the unattainable. That which was within reach was without value: that which was beyond the grasp was longed for with infinite desire. Men cared little for their own wives or for any whom they could win. Every knight chose some lady in whose honor he might achieve his feats of arms, every minnesinger or troubadour chose one to whom to address his songs of love and war; but it was always some one beyond their reach, either because she was the wife of another or because

of her exalted rank. It was this purely spiritual love alone that found poetic expression; and there was so little reality in it, it was so entirely a matter of the imagination, that the real objects of human love cared little about it. His visionary passion for Beatrice did not prevent Dante from marrying and having seven children, and his good wife, Gemma, no doubt valued the poet's devotion to his shadow at its true worth. Had Beatrice come to Dante or Laura to Petrarch the poets would have wept over their shattered dream, and have chosen some other woman as the object of their adoration. This visionary love, which it is so hard for us now to realize, was the natural result of the absorption of the Middle Age in the things of the spirit and its abhorrence of the things of the flesh.*

Though the Renaissance owed its awakening to the rediscovery of antiquity, there is a vast gulf between the art of Greece and that of Italy. In ancient art it was the type that was sought, each artist striving to produce the ideal of perfect beauty, free from the imperfections of any individual man or woman. With the soul, Greek art has little to do. The expression upon the faces is usually one of Olympian serenity alone, and if human passions are portrayed, as in the "Laocoön," it is only in their simplest form.

Far different was the Renaissance. Christianity and the Middle Ages had swept across men's lives, and they had learned to turn their glance inward, probing the soul's most hidden mysteries. Instead of faces which merely express the joy of living in a joyous world, in a world still bright with the freshness of its glorious youth, we have countenances in which are depicted all the passions of humanity, its most secret instincts, its vaguest aspirations. It is no longer the type that is sought, it is the individual. Instead of trying to eliminate from the work of art all that is personal to the model, leaving only the abstraction of ideal beauty, the effort is to represent the individual person, the individual soul. Instead of endeavoring to produce from many imperfections a single perfect type, they strive to show how body differs

*Perhaps the best illustration of this peculiar kind of love is the Florentine poet Sacchetti, who married three successive wives, and in the meantime addressed all his poems to a fourth woman.

from body, spirit from spirit. Leonardo da Vinci would follow all day long one whose countenance struck him as they passed upon the street, striving to penetrate the secret of personality, and to fix upon his sketch-book the charm of feature or expression with which he had been impressed—trying to seize those very elements of being that Apelles would have been most anxious to exclude.

Therefore, while the purpose of Greek art was the attainment of abstract perfection, the purpose of Renaissance art was the expression of the individual countenance and form. In this respect nearly all modern art has followed the guidance of the Renaissance, not of antiquity. We admire ancient art, but its calm grandeur is no longer possible to our souls, torn as they are with conflicting feelings undreamed of by a Greek; and when we try to imitate it we are usually merely stiff and academic. But the people of the Italian Renaissance are our true ancestors. Their feelings were the same as ours, only more intense; they were confronted by the same problems; their art deals with the same sentiments, the same aspirations; and in the study of their works the modern artist will find infinite profit and inspiration.

The result of this seeking after individuality is that Renaissance art is far more varied than that of classic times. In Greece every artist was striving for the same thing, for the highest type of beauty or of strength, so that there is a certain sameness in their works. Scopas is more vehement. Praxiteles more voluptuous, but they are in search of the same ideals, and even among the ancients their works were hopelessly confused—a thing that could never happen in the case of Michelangelo, Raphael, Leonardo, Correggio, and Titian.

And it was in consequence of this love of individuality that painting became the favorite art of the Renaissance, as sculpture was the favorite art of Greece. Sculpture is best suited to the creation of ideal types, painting to the depicting of individual expression. And in the hands of the artists of the Renaissance the function of sculpture is completely changed. Instead of plastic forms with brows on which sits the serenity of Olympus, the body is used as a vehicle for the utterance of the most complex feelings; and often the

artist thinks not of its beauty, but only of the expressiveness of the tortured limbs.

And this striving after individuality in art is but an expression of the spirit of the age. There are times in the world's history when the individual is completely absorbed in the mass of his fellows; when all men are seeking a single ideal, each rejoicing to subordinate himself to the spirit that animates the whole. Such in art were the Middle Ages, when myriads of men coöperated in the erection of those marvellous Gothic cathedrals which are the wonder of all succeeding generations, and yet all were so absorbed in their work that we know not even the names of the architects from whose astounding brains could spring the conception of these vast structures with their infinite complications of ornament and slender shafts, reaching heavenward their stony arms in rapturous prayer to the throne of grace—men who cared only for their work, and who did not even carve their names upon those pillars, the least of which would have made them immortal.

There are other times that are periods of disintegration, when the bonds that bound men together are loosened, and when each strikes out for himself, or combines with others only for purposes of temporary advantage, moved by no common impulse, but each seeking for himself pleasure, power, riches, or fame. Such a period was the Peloponnesian War, the fall of the Roman Republic, the dissolution of the Roman Empire, the Italian Renaissance, the Thirty Years' War, the French Revolution—times of intense personal activity, of strong individual development, when the human soul breaks its fetters and revels in a freedom that too often leads to dissolution and ruin. These are not the most wholesome periods in the world's records, but they are the periods of greatest interest. In them we pass from history to biography. We are no longer concerned with the movement of vast inert masses—we are fascinated by intense personalities, each of which differs from the other, having different ideas, different aspirations, different characteristics. And of all these periods of transition, when the old idols are crumbling and thousands of new ones are clamoring to take their places, when the old ties of association have been broken and new

ones have not yet been established, when men are free to pursue the bent of their own spirit without constraint, when each stands distinct from the mass of humanity, the Italian Renaissance is the most attractive. It was a time of vehement activity, when brain and nerves and sinews were strained to the utmost, when each strove most passionately for himself, freeing himself most completely from his fellow-men —a time of intense light and Cimmerian darkness, of great virtues and astounding crimes, of princes like the Visconti, of whom it was said that their hate was fratricide and their love was incest; of popes like Sixtus IV and Alexander Borgia, who defiled the chair of St. Peter with orgies that would have shocked the companions of Nero, and at whose poisoned banquets Death presided as master of the revels; of saints like Fra Angelico and Carlo Borromeo; of murderous Bacchantes like Lucretia Borgia, and of holy matrons like Vittoria Colonna—a time of upheaval, of tumult, of confusion, when a mere *condottiere* like Sforza, selling his sword and his mercenaries to the highest bidder, could become a sovereign, when principalities were daily changed into republics and republics into principalities, when the ruler of to-day was the exile of to-morrow, only to return again in triumph to exact a bloody vengeance—a time almost of anarchy, when men yet loved art and learning with an intensity of devotion that has never since been equalled, when the artist quietly painted his altarpiece or his Venus rising from the sea, or the scholar drank rapturously at the newly discovered fount of the Grecian Muses, while men were cutting each other's throats outside his door —a time, in short, when a man could be anything if he only had the boldness, the cunning, or the strength. No age is so varied in its interest. Each city has its different architecture, its different art, and its individual history full of the storm and stress of conflicting passions. The very air seemed surcharged with electricity, here shining as a splendid beacon giving light to an admiring world, there crashing downward as a thunderbolt, bearing destruction in its wake. In this atmosphere, where all things were possible for good or evil life was intense, passionate, voluptuous, cruel, as it has rarely been, and yet pervaded everywhere by a spirit of humanistic culture strangely at variance with the brutal ferocity that was

continually breaking forth. The art of such an age must necessarily possess a peculiar and enduring interest.

There is nothing more striking than the sudden ending of Renaissance art. Greek art reached its zenith in the age of Pericles, but its long afternoon was almost as brilliant as its noonday splendor. But when the sun of Italian art had reached its meridian it was suddenly eclipsed. This was partly due to exhaustion, but was principally the result of political causes.

While all this brilliant life was going on in Italy, while the peninsula was divided among a number of petty principalities maintaining the balance of power as carefully as the Europe of to-day, each the centre of a rich artistic activity, beyond the Alps, in those countries of the North and West of which the Italians rarely thought, and then only with contempt as a region of barbarism and darkness, forces were at work of which they scarcely reckoned. Slowly out of the anarchy and turmoil of the Middle Ages two great kingdoms were emerging, France and Spain—kingdoms that cared not for the arts, but rejoiced in war and rapine, before whose vast mail-clad armies the Italian mercenaries must be scattered as chaff before the wind. They rose above Italy like black and angry waves ready to break and overwhelm the land; but she saw not the danger, and went on with her masques and her revels, her painting and her sculpture, heedless of the wrath to come. In an evil hour Ludovico il Moro, Duke of Milan, invoked the assistance of the French. This brought the Spaniard also into the peninsula, and from that time forth havoc and desolation reigned supreme. Italy, where serious war had been for centuries unknown, became the battle-ground of Europe. The steel-clad knights of France, the iron infantry of Spain, the ruthless *reiters* of Germany, who dreamed only of blood and gold, and to whose rude natures art could make no appeal, marched back and forth, devastating the land and trampling upon the people until in the wretchedness of slavery they lost their genius and their manhood, and became as incapable of artistic production as Greece when she was reduced to the condition of a Roman province.

Moreover, Italy had returned toward classic times until it had become almost pagan, while the rest of Europe was still

imbued with the spirit of the Middle Age. The pilgrims from the North, seeing the wealth, the luxury, the immorality of Italian life, in which the Church took the lead, were shocked beyond measure; and doubtless to the rude visitors from beyond the Alps many pictures which are now the glory of the world gave greater offense than the murders of the Borgias. Germany rose in revolt, and Switzerland, Holland, Denmark, Norway, Sweden, and England threw in their lot with her. Even in France the authority of the Pope was assailed. In this hour of the Church's extreme peril, the fierce and bigoted Spaniards seized the helm, and fought out with measurable success the long battle against the forces of the Protestant revolt; and they trampled the bright Italian race under foot as cruelly as they had done the people of Mexico and Peru.

Crushed and bleeding, Italy thought no more of art, and under the tyranny of the Spanish Inquisition, she sank into such a state of degradation that not only was she unable to produce works worthy of her past, but she could not even appreciate those which she possessed, and covered many of them with hideous whitewash.

So perished the Italian Renaissance, but as long as man loves the beautiful and the grand it will be studied with a loving care devoted to no other epoch of modern times. It has been to the modern world what Greece was to the ancient —the glorious beacon at which the torches of civilization have been lit.

BURNE-JONES

From *The Pathfinder*, October, 1908.

Burne-Jones is the most exquisite poet who has expressed himself in color since Botticelli. His is not the poetry of passion and power; it is the poetry of delicate fancy and far-sought romance. He finds his inspiration not in Homer or Milton, not in Dante nor the *Niebelungen Lied*. It is to the pages of the *Morte d'Arthur* that he goes, to that first part of the *Romance of the Rose* that Guillaume de Lorris wrote. His soul dwelt not in Grecian days nor in the times in which he lived, but in that dim land of mediæval phantasy, when saintly young sad-eyed warriors went forth to slay the dragons

that preyed upon the land, and maidens too modest to confess their love waited wistfully for their return. It is an unreal world of dreams into which he conducts us, but of dreams so pure and beautiful that we dread the return to earth, and, like the eaters of the lotus, would gladly dwell there forever, forgetting the toil and strife, the fever and ambition of our daily life.

His art is not robust. His pale slender heroines, with their great eyes full of longing for they know not what, are fragile as lilies; his young knights with their slight figures and hollow cheeks seem too frail and weary ever to achieve their quest. They know not themselves nor their desires; but with the true soul of the Middle Ages they long for something that can never come to pass. In his forms and faces there is a languor, a wistfulness, a sweet unrest that only he can reveal with the brush and Tennyson alone can utter. He shows to our eyes what Tennyson tells us in the *Idyls* and *Tears, Idle Tears*. He brings the mediæval soul before us as no one else has ever done, with all its vague and ineffectual aspirations, its dreams of unattainable perfection, its passionate love of sweetness and light which yet so strangely went astray into outer darkness. He makes us comprehend it far better than do the works of the Middle Ages themselves, for he translates their almost forgotten speech into a language that we can understand. The men of the Middle Ages would not have understood his pictures. They could not have grasped the purport of an art so perfect and so free, and they were accustomed to rely on crude symbols to express the deepest meanings. But while he could not have revealed them to themselves, he reveals them to us; and his works are a precious possession for him who would penetrate the mediæval soul.

It is an unreal world into which he conducts us, a world of romantic fancy, as far removed from the sane humanism of Shakespeare as from the grandeur of Homer or Dante's intensity of vision. His people are all a little weary, and you wonder how his frail Knight can venture forth to meet the dragon, how his delicate maiden can toil all day at the loom, weaving those strange tissues of fanciful design. But he has the merit of the great artists that he makes the unreal

seem real in the end. We know that his figures are dreams, but as we look upon them we forget that they are such, and we dwell with them as though they are living flesh and blood.

This sense of reality is due in large measure to the minute finish of his works. Everything is painted so accurately, every detail is so patiently elaborated, that when we find these dream people clothed in such real vestments and surrounded by such real furniture, the conviction is forced upon us that they and the strange region in which they dwell are not the product of a vision, but living actualities. In the same way Boecklin convinces us of the reality of the strange hybrid monsters that he evokes from ocean and forest by painting them with such particularity that we know that he could never have presented them thus had they not stood before him in the flesh.

Burne-Jones's art is the offshoot of Botticelli's. Without the *Spring* and the *Birth of Venus* we know not what he would have been. Yet he was not an imitator of the rare Florentine. He did not copy Botticelli, he was inspired by him. They moved in opposite directions, and they met. Botticelli was a man of the Middle Ages, who stretched out his arms with infinite longing towards the gods of Greece. He is moving forward to the new light of the Renaissance that is dawning, and he meets Burne-Jones, who, weary of that garish light, is turning back to the mediæval land of dreams. For his contemporaries, Botticelli pointed the way to the land where Apollo and the Muses sang and the world was glad with the joy of youth; but against his will he reveals that shadowy realm of strange visions and delicate fancies whence he was himself emerging. He hails the rising sun; but he unconsciously tells of the exquisite dreams that haunt the darkness and linger in the dawn.

And, as with Botticelli, it was the human face and form that mostly interested Burne-Jones. Yet, like Botticelli, he occasionally gives us a landscape background, and when he does, it has the gracious charm of Botticelli's. Perhaps his best is in the *Mirror of Venus,* where the ideal beauty of the prospect and the sense of space that it conveys are worthy of Perugino.

Of course, all this teeming imagination would be in vain

were not Burne-Jones an accomplished artist. It makes no difference what forms of grace and beauty may float before the mind's eye if we cannot give them a local habitation and a name. Burne-Jones was a skillful craftsman. He who examines any collection of his drawings, particularly the extensive one in the Birmingham gallery, must be struck with the precision and delicacy with which he handles the pencil. More exquisite drawings are not to be found since Leonardo. There are many of greater power, many that tell more in fewer strokes; but in grace and refinement they can hardly be excelled. As a colorist he is no more to be compared with Rossetti or Boecklin than his great predecessor Botticelli was comparable to Titian or Rubens. As with Botticelli, it is rather the grace of the lines that impresses us than the beauty of the color. But, as with Botticelli, his color is always appropriate and pleasing, and sometimes delightful, if never splendid. And the patience and skill with which he handles his brush are beyond all praise. His works are no hasty sketches; they are pictures finished to ultimate perfection and in all the detail that nature herself presents. And this is one of their enduring charms, as it is with the primitive masters. We are always finding in them something that we had overlooked.

It is not given to all men to enjoy Burne-Jones, any more than all can enjoy Chopin's music. For the realist who likes to see repeated the scenes of his daily life, for the impressionist who loves to dash upon the canvas the mere suggestion of a picture, for the seeker after heroic strength and classic beauty, he has no message; but for him who loves not overmuch the world around him, and who would escape from its futile struggles, its devouring greed and its petty ambitions into a land of romance, where all is a little unreal, as befits a dream, and very delicate and beautiful, Burne-Jones's art is a precious boon. In its essence there is a great sameness, but in its execution there is immense variety. His pictures all show us parts of the same realm of the heart's desire; but how exquisite the fancy, how varied the presentation! He leads us ever from one region of delight to another more charming still, until the return to earth comes as a rude awakening from a delicious trance.

YE GODS OF GREECE

Ye Gods of Greece, we turn to you again,
  Not with the childlike faith of former days,
When lowing kine on smoking altars slain
  Were sacrificed to you with hymns of praise.

Ye now are dead, and man no more believes
  In Dian's chastity or Juno's power,
Nor worships Ceres of the yellow sheaves,
  Nor Flora, mistress of each painted flower.

Ye all are dead. When lightning rends the sky
  No more Jove's flaming thunderbolt we see;
When screaming eagles through the heavens fly
  No more we tremble lest Jove's self it be.

And in the forest Pan no longer wakes
  The woodland echoes with his tuneful pipe,
Nor satyrs peer from out the sedgy brakes,
  Nor fauns are merry when the grapes are ripe.

No longer sirens sit on rocky shores,
  And sweetly sing of soul-destroying loves;
No longer Venus through the ether soars
  In pearly chariot drawn by cooing doves.

The Pythia's voice is now forever dumb,
  Forsaken is Dodona's hallowed wood,
A sterner, purer faith to earth has come,
  And churches rise where once the temples stood.

For ages man has bowed beneath its sway,
  His spirit by its chastening power subdued,
Has heavenward trod the hard and painful way,
  Neglecting paths with springtide roses strewed.

More loosely now its fetters round us hang,
  And in our breast the ancient impulse stirs;
We long for pleasures which the poets sang
  When Greece was young and joy and hope were hers.

Within our hearts the old instinct revives,
The primal longing for this world's delight,
To live in fullest measure our brief lives,
Then smiling pass into the realm of night.

The mellow sunlight on the verdant plain,
The moon reflected in the tranquil lake,
The wide extended fields of golden grain,
The pebbly shore on which the billows break;

The deep low murmur of the restless sea,
The gleaming snow on lofty mountain peak,
And woman's beauty in supreme degree,
Again to us with antique meaning speak.

Again this earth seems pleasing to our eyes,
And this short life seems worthy of our care;
No longer look we solely to the skies,
But gaze on things around us rich and fair.

Again, ye Grecian gods, to you we turn,
Ye graceful emblems of all nature's powers,
Again to you rich incense would we burn,
Again would deck your shrines with vernal flowers.

ON THE BAY OF NAPLES

By Naples' verdant shore I sit
And gaze upon the purple sea,
Where back and forth the vessels flit
As white as sea-gulls and as free.

Beneath the sun's caressing rays
The wavelets bright as diamonds flash,
And dimpling the indented bays,
They laugh to him with playful splash.

Vesuvius rises over there,
His crown of smoke upon his brow,
And lifts in the enchanted air
His perfect cone, so peaceful now.

And yonder o'er the sparkling waves
  Lies Capri's island of delight,
Within whose blue and verdant caves
  Strange heavenly visions greet the sight.

And cities gem the curving shore,
  Their towers reflected in the brine,
With names of note in classic lore,
  Round which the dreams of fancy twine.

The land it is of rest and calm,
  Where all of nature pants for love,
Where 'mid the foliage of the palm
  We hear the cooing of the dove.

In yonder grotto sirens dwelt,
  Their bosoms filled with passion's fire,
Who chanted strains that seemed to melt
  Into a sigh of fond desire.

With joy beyond all human sense
  Their lovers perished 'neath their kiss,
But dying, felt a pang intense
  Of rapture passing earthly bliss.

And here upon the pearly sand
  The sea-nymphs danced beneath the moon,
Or sported with the Triton band,
  While satyrs piped a pleasing tune.

They now are gone, but still we feel
  Their spirits haunt this golden shore;
Unwonted languors o'er us steal,
  Delicious, soft, unknown before.

The very air is amorous,
  And fans the cheek with mild caress,
And slowly passing whispers us
  Of Love's divinely-sweet distress.

Of love the passing boatmen sing,
With love the palm tree nods to palm,
Of love the waves are murmuring,
Love lends the flowers a richer balm.

Oh! do not wake me from this dream,
Oh! do not call my thoughts away;
I would forsake life's troubled stream,
And linger here and dream for aye.

PHRYNE

Oh, Phryne, I am old, but still I gaze
Enraptured on thy beauty. See that hair,
Rich gold reflecting in the golden rays
Of sun-light, which fills all the dreamy air
With sparkling gold dust, and which gently plays
With those soft, lustrous locks so passing fair
That they seem spun from sunset's purest beams
When o'er the world the light all golden streams.

And those sweet eyes, blue as the heavens above,
Which now are fixed in dreamy thoughtfulness,
But in whose limpid depths I see warm love
And strong desire and passionate distress,
Voluptuous longings of the turtle dove,
Fierce yearnings such as rend the lioness,
All sleeping now until the man shall come
To whose fond pleading thou wilt not be dumb.

And that rich form so full of woman's grace,
That polished neck, so round, so snowy white,
Those ivory arms formed all for love's embrace,
Thy bosom's charms that dazzle my poor sight,
And all the glories of thy heavenly face—
Thou art too fair, and that soft yellow light
Makes thee still fairer as it bathes thy form
And shining tresses in its radiance warm.

Oh, Phryne, I am old, and all in vain
I stretch mine arms to thee. Yea, I am old
And thou dost look upon me with disdain,
Scorning my pleading and my proffered gold,
Proud of thy beauty, careless of my pain,
Turning away with looks averse and cold,
And while I bow before thee in the dust
Treating my woe with unconcealed disgust.

Why should the power to love survive the power
To waken love in others? Why must I
Hunger for thee from that thrice cursed hour
When first I saw thee gliding softly by
'Mongst other women, each a lovely flower,
But who seemed pale and dark when thou wert nigh?
And yet thou wert less beautiful than now
With the sun's lingering rays upon thy brow.

Once I was young and then I might have won
Thy love, and dwelt in pleasant lands aglow
With light down-streaming from the joyous sun.
But thou wert then a babe, and now I know
It is too late; my race is nearly run;
My hair is sprinkled by the driven snow,
And there is naught in me to stir thy heart;
The grave yawns for me—I must soon depart.

And yet it is indeed an awful thing
To die with all this love that burns my soul
Unquenched, unsatisfied. Death cannot bring
Peace unto me. . . . Age after age shall roll,
And to the thought of thee my soul will cling,
Yearning for thee, bereft of self-control.
Oh, Phryne, Phryne, thou art come too late—
I die, and closed against me is heaven's golden gate.

THE PINE TREE AND THE VINE

By a stream among the mountains
Stands a pine tree straight and bare,
And across by murmuring fountains
Grows a vine with verdure fair.

And the pine with ardent yearning
Stretches out to her his arms,
While the vine, his love returning,
Longs to yield to him her charms.

But the torrent rolls between them,
And they stretch their arms in vain;
Vainly o'er the waters lean them,
Parted are their lives in twain.

And the pine tree, sadly moaning
Speaks the sorrow of his soul,
While the vine, her grief disowning,
Smiles with woman's self-control.

So they look to one another
Over that tumultuous tide;
Vainly would their longing smother,
Though the waves their lives divide.

DOMINIQUE ROUQUETTE

[1810—1890]

AND

ADRIEN ROUQUETTE

[1813—1887]

ALCÉE FORTIER

FRANCOIS DOMINIQUE ROUQETTE was born at Bayou Lacombe, Louisiana, in 1810, and was educated at the College of Nantes, in Brittany, land of poetic memories. From childhood he was a poet and displayed a distaste for everything that was not connected with literature. He was a poet all his life and could do nothing but write verses. One might say of him as of Lamartine: "He was not a poet, he was poetry itself." For several years, poor and old, he walked the streets of New Orleans, always with flowers in his hands.

On his return to Louisiana, after completing his education in France, Dominique Rouquette spent nearly all his time at Bayou Lacombe or at Bonfouca. He lived, so to say, in the solitude of the forest, and where nature was grandest and wildest he would sit under a tree and read or dream for hours. It was there that his poetic instinct and that of his brother Adrien were really developed. Both were true poets, but Dominique was greater than Adrien.

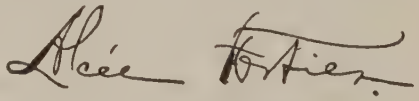
Dominique Rouquette married, and, in order to earn a living, tried to be a teacher. He was, however, too much of a dreamer to succeed in that profession, and he went to Arkansas to open a store. It is useless to say that he was even less successful in commerce than in teaching. "Nature," said Dr. Alfred Mercier, who knew him well, "had created him solely for dreaming and composing verses." He died on May 10, 1890, aged eighty years. He was a pious and excellent man. His principal works are: 'Les Meschacébéennes,' Paris, 1838, and 'Fleurs d'Amérique,' New Orleans, 1859.

Adrien Emmanuel Rouquette was born in New Orleans, February 13, 1813. Like his brother Dominique, he was educated at the College of Nantes. He traveled for several years in Europe, and on returning to Louisiana studied law for some time. He resided later

*See article on French Literature of Louisiana, 'Library of Southern Literature,' Vol. IV, page 1739.

near Mandeville, Louisiana, and became a priest of the Roman Catholic Church. He took a great interest in the Choctaw Indians and converted many of them to the Catholic faith. The Choctaws have gone to the Indian Territory, but the chapel in the woods, where Father Rouquette used to preach to the Indians, is still standing and is visited by many persons who take an interest in the romantic career of the poet-priest.

Adrien Rouquette wrote English lyrics—'Wild Flowers: Sacred Poetry' (1848)—of great merit, and his last work was a satire on Mr. George W. Cable's 'The Grandissimes,' entitled 'Critical Dialogue between Aboo and Caboo on a New Book: or, a Grandissime Ascension.' His French works are: 'Les Savanes' (1841); 'La Thébaïde en Amérique' (1852); 'L'Antoniade' (1860); 'Poèmes Patriotiques' (1860); 'La Nouvelle Atala' (1879). The last-named work is a novel and is admirably written. It proves that Father Rouquette was as poetic in prose as in verse. He died in New Orleans July 15, 1887, and was followed to his grave by many Choctaws, men, women, and children.



LES SAVANES

'Poésies Américaines,' "L'Arbre des Chactas" (Choctaus).

ADRIEN ROUQUETTE

O sublimes forêts, vieilles filles du monde,
Tombez et périssez sous la hache féconde.
—*A. Barbier.*

C'était un arbre immense; arbre aux rameaux sans nombre,
Qui sur tout un désert projetait sa grande ombre.
Ses racines, plongeant dans un sol sablonneux,
Rejaillissaient partout, boas aux mille nœuds;
Et, se gonflant à l'œil comme d'énormes veines,
On eût dit d'un haut-bord les câbles et les chaînes.
Arbre immense et géant, les arbres les plus hauts
A son pied s'inclinaient comme des arbrisseaux.
Déployant dans les cieux sa vaste et noire cime,
Il s'y plaisait aux chocs que l'ouragan imprime.

De sa circonférence embrassant l'horizon,
Sous son dôme sonore, en l'ardente saison,
Il pouvait abriter, endormis sous les herbes,
Tous le peuple Chactas et ses troupeaux superbes.
Dans ses feuilles, sa mousse, entre tous ses rameaux,
Vivaient, rampaient, grimpaient des milliers d'animaux;
Insectes et serpents, oiseaux et bêtes fauves,
Tous logeaient, retirés sous ses vertes alcôves;
Et, là, cachés, tapis dans leurs profonds abris,
Tous, en chœur, ils poussaient d'épouvantables cris!
Puis, autour de cet arbre, arbre aux rameaux immenses,
Voltigeaient colibris, aux changeantes nuances;
Papes verts, geais d'azur, flamboyants cardinaux,
Nuages d'oiseaux blancs et de noirs étourneaux;
Et leurs plumes semblaient d'éblouissantes pierres!
Et l'aigle, en les voyant, eût baissé ses paupières! . . .
Oh! vraiment, on eût dit le monde de Noé!
L'Arche attendant au port que le sol fût noyé!
Entre l'homme et les cieux, mystérieuse échelle,
L'Arbre allait de la terre à la voûte éternelle;
Et tout fort ouragan, l'arrachant des déserts,
Avec ses habitants, eût peuplé l'Univers!
Puis, quand le vent passait sous son dôme sauvage,
Dans ses feuilles sans nombre, et ses branches sans âge;
Lorsqu'à son tronc noueux chaque branche pliait,
Et qu'à chaque rameau la feuille tressaillait,
Oh! comme il en tombait une étrange harmonie;
Un bruit semblable au bruit de la mer en furie;
Un grand bourdonnement de branchages touffus;
Je ne sais quoi de sourd, de vague et de confus,
Qui roulait dans l'espace immense et magnifique,
Et que l'homme n'entend qu'aux déserts d'Amérique!
Eh bien! cet arbre-roi, ce géant des forêts,
Cette arche, cette échelle aux infinis degrés,
Un homme aux muscles forts, un homme à rude tâche,
Suant des mois entiers, l'abattit de sa hache!
Il l'abattit enfin; et puis, s'assit content;
Car, dans l'arbre, il voyait quelques pièces d'argent!
Oh! l'argent, c'est le dieu qui domine chaque âme;
C'est le dieu de l'enfant, de l'homme et de la femme;

C'est pour lui que tomba l'obélisque vivant,
Le premier-né du sol, l'orgueil du continent . . .
Honte à l'Américain, honte au froid mercenaire!
Il ne reste aujourd'hui de l'arbre séculaire,
Des rameaux desséchés, semés de toutes parts;
Qu'un tronc, devant lequel le voyageur s'arrête,
S'incline et s'agenouille, et sent grossir sa tête
De méditations, et sent gonfler son cœur,
Son cœur tout oppressé d'indicible douleur.
O les hommes d'argent, les fils de la matière,
Pour eux, il n'est donc rien de sacré sur la terre,
Rien de sacré dans l'âme? O froid Américain,
Ta seule passion, c'est donc l'amour du gain;
A sa voix, tout se tait, tout s'efface et se brise;
Elle seule ici-bas t'emporte et t'électrise;
Par elle tout entier ton cœur est possédé;
C'est ta religion, c'est ta divinité;
Et pour elle ta main mutile et défigure
Les chefs-d'œuvre de l'art et ceux de la nature! . . .
Mais si tu fus vainqueur de l'arbre des Chactas,
Impie, il en est un que tu n'abattras pas;
Un arbre bien plus haut, bien plus fort, et dont l'ombre
Couvre l'Eden si frais et l'univers si sombre.
Et cet arbre est celui que Dieu même planta,
L'arbre saint de la Croix, l'arbre de Golgotha;
L'arbre que l'homme en vain frappe aussi de sa hache;
Il le frappe en tous points, et rien ne s'en détache;
Rien: car l'arbre toujours, gigantesque, éternel,
S'élance, et va se perdre aux abîmes du ciel!
Il se rit des efforts de tous les nains impies,
Qui s'endorment, lassés, sous ses tiges fleuries:
S'étendant sur le monde, il abrite l'oiseau,
Donne à l'homme une couche, à l'enfant un berceau,
Une cellule au saint, à tous une patrie,
A celui que maudit, comme à celui qui prie;
Car c'est l'arbre de vie et d'immortalité,
Qui nourrit de ses fruits toute l'humanité;
Oui, c'est l'arbre sacré, dont la puissante sève
Est le sang pur du Christ, fils d'une seconde Ève:

Or, celui-là jamais ne doit tomber, périr;
Sur le monde en débris, seul, il doit refleurir;
Seul, il vivra toujours, sur toutes les ruines;
Car son tronc pousse en Dieu d'immortelles racins!

LA NOUVELLE ATALA: OU LA FILLE DE L'ESPRIT

Légende Indienne par Chahta-Ima de la Louisiane.

ADRIEN ROUQUETTE

. . . ATALA était poète! Dire qu'elle était poète, c'est dire qu'elle aimait les fleurs, les étoiles, tout ce qui est gracieux, tout ce qui est beau, tout ce qui est sublime, tout ce qui reflète l'Idéal et touche aux voiles de l'Infini; c'est dire qu'elle était l'initiée de la grande nature primitive, l'initiée dans ses plus profonds enseignements et ses plus chastes mystères d'amour exalté.

Solitaire, elle avait interrogé la primitive nature, et la primitive nature lui avait répondu; elle lui parlait par toutes ses voix, et se dévoilait à elle d'autant plus qu'elle était plus unie à Dieu. Autant par instinct que par étude, elle connaissait les propriétés des fleurs, des graines, des feuilles, des écorces et des racines; les vertus de tous les simples; celles des gommes, des baumes et des résines; celles des sources minérales, dont les eaux salutaires vont se mêler aux grandes eaux des rivières.

Elle distinguait à la première vue, et par une sorte d'intuition rapide, les fleurs qui sont plus immédiatement sous l'influence du soleil de celles que domine l'influence de la lune ou des étoiles; celles du jour de celles de la nuit et du crépuscule; celles qui aiment la lumière de celles qui se plaisent dans l'ombre; celles de la terre de celles de l'eau; elle nommait chacune d'un nom significatif—la plante vénéneuse comme la plante salutaire, l'antidote comme le poison. Et les fleurs et les plantes lui parlaient de Dieu seul.

Autant que les fleurs, les étoiles attiraient ses regards; elle observait le repos des unes et les mouvements des autres; elle pouvait dire l'heure de la nuit par la position de tel groupe d'étoiles mobiles. Elle donnait à chacune un nom qui la désignait: Et les étoiles lui parlaient de Dieu seul.

Ses yeux ravis se portaient des fleurs, étoiles colorées de la terre, aux étoiles, fleurs lumineuses du ciel, et embrassaient l'horizon de verdure se confondant avec l'horizon d'azur, dans ce lointain indéfini qui attire et recueille l'âme contemplative et oublieuse d'elle-même, l'âme abstraite et concentrée: Et tout lui parlait de Dieu seul.

Isolé et libre, Atala avait souvent changé de demeure, selon la saison, ou selon l'avertissement secret d'une voix intérieure qui lui parlait souvent; mais sa demeure préférée était sur le bord d'une ravine profonde, alimentée par les eaux vives de mille sources intarissables. Autour de cette demeure, croissaient des lataniers nombreux, dont les larges feuilles s'ouvraient en éventails. Parmi les grands arbres toujours verts qui y poussaient, on distinguait le chêne antique, le cyprès chevelu, le cèdre, le mélèse, le magnolia et le pin; et, sous ces grands arbres, le laurier, le houx, la cassine, et le galé cirier, qui donne une cire odorante, et dont les feuilles, comme celles de l'eucalyptus, purifient l'air des marécages, en absorbant une grande quantité d'hydrogène. Et parmi les grands arbres qui perdent leurs feuilles au commencement de l'hiver, on remarquait le noyer, le platane, le tremble, le hêtre, et le copalme ou liquidambar, à la gomme suave; et, sous ces grands arbres, le cornouiller, l'airelle, le sumac et le sassafras aux racines odoriférantes.

Des lianes entrelacées formaient au-dessus de cette demeure une voûte impénétrable aux rayons du soleil; et la mélodie des oiseaux enchantait cette retraite imposante et tranquille, ce sanctuaire consacré par la virginité: Et elle appela cette solitude le Grand-Ermitage. Là, elle trouvait du miel dans le creux des vieux arbres, où les abeilles mettent leurs ruches à l'abri de la voracité des ours, qui sont très avides de ce nectar-ambroisie.

Partout où Atala portait ses pas, elle était suivie d'une gracieuse biche, qu'elle avait apprivoisée: Elle lui donna le nom de Pâlki, Pieds-Rapides. Cette biche, comme celle de St-Rilles, lui prodiguait chaque jour son lait le plus pur.

Elle avait aussi un magnifique chien de race; et, voici comment elle eut ce chien: Le chien poursuivait sa biche, qui accourut près d'elle pour lui demander protection. Lorsque le chien aperçut Atala, immobile dans l'attitude de la prière,

à genoux, au pied d'un arbre aux longs voiles de mousse, il s'arrêta soudain, en se tapissant dans les herbes: Il était sous l'influence d'un charme irrésistible; il ne voulut plus quitter sa nouvelle maîtresse; et, comme il avait, au milieu du front, une tache en forme d'étoile, elle le nomma Etoile. La biche dormait à côté du chien, et le chien et la biche aux pieds de leur maîtresse: Quel peintre aurait pu rendre ce tableau primitif? Atala, Pâlki et Etoile ne se séparaient jamais, ni pendant leurs courses, ni durant leur repos. Plus d'une fois, Pâlki et Etoile, toujours ensemble, servirent leur extatique maîtresse, en l'avertissant de quelque danger prochain, ou en la protégeant contre la silencieuse approche du redoutable serpent à sonnettes; ils savaient comment combattre et chasser cet insidieux ennemi, qui a la puissance de fasciner la proie vivante qu'il convoite, en lancant de ses yeux et exhaltant de son corps un fluide empoisonné: Ces deux gardes fidèles défendaient les abords de sa sainte solitude avec une vigilance qui équivalait à une clôture et des grilles.

MESCHACEBEENNES

La Nuit

DOMINIQUE ROUQUETTE

Le soir ramène le silence.
* * * * * *
Je suis, dans le vague des airs,
Le char de la nuit qui s'avance.—*Lamartine.*

La lune du Lacombe argente les deux rives:
Pas un bruit de roseaux ni de feuilles plaintives.
Au "camp" muet s'éteint le cri du négrillon;
Dans le foyer bruit l'invisible grillon.
Oh! c'est l'heure pieuse où l'âme recueillie
S'enivre de silence et de mélancolie,
L'heure où le "whip-poor-will," tendre et plaintif oiseau,
Sous le magnolia qui s'incline sur l'eau,
Sous le saule qui pleure ou l'yeuse isolée,
Comme une âme souffrante, une ombre inconsolée,
Jette aux brises des nuits ce triste et lent accord
Qui meurt dans le lointain et qu'on écoute encore . . .

Sur le bayou, tenant une pagaie oisive,
Calme, je laisse errer ma pirogue en dérive,
Et je rêve, et je prie, et jusqu'au point du jour,
Je me berce enivré de doux songes d'amour.

À M. ANATOLE C. . .

There is a pleasure in the pathless woods.—*Byron.*

Et puis tous deux assis, quel bonheur de lui dire
De ces mots qu'on invente et qu'on ne peut écrire,
Ces mots mystérieux qui font trembler la voix,
Prononcés, dans les pins, pour la première fois!—*Méry.*

Oui, je pars; il me faut la solitude immense!
Quand je vois ma forêt, alors je recommence
A revivre, à rêver sous mes pins toujours verts,
A m'égarer pensif, à composer des vers.
Quelle est donc, réponds-moi, ta puissance secrète,
O solitude sainte, ô mère du poëte?
Oh! comme tous ces bruits qui tombent des rameaux
Versent au cœur souffrant l'oubli de tous les maux!
Comme à ces mille voix dont l'âme se pénètre,
Attendri l'on se sent rajeunir et renaître!
Il semble alors qu'au monde on ait dit son adieu,
Qu'on soit seul ici-bas et qu'on vive avec Dieu!
Et dans l'illusion, le charme de ce rêve,
On lui dit: "O mon Dieu, mais où donc est mon Ève?
J'ai déjà de mes mains bâti mes ajoupas;
Oh! mon Ève! Mon Dieu, ne l'amenez-vous pas?" . . .
C'est ce que je disais autrefois, le cœur vide,
D'amour, d'émotions, toujours, toujours avide,
Et sans cesse jetant, d'une plaintive voix,
Un nom imaginaire à l'écho des grands bois.
Mais, heureux aujourd'hui . . .
J'ai trouvé ce qu'à Dieu tout jeune homme demande;
Sur les bords du grand fleuve enfin je l'ai trouvé
L'ange que tant de fois mon âme avait rêvé!

A. M. JULES M. . .

LE CHEVREUIL DE LA LOUISIANE

Quand un voile brumeux enveloppe Lutèce,
Quand mon front obscurci s'incline de tristesse,
Comme un arbuste frêle où soupire le vent,
Ainsi que par instinct, ami, je vais souvent,
Longeant les boulevards, jusqu'au Jardin-des-Plantes:
Là, les heures d'exil, pour moi, coulent moins lentes,
Là comme à Bonfouca, sous les mélèzes verts,
Soucieux, je m'isole et compose des vers,
Et, tout en relisant Byron ou Sainte-Beuve,
J'erre, par la pensée, aux déserts du vieux fleuve;
Solitaire, j'écoute, incliné sur les eaux,
Son murmure sans fin d'harmonieux roseaux,
Ces bruits mystérieux des lianes plaintives,
Des longs cyprès voilés qui pleurent sur ses rives.
Poëte insoucieux, sans suivre aucun chemin,
Sur les ondes bercé, la pagaie à la main,
Ainsi qu'un bois flottant, au souffle de la brise,
Je laisse dériver ma pirogue indécise,
Et, l'oreille attentive à de lointains accords,
Les yeux clos à demi, je rêve et je m'endors . . .

Et puis, quand au couchant un dernier rayon brille,
Quand du riant jardin on va fermer la grille,
Avant que de partir, d'un signe, d'un coup d'œil,
D'un geste ami, je vais saluer le chevreuil,
Innocent orphelin que le destin condamne
A vivre, comme moi, loin de la Louisiane,
Loin des vierges forêts du vieux Michasippi . . .
Captif dans un enclos je le vois assoupi;
Ainsi qu'au bois natal, il sommeille tranquille:
Et moi, près de l'enclos, haletant, immobile,
Comme un père penché sur un fils au berceau,
Je l'observe endormi sous le frais arbrisseau.
Oh! que ne puis-je, hélas! exilé solitaire,
Paisible, à son côté, m'étendre sur la terre,

Et calme, insoucieux, sommeillant comme lui,
Un instant déposer le poids d'un long ennui!
Ou plutôt que ne puis-je, heureuse créature,
Le rendre à la forêt, à la belle nature,
Et dans quelque désert vierge de pas humain,
Vivre seul avec lui, le nourrir de ma main,
En faire un compagnon, un fils, une maîtresse,
L'environner d'amour, de soins et de tendresse,
Le suivre pas à pas, boire aux mêmes ruisseaux . . .
Sous les lataniers verts, au bord des grandes eaux,
Ainsi que Jocelyn à côté de Laurence,
Près de lui m'endormir . . . ivre de sa présence,
Le caresser, l'aimer comme on aime une sœur,
Hardi, le protéger contre l'adroit chasseur,
Et dire à l'Indien: "Qu'ici ton arc s'arrête!
Qui touche à ce chevreuil m'en répond sur sa tête!"

LA JEUNE FILLE DES BOIS

Fleurs d'Amérique.

DOMINIQUE ROUQUETTE

A MON AMI A. D.

C'est une brune, ami, comme ces jeunes filles
Que dore de ses feux le soleil des Antilles;
Comme la belle enfant que Gautier, dans ses vers,
Nous peint courant pieds nus sous les mangliers verts.
Comme une étoile au ciel son œil noir étincelle;
Dans les bois elle court ainsi qu'une gazelle.
Son corps est élancé, souple, fait à ravir;
Près du Manzanarès ou du Guadalquivir,
Sous les cieux espagnols, jamais jeune Andalouse
Plus belle n'a bondi dans l'épaisse pelouse! . . .
Elle chante jetant aux brises du matin
Ses longs cheveux d'ébène embaumés de plantain.
C'est une vierge chaste et ravissante et pure,
Une fleur des forêts de la grande nature,
Comme celle qu'aimait le fils d'Outalissi:
Elle chante, elle court, paisible, sans souci,

Sans un nuage au front, sans une peine à l'âme
Tout au présent; hélas, l'enfant deviendra femme!
Et dans ce cœur qui dort insoucieux, un jour,
Ainsi qu'un feu caché s'éveillera l'amour.
Alors plus de ces chants, ces cris de gaîté folle,
Plus de ces bonds joyeux dans la forêt créole,
Plus de ces fleurs qu'on cueille au rebord du chemin!
Mais un front attristé qu'on soutient de la main,
Mais des soupirs gonflant la poitrine attristée,
Une image chérie, une fixe pensée,
Des heures se traînant lentes, pleines d'ennuis,
Des pleurs silencieux versés au sein des nuits! . . .

A M . . .

Pour celui qui n'a plus ici-bas une mère,
La vie est un exil et la gloire est amère.

Hélas! sans une mère, au sourire divin,
Une couronne pèse au front de l'orphelin;
Non, ne me parlez plus de lauriers et de gloire;
La gloire n'est qu'un mot, et je n'y veux plus croire:
Soumet, barde divin, de la France l'orgueil,
Soumet l'a dit: "La gloire est un manteau de deuil."

Pour celui qui n'a plus ici-bas une mère,
La vie est un exil, et la gloire est amère.

IRWIN RUSSELL

[1853—1879]

A. A. KERN

Small was thy share in all this world's delight,
And scant thy poet's crown of flowers of praise:
Yet ever catches quaint of quaint old days
Thou sang'st, and, singing, kept thy spirit bright.
—*H. C. Bunner, in 'Airs from Arcady.'*

THE broken arc of Irwin Russell's life extended over but twenty-six pathetic years. His father, Dr. William McNab Russell, came of an Ohio family that had moved from Virginia, and his mother, *née* Elizabeth Allen, was a native of New York but of New England ancestry. She had taught in a girls' boarding-school at Bordentown, New Jersey, owned by the father of Mr. Richard Watson Gilder, the present editor of *The Century Magazine*, and at the time of her marriage was teaching in the Port Gibson (Mississippi) Female College.

Irwin Russell was born in Port Gibson, June 3, 1853. He inherited, together with his mother's brightness of intellect, something of her frail constitution; and an attack of yellow fever which he suffered when only three months old still further weakened his physical strength. Two years later he lost one of his eyes through an accident, and constant study afterward so impaired the remaining eye as to necessitate the use of spectacles. He was a fun-loving, adventurous boy, and withal unusually bright and fond of reading. This love of books, and the restraining control of a mother's love guiding and guarding him, seem to have been the two chief influences of his boyhood. His education, begun in St. Louis, where the family lived from 1853 to 1861, and continued in the Port Gibson schools, was completed with credit at the St. Louis University in 1869.

The sixteen-year-old graduate returned to Port Gibson, and, after reading law for three years, was, though still a minor, admitted to the Bar by a special act of Legislature. It is said, however, that he forsook the law without ever having had a case in court. Traces of his legal training occur in such poems as "Wherefore He Prays That A Warrant May Issue," "The Mississippi Witness," and "The First Client."

There is much in Russell's life that calls to mind Robert Louis Stevenson. His mode of life at this period was in accord with the theory that Stevenson upheld in his "Apology for Idlers" and exemplified in his own career. He wrote only when under the impulse to do so, and more for his own and his friends' pleasure than for any financial return—sometimes sending his poems to the local newspapers and sometimes to the national magazines. He was a contributor to *Puck* and to *Appleton's Journal,* but the majority of his poems appeared in *Scribner's Monthly* (now *The Century Magazine*). His first contribution to this periodical, "Uncle Cap Interviewed," appeared in January, 1876; and his masterpiece, "Christmas-Night in the Quarters," after being refused by the Port Gibson *Réveille* on account of its length, was published in *Scribner's* two years later.

Like Stevenson, also, he possessed a restless, roving disposition that often caused him to be dissatisfied with present surroundings and sent him in search of change. Thus he is known to have set out for California, to have lived a short time on the plains of Texas, and then to have attempted to run off to sea. But in each case the journeys, from one cause or another, usually sickness, ended where they began. Perhaps he hints at one of the reasons for his invariable return to Port Gibson when he makes one of his characters in "Norvern People" declare:

> Dat ol' Marsissippi's jes ober de fence
> Dat runs aroun' hebben's sarcumferymence.

Apart from his poetic genius, Russell's life might be comprised within three words: literature, roving, and drink. It seems probable that he began to drink rather early in life and mainly from a love of mental excitement; it is certain that the habit increased its hold upon him until his death, and was the chief deterrent factor in his career. In 1878 Port Gibson was again visited by yellow fever. With heroic self-sacrifice the poet and his father remained in the town nursing the fever-stricken victims and burying the dead. Some idea of the hardships they endured can be gained from Russell's letters of this period. In one of them he writes: "Four days ago I, for the first time in a month, sat down to a regularly cooked and served meal. . . . Between six hundred and seven hundred people remained in the town to face the fever. Out of these there have been about five hundred and seventy cases." For the father the strain proved too great, and at the close of the epidemic Dr. Russell suddenly died.

Cast thus upon his own resources, Russell determined to go to

New York and make a living with his pen. Arriving there in December, 1878, he met with a cordial welcome from such men as Henry C. Bunner, Richard Watson Gilder, and Robert Underwood Johnson, who had known him through his verse and were personally interested in him. But not even their care could guard him from himself, and his irregular habits soon brought him to poverty and then to illness. Rising from a bed of fever, weak and dazed, he wandered down to the docks and offered to work his way to New Orleans as a coal-heaver. Here he pieced out his existence by dint of literary hack-work of various sorts, most of it done for the New Orleans *Times*.

Even before he left Port Gibson, his frail body had become aweary of the buffetings of this hard world. In the "Studies in Style," after the manner of his master, Burns, he expresses his own world-weariness and his devotion to poetry.

The warld, they say, is gettin' auld;
Yet in her bosom, I've been tauld,
A burnin', youthfu' heart's installed—
    I dinna ken—
But sure her face seems freezin' cauld
    To some puir men.

In summer, though the sun may shine,
Aye still the winter's cauld is mine—
But what o' that? The manly pine
    Endures the storm!
Ae spark of poesy divine
    Will keep me warm.

His repeated attempts to start anew had made him lose faith in himself, and from this time he tended more and more to sink into a mood of helpless despair, tinged with regret. Speaking to Catherine Cole, of the *Times* staff, into whose office he often dropped to chat or jest, he said: "It has been the romance of a weak young man threaded in with the pure love of a mother, a beautiful girl who hoped to be my wife, and friends who believed in my future. I have watched them lose heart, lose faith, and again and again I have been so stung and startled that I have resolved to save myself in spite of myself. . . . I never shall." On December 23, 1879, in an humble dwelling on a side street, attended only by his poor Irish landlady, he gave up the struggle of life, and the land he loved was poorer in the loss of one of its most rarely gifted sons. His body was buried first in New Orleans, but later removed to Belle-

fontaine Cemetery in St. Louis, where rest also his father and mother.

Undoubtedly it is the life of a child of genius that has been thus briefly traced. It remains to note with equal brevity some of the salient features of his mind and work. Russell had preëminently the sensitive temperament of a poet; his face was the face of a dreamer rather than of a man of action; music was a passion with him, and he was an excellent performer upon both piano and banjo. In addition to musical ability he possessed a remarkable talent for caricature. In his childlike inability to care for himself, he illustrated in his own life the most characteristic elements of the race that he has portrayed so well. Not that he was wont to show a weak and dependent spirit toward others. On the contrary, together with an extraordinary faculty for making friends he possessed an excessive pride, which kept him from appealing to them when he was in need and distress.

He was the author of several short stories, most of which appeared in *St. Nicholas,* and it is a matter of regret that his plan for writing a novel dealing exclusively with negro life never was put into execution. The poet wrote a drama also dealing with negro life, the production of which was interrupted by the yellow-fever epidemic in Port Gibson. He threw himself in the lives of his characters with the same enthusiasm with which he had entered into his boyish plans, and the dramatic quality of his poetry in "Christmas-Night in the Quarters" is among its most notable distinctions.

Most of his poetry is contained in the little volume issued in 1888 by The Century Company. Nearly all his poems were "in lighter vein," and more than half of them in dialect. In the last year of his life, acting upon the advice of his New York friends, he partially forsook the humorous style and produced half a dozen poems upon more serious subjects. It is probably owing to the premonition that his end was near that five of the six poems deal with the general theme of death and the future life. His genius was not of that variety which exists as an infinite capacity for hard work; he rather held with "Blind Ned" that "science comes by natur', dat's de way it is wid me"; and many of his best poems were dashed off in the "first, fine, careless rapture."

Russell was a close student and a wide reader, his literary friends ranging from Chaucer and the early English dramatists to Rabelais and Molière. He has been compared with Keats, Poe, Chatterton, and Burns. The likeness to Keats and Poe is mainly external; in essential points he had but little in common with them. The facts in the lives of Russell and Chatterton are closely parallel; moreover, each of them worked in dialect and in a limited sphere;

each proved to be the forerunner of a widespread romantic movement and was so recognized by his successors.* But it is, with the peasant-poet of Scotland that the resemblance is closest. Russell even went so far as to write: "Burns is my idol. He seems to me the greatest man that ever God created, beside whom all other poets are utterly insignificant." How well the pupil had absorbed the spirit of the master can be seen in Russell's "Epistle to John Howard," written in imitation of Burns. In amiability, love for music, song, and drink, in method of composition, and in the mood and movement of their verse, the two poets were alike; and not only was each the forerunner of a romantic movement, but also a forerunner in exactly the same way—by showing the poetic material that lay in the humble lives of their countrymen. It is not implied, however, that the two are in any respect upon a plane of equality—not in melody, nor in pathos, nor in the universality of appeal to the human heart is Russell the equal of Burns; rather is he a miniature of the Scottish poet; he possessed the same qualities and characteristics, but on a smaller scale.

As regards literature, the situation in the South before the war corresponded closely with the situation in England just prior to the Romantic movement. Southern literature was as firmly enslaved to English literary traditions as ever the writers of the Augustan age were to the classic models and the merits of the heroic couplet. The war, however, destroyed all customs and turned the attention of Southerners to their own land and their own people, thus achieving for the South in literature what it failed to achieve in politics—independence. Slight as is his work, it is the glory of Irwin Russell to have been a pioneer in this national literary movement, which has counted among its adherents such authors as Joel Chandler Harris, Thomas Nelson Page, George W. Cable, James Lane Allen, and a host of others. He was the first to point out the literary possibilities of the negro. The negro had appeared incidentally in American literature before 1870, but Russell was the first to make him not only the leading but the sole character. That his claim to originality is genuine is attested by the author of "Marse Chan," who wrote: "Personally I owe much to him. It was the light of his genius shining through his dialect poems—first of dialect poems then and still first—that led my feet in the direction I have since tried to follow."

The negro that he described was neither the slave nor the modern type, but the unreconstructed free negro—the old-time darkey,

---

*Cf. Keats's dedication of 'Endymion'; Shelley's 'Adonais,' II, 397-405; Thomas Nelson Page's dedication of 'Befo' de War' ("To Irwin Russell, who awoke the first echo."); Joel Chandler Harris's Introduction to 'Poems,' by Irwin Russell.

who is so fast disappearing—and the fidelity of his description is confirmed by the continued sale of his poems, collected for the first time nine years after his death, and by the fact that his is the first marble bust to be placed in Mississippi's Hall of Fame.

The dialect of Russell's poems is that spoken by the Mississippi negroes, and in the main his use of it is correct; but with him dialect was merely a means to an end—the representation of the negro character. Russell had the opportunity, the sympathy, the genius; and the resulting product is a complete and intimate picture. He had the dramatic power of losing himself in his characters, and he seems to have caught the very thought-processes of the negro; it is a revelation from within, not a study from without. It is true that for the most part the traits illustrated in his poems are of the lighter and more humorous order; but occasionally he touches upon the deeper emotional side of the negro nature.

We see the negro superstition; his habit of philosophizing, sometimes with only himself or his steeds as an audience; his naïve conception and treatment of Biblical events; his love of the dance and of music, especially that of the banjo; his slyness in a trade and his injured innocence when detected in a deception; his ignorance of the world and of legal customs; his child-like conceit; his admiration for his old master; his common sense and his homely precepts; his love of preaching and his astounding exegesis of the Scriptures; his simple trust in his Maker and his quiet, implicit belief in immortality; and everywhere and through all, his abounding humor. For the negro of slave-times was primarily a child and maintained a child-like outlook upon life. It is this fundamental conception that Russell has caught so perfectly and reproduced so accurately in its various phases.

Irwin Russell's title to fame depends less upon the quantity and quality of his poetry than upon the nature of his material and its historical significance. If the promise of later development contained in his work be set aside, it may be truthfully said that his field was limited, and that, even though the technique was excellent, the narrowness of range would ordinarily have prevented him from receiving more than a passing notice in the history of Southern literature. But it is his distinction to have discovered not only a new literary form—the negro-dialect poem—but also a new literary field—that of negro life—which has since been the most widely cultivated of all the fields in Southern literature. These facts are sufficient to entitle him to honorable mention; but it is his crowning glory that in revealing his hitherto unworked ground he also turned the attention of Southern writers to Southern subjects and caused their writings to take on a truer and more distinctive note.

He was a pioneer in the movement that has caused Southern literature since 1870 to reflect (as true art must always do) the life of the people that produce it. And it is just because of this clearly defined right to distinction that Russell's fame will live longer than that of many writers who have surpassed him in the volume of their work and in the breadth of their renown. It is for this reason also that he has been ranked above many who are better known, and has gained a place among the leaders of Southern song—Lanier, Hayne, Timrod, Russell.

Alfred Allan Kern

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Poems. New York, The Century Company, 1888. Second edition, containing one additional poem, "Going," 1905. Introduction by Joel Chandler Harris.

The following poems are not included in the volume:

The Hysteriad. *Scribner's Magazine,* XVI, 759, September, 1878. Millsap's *Collegian,* March, 1899.

The Romaunt of Sir Kuss. *Scribner's Magazine,* XIX, 799, March, 1880.

A Symbol. *Birds,* December, 1898; Millsap's *Collegian,* March, 1899.

Ships from the Sea. New Orleans *Picayune,* June 2, 1907.

To Miss Ella Williams. New Orleans *Picayune,* June 2, 1907.

To Miss Mollie Morris. New Orleans *Picayune,* June 2, 1907.

Dat Peter. Port Gibson *Réveille.*

See also the following prose articles:

Sam's Four Bits. *St. Nicholas,* August, 1876.

On the Ice. *St. Nicholas,* March, 1877.

Sam's Birthday. *St. Nicholas,* May, 1878.

Fulton's Seamen. New Orleans *Times,* August 24, 1879.

The Fools of Killogue. *Scribner's Magazine,* XVIII, 950, October, 1879.

Article by C. C. Marble in *The Critic,* Vol. XIII, pp. 199, 213, October 27, November 3, 1888.

Article by W. M. Baskerville in Southern Writers, Vol. I, pp. 1-40. Nashville, Tennessee, Publishing House M.E. Church, South, 1907.

Article by W. L. Weber in The Southern Poets, Vol. XXIV, pp. 65, 203. New York, The Macmillan Company, 1905.

Irwin Russell's Place in Literary History. By W. L. Weber. *Methodist Review,* Vol. XLVIII, p. 822, Nashville, Tennessee, November-December, 1899.

Irwin Russell: First Fruits of the Southern Romantic Movement. By W. L. Weber. Publications of the Mississippi Historical Society, Vol. II, p. 15, Oxford, Mississippi, 1899.

Irwin Russell Memorial Presentation Address. By W. L. Weber. Proceedings of the Mississippi Teachers' Association, 1907, p. 86.

Mississippi as a Field for the Student of Literature. By W. L. Weber. Publications of the Mississippi Historical Society, Vol. I, p. 18, 1898.

Irwin Russell Number of Millsap's *Collegian,* March, 1899. Millsap's College, Jackson, Mississippi.

Memories of Irwin Russell and his Home in Port Gibson. By Mrs. W. W. Musgrove. New Orleans *Picayune,* June 2, 1907.

The Historical Element in Recent Southern Literature. By C. Alphonso Smith. Publications of the Mississippi Historical Society, Vol. II, p. 7, 1899.

The Possibilities of the South in Literature. By C. Alphonso Smith. *Sewanee Review,* Vol. VI, p. 298, July, 1898.

The National Element in Southern Literature. By J. B. Henneman. *Sewanee Review,* Vol. XI, p. 345, July, 1903.

CHRISTMAS-NIGHT IN THE QUARTERS

When merry Christmas-day is done
And Christmas-night is just begun;
While clouds in slow procession drift,
To wish the moon-man "Christmas gift,"
Yet linger overhead, to know
What causes all the stir below;
At Uncle Johnny Booker's ball
The darkies hold high carnival.
From all the country-side they throng,
With laughter, shouts, and scraps of song,
Their whole deportment plainly showing
That to the Frolic they are going.
Some take the path with shoes in hand,
To traverse muddy bottom-land;

Aristocrats their steeds bestride—
Four on a mule, behold them ride!
And ten great oxens draw apace
The wagon from "de oder place,"
With forty guests, whose conversation
Betokens glad anticipation.
Not so with him who drives: old Jim
Is sagely solemn, hard, and grim,
And frolics have no joys for him.
He seldom speaks but to condemn—
Or utter some wise apothegm—
Or else, some crabbèd thought pursuing,
Talk to his team, as now he's doing:

Come up heah, Star! Yee-bawee!
  You alluz is a laggin'—
Mus' be you think I's dead,
  An' dis de huss you's draggin'—
You's mos' too lazy to draw yo' bref,
  Let 'lone drawin' de waggin.

Dis team—quit bel'rin, sah!
  De ladies don't submit 'at—
Dis team—you ol' fool ox,
  You heah me tell you quit 'at?
Dis team's des like de 'Nited States;
  Dat's what I's tryin' to git at!

De people rides behin',
  De pollytishners haulin'—
Sh'u'd be a well-bruk ox,
  To foller dat ar callin'—
An' sometimes nuffin won't do dem steers,
  But what dey mus' be stallin'!

Woo bahgh! Buck-kannon! Yes, sah,
  Sometimes dey will be stickin';
An' den, fus' thing dey knows,
  Dey takes a rale good lickin'.
De folks gits down an' den watch out
  For hommerin' an' kickin'.

Dey blows upon dey hands,
  Den flings 'em wid de nails up,
Jumps up an' cracks dey heels,
  An' pruzently dey sails up,
An' makes dem oxen hump deyself,
  By twistin' all dey tails up!

In this our age of printer's ink
'Tis books that show us how to think—
The rule reversed, and set at naught,
That held that books were born of thought.
We form our minds by pedant's rules,
And all we know is from the schools;
And when we work, or when we play,
We do it in an ordered way—
And Nature's self pronounce a ban on,
Whene'er she dares transgress a canon.
Untrammeled thus the simple race is
That "wuks the craps"on cotton places.

Original in act and thought,
Because unlearned and untaught.
Observe them at their Christmas party:
How unrestrained their mirth—how hearty!
How many things they say and do
That never would occur to you!
See Brudder Brown—whose saving grace
Would sanctify a quarter-race—
Out on the crowded floor advance,
To "beg a blessin' on dis dance."

O Mahsr! let dis gath'rin' fin' a blessin' in yo' sight!
Don't jedge us hard fur what we does—you knows it's Christ-
  mas-night;
An' all de balance ob de yeah we does as right's we kin,
Ef dancin's wrong, O Mahsr! let de time excuse de sin!

We labors in de vineya'd, wukin' hard an' wukin' true;
Now, shorely you won't notus, ef we eats a grape or two,
An' takes a leetle holiday—a leetle restin'-spell—
Bekase nex' week, we'll start in fresh, an' labor twicet as well.

Remember, Mahsr—min' dis, now—de sinfulness ob sin
Is 'pendin' 'pon de sperrit what we goes an' does it in:
An' in a righchis frame ob min' we's gwine to dance an' sing,
A-feelin' like King David, when he cut de pigeon-wing.

It seems to me—indeed it do—I mebbe mout be wrong—
That people raly *ought* to dance when Christmas comes along;
Des dance bekase dey's happy—like de birds hops in de trees,
De pine-top fiddle soundin' to de bowin' ob de breeze.

We has no ark to dance afore, like Isrul's prophet king;
We has no harp to soun' de chords, to help us out to sing;
But 'cordin' to de gif's we has we does de bes' we knows,
An' folks don't 'spise de vi'let-flower bekase it ain't de rose.

You bless us, please, sah, eben ef we's doin' wrong to-night;
Kase den we'll need de blessin' more'n ef we's doin' right;
An' let de blessin' stay wid us, until we comes to die,
An' goes to keep our Christmas wid dem sheriffs in de sky!

Yes, tell dem preshis anguls we's a-gwine to jine 'em soon;
Our voices we's a-trainin' fur to sing de glory tune;
We's ready when you wants us, an' it ain't no matter when—
O Mahsr! call yo' chillen soon, an' take 'em home! Amen.

The rev'rend man is scarcely through,
When all the noise begins anew,
And with such force assaults the ears,
That through the din one hardly hears
Old fiddling Josey "sound his A,"
Correct the pitch, begin to play,
Stop, satisfied, then, with the bow,
Rap out the signal dancers know:
Git yo' pardners, fust kwatillion!
Stomp yo' feet, an' raise 'em high;
Tune is: "Oh! dat water-million!
Gwine to git it home bime-bye."
S'lute yo' pardners!—scrape perlitely—

Don't be bumpin' gin de res'—
Balance all!—now, step out rightly;
Alluz dance yo' lebbel bes'
Fo'wa'd foah!—whoop up, niggers!
Back ag'in!—don't be so slow!—
Swing cornahs!—min' de figgers!
When I hollers, den yo' go.
Top ladies cross ober!
Hol' on, till I takes a dram—
Gemmen solo!—yes *I's* sober—
Cain't say how de fiddle am.
Hands around!—hol' up yo' faces,
Don't be lookin' at yo' feet!
Swing yo' pardners to yo' places!
Dat's de way—dat's hard to beat.
Sides fo'w'd!—when you's ready—
Make a bow as low's you kin!
Swing acrost wid opp'site lady!
Now we'll let you swap ag'in:
Ladies change!—shet up dat talkin';
Do yo' talkin' arter while!
Right an' lef'!—don't want no walkin'—
Make yo' steps, an' show yo' style!

And so the "set" proceeds—its length
Determined by the dancers' strength;
And all agree to yield the palm
For grace and skill to "Georgy Sam,"
Who stamps so hard, and leaps so high,
"Des watch him! Is the wond'ring cry—
"De nigger mus' be, for a fac',
Own cousin to a jumpin'-jack!"
On, on the restless fiddle sounds,
Still chorused by the curs and hounds;
Dance after dance succeeding fast,
Till supper is announced at last.
That scene—but why attempt to show it?
The most inventive modern poet,
In fine new words whose hope and trust is,
Could form no phrase to do it justice!

When supper ends—that is not soon—
The fiddle strikes the same old tune;
The dancers pound the floor again,
With all they have of might and main;
Old gossips, *almost* turning pale,
Attend Aunt Cassy's gruesome tale
Of conjurors, and ghosts, and devils,
That in the smoke-house hold their revels;
Each drowsy baby droops his head,
Yet scorns the very thought of bed,
So wears the night, and wears so fast,
All wonder when they find it past,
And hear the signal sound to go
From what few cocks are left to crow.
Then, one and all, you hear them shout:
"Hi! Booker! fotch de banjo out,
An' gib us *one* song 'fore we goes—
One ob de berry bes' you knows!"
Responding to the welcome call,
He takes the banjo from the wall,
And tunes the strings with skill and care,
Then strikes them with a master's air,
And tells, in melody and rhyme,
This legend of the olden time:

Go 'way, fiddle! folks is tired o' hearin' you a-squawkin'.
Keep silence fur yo' betters!—don't you heah de banjo talkin'?
About de 'possum's tail she's gwine to lecter—ladies, listen!—
About de ha'r whut isn't dar, an' why de hair is missin':

"Dar's gwine to be a' oberflow," said Noah, lookin' solemn—
Fur Noah tuk the "Herald," an' he read de ribber column—
An' so he sot his hands to wuk a'cl'arin' timber-patches,
An' lowed he's gwine to build a boat to beat the steamah
Natchez.

Ol' Noah kep' a-nailin' an' a-chippin' an' a-sawin';
An' all de wicked neighbors kep' a-laughin' an' a-pshawin';
But Noah didn't min' 'em, knowin' whut wuz gwine to happen'.
An' forty days an' forty nights de rain it kep' a-drappin'.

Now, Noah had done cotched a lot ob ebry sort o' beas'es—
Ob all de shows a-trabblin', it beat 'em all to pieces!
He had a Morgan colt an' sebral head o' Jarsey cattle—
An' druv 'em all 'board de Ark soon's he heered de thunder rattle.

Den sech anoder fall ob rain!—it come so awful hebby,
De ribber riz immejitly, an' busted troo de lebbee;
De people all wuz drownded out—'cep' Noah an' de critters,
An' men he'd hired to wuk de boat an' one to mix de bitters.

De Ark she kep' a-sailin' an' a-sailin' *an'* a-sailin';
De lion got his dander up, an' like to bruk de palin';
De sarpints hissed; de painters yelled; tell, whut wid all de fussin',
You c'u'dn't hardly heah de mate a-bossin' 'roun' an' cussin'.

Now, Ham, de only nigger what wuz runnin' on de packet,
Got lonesome in de barber-shop an' c'u'dn't stan' de racket;
An' so, fur to amuse he-se'f, he steamed some wood an' bent it,
An' soon he had a banjo made—de fust dat wuz invented.

He wet de ledder, stretched it on; made bridge an' screws an' aprin;
An' fitted in a proper neck—'twuz berry long an' tap'rin;
He tuk some tin, an' twisted him a thimble fur to ring it;
An' den de mighty question riz: how wuz he gwine to string it?

De 'possum had as fine a tail as dis dat I's a-singin';
De ha'r's so long an' thick an' strong—des fit fur banjo-stringin'
Dat nigger shaved 'em off as short as wash-day-dinner graces;
An' sorted ob 'em by de size, f'om little E's to basses.

He strung her, tuned her, struck a jig—'twuz "Nebber min' de wedder"—
She soun' like forty-lebben bands a'playin' all togedder;
Some went to pattin'; some to dancin': Noah called de figgers;
An' Ham he sot an' knocked de tune, de happiest ob niggers!

Now, sence dat time—it's mighty strange—dere's not de slightes' showin'
Ob any ha'r at all upon de 'possum's tail a-growin';
An' curi's, too, dat nigger's ways: his people nebber los' 'em—
Fur whar you find de nigger—dar's de banjo an' de 'possum!

The night is spent; and as the day
Throws up the first faint flash of gray,
The guests pursue their homeward way;
And through the field beyond the gin,
Just as the stars are going in,
See Santa Claus departing—grieving—
His own dear Land of Cotton leaving.
His work is done; he fain would rest
Where people know and love him best.
He pauses, listens, looks about;
But go he must: his pass is out.
So, coughing down the rising tears,
He climbs the fence and disappears.
And thus observes a colored youth
(The common sentiment, in sooth):
"Oh! what a blessin' 'tw'u'd ha' been,
Ef Santa had been born a twin!
We'd hab two Chrismuses a yeah—
Or p'r'aps *one* brudder'd *settle* heah!"

NEBUCHADNEZZAH

You, Nebuchadnezzah, whoa, sah!
Whar is you tryin' to go, sah?
I'd hab you fur to know, sah,
  I's a-holdin' ob de lines.
You better stop dat prancin';
You's pow'ful fond ob dancin',
But I'll bet my yeah's advancin'
  Dat I'll cure you ob yo' shines.

Look hear, mule! Better min' out;
Fus' t'ing you know you'll fin' out
How quick I'll wear dis line out
  On your ugly, stubbo'n back.
You needn't try to steal up
An' lif' dat precious heel up;
You's got to plow dis fiel' up,
  You has, sah, fur a fac'.

Dar, *dat's* de way to do it!
He's comin' right down to it;
Jes' watch him plowin' troo it!
  Dis nigger ain't no fool.
Some folks dey would 'a' beat him;
Now, dat would only heat him—
I know jes' how to treat him:
  You mus' *reason* wid a mule.

He minds me like a nigger.
If he wuz only bigger
He'd fotch a mighty figger,
  He would, I *tell* you! Yes, sah!
See how he keeps a-clickin'!
He's as gentle as a chickin,
An' nebber thinks o'kickin'—
  Whoa dar! Nebuchadnezzah!

* * * * * *

Is dis heah me, or not me?
Or is de debbil got me?
Wuz dat a cannon shot me?
  Hab I laid heah more'n a week?
Dat mule do kick amazin'!
De beast was sp'iled in raisin'—
But now I 'spect he's grazin'
  On de oder side de creek.

MAHSR JOHN

I heahs a heap o' people talkin', ebrywhar I goes,
'Bout Washingtum an' Franklum, an' sech gen'uses as dose;
I s'pose dey's mighty fine, but heah's de pint I's bettin' on:
Dere wuzn't nar a one ob 'em come up to Mahsr John.

He shorely wuz de greates' man de country ebber growed.
You better had git out de way when *he* comes 'long de road!
He hel' his head up dis way, like he 'spised to see de groun';
An' niggers had to toe de mark when Mahsr John wuz roun'.

I only has to shet my eyes, an' den it seems to me
I sees him right afore me now, jes like he use' to be,
A-settin' on de gal'ry, lookin' awful big an' wise,
Wid little niggers fannin' him to keep away de flies.

He alluz wore de berry bes' ob planters' linen suits,
An' kep' a nigger busy jes' a-blackin' ob his boots;
De buckles on his galluses wuz made ob solid gol',
An' diamon's!—dey wuz in his shu't as thick as it would hol'.

You heered me! 'twas a caution, when he went to take a ride,
To see him in de kerridge, wid ol' Mistis by his side—
Mulatter Bill a-dribin', an' a nigger on behin',
An' two Kaintucky hosses tuk 'em tearin' whar dey gwine.

Ol' Mahsr John wuz pow'ful rich—he owned a heap o' lan':
Fibe cotton places, 'sides a sugar place in Loozyan';
He had a thousan' niggers—an' he wuked 'em shore's you
  born!
De oberseahs 'u'd start 'em at de breakin' ob de morn.

I reckon dere wuz forty ob de niggers, young an' ol'.
Dat staid about de big house jes to do what dey wuz tol';
Dey had a'easy time, wid skacely any work at all—
But dey had to come a'runnin' when ol' Mahsr John 'u'd call!

Sometimes he'd gib a frolic—dat's de time you seed de fun:
De 'ristocratic fam'lies, dey 'u'd be dar, ebry one;
Dey'd hab a band from New Orleans to play for 'em to dance,
An' tell you what, de *supper* wuz a'*tic'lar* sarcumstance.

Well, times is changed. De war it come an' sot de niggers free,
An' now ol' Mahsr John ain't hardly wuf as much as me;
He had to pay his debts, an' so his lan' is mos'ly gone—
An' I declar' I's sorry fur my pore ol' Mahsr John.

But when I heahs 'em talkin' 'bout some sullybrated man,
I listens to 'em quiet, till dey done said all dey can,
An' den I 'lows dot in dem days 'at I remembers on,
Dat gemman warn't a patchin' onto my ol' Mahsr John!

LINES TO A YOUNG LADY FRIEND

Copied from an Autograph Album, with the consent of the lady for whom the lines were written. Punctuation and other marks as written by the Author. The original is in Port Gibson, Mississippi.

I follow on where others lead,
  And write my thoughts in rhyme;
Sure measured words are what we need,
  To mark—the march of Time:
And far—too far— he's walked his way,
  Since we, together, found
Our childish life a cloudless May
  Our world, all fairy ground.

The Spring and Summer come and go
  And when their tide has passed
Comes Autumn rain—comes Winter snow
  To freeze our hearts at last—
But in some sheltered corner, yet,
  Some flowers escape the frost
And live throughout the cold and wet
  Without one petal lost.

So little change has come to you
If you have changed at all—
For you the Winter skies are blue
And warm, the rains of Fall—
And so, I trust they still may be:
So, may you bloom and thrive—
Preserve your youth, and not—like me—
Be old at twenty-five.

Thus far, our lives have led us—where?
Our sum of life is small
No added ciphers figure there
We're units—that is all;
Yet what of that? See on the book—
The record of the age—
What little fractions large in look
Engross each honored page!

We'll be content to idly stand,
And grumble not at Fate;
Nor call the gods to lend a hand
To dignify our state;
Nor use the means, that in our way
—Lie strewn—, by which, with ease
Those pleasing to be famous may
Be famous as they please.

No longer are there heights to climb;
No longer, fights to win;
One need not force the House of Time
To gain a passage in—
The gates are wide, the steps are few—
Well might we pass the throng,
And enter with the pigmy crew
That strut before the strong—.

On every hand, in this our day,
The rule is understood:
That knaves—fools—*dei gratia*—may
Command the wise and good—

If saintly leaders yet we boast,
  They are full well advised
That conscience always brings the most
  When best 'tis advertised!

If we were poets, with designs
  To lead the latest schools—
Whose glory is in making lines
  Without the aid of rules—
We'd owe our *points,* as others do
  To old forgotten files—
Which change the dullest pens into
  The very sharpest styles.

——But let us still be satisfied
  To lead a life of prose,
And not attempt to turn aside
  From where the highway goes—
And go you on, or left or right,
  You have, what'er befall,
The friendly wishes I would write
  But that the book's too small!

January 13, 1878.

A SYMBOL

Over the meadow there stretched a lane,
Parting the meadow in segments twain;
And through the meadow and over the sod
Where countless feet had before him trod—
With a wall forever on either hand
Barring the lane from the meadow-land,
There walked a man with a weary face,
Treading the lane at a steadfast pace.

On before him, until the eye
To gauge the distance could no more try,
To where the meadow embraced the sky,
The lane still stretched, and the wall still barred
The dusty lane from the meadow sward.
He paid no heed to the joyous calls

That came from the men who had leaped the walls—
Who paused a moment in song or jest,
To hail him, "Brother, come here and rest";
For the Sun was marching toward the West,
And the man had many a mile to go,
And time is swift and toil is slow.

The grassy meadows were green and fair,
Bestudded with many a blossom rare,
And the lane was dusty, and dry, and bare;
But even there, in a tiny shade
A jutting stone in the wall had made,
A tuft of clover had lately sprung—
It had not bloomed, for it yet was young—
The spot of green caught the traveler's eye,
And he plucked a sprig, as he passed by:
And then, as he held it, there came a thought
In his musing mind, with a meaning fraught
With other meanings.

"Ah, look!" said he,
"The spray is one—and its leaves are three,
A symbol of man, it seems to me,
As he was, as he is, and as he will be!
One of the leaves points back, the way
That I have wearily walked to-day;
One points forward as if to show
The long, hard journey I've yet to go;
And the third one points to the ground below.
Time is one, and Time is three;
And the sign of the Time, in its Trinity—
Past, Present, Future, together bound
In the simplest grass of the field is found!
The lane of life is a dreary lane
Whose course is over a flowery plain.
Who leaps the wall to enjoy the flowers
Forever loses the wasted hours.
The lane is long, and the lane is bare,
'Tis tiresome ever to journey there;
But on forever the soul must wend—
And who can tell where the lane will end?"

The thought was given. Its mission done,
The grass was cast to the dust and sun;
And the sun shone on it, and saw it die
With *all three leaves* turned toward the *sky*.

SELLING A DOG

H'yar, Pot-liquor! What you at? You heah me callin' you?
H'yar, sah! Come an' tell dis little gemmen howdy-do!
Dar, sah, *ain't* dat puppy jes as fat as he kin roll?
Maybe you won't b'liebe it, but he's only six mon's ol'!

'Coon dog? Lord! young marster, he's jes at 'em all de while;
I b'liebe dat he kin smell a 'coon fur half-a-mile.
I don' like to sell him, fur he's wuf his weight in gol';
If *you* didn't want him, sah, he nebber *should* be sol'.

If you takes him off wid you, I'll feel like I wuz lost.
He's de bes' young fightin'-dog I ebber come acrost.
Jes look at dem eyes, young marster; what a sabbage face!—
He won't let no stranger nigger come about de place.

You know Henry Wilson's Bob, dat whipped your fader's Dan?
Pot-liquor jes' chucked dat dog so bad he couldn't stan'!
Well, sah, if you wants him, now I'll tell you what I'll do—
You kin hab him fur a dollar, seein's how it's *you*.

Now, Marster Will, you *knows* it—he's wuf mo'n dat, a heap;
R'al'y, I's a-doin' wrong to let him go so cheap.
Don't you tell nobody, now, what wuz de price you paid—
My ol' 'oman's gwine to gib me fits, sah, I's afraid!

T'ank you, sah! Good-mornin', sah! You tell yo' ma, fur me,
I has got de fines' turkeys dat she ebber see;
Dey is jes as good as any pusson ebber eat.
If she wants a *gobbler*, let her sen' to Uncle Pete.

Dar! I's done got rid ob dat wretched dog at las'!
Drownin' time wuz comin' fur him mighty precious fas'!
Sol' him fur a dollar—well! An' goodness knows de pup
Isn't wuf de powder it'd take to blow him up!

ABRAM J. RYAN

[1836—1886]

HANNIS TAYLOR

AT the end of the Civil War, when the people of the South, draped in mourning for their warrior dead, stood as mourners might stand in some dim cathedral at the bier of their own and only one, a funeral dirge was chanted by an unknown voice from an unseen shrine. All heads were bowed as the weird, soul-stirring strains of "The Conquered Banner," whose measure was taken from an old Gregorian hymn, drew a sob from every Southern heart.

Soon this wonderful poem, whose wail of woe swept over the South as the triumphant shout of the Marseillaise had swept over France, was set to music and sung in every household. Only those who lived in the South in that day, and passed under the spell of that mighty song can properly estimate its power as it fell upon the victims of a fallen cause. The fact that this dirge was not destined to immortality because the state of soul to which it was addressed was ephemeral did not at all impair its effect at the moment it was uttered. When all eyes were turned to the source from which the music came, its author proved to be a young Catholic priest, born in America of Irish parents, who transmitted to him all the poetic and mystic witchery of the Celtic temperament. From the fountain of his soul, which was Irish and Catholic, to its utmost depths, patriotic and devotional poems bubbled up as water flows. By birth and environment, the genius of Father Ryan was limited to two channels, within which it was imprisoned to the end. He sung only of the Southern Confederacy and the Catholic Church, at such odd times as a busy and devoted priest could find to sing; but his poetic genius was far beyond that of any other poet the South has produced since Edgar Allan Poe. Poe and Ryan were twin souls; the one a pagan mystic, the other a Christian mystic.

The lost cause became incarnate in the heart of Father Ryan, who cherished it as his forefathers had cherished the cause of Ireland. As a chaplain in the Southern Army, he appeared upon more than one battlefield, and to the cause he loved an idolized brother gave his life. His ode* in memory of his brother, Captain David J. Ryan, should live forever, for there is no deeper or more martial pathos even in "The Burial of Sir John Moore."

*Printed on p. 4636.

On its mystic and devotional side, Father Ryan's soul was as rich as a diamond-field of South Africa—the gems glistened everywhere. Great poetry, like great music, has always a national flavor. The exquisite spiritual imagery of the poet-priest was distinctively Celtic. It came in his blood from a land in which Christianity was, at the outset, tribal and monastic. In the "Song of the Mystic" he says:

"And I have seen Thoughts in the Valley—
Ah me, how my spirit was stirred!—
And they wear holy veils on their faces,
Their footsteps can scarcely be heard;
They pass through the Valley like Virgins,
Too pure for the touch of a word."

And again in the poem "In Memory of Very Rev. J. B. Etienne":

"A shadow slept folded in vestments,
The dream of a smile on its face,
Dim, soft as the gleam after sunset,
That hangs like a halo of grace
Where the daylight had died in the Valley
And the twilight hath taken its place—
A shadow! but still on the mortal
There rested the tremulous trace
Of the joy of a spirit immortal,
Passed up to his God in His grace."

Father Ryan's dreamy mysticism and self-enclosed reticence clouded every detail of his life. When he spoke of himself it was always in a vague and indirect way. Thus it is a question whether he was born in Hagerstown, Maryland, or in Norfolk, Virginia, not earlier, perhaps, than 1836. I always inferred from what he said that he was born in Norfolk; certainly that was the home of his early childhood. When he was a lad of seven or eight years his family removed to St. Louis, where he was trained under the Brothers of the Christian Schools. After the necessary preparatory studies he entered the ecclesiastical seminary at Niagara, New York. He told me that he was ordained a priest at St. Louis just after he became of age, at a time when he was in such delicate health that he was obliged to sit through the ceremony. At the end of the Civil War, in which he served as a Confederate chaplain, he was stationed at Nashville, afterward at Clarksville, Tennessee, and still later at Augusta, Georgia, where he founded and published for about five years the *Banner of the South,* a paper very influential in that sec-

tion. In 1870 he was stationed at the Cathedral at Mobile, Alabama, where his fame as a pulpit orator reached a very high point. While he could not be eloquent on every stated occasion, at times and in flashes, he was as brilliant as Bossuet or Lamartine. In his best days crowds gathered to hear him. In 1877 he became the pastor of St. Mary's Church in the suburbs of Mobile. I happened to live across the street, and thus our friendship began. Down to that time his poems had been scattered like oak-leaves in the wind through newspapers and magazines. It never had occurred to him to put them together in a book. When I suggested that he should do this, he was indifferent, but said I could do it if I chose. Mr. John L. Rapier, a Catholic gentleman of the noblest and most generous type, then owned the *Mobile Register*. In that newspaper office the poems were first published and, without any machinery for distribution, the sales went up into the thousands, from which the author enjoyed an unusually large share of the profit. He was as generous with money as a prince; when he had it, it fell "alike upon the just and the unjust." His great heart was full of charity and of infinite tenderness. No man ever loved more the poor and lowly. So popular did his poems become that his interest in them was soon bought out by a Baltimore publisher. The current edition is now the twenty-seventh.

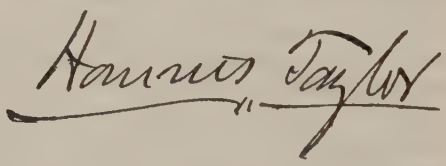
No man ever looked more like a poet than Father Ryan. A weak, delicate body was crowned by a great leonine head, from which soft brown hair floated down over stooping shoulders. His face was always sad. "In his eyes was the twilight of grief, but in that grief the starlight of a smile." He moved along like an old man of seventy, when he was but little over forty, attracting attention from every passer-by. No personality was ever more marked. There was a magnetism about him that cast a spell upon all who came near him. While he was careless in his dress, almost to the point of slovenliness, his dignity and reserve were impenetrable to all save a few very near to his heart. Over and above all else he showed a contempt of danger, a courage that nothing could daunt. He reveled in the perils of a yellow-fever epidemic. During his life at Mobile a noted courtesan, famed for her beauty, fell ill of malignant smallpox. When Father Ryan heard that her companions had fled from her in terror, he went at once to her bedside, nursed her until she died, and placed her body in the coffin. When it appeared that she had bequeathed to him everything she had, he sent it to her next of kin, and then preached a memorial sermon that will always linger in the memories of those who heard it. The story of the Magdalen had not been lost upon him. No more heroic or romantic warrior ever fought under the standard of Christ. He epitomized his own Mobile life when he said:

"To the higher shrine of love divine
My lowly feet have trod,
I want no fame, no other name
Than this—a priest of God!"

In a Franciscan monastery at Louisville, Kentucky, on April 23, 1886, this high-thoughted, sensitive, sad soul passed through that ever-opening door "that swings between Forever and No More." In his poem, "After Sickness at Milan," he wrote:

"What were my thoughts? I had but one regret—
That I was doomed to live and linger yet
In this dark valley where the stream of tears
Flows, and in flowing, deepens thro' the years."

The spirituality of his nature was ever beating against the bars. It was no doubt a happy day for him when his good friend Death opened the door and made possible his escape beyond the stars. To have lived for some years in close communion with this great, heroic, tender soul I shall ever regard as the most precious privilege of my life.



SONG OF THE MYSTIC

All selection are from 'Father Ryan's Poems.' Copyright, P. J. Kenedy and Sons, New York, and used here by permission of the publishers.

I walk down the Valley of Silence—
  Down the dim, voiceless valley—alone!
And I hear not the fall of a footstep
  Around me, save God's and my own;
And the hush of my heart is as holy
  As hovers where angels have flown!

Long ago was I weary of voices
  Whose music my heart could not win;
Long ago was I weary of noises
  That fretted my soul with their din;
Long ago was I weary of places
  Where I met but the human—and sin.

I walked in the world with the worldly;
  I craved what the world never gave;
And I said: "In the world each Ideal,
  That shines like a star on life's wave,
Is wrecked on the shores of the Real,
  And sleeps like a dream in a grave."

And still did I pine for the Perfect,
  And still found the False with the True;
I sought 'mid the Human for Heaven,
  But caught a mere glimpse of its Blue:
And I wept when the clouds of the Mortal
  Veiled even that glimpse from my view.

And I toiled on, heart-tired of the Human,
  And I moaned 'mid the mazes of men,
Till I knelt, long ago, at an altar
  And I heard a voice call me. Since then
I walk down the Valley of Silence
  That lies far beyond mortal ken.

Do you ask what I found in the Valley?
'Tis my Trysting Place with the Divine.
And I fell at the feet of the Holy,
And above me a voice said: "Be mine."
And there rose from the depths of my spirit
An echo—"My heart shall be thine."

Do you ask how I live in the Valley?
I weep—and I dream—and I pray.
But my tears are as sweet as the dew-drops
That fall on the roses in May;
And my prayer, like a perfume from Censers,
Ascendeth to God night and day.

In the hush of the Valley of Silence
I dream all the songs that I sing;
And the music floats down the dim Valley,
Till each finds a word for a wing,
That to hearts, like the Dove of the Deluge,
A message of Peace they may bring.

But far on the deep there are billows
That never shall break on the beach;
And I have heard songs in the Silence—
That never shall float into speech;
And I have had dreams in the Valley
Too lofty for language to reach.

And I have seen Thoughts in the Valley—
Ah me! how my spirit was stirred!
And they wear holy veils on their faces,
Their footsteps can scarcely be heard:
They pass through the Valley like Virgins,
Too pure for the touch of a word!

Do you ask me the place of the Valley,
Ye hearts that are harrowed by Care?
It lieth afar between mountains,
And God and His angels are there:
And one is the dark mount of Sorrow,
And one the bright mountain of Prayer.

ERIN'S FLAG

Unroll Erin's flag! fling its fold to the breeze!
Let it float o'er the land, let it flash o'er the seas!
Lift it out of the dust—let it wave as of yore,
When its chiefs with their clans stood around it and swore
That never! no, never! while God gave them life,
And they had an arm and a sword for the strife,
That never! no, never! that banner should yield
As long as the heart of a Celt was its shield;
While the hand of a Celt had a weapon to wield,
And his last drop of blood was unshed on the field.

Lift it up! wave it high; 'tis as bright as of old!
Not a stain on its green, not a blot on its gold,
Tho' the woes and the wrongs of three hundred long years
Have drenched Erin's Sunburst with blood and with tears!
Though the clouds of oppression enshroud it in gloom,
And around it the thunders of Tyranny boom.
Look aloft! look aloft! lo! the clouds drifting by,
There's a gleam through the gloom, there's a light in the sky,
'Tis the Sunburst resplendent—far, flashing on high!
Erin's dark night is waning, her day-dawn is nigh!

Lift it up! lift it up! the old Banner of Green!
The blood of its sons has but brightened its sheen;
What though the tyrant has trampled it down,
Are its folds not emblazoned with deeds of renown?
What though for ages it droops in the dust,
Shall it droop thus forever? No! no! God is just!
Take it up! take it up! from the tyrant's foul tread,
Let him tear the Green Flag—we will snatch its last shred,
And beneath it we'll bleed as our forefathers bled,
And we'll vow by the dust in the graves of our dead,
And we'll swear by the blood which the Briton has shed,
And we'll vow by the wrecks which through Erin he spread,
And we'll swear by the thousands who, famished, unfed,
Died down in the ditches, wild-howling for bread,
And we'll vow by our heroes, whose spirits have fled,
And we'll swear by the bones in each coffinless bed,

That we'll battle the Briton through danger and dread;
That we'll cling to the cause which we glory to wed,
'Til the gleam of our steel and the shock of our lead
Shall prove to our foe that we meant what we said—
That we'll lift up the green, and we'll tear down the red!

Lift up the Green Flag! oh! it wants to go home,
Full long has its lot been to wander and roam,
It has followed the fate of its sons o'er the world,
But its folds, like their hopes, are not faded nor furled;
Like a weary-winged bird, to the East and the West,
It has flitted and fled—but it never shall rest,
'Til, pluming its pinions, it sweeps o'er the main,
And speeds to the shores of its old home again,
Where its fetterless folds o'er each mountain and plain
Shall wave with a glory that never shall wane.

Take it up! take it up! bear it back from afar!
That banner must blaze 'mid the lightnings of war;
Lay your hands on its folds, lift your gaze to the sky,
And swear that you'll bear it triumphant or die,
And shout to the clans scattered far o'er the earth
To join in the march to the land of their birth;
And wherever the Exiles, 'neath heaven's broad dome,
Have been fated to suffer, to sorrow and roam,
They'll bound on the sea, and away o'er the foam,
They'll sail to the music of "Home, Sweet Home!"

MARCH OF THE DEATHLESS DEAD

Gather the sacred dust
  Of the warriors tried and true,
Who bore the flag of a Nation's trust
And fell in a cause, though lost, still just,
  And died for me and you.

Gather them one and all,
  From the private to the chief;
Come they from hovel or princely hall,
They fell for us, and for them should fall
  The tears of a Nation's grief.

Gather the corpses strewn
O'er many a battle plain;
From many a grave that lies so lone,
Without a name and without a stone,
Gather the Southern slain.

We care not whence they came,
Dear is their lifeless clay!
Whether unknown, or known to fame,
Their cause and country still the same;
They died—and wore the Gray.

Wherever the brave have died,
They should not rest apart;
Living, they struggled side by side,
Why should the hand of Death divide
A single heart from heart?

Gather their scattered clay,
Wherever it may rest;
Just as they marched to the bloody fray,
Just as they fell on the battle day,
Bury them breast to breast.

The foeman need not dread
This gathering of the brave;
Without sword or flag, and with soundless tread,
We muster once more our deathless dead,
Out of each lonely grave.

The foeman need not frown,
They all are powerless now;
We gather them here and we lay them down,
And tears and prayers are the only crown
We bring to wreathe each brow.

And the dead thus meet the dead,
While the living o'er them weep;
And the men by Lee and Stonewall led,
And the hearts that once together bled,
Together still shall sleep.

THE SWORD OF ROBERT LEE

Forth from its scabbard, pure and bright,
  Flashed the sword of Lee!
Far in the front of the deadly fight,
High o'er the brave in the cause of Right,
Its stainless sheen, like a beacon light,
  Led us to Victory.

Out of its scabbard, where, full long,
  It slumbered peacefully,
Roused from its rest by the battle's song,
Shielding the feeble, smiting the strong,
Guarding the right, avenging the wrong,
  Gleamed the sword of Lee.

Forth from its scabbard, high in air
  Beneath Virginia's sky—
And they who saw it gleaming there,
And knew who bore it, knelt to swear
That where that sword led they would dare
  To follow—and to die.

Out of its scabbard! Never hand
  Waved sword from stain as free,
Nor purer sword led braver band,
Nor braver bled for a brighter land,
Nor brighter land had a cause so grand,
  Nor cause a chief like Lee!

Forth from its scabbard! How we prayed
  That sword might victor be;
And when our triumph was delayed,
And many a heart grew sore afraid,
We still hoped on while gleamed the blade
  Of noble Robert Lee.

Forth from its scabbard all in vain
  Bright flashed the sword of Lee;
'Tis shrouded now in its sheath again,
It sleeps the sleep of our noble slain,
Defeated, yet without a stain,
  Proudly and peacefully.

REUNITED

Written after the Yellow Fever Epidemic of 1878.

Purer than thy own white snow,
  Nobler than thy mountain's height;
Deeper than the ocean's flow,
  Stronger than thy own proud might;
O Northland! to thy sister land,
Was late thy mercy's generous deed and grand.

Nigh twice ten years the sword was sheathed;
  Its mist of green o'er battle plain
For nigh two decades Spring had breathed;
  And yet the crimson life-blood stain
From passive swards had never paled,
Nor fields, where all were brave and some had failed.

Between the Northland, bride of snow,
  And Southland, brightest sun's fair bride,
Swept, deepening ever in its flow,
  The stormy wake, in war's dark tide:
No hand might clasp across the tears
And blood and anguish of four deathless years.

When Summer, like a rose in bloom,
  Had blossomed from the bud of Spring,
Oh! who could deem the dews of doom
  Upon the blushing lips could cling?
And who could believe its fragrant light
Would e'er be freighted with the breath of blight?

Yet o'er the Southland crept the spell,
  That e'en from out its brightness spread;
And prostrate, powerless, she fell,
  Rachel-like, amid her dead.
Her bravest, fairest, purest, best,
The waiting grave would welcome as its guest.

The Northland, strong in love, and great,
  Forgot the stormy days of strife;
Forgot that souls with dreams of hate
  Or unforgiveness e'er were rife.
Forgotten was each thought and hushed;
Save—she was generous and her foe was crushed.

No hand might clasp, from land to land;
  Yea! there was one to bridge the tide;
For at the touch of Mercy's hand
  The North and South stood side by side:
The Bride of Snow, the Bride of Sun,
In Charity's espousals are made one.

"Thou givest back my sons again,"
  The Southland to the Northland cries;
"For all my dead, on battle plain,
  Thou biddest my dying now uprise:
I still my sobs, I cease my tears,
And thou hast recompensed my anguished years.

"Blessings on thine every wave,
  Blessings on thine every shore,
Blessings that from sorrow save,
  Blessings giving more and more,
For all thou gavest thy sister land,
O Northland, in thy generous deed and grand."

THE LAND WE LOVE

Land of the gentle and brave!
  Our love is as wide as thy woe;
It deepens beside every grave
  Where the heart of a hero lies low.

Land of the sunniest skies!
  Our love glows the more for thy gloom;
Our hearts, by the saddest of ties
  Cling closest to thee in thy doom.

Land where the desolate weep
In a sorrow no voice may console!
Our tears are but streams, making deep
The ocean of love in our soul.

Land where the victor's flag waves,
Where only the dead are the free!
Each link of the chain that enslaves,
But binds us to them and to thee.

Land where the Sign of the Cross
Its shadow hath everywhere shed!
We measure our love by thy loss,
Thy loss by the graves of our dead!

A LAND WITHOUT RUINS

A land without ruins is a land without memories—a land without memories is a land without history. A land that wears a laurel crown may be fair to see; but twine a few sad cypress leaves around the brow of any land, and be that land barren beautiless and bleak, it becomes lovely in its consecrated coronet of sorrow, and it wins the sympathy of the heart and of history. Crowns of roses fade—crowns of thorns endure. Calvaries and crucifixions take deepest hold of humanity—the triumphs of might are transient—they pass and are forgotten—the sufferings of right are graven deepest on the chronicle of nations.

Yes, give me the land where the ruins are spread,
And the living tread light on the hearts of the dead;
Yes, give me a land that is blest by the dust,
And bright with the deeds of the down-trodden just.
Yes, give me the land where the battle's red blast
Has flashed to the future the fame of the past;
Yes, give me the land that hath legends and lays
That tell of the memories of long vanished days:
Yes, give me a land that hath story and song!
Enshrine the strife of the right with the wrong!
Yes, give me a land with a grave in each spot,
And names in the graves that shall not be forgot;

Yes, give me the land of the wreck and the tomb;
There is grandeur in graves—there is glory in gloom;
For out of the gloom future brightness is born,
As after the night comes the sunrise of morn;
And the graves of the dead with the grass overgrown
May yet form the footstool of liberty's throne,
And each single wreck in the war-path of might,
Shall yet be a rock in the temple of right.

IN MEMORIAM

DAVID J. RYAN, C. S. A.

Thou art sleeping, brother, sleeping
  In thy lonely battle grave;
Shadows o'er the past are creeping,
Death, the reaper, still is reaping,
Years have swept, and years are sweeping
Many a memory from my keeping,
But I'm waiting still, and weeping
  For my beautiful and brave.

When the battle songs were chanted,
  And war's stirring tocsin pealed,
By those songs thy heart wast haunted,
And thy spirit, proud, undaunted,
Clamored wildly—wildly panted;
"Mother! let my wish be granted;
I will ne'er be mocked and taunted
That I fear to meet our vaunted
  Foemen on the bloody field.

"They are thronging, mother! thronging,
  To a thousand fields of fame;
Let me go—'tis wrong, and wronging
God and thee to crush this longing;
On the muster-roll of glory,
In my country's future story,
On the field of battle gory
  I must consecrate my name.

"Mother! gird my sword around me,
Kiss thy soldier-boy 'good-bye.'"
In her arms she wildly wound thee,
To thy birth-land's cause she bound thee,
With fond prayers and blessings crowned thee,
And she sobbed: "When foes surround thee,
If you fall, I'll know they found thee
Where the bravest love to die."

At the altar of their nation,
Stood that mother and her son,
He, the victim of oblation,
Panting for his immolation;
She, in priestess' holy station,
Weeping words of consecration,
While God smiled His approbation,
Blessed the boy's self-abnegation,
Cheered the mother's desolation,
When the sacrifice was done.

Forth, like many a noble other,
Went he, whispering soft and low:
"Good-bye—pray for me, my mother;
Sister! kiss me—farewell, brother";
And he strove his grief to smother.
Forth, with footsteps firm and fearless,
And his parting gaze was tearless
Though his heart was lone and cheerless,
Thus from all he loved to go.

Lo! yon flag of freedom flashing
In the sunny Southern sky:
On, to death and glory dashing,
On, where swords are clanging, clashing,
On, where balls are crushing, crashing,
On, 'mid perils dread, appalling,
On, they're falling, falling, falling,
On, they're growing fewer, fewer,
On, their hearts beat all the truer,
On, on, on, no fear, no falter,
On, though round the battle-altar

There were wounded victims moaning,
There were dying soldiers groaning;
On, right on, death's danger braving,
Warring where their flag was waving,
While Baptismal blood was laving
All that field of death and slaughter;
On, still on; that bloody lava
Made them braver and made them braver,
On, with never a halt or waver,
On in battle—bleeding—bounding,
While the glorious shout swept sounding,
"We will win the day or die!"

And they won it; routed—riven—
Reeled the foemen's proud array:
They had struggled hard, and striven,
Blood in torrents they had given,
But their ranks, dispersed and driven,
Fled, in sullenness, away.

Many a heart was lonely lying
That would never throb again;
Some were dead, and some were dying;
Those were silent, these were sighing;
Thus to die alone, unattended,
Unbewept and unbefriended,
On that bloody battle-plain.

When the twilight sadly, slowly
Wrapped its mantle o'er them all,
Thousands, thousands lying lowly,
Hushed in silence deep and holy,
There was one, his blood was flowing
And his last of life was going,
And his pulse faint, fainter beating
Told his hours were few and fleeting;
And his brow grew white and whiter,
While his eyes grew strangely brighter;
There he lay—like infant dreaming,
With his sword beside him gleaming,

For the hand in life that grasped it,
True in death still fondly clasped it;
There his comrades found him lying
'Mid the heaps of dead and dying,
And the sternest bent down weeping
O'er the lonely sleeper sleeping;
'Twas the midnight; stars shone round him,
And they told us how they found him
Where the bravest love to fall.

Where the woods, like banners bending,
Drooped in starlight and in gloom,
There, when that sad night was ending,
And the faint, far dawn was blending
With the stars now fast descending;
There they mute and mournful bore him,
With the stars and shadows o'er him,
And they laid him down—so tender—
And the next day's sun, in splendor,
Flashed above my brother's tomb.

THE CONQUERED BANNER

Furl that Banner, for 'tis weary;
Round its staff 'tis drooping dreary;
Furl it, fold it, it is best;
For there's not a man to wave it,
And there's not a sword to save it,
And there's not one left to lave it
In the blood which heroes gave it;
And its foes now scorn and brave it;
Furl it, hide it—let it rest!

Take that Banner down! 'tis tattered;
Broken is its staff and shattered;
And the valiant hosts are scattered
Over whom it floated high.
Oh! 'tis hard for us to fold it;
Hard to think there's none to hold it;
Hard that those who once unrolled it
Now must furl it with a sigh.

Furl that Banner! furl it sadly!
Once ten thousands hailed it gladly,
And ten thousands wildly, madly,
  Swore it should forever wave;
Swore that foeman's sword should never
Hearts like theirs entwined dissever,
Till that flag should float forever
  O'er their freedom or their grave!

Furl it! for the hands that grasped it
And the hearts that fondly clasped it,
  Cold and dead are lying low;
And that Banner—it is trailing!
While around it sounds are wailing
  Of its people in their woe.

For, though conquered, they adore it!
Love the cold, dead hands that bore it!
Weep for those who fell before it!
Pardon those who trailed and tore it!
But, oh! wildly they deplore it,
  Now who furl and fold it so.

Furl that Banner! True, 'tis gory,
Yet 'tis wreathed around with glory,
And 'twill live in song and story,
  Though its folds are in the dust:
For its fame on brightest pages,
Penned by poets and by sages,
Shall go sounding down the ages—
  Furl its folds though now we must.

Furl that Banner, softly, slowly!
Treat it gently—it is holy—
  For it droops above the dead.
Touch it not—unfold it never,
Let it droop there furled forever,
  For it droops above the dead.

MY BEADS

Sweet, blessed beads! I would not part
With one of you for richest gem
That gleams in kingly diadem;
Ye know the history of my heart.

For I have told you every grief
In all the days of twenty years,
And I have moistened you with tears,
And in your decades found relief.

Ah! time has fled, and friends have failed
And joys have died; but in my needs
Ye were my friends, my blessed beads!
And ye consoled me when I wailed.

For many and many a time, in grief,
My weary fingers wandered round
Thy circled chain, and always found
In some Hail Mary sweet relief.

How many a story you might tell
Of inner life, to all unknown;
I trusted you and you alone,
But ah! ye keep my secrets well.

Ye are the only chain I wear—
A sign that I am but the slave,
In life, in death, beyond the grave,
Of Jesus and His Mother fair.

A LEGEND

He walked alone beside the lonely sea,
The slanting sunbeams fell upon His face,
His shadow fluttered on the pure white sands
Like the weary wing of a soundless prayer.
And He was, oh! so beautiful and fair!
Brown sandals on His feet—His face downcast,
As if He loved the earth more than the heav'ns.
His face looked like His Mother's—only her's
Had not those strange serenities and stirs
That paled or flushed His olive cheeks and brow.
He wore the seamless robe His Mother made—
And as He gathered it about His breast,
The wavelets heard a sweet and gentle voice
Murmur, "Oh! My Mother"—the white sands felt
The touch of tender tears He wept the while.
He walked beside the sea; He took His sandals off
To bathe His weary feet in the pure cool wave—
For He had walked across the desert sands
All day long—and as He bathed His feet
He murmured to Himself, "Three years! three years!
And then, poor feet, the cruel nails will come
And make you bleed; but, ah! that blood shall lave
All weary feet on all their thorny ways."
"Three years! three years!" He murmured still again,
"Ah! would it were to-morrow, but a will—
My Father's will—biddeth Me bide that time."
A little fisher-boy came up the shore
And saw Him—and, nor bold, nor shy,
Approached, but when he saw the weary face,
Said mournfully to Him: "You look a-tired."
He placed His hand upon the boy's brown brow
Caressingly and blessingly—and said:
"I am so tired to wait." The boy spake not.
Sudden, a sea-bird, driven by a storm
That had been sweeping on the farther shore,
Came fluttering towards Him, and, panting, fell
At His feet and died; and then the boy said:

"Poor little bird," in such a piteous tone;
He took the bird and laid it in His hand,
And breathed on it—when to his amaze
The little fisher-boy beheld the bird
Flutter a moment and then fly aloft—
Its little life returned; and then he gazed
With look intensest on the wondrous face
(Ah! it was beautiful and fair)—and said:
"Thou art so sweet I wish Thou wert my God."
He leaned down towards the boy and softly said:
"I am thy Christ." The day they followed Him
With cross upon His shoulders, to His death,
Within the shadow of a shelt'ring rock
That little boy knelt down, and there adored,
While others cursed, the thorn-crowned Crucified.

BETTER THAN GOLD

Better than grandeur, better than gold,
Than rank and titles a thousand fold,
Is a healthy body and a mind at ease,
And simple pleasures that always please
A heart that can feel for another's woe,
With sympathies large enough to enfold
All men as brothers, is better than gold.

Better than gold is a conscience clear,
Though toiling for bread in an humble sphere,
Doubly blessed with content and health,
Untried by the lusts and cares of wealth,
Lowly living and lofty thought
Adorn and ennoble a poor man's cot;
For mind and morals in nature's plan
Are the genuine tests of a gentleman.

Better than gold is the sweet repose
Of the sons of toil when the labors close;
Better than gold is the poor man's sleep,
And the balm that drops on his slumbers deep

Bring sleeping draughts on the downy bed,
Where luxury pillows its aching head,
The toiler simple opiate deems
A shorter route to the land of dreams.

Better than gold is a thinking mind,
That in the realm of books can find
A treasure surpassing Australian ore,
And live with the great and good of yore.
The sage's lore and the poet's lay,
The glories of empires passed away;
The world's great dream will thus unfold
And yield a pleasure better than gold.

Better than gold is a peaceful home
Where all the fireside characters come,
The shrine of love, the heaven of life,
Hallowed by mother, or sister, or wife.
However humble the home may be,
Or tried with sorrow by heaven's decree,
The blessings that never were bought or sold,
And centre there, are better than gold.

JOSEPH SALYARDS

[1808—1885]

JOHN W. WAYLAND

THE life and achievements of Salyards afford a notable illustration of the victories that high aspiration and industry may win over poverty and obscurity. As a scholar and as a teacher of young men he established his chief claim to remembrance; but his writings entitle him to high rank among the literary figures of Virginia.

Near Front Royal, in what is now Warren County, Virginia, on April 9, 1808, Joseph Salyards was born. The day and month of his birth have since become famous in American history; and the year immediately preceded the one most distinguished in all world history as the birth-year of famous men, especially of great literary men. Salyard's birthplace was an humble cottage that stood almost under the shadow of the Blue Ridge Mountains. There he spent the first six years of his life. On the opposite side of the range, near the summit, William R. Barbee, the sculptor, had his boyhood home. Doubtless the rugged face of Nature smiled with telling influence upon both young souls, and left an image of beauty that hovered forever after before their eyes.

Of Levi Salyards, Joseph's father, little is known, except that early in the century he joined an army that marched against one of the tribes of hostile Indians. Since he never returned from the expedition his fate remains a mystery. Joseph's mother was an English woman, whose maiden name was Alice Edwards. Her ancestry has been traced back to Edward VI. Her parents came to Virginia at an early date, and settled at Williamsburg. She was without literary culture, but was endowed with good judgment and more than ordinary intellectual power. In his lines to "Dear Old England" her son doubtless included her in his thought as he apostrophized the country of her birth.

When Salyards was six years old his mother, with her family, consisting of Joseph, his two brothers and two sisters, moved to Page County, Virginia. There a youth named Henry Gander taught him the English alphabet, and prevailed upon his mother to send him to school. The alphabet was mastered with difficulty, but afterward the boy made more rapid progress in his studies. After a residence of six or seven years in Page County, the family crossed the Massa-

nutten Mountain into the adjoining county of Shenandoah, and settled near New Market. Here Joseph attended school at Newman's school house, studying only arithmetic, and completing Pike's textbook on the subject in the brief session of forty-five days. Then for a year or less he attended school in New Market, studying reading, writing, arithmetic, surveying, and algebra, under the instruction of Mr. George Gilbert. There the proclivities of the youth began to attract attention. Dr. S. G. Henkel and other leading citizens gave him encouragement and loaned him books for the study of Greek, Latin, and the sciences. Every opportunity for improvement was utilized; and yet it is said that altogether his time in schools, as a student, did not exceed two full sessions of nine months each.

After teaching awhile in Rockingham County, and one session in Shenandoah, he married Miss Sarah May of Rockingham about the year 1828. Soon afterward he secured the position of usher in the New Market Academy, through the influence of the Rev. S. K. Hoshour, who, some years before, had inflamed the youth with a passion for Latin by reading to him a part of Virgil's first eclogue. After serving some time as usher, receiving instruction meanwhile in both ancient and modern languages, Salyards appears to have spent several more years teaching, being engaged at least part of the time in the Linville Creek section of Rockingham County. There he doubtless became well acquainted with the striking landscape scenes that later inspired Aldine Kieffer, that other sweet singer of the upper Shenandoah Valley.

Sometime in the 'forties he was called to the principalship of the New Market Academy—later well known as the Polytechnic Institute—a position which he held for forty consecutive years. While yet a comparatively young man he had made himself master of eight languages: Hebrew, Greek, Latin, German, French, Spanish, Italian, and English; he had familiarized himself with the various arts and sciences, and was proficient in all the branches of mathematics. He became the most renowned teacher in the Shenandoah Valley. Roanoke College conferred upon him the degree of Master of Arts, and he was elected an honorary member of the American Institute of Christian Philosophy. Upon the death of Professor Edward H. Courtenay, professor of mathematics in the University of Virginia, in 1853, Salyards was spoken of as a possible successor.

The following description of Salyards's personal appearance may be of interest:

"He was dressed in a faded snuff-colored suit, his eyes were concealed under a pair of colored glasses; his face was smooth without beard, complexion florid, features regular, and head covered with

a suit of disheveled, sandy hair. He seemed to be about thirty years of age, of medium height, and lithe and rounded in form."

When a child of only four or five years of age he had lost the sight of one eye from disease; and about a year before his death, which occurred August 10, 1885, he became totally blind. The love of flute music, which made him akin to Lanier, and a period of dissipation in middle life, which gave him a melancholy kinship to Poe, were thus followed in old age with blindness, which put him in sympathy with many sweet singers, and must have brought before him again, in the fond companionship of memory, Kagey, "The Good Man," the subject of his sweetest song.

In the midst of his scholastic duties Professor Salyards found time to do a vast amount of writing. Only a small portion of his literary productions was given to the public, yet his published works comprise a large number of magazine articles, various essays and pamphlets, several translations, mostly of theological works, and an epic poem, "Idothea," his masterpiece.

"Idothea, or The Divine Image," is a sacred or moral epic. In primary outline it consists of three parts: "The Beauty of Truth"; "Good and Evil", and "The Beauty of Holiness."

The first part comprises three divisions: "Truth in Man"; "Truth in Nature"; "Truth in Revelation." The second part consists of nine idyls: "Eudaemonia"; "Nemesis"; "Voices of Hilltop"; "Waif of Rosendale"; "Pride and Providence"; "The Wranglers"; "Kalonimata"; "Passing Away"; "Behind the Vale." The third part has three divisions: "Uranothen"; "At Home Again"; and "Uranode."

It is evidently the purpose of the poem to account for the origin of the universal idea of the Divine Being, and to "enforce its presence as coincident with the consciousness of good and evil." Erasmus, the hero, the incarnation of Mind, goes forth searching for Truth. He seeks among men; then in nature; and finally hears a voice of divine revelation, which assures him that he shall find the object of his desire, but that he must first pass through many experiences of good and evil, under many aspects and conditions. The second and third parts of the poem contain the fulfilment of this prediction and promise. Amid the vicissitudes portrayed in the second part we begin to catch glimpses of the heroine, Idothea, the incarnation of Truth. Idothea and Erasmus, sometimes almost united, sometimes in painfully separate paths, journey on; surrounded now by the cheering influences of the good, now assailed by the violence of evil. Having thus traversed the moral and intellectual realms, fathomed the sources of knowledge and feeling, tried the real and attempted the ideal, and traced each thought from the natural to the supernatural, they finally

meet and are united; Mind is wedded to Truth, and the beauty of holiness is attained. The poem ends with the joyous nuptial song:

"Hail to the happy youth,
Searcher of hidden truth,
Honest and resolute, faithful and pure!"

There are in "Idothea" occasional lapses, either in thought or in style, but they are rare. In verse form and rhyme scheme an ingenious variety, including blank verse, is employed. The meter and rhythm are well-nigh faultless. A decided musical quality is often manifest. Occasionally a rhyme is found that at first appears somewhat forced or commonplace, but it usually improves with acquaintance. Lack of unity in the poem as a whole may be charged, but hardly with justice. There is a unity, but the interruptions are perhaps too frequent and protracted. The fact that the characters in the story, the figures of the epic, are personified abstractions makes acquaintance with them difficult, and renders their appeal to our imagination and feeling less distinct and powerful. The most serious criticism must be aimed at the non-English terms that are sometimes used when English words would have expressed the same meaning with greater effect. 'Idothea' is, for the most part, intelligible only to scholars, though certain divisions have a universal message and should be popular with all classes of readers.

The observant reader of "Idothea" is constantly attracted by the charm of phrasing, the wealth of allusion, the local color, and the beauty and depth of the embodied thought. Passages of the most vivid description abound; vigorous satire is not wanting; the narrative moves with strength and dignity; and in several places are lyric strains that sound afar, and return in echoes. There is pathos that must appeal to every heart that has known love and sorrow.

This sketch of Salyards and his masterpiece may be closed with a quotation from an English critic, Sir G. T. Hamilton, K.C.B., writing in the *Westminster Quarterly:*

"After a very careful perusal, we hesitate not to pronounce this a great Moral Epic. . . . Like Milton and Shelley, the author of 'Idothea' seems to feel and appreciate the magic of classic and euphonious names, the power of musical terms and epithets. . . . The pauses and cadences are so musically adjusted, as generally to gratify both the ear and the understanding. For the mechanism of musical numbers, let any one take a passage from the first or third 'Idothea,' and a similar passage from Pope, Byron, or Tennyson, read them in connection, and compare them in respect to rhythm, harmony, and ease of expression—then judge in whose favor the

command of language is found. . . . As to power of conception, we doubt if the whole range of English poetry presents more sublime views than will be found in Idos II., pages 55-72, and in Idos III., pages 97-104." (See Henkel's 'Life of Salyards,' page 19.)

John W. Wayland.

MOONLIGHT

All selections are from 'Idothea.' Copyrighted by the author and used by permission

This Summer night in starry silence brings
The far-off murmur of the mountain springs;
High rolls the moon amid her golden day,
And down our darkness bends the solar ray.
Through depths serene, a sea of silver white
Flows from the sky, and mingles with the night,
Blent, sober'd, soften'd; were the truth unknown,
I must believe this lustre all her own.
So, man, enlighten'd as he trims the vale,
Transmits an Image, cold, indeed, and pale.
The bright conceptions, spirit-wing'd and fleet,
Approach our clay, and darken as they meet:
Our fallen powers of heart and brain impure,
Refract, distort them, intercept, obscure;
And some, whose souls the Primal Light revere,
See no reflection of the heavenly here.

SUNRISE

The fading stars reluctantly withdrew
Their keen regard, and dark the coppice grew;
A fleecy paleness overspread the moon,
And orient airs began their whispers soon,
And far the tall oracular pines above,
Passed something like the first faint smile of love;
And something seem'd to whisper down from heaven,
"Awake, my sweetest minstrel of the seven!

Ye happy tenants of the wood and lawn,
Arise, my loves, and drink the joys of dawn!"
Long, misty lines, of dim, uncertain hue
Reach'd forth, divergent, underneath the blue,
Suffused the stars, and, sloping down the West,
Set rose and ruby in the lunar crest.
Earth leaned to meet the coming Deity,
And mountains hurried from the West to see.
The orient lines are misty now no more;
The golden reins are flashing at the door;
The gate unfolds—Time's ancient songs begin;
The king of glory and of day comes in!

THE RAINBOW

Oft have I seen the Summer cloud distil
Its radiant treasure on the woody hill;
The golden drops divide the evening beam,
And build an arch of Beauty o'er the stream.
And strange, I thought, that things unseen and small,
Could form an arch, by harmony of all!
Lo! here I see the radiant worlds descend,
In paths of light, that interweave and blend,
That wreathe, and curve, and harmonize, and twine
Around the throne of Truth and Love divine.

HARVEST HOME

And now 'twas in the time of golden grain,
We saw the peasants hasten o'er the field.
How pleasing, when the Reapers of the day
With faithful toil have dress'd the harvest field,
That each may seek a home of quiet rest,
And meet the greeting of a happy face!
The babe in transport climbs his weary knee,
And lisps in language soothing to the heart.
The nectar sweet of industry he sips
Before the frugal board. The chemist finds
No such Elixir in his crucibles:
Boon of the good, the gift of love to men:
Plain virtue keeps a shrine, and there to kneel
Is not the lot of conquerors and kings.

A SONG

From Canto III—Suspense.

I'll weave a wreath of bright hues three,
For the brow of my charming youth,
And say, You must wear it, my love, for me,
This garland of love and truth.
For as its beauty and perfume,
Are shed for thee alone,
Thy true Lorraine, and her youthful bloom,
While they last, shall be thine own,
My love;
While they last, shall be thine own.

But as its sweets, so fragrant now,
Must soon be sigh'd away,
Its leaves upon thy happy brow,
Soon wither and decay,
These charms you love must wither too,
This heart lie cold and lone;
But thou wilt know, Oh! deep and true,
They once were all thine own,
My love;
They once were all thine own.

Not I to Roman, golden shrine,
My orisons can pay;
Thy God, thy worship shall be mine,
Through loving night and day;
When thou shalt seek, at dewy morn,
Some holy spot alone,
Lorraine shall still thy side adorn,
Thy prayer shall be her own,
My love;
Thy prayers shall be her own.

I knew a prayer, dear mother taught
My infant lips to say—
Sweet words my dawning memory caught,
Are warm and fresh to-day:—

And when she pass'd, I pray'd it o'er,
Aye, oft in tears alone,
This prayer and thine are two no more;
They both are all your own,
My love;
They both are all your own.

I'll be an Houri, fond and fair,
In Tooba grove with you,
A Peri of the lucid air,
Less beautiful than true.
And when you muse, or wish, or sigh,
Will bring this fragrant zone,
A faithful bliss, forever nigh,
A life which is your own,
My love;
A life which is your own.

Say not Fate is unrelenting,
Mercy smiles in Nature still,
Arrimanes yields, repenting,
Kneeling to the Holy Will.
How the mountains smile again!
Fragrance laughs along the plain;
Whispering breezes winged with light,
Speak of peace and joy to-night.
Stars, kind stars, so sweetly shining
In the holy depths of space,
Send their twinkling beams, entwining
Round the sorrows of my face.

Cease, fond heart, your long repining!
Bliss once more is on the earth;
Joyful spirits, close inclining,
Hold a festival of mirth:
Sweet compassion, power divine,
Smooths the azure hyalline;
Cherub happiness comes down,
Through the cloudlets' golden-brown!

Through each soul the Beauty streaming,
Thanks and adorations swell;
This old heart, with raptures teeming,
Must its tale of rapture tell.

I had lost the heavenly seeming,
Lonely lost in wintry years;
Lo! again the world is beaming
With the banishment of tears!
Lonely I shall feel no more;
Angels smile within my door!
All the love of life I find,
Flowing back in whispers kind.
Heaven hath brought my darling treasure,
Blooming to my arms again—
Light of age, and bliss of leisure,
With his lovely, lost Elaine!

MORE LIGHT!

The verge, the verge of all we know;
New mysteries rise, old mysteries go;
The flashes of Ithuriel's wand,
The dawn of something still beyond—
Behind the seal, behind the seal,
Brief gleams of hidden Truth reveal,
All beauteous as the bow of heaven,
Yet snatched away as soon as given,
The spiritual within the blue,
The radiant region of the True.
I see soft fingers, pure and white,
Half draw the curtains from the Light,
Where down each immaterial groove,
New thoughts immortal live and move.
I well may deem it lovely there:—
O, when will Genius make it clear!
Whence hope looks in from shades afar,
To woo me, like a loving star;
Where some I love have gone to find
The transports of a wider mind.

Thou dear unknown! The breath I draw
Is warm with some mysterious awe!
Oh, lend the hand I yet shall see,
And lift me to felicity!
There once again the Muses dwell
On sunny slopes of asphodel,
And Orphic lines and leaves ideal
Shall make us realize the Real;
Shall make us see, if we can see,
The foibles of our infancy;
The blinding meteor in the haze,
Illusive formulæ of praise;
And gifts, and glories, creeds, and crimes,
The iron bands of iron times;
Our dreams of Power and Majesty,
Dim ripples on a summer sea.

E'en now the gold-tipped clouds betray
The rosy dawn of brighter day,
When men shall know and nations see
A glorious range of destiny;
When fate shall widen as we go,
The lucid sweep of mind below,
And show, without the light of suns,
The path progressive Nature runs;
When Faith shall worship something true,
With wiser, nobler deeds to do,
And give the heart and head to trace
The hopes of an immortal race.
Ye central suns! revolve, revolve,
And ripen Nature's vast resolve.

MORE LOVE.

"Let there be light."—That light was Love,
Unfolded from the gates above;
For Love was but the Light unborn,
Till Darkness opened into Morn.
Before Hyperion's golden flame,
From heaven the rosy Eros came,
The Dove divine—the Grace to give
This dust to breathe, this heart to live;
The harmony of heart with heart,
The whole encompassing the part,
The part enbosomed in the Whole,
And all pulsating with a soul,
Responsive, throbbing—breast to breast;
The Dove that blesses and is blest;
The Love that lives within the Light,
With dear delights of sound and sight;
That paints the plain, that vaults the sky,
Attunes the ear, enchants the eye,
And calls the kindling soul to be
A living, leaping ecstasy,
Forever panting for the More
Which fills the Lord's celestial store.
Then Beauty—Daughter of the True,
Stooped to the range of mortal view,
And Love, benevolent, divine,
First taught these beauteous worlds to shine,
The flowers to wear ethereal hue,
The vale be green, the mountains blue,
And Venus flew from cloud to wave,
Rejoicing in the bliss she gave;
Up sprung the pulse of Love and Feeling,
With voice and tongue to dust appealing:

"Be wise, be vigilant, be true;
Love may diverge to Hate in you;
Pride, glory, power, wealth, passion, strife,
May steep in Crime the Good of life,

And Evil—Eblis of the Crime,
Embitter all the streams of time.
And clashing tongues shall writhe with hate,
And bleeding bosoms talk of Fate,
And fetters stained with blood shall be
The bitter prize of Purity."

"I have not loved the world"—and why?
The wounded heart bedims the eye,
And o'er the Grace of Nature throws
The gory drapery of its woes.
Oh! haste the day, devolving Fate,
When man shall find no crime to hate;
My Love, my Dove, come haste away;
Bring from the hills the brighter day,
When Love, the complement of Law,
Shall yield no troth and trust for awe.
Lo! now the paths of God are straight;
The heart, with angels at the gate,
Shall feel the Love which makes the Fair,
Warm in the universal air,
And crime, remorse, and hate shall be
The fading verge of Memory.

KAGEY—"THE GOOD MAN"

Come, meekest virgins of the vale,
With silent step and votive tear,
With cypress boughs and pansies pale—
Your Abdiel is sleeping here.
From Pennsylvania's epic shades,
Where first the paths of life he trod,
Sweet Ephratah, thy vestal maids,
Bedew this consecrated sod;—
What Elah that the prophets knew,
On holier ground its shadow threw?

Come see where now the mantling snow,
One spot with whitest swell invests:—
Here with his children deep below
In silent happiness he rests.

Ay, purer than the snow that heart,
  Which meekly lies unthrobbing here;
More undefiled the god-like part
  He bore in our precarious sphere,
And deathless in our souls shall be
The fragrance of his memory.

The breezes of suspiring Spring
  From Massanutten's side shall blow,
Around this spot their incense fling,
  And sigh in holy whispers low;
For while with joyful haste he trod,
  Yon deepening dale and arduous hill,
The conscious, all-pervading God
  Engrossed his soul-felt whispers still,
And still the airs of hill and plain,
Effusions from his lips retain.

In yonder lane the widow lorn—
  Naomi of our heartless years—
Leans o'er her orphans every morn,
  And yields to unavailing tears;
For, he whose voice had soothed so long
  Sad memory's unobtrusive sigh,
Whose hand secured from reckless wrong,
  Whose bosom bled at sorrow's cry,
He too has left our wintry shore—
He hears the sufferer plead no more.

Ah! never down the rocky vale
  She hastes to meet her orphans more;
Shares the warm kiss and lifts the pail,
  White-wreathed with sweetness from his store.
No more the fatherless from play,
  Shall run with lisping joy to tell—
"The good man brings his gifts to-day;
  Come see his white locks in the dell."
Deep Death hath wrapped in darkness now,
The honors of that reverend brow.

Long years through flood and beating storm,
The messenger of life divine,
We saw his worn and wasting form
Expanding still his blest design;
Age came with mortal omens sere,
Keen Pain, and Blindness, and Decay;
Though clouded in his high career,
The glorious watchman spurned delay;
Through dark'ning years, wrapt echo rung
The dictates of his fervent tongue.

And when from each familiar aisle,
Inveterate Time his feet withdrew,
E'en strangers paused to share his smile,
And learn submission sweet and true.
As ling'ring years subdued his frame,
Still warmer grew the whispered prayer;
Till silence o'er his chamber came;
The shadow of White Death was there;
Wan daughters ceased their watch to keep,
And strangers turned away to weep.

Cease, meekest virgins of the vale!
Dim not with tears your Abdiel's tomb;
Fond spirit of the choral gale,
Thy starlit wing of Faith resume!
He has rejoined the countless throng,
That glow in unapparent space;
Sweet on his lips triumphant song,
Ethereal beauty on his face,
And radiant with Immortal youth,
He wings the realms of love and Truth.

ENGLAND AND AMERICA

Dear Old England, ever leading
  Onward through the files of Fate,
Foremost where the brave are bleeding,
  Foremost where the wise debate;
    Mistress of the willing sea,
    Mother of the nations free,
    Friend of Genius, Learning, Art,
    Honest friend of honest heart;
Source of social elevation,
  Schemes of wide benevolence,
Pioneer to every nation,
  Up the steeps of Providence!

Glorious records of duration!
  Sons of Genius—what a roll!
Nature's noblest illustration
  That the nations have a soul.
    Young, triumphant in the West,
    Rules her Daughter—'to be blest'—
    Wider prospect, strong and free,
    Wooing from Futurity;
England, too, and yet another,
  Treasuring happier leaves of Time,
Wise and virtuous, like her mother,
  She may seize a Goal sublime.

Not the clouds of life can smother,
  Not the frowns of Fate depress,
Saxon with a Saxon brother,
  Call'd to paths of Happiness,
    Lo! they walk the Valleys free,
    Cleave the mountain, tame the sea,
    Leave, when life below is done,
    Cities gleaming in the sun.
Noble Workers, work together;
  Shape the world for Peace to reign;
Plough the Prairie, clear the Heather,
  Bring the Golden Age again!

* * * * * *

GEORGE HERBERT SASS

("Barton Grey")

[1845—1908]

JOHN BENNETT

AMONG the many partisan poems which appeared during the war for Southern independence was a group of verses widely known for beauty and dramatic force, which, while filled with the fire of passionate adversity, were notable for their peculiar maturity, significance, and sureness of technique, qualities for which the writer was singled out as one among the younger song-writers of the time who gave signs of lasting strength.

During the critical period immediately following the end of the Confederacy, and at intervals from 1869 to 1890, in magazines which were standard, and in the sanguine, ephemeral journals whose outburst characterized the hopes of the day—*The Nineteenth Century, New Eclectic, Southern Magazine, Southern Field and Fireside, The Rural Carolinian, The Galaxy, Appleton's Journal* (old series), *The Independent, Lippincott's Magazine, Atlantic Monthly,* etc.—appeared, under a varying signature, many ballads and lyrics, distinguished by unaffected romantic sentiment, intimacy, simple pathos—the frank expression of a heart moved by sensuous impression and enraptured by beauty, yet, in a period notable for its moral decadence, as ideally pure and chaste as we ask the heart of a woman to be.

Many of these poems won wide circulation, persistently reappearing in fugitive form through three decades, during which the identity of the writer remained concealed behind the pseudonym of "Barton Grey."

Over that signature, or, negligently, as anonymous, the verses were included in collections and printed in anthologies, at home and abroad, until, in 1904, a selection from the scattered lyrics was printed by G. P. Putnam's Sons, New York, under the title 'The Heart's Quest, a Book of Verses, by Barton Grey,' in which authorship was acknowledged by George Herbert Sass, Barrister, Master-in-Equity, of the Common Pleas Court of Charleston County, South Carolina.

The poems in this collection have been much quoted through the South, won critical appreciation in the North, and a cordial reception from British reviewers. But the slender volume, while containing much of the writer's characteristic poesy, omits much more

which must be considered in any satisfactory estimate of his life and work.

George Herbert Sass ("Barton Grey") was born in Charleston, South Carolina, December 24, 1845; and died in Charleston, February 19, 1908. It was justly said he spent his life in and for Charleston. His father, Jacob Keith Sass, a contemporary, and in St. Michael's Church, Charleston, a colleague of James L. Petigru, William J. Grayson, and others whose names are household words in South Carolina, was Charleston-born, of German parentage; a man of integrity and acumen, he early entered the Bank of Charleston, attained its presidency through superlative mastery of bank-system and an accurate judgment of men, and held that honorable position until his death.

His mother, Octavia Murden, a woman of culture and piety, of Welsh descent, with a Welsh gift of inspiring thought, died when her son was only seventeen, but her influence upon him was deep and lasting. Through her he inherited the *penchant* for versification, his grandmother, Mrs. Eliza Murden, a contemporary of Penina Moïse, the Jewess, being a voluminous writer, of whose verse but little survives.

The son was educated at the school of Miles, Searle and Sachtleben, Charleston, and in the College of Charleston, whence he was graduated with first honors, in 1867, his father's death, in 1865, having left him doubly orphaned. In recognition of subsequent distinction, the College, in 1902, conferred upon him the degree of Doctor of Laws.

He studied law in the office of the late Charles Richardson Miles, whose notable advocacy in criminal and civil law was equaled by his ability in equity, and whose taste in literature was as marked as his proficiency was great. Two years later Mr. Sass was admitted to the Bar of South Carolina in the last class of students examined by the old Court of Appeals.

For several years he practiced law with increasing repute. At the beginning of his legal career he was sought out to act as referee in cases where the clearest and most unbiased judgment was desired, it being then the custom, before the State's creation of the office of master-in-equity, to submit points in legal dispute to a referee whose demonstrated ability was indisputable, and whose equable temperament was mutually acknowledged. In 1883 he was appointed, by the Governor of the State, Master-in-Equity for the Courts of Charleston County, an appointment confirmed, through varying administrations and by the vote of his people in election, for a quarter of a century.

For twenty-five years he discharged the duties of his office with

unfaltering assiduity, without rest, save for short recesses, ever returning, impelled by an extraordinary sense of duty, to his engagements. His health, impaired by incessant application, and by the increasing burden of involved responsibility, gave way during a season of protracted heat in 1907, and he succumbed, during an attack of grippe, to the result of overwork, February 19, 1908.

As Master-in-Equity but two others may be named as eminent in local office as he: Edward R. Laurens and James Tupper, men preëminent in their time. His findings were rarely reversed and were often quoted; his opinions were widely sought, and frequently consulted by the leaders of an unusually distinguished legal community; his name was a synonym for justice. For a quarter-century he added to the peace and dignity of the community by just interpretation of its laws.

In 1883 he married Anna Eliza Ravenel, daughter of Dr. St. Julien Ravenel—a scientist whose name is indissolubly connected with the discovery of the phosphate beds of Carolina—and of Harriott Horry Ravenel, author of 'The Life of Eliza Pinckney,' 'Life and Times of William Lowndes,' 'Charleston, the Place and the People.' From this union sprang two children, a son and a daughter.

Early showing a predilection for literature, George Herbert Sass first became known, in 1862, as a writer of partisan verses; he bore off a prize offered by *Southern Field and Fireside* for the most striking poem on the war. Several of these early songs were widely bruited about; but the partisan poem which gave him greatest note was "A Prayer for Peace: Hath God Forgot?" It is dramatic, and, written at the age of seventeen, in its polished style is strangely mature; it was published while the writer was in the Confederate service.

The end of the war silenced the partisan note, but multiplied channels of publication; during several years he produced uninterruptedly a stream of more than acceptable ballad and song, his unhackneyed verses being characterized as among the first to relieve the poesy of the South from the constant and reiterated criticism of the Northern press. "The Quest of Father Boniface" "met a flattering reception as an earnest of the future," said Charles E. Chichester, at whose suggestion the author assumed the pseudonym under which thereafter his identity remained concealed.

For ten years, in constantly increasing austerity, the poet's work gave every token of realizing its early promise. But, with the appointment as master-in-equity, the song-writer's opening career almost abruptly closed; after that date he wrote little verse, and the critic has his instance: where the two opposing faculties, creative and critical, are combined, the development of reason, in

the interpretation of arbitrary law, foils the growth of inspiration. His life is an example of analytical power perfected at the expense of imagination; for, as he himself says: "The truth is, not all men can write Hamlet's soliloquy and his advice to the players also." Contemplating the promise of his youth, and the quality of his best, one comes to the inevitable conclusion that what a community gained in just interpretation of the law was a distinct loss to Southern literature.

The mass of a poet's product matters little; at last he is ranked by his best. "Barton Grey's" best, as most characteristic work, is comprised in a small group of poems which deserve wider recognition than they have yet received, bearing the form of genuine inspiration and of an art which seems sure to be approved in time.

Of the slender collection, published criticism can be but comparative; no chronological order is observed, and it is difficult at times to place the poems; his early work is mature in style, and his later work is of undiminished freshness; his thoughts deepened; he gained discretion; yet reserve was notable first and last. As a thinker, he concords with Arthur Hugh Clough in protestant conscience, a growing sense of ultimate justice, and in unflinching constancy; youth's uneasy, questioning fire closes in grave acceptance of life's cost and in fine appreciation of its compensations of chastity and beauty. He was no altruist, but was without a misanthropic touch; Byron, Poe, and Shelley little appealed to him; renunciation produced in him no lassitude; common sense restrained him from being fantastical; justice prevented him from being extreme. Yet his is preëminently the poetry of disillusionment; the notes of longing, of deference, of wistfulness, of loss, and of deep, earthly discouragement, sound persistent; often, by a poet's device, a peculiar pathos emphasizes the text, by a catch or a break in the versification. And the wistful, lost illusion ends in philosophy, of which one-half is ethics, one-half patient faith.

The monologues are, at best, metrical experiments; the narratives are, on the whole, less convincing than the lyrics; the best, "The Quest of Father Boniface" and "The Guest of Mary," are poetical fantasies, of charm rising from careful and dextrous construction, a rich vocabulary, decorative beauty in suggestive phrase, and fluency, rather than inspirational flight; in flow and facile rhyme they recall the "Ingoldsby Legends." The lyrics are of genuine tenderness and simplicity, characterized by convincing, half-bewildered pathos.

Yet, however deep the emotion, it is always in control, even in the most intimate confession of passion; the attitude is that of musing upon pain rather than of uncontrollable suffering; from which springs a peculiar aloofness, which reaches its highest development

of abstraction from personal feeling in the "Epitaph Upon the Confederate Dead." From this deliberate balance between feeling and reason is one marked exception, "In a King-Cambyses Vein," which, in force and unpremeditated style, is, perhaps, the most spontaneous of the author's verse. Though, superficially, at times, his verse recalls great Victorian voices; though in youth he affected the minor poetics of Robert Buchanan; though deeply effective upon him was the intellect of Arthur Clough, justifying him to himself, his most enduring verse is touched more deeply by the self-forgetful dignity of the Greek. "The Epitaph upon the Confederate Dead," and the singularly reticent "Elegy on the Death of Lee," are marked by classic quality. Three stern couplets, stately, unemotional, with no false appeal to sentimentality or touch of affected woe, shorn of every spurious ornament, invoking only the spirit of eternal justice, the "Epitaph" attains eminence; Mr. Lewisohn pronounces it "undoubtedly the best epitaph in American literature, one of the best in all literature; worthy to be named with the great dedicatory elegiacs in the Greek Anthology"; while in its perfect simplicity, deep, unsentimental pathos, and impressive close, the "Elegy on Robert Edward Lee" is not only one of the best elegies in American literature, but is pregnant of perpetual charm.

The classic bent of the poet's mind is further shown by his excellent translation from mediæval religious poets. His rendition of Balde's "Dirge on the Death of the Empress Leopoldina" won high encomiums from Archbishop Trench, with that eminent authority's praise upon renderings of Damiani's "Hymn on the Glory and Delights of Paradise," and of "The Dying Swan," the peculiar difficulties of which his translation deftly overcomes.

The selection and translation of the inscriptions to the Confederate Army and Navy, on the Jefferson Davis monument, at Richmond, Virginia, are his. So, also, the prose inscription on the Timrod monument, Washington Square, Charleston, South Carolina.

After appointment as master-in-equity, though publishing little verse, he continued seriously to impress letters through the vehicle of prose, delivering a number of addresses on ethical and literary topics, notably a baccalaureate address before the University of South Carolina, "Ideals of Life" (1898); "Arthur Hugh Clough" (1897); "A Plea for Individuality" (1897); "The Things that Matter" (1901); "Diversions and Consolations of the Scholar" (1903).

While as a poet he chose for his verse cloistral seclusion in well-kept anonymity, as a man he was a friend to inspiration in every walk of life, and as critic and judge of men and letters gave personal encouragement generously to desert through a broad acquaintance widened constantly by his own friendliness.

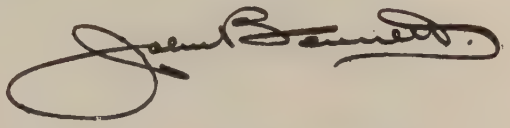
To strangers he was courteous but reserved; with friends, facile and merry; under a shy crust of ceremony, a simple and unaffected gentleman. Abreast of his time in attainment, he was old-fashioned in the thorough classical acquirement, highly-cultivated literary taste, and eminent legal training which characterized the older day, as also in the mingling of unaffected formality with kindly simplicity in his manner. Of the highest ideals of life, his quiet occasional humor, which in his writings became gentle satire, was illumined by shrewd common sense and discernment; an acute student of humanity, he was proverbially humane, his disposition serenely poised; a modest, retiring, attractive, companionable man, welcomed as a distinguished acquisition to social gatherings, faithfully generous of friendships, devotedly attached to his family, he lived a charming, quiet life in a quaintly charming home. From his room in the county court-house, confine of no æsthetic charm and less æsthetic inspiration, he turned from the adjudication of arbitrary affairs into the cool covert of a private lane, white-marble-flagged, green-ivy-grown, beyond the gates of which a quiet garden lay. Through this changeless alley he emerged, year after year, to the changing circumstances of the time, from a home, as shut in by shy environment, as filled with the charm of unpretending scholarship, as retired into its own peace as his best verse at its highest. Here, remote from the constant pressure of increasing engagements, he devoted the diminishing hours of life to the service of letters, as a relief from the burden of office and an escape from the sordidness which the new-wakening of the South thrust unwelcomed upon the State.

In this his work and life represent an essentially Southern ideal of culture, peculiarly true: that the man of actual affairs, in business practical, in administration of the law undeviatingly just, in authority patient, in service of the public efficient to the highest degree, should still retain, amid the perplexity and ever-increasing distraction of public life, intellectual disengagement sufficient for the lightly desinent flight of lyrical poesy and the sustained and concentrated effort of critical prose. From this power of disengagement follows a peculiarity notable in the songs of "Barton Grey": not his natural objective environment, but his own subjective fancy was his constant inspiration; less than any other Southern poet is he stirred by the immediacy of nature, his deepest concern being, as of his prototype, Clough, not physical experience, but the higher spiritual event of life; from this rises the sense of aloofness, which, with an undefined melancholy, and a pallidly sensuous spirit of beauty, characterizes all his individual verse.

During his life a leader of literary criticism in his native city,

he influenced the community widely by his discriminate comment on current literature, and by his attitude added distinction to a notably conservative Southern journal, and not a little to its indigenous and agreeable flavor.

What Law gained by his life's course Letters lost; yet by the handful of his best he remains, after Henry Timrod, first poet of South Carolina.



THE QUEST OF FATHER BONIFACE

All poems are from 'The Heart's Quest.' Published by G. P. Putnam's Sons, and used here by permission of the publishers.

The morning light stole in with wavering feet
Across the chapel threshold, through the casement,
Where the white clematis drooped low in sweet
And indolent abasement,

Strangely illumining with golden grace
Each graven scroll and deep-hued monkish psalter;
Gilding the gloom where Father Boniface
Knelt at the chapel altar;

Painting fair aureoles of divers hues
'Round sculptured saints and monumental martyrs,
Barons and knights who drew the teeth of Jews,
And swore by roods and garters;

Crept over painted windows where outshone
Crusaders who clove skulls of Moor and Paynim;
Pointed St. Peter's beard and showed Saint John
The red axe which had slain him;

Played on the king's rich robes, and then did pass
Up from the maiden's feet, and made still larger
The death-drawn face which dark Herodias
Bore on the fatal charger;

Gleamed on the serpent's scales, and deftly ran
Through Eve's fair fingers o'er the golden apple;
Then blithely leaped to where Sebastian
With his death-throes did grapple;

And circling 'round the consecrated place,
Came gloriously back to Baron Walter,
Who gave them all—and Father Boniface—
Each side the chapel altar.

Good Baron Walter in his marble rest,
With cold feet crossed and pallid eyelids steady;
And jolly Boniface, whose monkish vest
Was two ells round already.

What the fat monk thought that fair summer tide,
What carnal hopes his jovial soul did foster,
Who knows? as kneeling by the altar-side,
He hummed his Pater-noster.

This thing is certain, that Maid Marian
Full often went that June moon to confession,
And ne'er had Boniface, ere that began,
Held such a lengthened session.

And she had bright black eyes and rosy cheeks,
And dimples that might conquer an ascetic;
And Boniface, if rightly rumor speaks,
Had sympathies poetic.

Howe'er that be, the Prince of Evil won
High leave to work him dole—the legend has it—
For one long day from dawn to set of sun
By deed express or tacit.

And so it chanced that, as that summer morn
He told his beads, and conned his missal over,
From meadows vocal with the rustling corn,
And redolent of clover,

Athwart the door the breeze came stealing in,
And with long gusty sighs did stir the arras,
Till each quaint figure seemed a shape of sin
His pious soul to harass.

And through the open window fluttered by
A Butterfly, so gorgeous and so splendid
You would have thought all hues of earth and sky
Were in its bright wings blended;

A gay thing, born of summer when the vales
The sun and dew do gloriously bedizen,
Rocked in a poppy's lap by elfin gales,
Ere the new moon was risen.

It fluttered now before the fat monk's face,
Sprinkling rare gold-dust on the illumined missal,
Now floated in the lucid interspace,
Lighter than down of thistle.

So gorgeous bright, so marvellously fair,
What wonder that the monk forgot his aves,
His whispered orison and muttered prayer,
In thought of merle and mavis!

In visions of the lovely earth without,
Lying all lapped in languid bliss of summer,
Of cool dark hollows where the cuckoo's shout
Startles the wayward comer:

Of many a green and flowered slope,
Of brooklets through dim leafy arcades slipping;
Ay! and bright visions, too, of love and hope,
And peasant maidens, tripping

Through forest paths with milking pail and can,
Adown the daisy fields and through the thicket—
Perchance he even saw Maid Marian
Lean smiling o'er her wicket,

And half-unconsciously he raised his hand,
  And strove to grasp the filmy-winged intruder;
But sure was never, e'en in fairy-land,
  So subtle an eluder.

Between the fat monk's fingers swift it slipped,
  Past aisle and pew, until the airy creature
Beneath the vaulted archway sudden dipped
  Into the world of Nature.

And Father Boniface rose then and turned
  From mass and missal, orison and psalter,
Left prayer unsaid and homily unlearned,
  Forgot both psalm and psalter,

And still before him that bright vision danced,
  And still the sun shone out o'er hill and hollow,
And elfin shapes before his dazed eyes glanced,
  And beckoned him to follow.

Along the forest path and through the field,
  By hazel-coppice and by daisy meadow,
The gay thing flew, now gleaming, now concealed,
  In varying light and shadow.

Maid Marian looked out and saw him pass,
  Dame Dorothy cried "Oh!" and "Ave Mary!"
But the fat monk stayed not for dame nor lass,
  For smile nor miserere,

Stayed not his quest, and still the Butterfly
  Darted, now here, now there—on rose and lily
Pausing alternate, where the sunbeams lie,
  And in dark hollows chilly.

And all the golden noon grew, waned, and died,
  And twilight crept on over moor and coppice,
And one by one, along the country-side,
  Bent down the sleepy poppies;

And from the west came trooping clouds of doom,
And sudden flashes lit the purple quiet,
And thunder-peals broke up the horrid gloom
In elemental riot.

And Boniface in vain looked up and down,
And crossed himself, and cursed that fatal ramble;
Weary he was and footsore, and his gown
Was rent by thorn and bramble;

And his bright guide had vanished; so he turned,
With heavy heart his weary way retracing,
And owned with bitter wisdom, dearly earned,
The folly of the chasing.

But to his startled eye the path seemed strange,
He saw no more the hawthorn dell and thicket
Where once Maid Marian was wont to range;
The cottage and the thicket

No longer stood where he had seen them stand,
When that strange quest began, and all around him
Great waves of change seemed rolling on the land,
To dazzle and confound him.

The Abbey walls were dim and mouldering;
The door hung wide with broken hinge and panel;
And the sad ivy crept o'er everything
In many a time-worn channel.

And Father Boniface looked round in awe,
Then paused awhile, then sudden turned, and straightway
With glad remembrance his confused eyes saw
The griffin-guarded gateway

Of the old convent-chapel—and he passed
Up the known aisle, and bowed him at the altar,
Hard by the marble tomb, where rests, at last,
Time-wearied Baron Walter.

But dreadful seemed each old familiar form
  Upon the wall, and from the pictured arras
Grim faces glared upon him, and a storm
  Of doubts his soul did harass.

The same, yet not the same! a pallid light
  Gleamed on each marble brow, and all the altar
Seemed dreadly palled in a mysterious night;
  He turned him to his psalter;

But lo! before his face his missal shone
  With a strange gleam, and on the page a blazon
Glowed with a splendor like the noonday sun,
  Dazzling his eyes to gaze on.

A mystic scroll: "Hearken! O Son of Man!
  Thy days are numbered, and from thee is banished
All earthly joy! Since that wild chase began
  An hundred years have vanished."

And as he gazed a wondrous change came o'er
  His stalwart frame; his hand shook and his forehead
Took on a thousand wrinkles; and the hoar
  Of age his visage borrowed;

And his head dropped upon his breast; his eye
  Grew dull and glassy; a convulsive shiver
Shook all his frame; in one faint, fluttering sigh
  Life slipped away forever;

And the white moon looked in upon them all,
  Flooding with silver light that ancient chapel,
Gleamed on the Serpent's scales fantastical,
  And on the fatal apple;

Colored with weird, wan light Saint Peter's hair,
  And cast a spectral gleam on Baron Walter,
And on that form so deathly pale and fair,
  Bowed o'er that awful altar.

FIRST AND LAST

They sat together, hand in hand;
The sunset flickered low;
The fickle sea crept up the strand
And caught the afterglow.

He sang a song, a little song
No other poet knew;
And she looked up and thought him strong,
Looked down and dreamed him true.

The fickle sea crept up the strand,
And laughed a wanton laugh—
Took up the song the poet planned,
And sang the other half.

* * * * * *

Times change; the two went diverse ways,
The evening shades increase
On him, grown old in fame and praise,
And her in household peace.

The echo of the false sweet words
He spoke so long ago
Has passed as pass the summer birds
Before the winter snow.

But as to-night the angel's hand
Loosens the silver cord,
And calls her to that other land
Of love's supreme reward,

She hears but one sound—silent long,
A whisper soft and low—
The echo of the false sweet song
He sang so long ago.

HEART'S CONTENT

Far over troublous seas there is an isle
  Above whose valleys bluest skies are bent,
Where balmy breezes blow and soft suns smile—
  Men call it Heart's Content!

And every prow that rides the sea of life
  To that dear distant isle is turned for aye;
Through baffling calms and stormy waves of strife
  Holding its doubtful way.

Oft in the midmost ocean barque meets barque,
  And as they pass from each the challenge sent
Comes back the same across the waters dark—
  "We steer for Heart's Content!"

For many an isle there is, so like, so like
  The mystic goal of all that travail sore,
That oft the wave-worn keels on strange sands strike
  And find an alien shore.

But ever, as the anchor drops, and sails
  From off the storm-strained yards are all unbent;
From the tall masthead still the watcher hails—
  "Lo, yonder! Heart's Content!"

And so once more the prow is seaward set;
  Hearts still hope on though waves roll dark around;
And on the stern men write the name, "Regret,"
  And fare forth, outward bound.

A FACE

There is a face I remember,
  Clear through the shadow of years;
I can see it to-night so plainly,
  Except now and then for my tears.

A face you would not have fancied,
  It would have meant nothing to you;
But to me it has just been the one thing
  To dream of my whole life through.

There never was aught between us,
  She never looked into my heart;
Friend unto friend spoke greeting,
  Friend as from friend did part.

The summers have flushed and faded
  So often since last we met,
I am sure she does not remember,
  I know I cannot forget.

For the face is here in my dreaming,
  It dwells with me everywhere,
The clear brown eyes shine on me,
  Wavers the dusky hair.

The faces of men and women
  I meet with every day
Pass and vanish—but this face
  Never can fade away.

Whether in life's hard journey
  Those eyes have lost their light,
Whether the mouth's pure sweetness
  Quivers with pain to-night,

I know not, knowing only
  It changes not for me—
That face my heart keeps safely
  And my eyes no more may see.

JOAN MELLISH

Where art thou now, Joan Mellish?
  Spring with its smiles slips past;
The great red rose in the convent close
  Crimsons and glows at last;
And, with the time of roses,
  Old hopes new life assume,
Where art thou then, Joan Mellish?
  Shall naught thine eyes relume!

Thy step was free and stately
  As the step of the mountain fawn;
Thy cheek's faint flush like the rosy blush
  In the first sweet hush of dawn;
And oh, thy heart, Joan Mellish,
  Was just the truest heart
That ever the dear God sent below
  To bear an earthly part.

I seek for thee, Joan Mellish,
  At morn, at noon, at eve;
I turn and turn, I pant and burn,
  I strive and yearn and grieve;
But not for sigh or whisper,
  For passionate sob or cry,
Dost thou come back, my love, my life,
  And still the years go by.

Thou wilt not come, Joan Mellish,
  Thy feet the earth-dust holds;
Where strangers pass the long grave-grass
  Thy couch, alas, enfolds.
And I, thine earthly lover—
  Ah me, how far am I
From that dark home of thine below,
  From thy bright home on high!

But, as the twilight deepens,
  Where'er my footsteps stray,
I seek thee still by vale and hill
  By lake and rill and bay;

But still the earth is empty,
And still my heart is sore,
Because thy face, Joan Mellish,
Shines on me nevermore.

Ah me, the bitter parting
Of love that is not hope!
Farewell for aye, Dear Heart! astray
In doubt's dark way I grope;
My eyes are dim with seeking
The face they cannot see.
Farewell, farewell, Joan Mellish,
A long farewell to thee!

IN A KING-CAMBYSES VEIN

Cambyses, King of the Persians,
Sat with his lords at play
Where the shades of the broad plane-branches
Slanted athwart the way.

And he listened and heard Prexaspes
Tell to his fellows there
Of a Bactrian bowman's prowess,
And skill beyond compare.

And the heart of the King was bitter,
And he turned and said to him:
"Dost see on the greensward yonder
That plane-tree's slender limb?

"It stands far off in the gloaming—
Dost think thy Bactrian could
With a single shaft unerring
Smite through that slender wood?"

"But nay," then said Prexaspes,
"Nor ever a mortal man
Since the days when Nimrod hunted
Where great Euphrates ran."

Then Cambyses, son of Cyrus,
  Looked, and before him there
Meres, the King's cup-bearer,
  Stood where the wine flowed clear.

Meres, the King's cup-bearer,
  Prexaspes' only son,
And the heart of the King was hardened
  And the will of the King was done.

And he said: "Bind Meres yonder
  To the plane-tree's slender stem,
And give me yon sheaf of arrows
  And the bow that lies by them."

And so, when the guards had bound him,
  He drew the shaft to the head;
"Give heed! give heed, Prexaspes,
  I aim for the heart!" he said.

Sharp through the twilight stillness
  Echoed the steel-bow's twang;
Loud through the twilight stillness
  The courtiers' plaudits rang.

And the head of the boy drooped downward,
  And the quivering shaft stood still;
And the King said, "O Prexaspes,
  Match I thy Bactrian's skill?"

Then low before Cambyses
  The satrap bowed his head—
"O great King, live forever!
  Thou hast cleft the heart!" he said.

THE NEW SONG OF CHARLESTON

The shadows of the dying year
  Fold fast the sleeping town;
From yon deep sky, so still and clear,
  The silent stars look down;
And in her sleep the City stirs
  As one who faintly hears
From far-off, time-sealed sepulchres
  The murmur of the years.

The echo of her ancient fame
  Smites through the seals of sleep;
Around her bygone battles flame,
  And war-cries loud and deep
Sound in her ears, and bid her rise
  And gird her harness on
For this new fight whose victories
  No sluggard ever won.

A peaceful fight, but, ah! she knows,
  Whose crest with war is bent,
Peace hath its snares, its subtle foes,
  Its perilous content;
And she must rouse her to the strife
  Till through her open door
Shall flow the great new streams of life
  To bless her evermore.

So, as the New Year dawns to-day
  On roof and tower and spire,
A new note marks the Poet's lay,
  A new song holds his lyre;
He prays that she whose glorious Past
  Illumes the Book of Time
May yet achieve, for aye, at last,
  Her destiny sublime!

ROBERT EDWARD LEE

Only a gray head bowed upon its pillow;
  Only a stout heart stilled forevermore;
Only the ebbing of one transient billow
  Back to its far fount on the other shore.

Surely a prophet is not without honor
  Save in his own land, where his own folk dwell.
And what is Fame? What eye can look upon her?
  What magic bind her with what subtle spell?

Not ours only, but the wide world's glory,
  That old man in that calm Virginia home,
Writing the last words of his life's grand story
  With patient hand, until the Voice said "Come!"

There were who from behind war's bloody curtain
  Caught gracious glimpses of the Eternal Peace;
Passed in the battle's smoke and din uncertain
  Up to the Home where pain and danger cease.

But this man, when the bitter strife was over,
  Turned back again his quiet life to live;
Clave to his country an all-faithful lover;
  Taught her to bear whom erst he taught to strive.

When the sheaf ripens puts He in the sickle,
  Gathers the full ear from the unkindly sod,
Where skies are dark and summer winds are fickle,
  Into the ample granary of God.

And we—we weep him not whose task is ended,
  Whose glorious failure outshines all success;
Though on his grave a whole world's tears descended,
  We could not love him more—nor mourn him less.

THE CONFEDERATE DEAD

How grand a fame this marble watches o'er!
Their Wars behind them—God's great Peace before.
They fought, they failed, yet, ere the bitter end,
Them, too, did Fortune wondrously befriend.
They never knew, as we who mourn them know,
How vain was all their strife, how vast our woe!
And now the land they gave their lives to save
Returns them all she has to give—a Grave!

THE SPIRIT OF GEOMETRY IN DAILY LIFE

From the essay on "The Diversions and Consolations of the Scholar."

Some people are so very angular in their character that they do not seem to be able to fit into any of the grooves into which they are thrown. Some, again, are so terribly precise and accurate in all their notions that they are continually coming into conflict with the less rigid and less monotonous habits of their neighbors. They go about with a sort of moral and intellectual grindstone under their arm, to the test of which they are always trying to bring the theories and fancies of their friends. They are always crammed full of facts and formulas; they have a rule for everything, and are prepared with a Q.E.D. for every doubt. To these persons imagination is a deadly snare, passion a pernicious folly, the human heart a useful valvular organ, which should be confined strictly to its task of circulating the blood; the human mind a carefully trained logic-engine, the excellence of whose work depends entirely upon its "freedom from entangling alliances" with the feelings and emotions. They want a proof for every assertion—nay, even for every speculative suggestion; they are indifferent to and impatient of those shades and limitations of meaning which beset the utterances of the philosophic thinker; they have a passion for certainty, and a contempt for doubt; they believe in nothing which cannot be labelled and formulated and reduced to an exact statement. To men like these the single office of the mind is to pronounce

judgment, and their notion of intelligence is the faculty and habit of so doing. To them the straight line not only measures the shortest distance between two points, but describes also the only proper road for the traveller to pursue. Any deviation therefrom is an unpardonable exercise of eccentricity, or, at least, to be forgiven only if referable to some law of cometary orbits not immediately obvious to the uninstructed eye. Between such a spirit as this and that of the true philosopher there is a great gulf fixed. Where the former demands certainty, the latter sees that certainty means for the most part shallowness, and the power of looking on one side only. He attaches but little importance to the faculty of judging unless it involve the faculty of judging rightly. He would rather keep his judgment in suspension than form a conclusion without the proper grounds. He endeavors to understand what he rejects as fully as he understands what he accepts, and he cultivates carefully the habit of putting himself in the place of one who differs from him, and of trying accurately to appreciate the weight of the opposing opinion. To the sneer of the confident sciolist, who brands him with the nickname of dreamer and doubter, he is serenely indifferent, for he does not believe that truth belongs to any system, but that it is prismatic in shape and hue, and not to be compressed into the formulas of Euclid, nor weighed in the balances of Clairault. To all such scoffs he replies in the golden words of good old Thomas Fuller: "We will not be too peremptory herein and build standing structures of bold assertions on so uncertain a foundation; rather, with the Rechabites, we will live in tents of conjecture, which, on better reason, we may easily alter and remove." . . . It not unfrequently happens that the confident dogmatism of the man of facts and figures is laughed at by a posterity fertilized by the thought of bygone dreamers and forgotten doubters. . . . The whirligig of Time brings its revenges; and Hamlet may be better remembered than the builders of the pyramids.

WISDOM AND THE FEAR OF DEATH

From the essay on "The Diversions and Consolations of the Scholar."

NEARER to us comes with each passing hour the pauseless, noiseless step of him whom the Easterns call "The Destroyer of Delights and the Sunderer of Companionships." I am not here to preach: great already, perhaps too great, is the company of the preachers. But if with us, living in the sunlight of revelation, the shadows of mortality are still dark upon our path, and the hand of Death strikes a chill to our hearts, let us remember that it was a Pagan scholar who said: "That death which we so much dread . . . is not the determination, but the intermission of a life which will return again. . . . A great soul takes no delight in staying with the body; it considers whence it came, and knows whither it is to go. . . . Let us live in our bodies therefore as if we were only to lodge in them this night and to leave them to-morrow." . . . There may be some shall say I have put my cause upon a false basis, have rested too exclusively upon earthly wisdom, and have not regarded duly the dogmas of the creeds. It may be so . . . but if Cicero and Pliny, and Seneca and Marcus Aurelius, and Socrates and Plato are not good models, even for us poor modern children of a higher and more authentic light, it must be because human nature has curiously changed.

As with the dread of Death, so with the trials and disappointments of life, the seeker after Wisdom shall find her consolations above rubies, her ways ways of pleasantness, and all her paths peace. As in "the sessions of sweet, silent thought" he communes with the wise and great of old there shall come to him a serenity of mind which shall lift him above the vicissitudes of his mortal lot, and which, amid the storm and stress of conflict, in the hour of defeat and failure, through the long watches of the night, when not even the relief of action is possible, and only the monotony of patience and of suffering is left to the soul, shall impart to his spirit a consolation which the smile of Kings and Emperors cannot bestow nor their frowns abolish, and with which no pomp or pageant of the world's vain show can ever so remotely be compared.

THE FREEDOM OF THE HUMAN MIND

From the essay "Arthur Hugh Clough; Poet and Thinker."

TRUTH should be followed for her own sake, unfettered by authority, and without regard to the pleasant or unpleasant consequence to the individual; the responsibility of each mind is measured by the extent to which this search for truth is honestly and sincerely performed, and, these conditions being observed, is comparatively independent of the actual results obtained. Of course . . . every honest . . . mind must feel the great practical difficulty involved . . . in the true relation of the individual to the whole.

The great problem of political ethics is the perfect development of the individual co-ordinately with that of the great collection of individuals which makes up the people at large. The great problem of social ethics is the true and proper relation of the morality of the individual to the morality of the whole; the co-ordination of the right and the expedient. And so, likewise, the great problem of the ethics of intellect is how to develop the individual mind according to the laws of its own nature, unbiased by the external influences which press upon and distract it. Doubtless all these problems have a logical connection, and their common root is to be found in a deep, underlying principle which, if thoroughly understood, would go far towards the establishment of a comprehensive science of life, embracing in its universal scope all the possible relations of the individual to the commonwealth. For so wide a generalization it may be well doubted whether the world is yet ready. Even were all necessary materials available, no single mind has as yet arisen which, uniting in itself the typical Prometheus and Epimetheus—the fore-thinker, and the after-thinker—of the profound old-world myth, shall adequately fulfil the conditions of the universal problem.

The freedom of the human mind . . . is not barred in the domain of religious thought, as is dogmatically asserted by the theological spirit; and the rules of development which have been found to apply in other spheres of mental activity are of equal force in this highest and most absorbing one of all. It

is equally the duty of man to think for himself upon matters which involve his eternal, as upon those which affect his temporal, concerns. It is as much his duty to truth to accept no opinion upon mere hearsay, or authority, as it is his duty to society to speak honestly and without hypocrisy. It is as much his duty to enlighten his judgment, as it is to act in accordance with the dictates of his conscience, informed and instructed as the latter must always be by that judgment. For it is a popular confusion to imagine that conscience is an infallible guide of right and wrong whose intuitive test no casuistry can evade nor ignorance confound. Conscience is the instinctive gravitation of the soul towards right and duty, abstractly considered. What that right and duty are, under given circumstances, it is the office of the judgment to decide according to its degree of enlightenment. The judgment determines such or such a course to be right or wrong; the conscience then acts upon the information, and says: "If it be right, pursue it; if wrong, pursue it not." Thus a man may be perfectly conscientious, and yet perfectly wrong, because his judgment may be at fault. The responsibility of the man, therefore, is measured by the honesty of his effort towards the enlightenment of his judgment; and there individual responsibility, considered in relation to itself alone, may be said to end.

To go further than this and consider the question of the responsibility of the individual thinker towards the received opinions of his day would carry us far beyond our limits. This much, however, may at least be remembered: that the men who have stamped themselves upon the annals of human progress as the fearless champions of freedom have not been those "Lip-loyal to what once was truth." Rather have they been men who, owning simply the eternal allegiance of humanity to truth, have spoken out bravely, honestly, calmly, in utter disregard of the immediate consequence to themselves or others, trusting that in His own time God would vindicate Himself, though in the shock of systems and the wreck of ancient creeds, their very names should be covered with what seems an everlasting oblivion.

Shall we content ourselves with . . . the cheap sneer that "the doubter does not succeed in life?" Did Mohammed, Loyola, and Napoleon succeed—and not Socrates, Spinoza,

Galileo, Wycliff and Luther? At the threshold of Thought sits Doubt. . . .

"Approfondissez! Go to the bottom of things!" wrote Lord Chesterfield to his son, inculcating what he believed to be one of the profoundest maxims of worldly wisdom. "Prove all things; hold fast that which is good!" writes St. Paul to the Thessalonians, speaking in the name of wisdom which men generally have agreed to consider rather the reverse of worldly. If doubt be a sin, and unquestioning belief the highest virtue, it is difficult to exonerate either the accomplished man of the world, or the inspired Apostle . . . but if theology be the gradual unfolding and development of religious truth, the "scientific exposition" of an infinite subject, the temple and not the tomb of faith: if God speaks differently to different hearts, and is yet the same God towards whom, by an invariable law of being, all true aspiration must finally tend—then Clough and men like Clough are not to be lightly dismissed with sarcasm nor summarily disposed of by anathema.

DECK COLLECTIONS AUG 2 5 2009

JUL 3 1 2007

BROOKLYN PUBLIC LIBRARY
LANGUAGE AND LITERATURE
GRAND ARMY PLAZA
BROOKLYN, N.Y. 11238

3 4444 02561 4256